

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

LIBRO DI STUDIO ITALIANO



CORSO DI STUDIO ITALIANO,

OR A

COURSE OF STUDY FOR THE ITALIAN LANGUAGE, prepared by Dr. BACHI, Instructor in Harvard University; and for sale by C. C. LITTLE & Co., Washington Street, Boston; and at the UNIVERSITY BOOKSTORE, Cambridge.



A GRAMMAR OF THE ITALIAN LANGUAGE; a New Edition revised and improved, with the addition of Practical Exercises and numerous Illustrations, drawn from the Italian Classic Writers. 1 vol. 12mo.

PART II.

RACCOLTA DI FAVOLE MORALI, or a Collection of Italian Fables in Prose and Verse, with Interlinear Translations. 1 vol. 12mo.

PART III.

SCELTA DI PROSE ITALIANE, or Extracts from the Works of the best Italian Prose Writers, both Ancient and Modern. 1 vol. 12mo.

PART IV.

TEATRO SCELTO ITALIANO, or a Selection of Italian Dramas, from the Works of Goldoni, Nota, Giraud, Alfieri, Monti, and Manzoni, with Notes. 1 vol. 12mo.

PART V.

I POETI ITALIANI MAGGIORI, or Extracts from Tasso, Ariosto, Poliziano, and Petrarca, and the Inferno of Dante, with Analytical and Historical Notes. 2 vols. 12mo. (The first volume is in Press.)

PART VI.

CONVERSAZIONE ITALIANA, or a Collection of Phrases and Familiar Dialogues in Italian and English. 1 vol. 12mo.

PART VII.

A KEY to the EXERCISES contained in the Italian Grammar. 1 vol. 12mo. (In Press.)

At the Bookstore of C. C. LITTLE & Co. may be had also the following Works of the same Author :

I.

RUDIMENTS OF THE ITALIAN LANGUAGE, or Easy Lessons in Spelling and Reading, with an Abridgment of the Grammar. Adapted to the Capacity of Children. 1 vol. 16mo.

II.

MRS. BARBAULD'S HYMNS FOR CHILDREN, in Italian ; being a Sequel to the "Easy Lessons in Reading," in the abovementioned Rudiments. 1 vol. 16mo.

III.

A COMPARATIVE VIEW OF THE ITALIAN AND SPANISH LANGUAGES, or an Easy Method of Learning the Spanish Tongue for those who are already acquainted with the Italian. 1 vol. 12mo.

IV.

A COMPARATIVE VIEW OF THE SPANISH AND PORTUGUESE LANGUAGES, or an Easy Method of learning the Portuguese Tongue for those who are already acquainted with the Spanish. 1 vol. 12mo.

CORSO DI STUDIO ITALIANO.

PART I.

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

OF ALIATE ORCUT'S THE ORCUT

CAMBRIDGE:

FOLSOM, WELLS, AND THURSTON,

PRINTERS TO THE UNIVERSITY.

MAY 1861

Italian

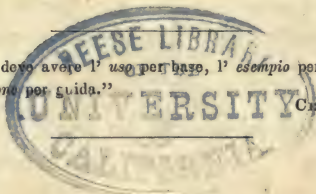
A
GRAMMAR.

OF THE
ITALIAN LANGUAGE

BY *Brown*
PIETRO BACHI,
INSTRUCTOR IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

A NEW EDITION REVISED AND IMPROVED,
WITH THE ADDITION OF
PRACTICAL EXERCISES AND NUMEROUS ILLUSTRATIONS,
DRAWN FROM THE ITALIAN CLASSICS.

"Una lingua deve avere l'uso per base, l'esempio per consiglio,
e la ragione per guida."



BOSTON:
CHARLES C. LITTLE AND JAMES BROWN.
LONDON:
RICHARD JAMES KENNETT.

M DCCC XXXVIII.

779
B-23

MASSACHUSETTS

1838

1838

PIETRO BACHI

1838

PIETRO BACHI

PIETRO BACHI

Entered according to act of Congress, in the year 1838, by

PIETRO BACHI,

in the Clerk's office of the District Court, for the District of Massachusetts.

24915

PC1109

B22

1838

MAIN

“DE *exteris hominibus* jam nunc dicam, quorum de-
merendi, si tibi id cordi est, persanè ampla in præsens
oblata est occasio. Ut enim *apud eos* ingenio quis
forte floridior, aut moribus amœnis et elegantibus,
linguam Etruscam in deliciis habet præcipuis, *quin et*
in solidâ etiam parte eruditionis esse sibi ponendam
ducit, præsertim si Græca aut Latina vel nullo, vel
modico, tinctu imbiberit. Ego certè istis utrisque
linguis, non extremis tantummodo labris madidus, sed,
si quis alius, quantùm per annos licuit, poculis ma-
joribus prolutus, possum tamen nonnunquam ad illum
Dantem et Petrarcam, aliosque vestros complurimos,
libenter et cupidè comissatum ire. Nec me tam ipsæ
Athenæ Atticæ cum illo suo pellucido Ilisso, nec illa
vetus Roma suâ Tiberis ripâ retinere valuerunt, quin
sæpe Arnum vestrum et Fæsulanos illos colles invisere
amem.”

MILTON. *Epist. ad Benedictum Buommattei ;*
Florent., Sept. 10., 1638.

PREFACE

TO THE FORMER EDITION.

AS A NATURAL consequence of the general advancement of this country in literature, the importance attached to an acquaintance with the Italian Language, as a part of polite education, has considerably increased. Not only does it now enter into the circle of the elegant studies of females, as the handmaid and ally of the ornamental arts, but the spirit of its higher literature begins to be understood by the cultivated of both sexes; and within a short time a place has been conceded to *Dante* and *Tasso* in the same academic course with Homer and Virgil.

But while the other languages of the continent of Europe have possessed the advantage of a variety of good grammars written in English, the Italian Instructor has had the mortification to see in almost universal use the farrago of *Veneróni*,* to the disparagement of his native tongue and the perplexity of those who would learn it. It is true, that other grammars are extant of various degrees of merit, and those of *Galignáni*, *Santagnéllo*, and *Vergáni* are entitled to much praise; the first two, however, are hardly known here,

* *Veneróni* was a native of *Verdun*, a small town of Burgundy, in France; his real name was *Vignerón*; but, having learnt Italian, and wishing to teach it in Paris, he *Italianized* his name and called himself a *Florentine*. The *Complete Italian Master* by Signór *Veneróni* was written for a few crowns by *Rosélli*, the extraordinary adventurer, who has left us his history in the romance entitled *The Unfortunate Neapolitan*.

and the last, which is perhaps the best of them all, has been confined principally to New-York; where indeed the want of a suitable grammar has been far less felt than in other places, from the singular good fortune of that city in enjoying the living instruction of the venerable *Da Pónte*, whose own writings, in prose as well as in verse, form an integral and permanent part of the noble literature, which he has done so much to propagate in America.

The field, therefore, was open for attempting to treat in English the *Grammar of the Italian Language* in a manner better suited to the wants of the public; and the author, in entering it, has flattered himself that he should render an acceptable service, if, after a thorough study of Italian writers on their own tongue, and a diligent examination of the labors of his predecessors both in Great Britain France, and Germany, he should be able to produce a more complete, and methodical, and, at the same time, strictly practical treatise, than now exists in English, however far he might fall short of that perfection of which he has the idea.

In the *Introduction* are given very summarily the principles of general grammar, and the terms are defined in which those principles are afterwards applied to the Italian tongue.

The Part devoted to *Pronunciation* affords, it is believed, more full information on the subject than can elsewhere be found; and, as the words are carefully represented by English combinations of letters of equivalent sound,* students who can-

* The vowel *a* is represented by the combination of letters *ah*, pronounced without aspiration as in the words *sirrah*, *hallelujah*, &c. : *e*, by *ay*, as in *day*, except when it occurs before certain consonants with which in English it has what is called the short sound, nearly resembling the sound in Italian, as in the syllables *em*, *el*, &c. ; before *r*, however, *e* is sounded long, like *ay* : *i*, by *ee*, as in *sleep* : *u*, by *oo*, as in *ooze*. In the combinations *k,y* — *g,y* — *l,y* — *n,y*, a comma is inserted to prevent the letter before it from coalescing with the *y*, which is to be pronounced with the following vowel as if it began the syllable.

not avail themselves of oral instruction, may yet make such an approximation to a just pronunciation, as to perceive and enjoy in a good degree the rhythm and harmony of the classic authors, and, with few errors to unlearn, be prepared to take advantage of future opportunities of improving their pronunciation by intercourse with accomplished speakers of the language.

In treating of the different Parts of Speech, in the division called *Analogy*, while the author has wished that nothing should be wanting to the completeness of this part of his treatise, he has striven so to methodize the various particulars that they should lie ready for use. The verbs, especially, are given with unexampled fulness; and to both the regular and irregular verbs are annexed the *poetical forms*, which constitute no small difficulty for learners, even in reading the older prose writers. This is an advantage not afforded to the same extent in any preceding grammar.

As to the *Syntax*, a few scattered observations only are to be found in the best grammars. These are here digested under their proper heads, increased by various new ones, and all of them supported by citations from those Classics from whose authority no appeal can be allowed, though colloquial usage may in a few instances be at variance with them.

The *Orthography* contains the result of what has been written by Italian authors on the subject, and such rules as have been deduced from the usage of the best writers.

Throughout the Grammar, it should be observed, the principal rules are placed under their appropriate heads, in large type; exceptions to general rules and subordinate observations are printed in smaller type. Every Italian word of more than one syllable is carefully accented, that the mere perusal of the Grammar may operate as a perpetual lesson in pronunciation, preparing the pupil to read currently the first author put into his hands, and sparing the instructor the

trouble of much inculcation. For an analogous reason, every Italian word and sentence is accompanied by a literal English version, which is often indispensable to the beginner, and can rarely be useless.

The author is well aware of the amount of indulgence which his English style will require on the part of his readers, whose very pursuit of a foreign literature implies a degree of cultivation in their own, which must make them impatient of the constraint and want of idiomatic propriety they will here meet with. Grammatical propriety, however, and perspicuity were the highest qualities to which he could at present pretend, in a language whose idioms are so remote from his own; and, if he has been in any good degree successful in attaining these, he relies on the candor of ingenuous scholars to attribute his defects to the difficulty of the case, and not suppose that he undervalues or is insensible to the charms of a good style; which would indeed be inexcusable in one whose ambition it is to spread a knowledge of the most graceful of modern dialects:

“*Illam, quidquid agit, quoquò vestigia movit,
Componit furtim subsequiturque Decor.*”

TIBULL. l. 4. c. 2.

PREFACE TO THE PRESENT EDITION.

THE flattering reception, which the former edition of this Grammar has met with, both in this country and abroad, and the wide circulation, which in a few years it has obtained in the different quarters of this Union, have made it the duty of the author to redouble his efforts to approach nearer to the end which he originally proposed to himself.

A long experience in teaching, the useful suggestions made to him by friends who have been using his book both in private and public instruction, together with an incessant study of his native tongue in the works of the classic writers, have enabled him to make such improvements, as to render the work more deserving of the public favor.

But the light, which the writings of *Mónti*, *Compagnóni*, *Románi*, *Ambrosóli*, *Lucchesíni*, and others, have shed on Philology, in Italy, has given origin, within the last few years, to so many valuable treatises on Grammar, that, to derive advantage from their works, and to suit this book to the present times, it was necessary to remodel the former plan, and introduce such changes, as appeared to be required by the philosophy of the language, and the progress of grammatical science.

To obtain this object, the Grammar has been newly written, the arrangement altered, the method simplified, and the style generally improved. Several remarks, which had been found useless, have been omitted, and many important rules, which had been omitted, have been introduced. The *verbs* have been better displayed ; and the *Syntax* has been increased

by several important chapters, such as those on the *Regimen of Words*, the *Agreement of Participles*, &c.

Sensible of the truth of the principle, that a grammarian ought not to limit himself to a mere exposition of principles, but should deduce them from sound reason and verify them by the authority of the classic writers, — (“Grammaticorum sine ratione testimoniisque auctoritas nulla est.” — SANCT. *Minerv.* l. 1. c. 2.) — the author has, in this new edition, endeavoured first to write and explain his rules, and then to add, by way of illustration, the classical authorities, which have furnished him the *Examples* corroborating the principles he has laid down.

Convinced, too, of the advantage which the student naturally derives from the practical application of abstract principles, he has introduced, in each chapter of the Grammar, one or more *Exercises*, as the subject or the importance of the rules seemed to require.

The *Examples*, as well as the *Exercises*, have been chiefly drawn from the writers of the fourteenth century, such as *Dante*, *Petrarca*, *Boccaccio*, *Villani*, &c.; in many instances from those of the sixteenth, as *Machiavelli*, *Guicciardini*, *Ariosto*, *Tasso*, &c.; and, when these have failed to supply apposite illustrations, from the best poets and prose writers of the eighteenth century, and from those among the moderns who have distinguished themselves for purity of diction and elegance of style, as *Alfieri*, *Foscolo*, *Botta*, *Manzoni*, &c.

To prevent any interruption in the regular progress of the different parts of the book, and to reduce the principles to a more compact form, it was at first thought advisable to throw into an *Appendix*, at the end of the volume, certain lists of words and supplementary remarks, which formerly occupied a place in the *Analogy*; but the size, which the work had already attained,

determined the author to reserve it to be published in a separate form, particularly as its omission at present affects in no manner the completeness of the Grammar, however useful such an appendage might be.

Some improvements have also been made in the typographical execution of the work. The most important parts of the rules have been printed in *italics*. In the examples, which immediately follow, the words which directly illustrate the rules are printed in SMALL CAPITALS; and the whole of these examples, which always recur in the succeeding citations from the classics, are there printed in SMALL CAPITALS, to engage the attention of the learner to their connexion with the longer passages, from which they were at first detached.

Should the volume appear to any one larger than is necessary for common use, he should observe, that, of the whole number of pages, 351 only are occupied by the *rules of the language* and their *immediate illustrations*, and that the remainder of the book is filled by *Exercises* (which are commonly printed in a separate volume), and by a collection of *eighteen hundred* citations from the classics, which exhibit all the principal phenomena of the language, in a form which gives the student ready access to a high authority for, and a happy exemplification of, every principle, thus making him familiar beforehand with the idioms and constructions, which would be the chief impediments in his reading the most difficult authors.

As to the mode of using this Grammar, the author would recommend the following plan. Let the principles first be properly explained and exemplified by the instructor, and let them be properly learned and recited by the student. This done, let the instructor point out the application of them in the citations from the classics which follow the rules of each chapter, and let the student account for them (and for as many others as he may have

already learned), by parsing the words which form the subjects of the rules with which he is already acquainted ; and, when he has become familiar with them, let him be directed to write out the Exercises. This method, if strictly adhered to, cannot fail to prove highly useful to the learner, and satisfactory to the teacher.

Desirous that his book should not fall short of that perfection, which grammatical science seems lately to have reached in Italy, the author has spared neither expense nor diligence in procuring all the best treatises on the Italian language, which have hitherto been published in Europe. Some of these have been of great assistance to him in his labors, and in many instances he has not hesitated to adopt from them many excellent hints and valuable remarks. Still he trusts, that the manner in which he has combined his scattered materials into a body of principles, all illustrated by a variety of unquestionable classical authorities, will secure to his work the character of originality, so far as this can belong to any grammar of a language long since settled in its usages and idioms :

“Etiam si omnia a veteribus inventa sunt, hoc tamen erit semper novum, usus et dispositio inventorum ab aliis.”

SENEC. *Epist.* 64.

Cambridge, September, 1838.

A LIST OF WORKS

EXAMINED WITH REFERENCE TO THE COMPILATION OF THIS
GRAMMAR.

- ALBÉRTI** (*di Villanuova, Francesco d'*), Dizionario Universale Critico Enciclopédico della Língua Italiána. Lúcca, 1805. 6 vol. 4to.
- Alberti** (*de Villeneuve, François d'*), Grand Dictionnaire François-Italien, et Italien-François. Bassano, 1831. 2 vol. 4to.
- Algarótti** (*Francesco*), Lettere Filológiche, raccolte da Bartolomméo Gamba. Venézia, 1826. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Alunno** (*Francesco*), Le Ricchétze della Língua sópra il Decameróne. Venézia, 1557. 1 vol. 4to.
- Ambrosóli** (*Francesco*), Manuále della Língua Italiána. Miláno, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Barberi** (*J. Ph.*), Grammaire des Grammaires Italiennes, ou Cours Complet de Langue Italienne. Paris, 1819. 2 vol. 8vo.
- , Petit Trésor de la Langue Française et de la Langue Italienne. Paris, 1821. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Baretti** (*Joseph*), A Dictionary of the English and Italian Languages. London, 1835. 2 vols. 8vo.
- Bártoli** (*Daniéle*), Trattáto dell' Ortografia Italiána. Miláno, 1830. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Bazzarini** (*António*), Ortografia Enciclopédica Universále. Venézia, 1824. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Bémbo** (*Piétro*), Próse, nelle quáli si ragióna della Volgár Língua, cólle Giúnte di Lodovico Castelvétro. Miláno, 1824. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Bergantini** (*Giován-Piétro*), Vóci Italiáne d' Autóri Approvati dalla Crúsca, nel Vocabolário di éssa non registráte. Venézia, 1745. 1 vol. 4to.
- Biagioli** (*G.*), Grammaire Italienne Élémentaire et Raisonnée. Paris, 1825. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Borélli** (*Pasquále*), Princípj dell' Árte Etimológica. Nápoli, 1830. 1 vol. 4to.
- Brosse** (*Charles de*), Traité de la Formation Mécanique des Langues. Paris, 1801. 2 vol. 12mo.

- Brúni (Donato António)*, Osservazioni sopra la Língua Toscana. Nápoli, 1759. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Bullet (J. B.)* Memoires sur la Langue Celtique. Besançon, 1760. 3 vol. fol.
- Buommattèi (Benedetto)*, Délla Língua Toscana, Líbri Dúe, còlle nóte di Anton-Maria Salvini. Miláno, 1807. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Caléffi (Giusteppe)* Grammatica délla Língua Italiána, compiláta sùlle miglióri modérne Grammatiche. Firénze, 1832. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Cardinali (Francesco)*, Dizionario portatile délla Língua Italiána. Bológna, 1828. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Carducci (Facondo)*, Elementi della Lettura, ed Ortografia Italiána. Siéna, 1828. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Césari (António)*, Dissertazione sopra lo Státo délla Língua Italiána. Veróna, 1810. 1 vol. 4to.
- Cesarótti (Melchiór)*, Saggi sùlla Filosofia délle Língue, e del Gústo. Miláno, 1821. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Cinónio* [alias *Mambèlli (Marc-António)*], Osservazioni délla Língua Italiána, illustráte ed accresciúte da Luígi Lambérti. Miláno, 1811. 4 vol. 8vo.
- Cittadini (Célso)*, Le Origini délla Toscana Favélla. Siéna, 1628. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Compagnóni (Giuséppe)*, Teórica dé' Vérbi Italiáni, regolári, anómali, difettívi, e mal-nóti; compiláta sùlle Ópere del Cinónio, del Pistolési, del Mastrofini, e d' áltri più illústri Grammatici. Livórno, 1830. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Corticèlli (Salvadóre)*, Régole ed Osservazioni délla Língua Toscana. Bassáno, 1827. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Coureil (Gio. de)*, Nuóva Grammatica délla Língua Italiána per gl' Italiáni. Livórno, 1816. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Dalmistro*, Osservazioni intórno álla Língua Italiána. Venézia, 1821. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Da-Pónte (Lorénzo)*, Elementi délla Língua Italiána. Nuova-Yórk, 1831. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Dell' Árte délla Paróla*, consideráta né' várj Módi délla súa Espressione. Miláno, 1827. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Del-Míro (Vincénzo)*, Grammatica Ragionáta délla Língua Italiána. Nápoli, 1804. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Destutt-de-Tracy (António Luígi Clemente)*, Grammatica Generale, còlle Annotazioni di Giuséppe Compagnóni. Miláno, 1817. 2 vol. 8vo.

- Dizionario della Lingua Italiana.* Pádova, 1827. 7 vol. 4to.
- Dólce (Lodovico)*, Osservazioni sùlla Lingua Italiana. Venézia, 1562. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Elementi della Lingua Italiana ad Úso delle Scuole.* Venézia, 1810. 1 vol. 8vo.
- della Grammatica, e della Ortografia Italiana, ricavati dal Pallavicino, Bártoli, Rogacci, Buommattéi. Nápoli, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Facciolati (Jacopo)*, Ortografia Moderna Italiana. Nápoli, 1831. 1 vol. 4to.
- Ferrarii (Octavii)*, Origines Linguae Italicæ. Patavii, 1676. 1 vol. fol.
- Fornasari*, Theoretisch praktische Anleitung zur Erlernung der Italienischen Sprache, in einer neuen, und fasslicheren Darstellung. Wien, 1830. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Franscini (Stéfano)*, Grammatica Inferiore della Lingua Italiana. Miláno, 1832. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Galignani (J. A.)*, Grammar and Exercises, in Twenty-four Lectures on the Italian Language, enlarged and improved by Antonio Montucci. London, 1823. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Giambullari (Pier-Francésco)*, Lezioni, aggiuntovi l' Orígene della Lingua Fiorentina, altrimenti il Géllo. Miláno, 1827. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Giannelli (Leonárdo)*, Régole Grammaticali per chi vuol parlare, e scrivere correttamente Toscano. Lúcca, 1820. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Gigli (Girólamo)*, Lezioni di Lingua Toscana. Venézia, 1722. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Gióia (Melchiór)*, Ideología. Miláno, 1822. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Gório (A. F.)*, Stória Antiquária Etrúscá. Firénze, 1749. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Gran Dizionario della Lingua Italiana.* Bológna, 1828. 7 vol. 4to.
- Grássi (Giuséppe)*, Saggio intorno ai Sinónimi della Lingua Italiana. Firénze, 1832. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Jagemann (Chr. Jos.)*, Neues Deutsh-Italianishes Hand-Wörter-Buch. Leipzig, 1799. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Jaklitsch (Giuséppe)*, Princípij Elementári della Lingua Italiana. Miláno, 1829. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Lémmi (Giov. Spírito)*, Elementi ragionati della Lingua Toscana. Livórno, 1808. 1 vol. 8vo.

Lucchesini (Césare), Dell' Illustrazione délle Lúngue Antiche e Modérne, e principalménte dell' Italiána. Lúcca, —. 2 vol. 8vo.

Máier (Andréa), Délla Lúngua Comúne d' Itália. Venézia, 1822. 1 vol. 12mo.

Mánni (Doménico María), Lezioni di Lúngua Toscana. Miláno, 1824. 1 vol. 12mo.

Martignóni (Girólamo), Nuóvo Método per la Lúngua Italiána la più Scélta, estensívo a tutte le Lúngue. Miláno, 1743. 2 vol. 4to.

Mastrofíni (Márco), Teoría e Prospétto, ossia Dizionario Crítico dé' Vérbi Italiáni coniugáti, specialménte dégli anómali, e mal-nóti. Róma, 1814. 2 vol. 4to.

Mastróti (Francésco), Corso di Lúngua Italiána. Nápoli, 1833. 1 vol. 8vo.

Mazzinghi, Ortografia Italiána. Nápoli, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.

Meidinger, Praktische Italienische Grammatik, wodurch man diese Sprache auf eine ganz neue, und sehr leichte Art in kurzer Zeit gründlich erlernen kann. Leipzig, 1821. 1 vol. 8vo.

Menágio (Egidio), Oríginí délla Lúngua Italiána. Parigi, 1669. 1 vol. fol.

Menzini (Benedétto), Délla Costruzione Irregoláre délla Lúngua Toscana. Veróna, 1744. 1 vol. 4to.

Mómo (Giovánni), Sintássi, Frási, e Vóci per perferzionársi nélla Lúngua Italiána. Miláno, 1809. 1 vol. 8vo.

Mónti (Vincénzo), Propósta di alcúne Correzióni ed Aggiúnte al Vocabolário délla Crúsca. Miláno, 1826. 7 vol. 8vo.

Múcci (Doménico), Nuóva Grammatica Italiána, formáta su i Principj di Grammatica Generále. Nápoli, 1832. 1 vol. 12mo.

Muratóri (Ludovico António), Dissertazioni sópra le Antichità Italiáne. Miláno, 1751. 3 vol. 4to.

Napióne (Francésco Galeáni), Dell' Úso e dé' Prégi délla Lúngua Italiána. Miláno, 1830. 2 vol. 12mo.

Nési (Lorénzo), Dizionario Ortológico Prático délla Lúngua Italiána. Pavia, 1825. 1 vol. 8vo.

Nuóva Ortografia Italiána, con l'Aggiúnta di várie Vóci Dúbbie. Pádova, 1825. 1 vol. 12mo.

Onoráti (Niccolò), Dizionario di Vóci Dúbbie Italiáne. Nápoli, 1783. 1 vol. 4to.

Ortografia délla Lúngua Italiána. Miláno, 1829. 1 vol. 18mo.

- Panizzi (Antonio)*, An Elementary Italian Grammar. London, 1828. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Parénti (Marc-António)*, Annotazioni al Dizionario Italiano, che si stampa in Bologna. Modena, 1826. 3 vol. 8vo.
- Peretti (Vincent)*, Grammaire Italienne composée d'après les meilleurs Auteurs et Grammairiens d'Italie. Paris, 1815. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Pergamini (Giacomo)*, Trattato della Lingua Italiana. Venezia, 1613. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Pezzana (Angelo)*, Osservazioni concernenti alla Lingua Italiana, ed ai suoi Vocabolàrj. Parma, 1823. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Pistolési (Giam-Battista)*, Prospetto de' Verbi Italiani regolari e irregolari. Pisa, 1813. 1 vol. 4to.
- Pónza (Michèle)*, L' Annotatore degli Errori di Lingua. Torino, 1829. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Grammatica della Lingua Italiana. Torino, 1834. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Puóti (Basilio)*, Régole Elementari della Lingua Italiana. Napoli, 1836. 2 vol. 12mo.
- Rábbi (Cárlo Costánzo)*, Sinónimi ed Aggiunti Italiani. Venezia. 1817. 1 vol. 4to.
- Románi (Giovánni)*, Teórica della Lingua Italiana. Miláno, 1825. 2 vol. 8vo.
- , Teórica de' Sinónimi Italiani. Miláno, 1825. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Dizionario Generale de' Sinónimi Italiani. Miláno, 1826. 3 vol. 8vo.
- , Osservazioni sopra Varie Voci del Vocabolario della Crusca. Miláno, 1826. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Opúscoli Scélti sulla Lingua Italiana. Miláno, 1826. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Rosásco (Girólamo)*, Della Lingua Toscana, Diáloghi Sette. Miláno, 1824. 2 vol. 12mo.
- Róster (Giacomo)*, Osservazioni Grammaticali intorno alla Lingua Italiana. Firénze, 1826. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Elementi Grammaticali Ragionati di Lingua Italiana. Firénze, 1827. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Salviáti (Leonárdo)*, Avvertimenti della Lingua sopra il Decamerone. Miláno, 1810. 3 vol. 8vo.
- Santagnello (M.)*, A Complete Grammar of the Italian Language. London, 1828. 1 vol. 12mo.

Scelta di Voci délla Língua Italiána, con Régole ed Osservazioni. Miláno, 1828. 1 vol. 12mo.

Soave (*Francésco*), Grammática Ragonáta délla Língua Italiána, còlle Aggiunte di António Bianchini. Bréscia, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.

Soldati (*Mattéo*), Súllo Státo presénte délla Língua Italiána. (Átti dell' Acad. Itál., vol. I.)

Sorési (*Pier-Doménico*), Erudiménti délla Língua Italiána. Miláno, 1831. 1 vol. 12mo.

Spadafóra (*Plácido*), Prosodía Italiána, còlla Giunta di tre brévi Trattáti; l' úno délla *Z*, e súa varietà; e l' áltro dell' *E* e *O*; il tézzo délla buóna e réa Pronúnzia. Venézia, 1820. 2 vol. 8vo.

Tommaséo (*Niccolò*), Nuóvo Dizionário dé' Sinónimi délla Língua Italiána. Firénze, 1830. 1 vol. 8vo.

Tosélli (*Ottávio*), Origine délla Língua Italiána. Bológna, 1831. 3 vol. 8vo.

Vánzon (*Cárlo António*), Grammática Ragonáta délla Língua Italiána. Livórno, 1834. 1 vol. 8vo.

—, Dizionário Universále délla Língua Italiána. Livórno, 1827. 3 vol. 8vo.

Várci (*Benedétto*), L' Ercoláno, o Ragionaménto sülle Língue, ed in particuláre délla Toscana e Fiorentína. Miláno, 1803. 1 vol. 8vo.

Vergani (*M. A.*), A New and Complete Italian Grammar. Leghorn, 1824. 1 vol. 12mo.

Vocabolário dégli Accadémici délla Crúsca. Venézia, 1763. 7 vol. 4to.

—, còlle Aggiunte di António Césari. Veróna, 7 vol. 4to.

— *Universále* délla Língua Italiána. Nápoli, 1829—
[I prími] 5 vol. 4to., [che conténgono le lèttere *A—RU*.
(Ópera in córso.)]

Zanobétti (*Giovánni*), Nuóvo Dizionário Portátile délla Língua Italiána. Livórno, 1827. 1 vol. 16mo.

Zotti (*Romualdo*), Grammaire Italienne, et Thèmes sur la Langue Italienne. Paris, 1823. 2 vol. 12mo.

A TABLE

OF THE ABBREVIATIONS OF THE NAMES OF AUTHORS AND OF
THE WORKS QUOTED IN THIS GRAMMAR.

| | |
|-----------------------|--|
| AGN. PAND. o. | <i>Pandolfini</i> (<i>Ágnolo</i>), 'Trattáto del Góverno délla Famíglia,' página o. |
| Alam. Colt. o. o. | <i>Alamánni</i> (Luígi), 'La <i>Coltivazióne</i> ,' libro o. pág. o. |
| Alberg. Nov. | <i>Albergáti</i> -Capacélli (Francésco), ' <i>Novèlle</i> .' |
| Albert. | } <i>Albertáno</i> , Giúdice da Bréscia, Volgarizza- ménto dé' 'Tre Trattáti,' <i>capítolo</i> o. |
| Abertan. c. o. | |
| ——. o. o. | ——, ——, Trattáto o. cap. o. |
| Alf. Fil. o. o. | } <i>Alfiéri</i> (Vittório), 'Tragédie,' <i>Filippo</i> , átto o. scéna o. |
| —— Filip. o. o. | |
| —— Antig. o. o. | ——, <i>Antígone</i> , átto o. scéna o. |
| —— Saul. o. o. | ——, <i>Saúl</i> , átto o. scéna o. |
| Alg. lett. | <i>Algarótti</i> (Francésco), ' <i>Léttere</i> .' |
| Alleg. | } <i>Allégri</i> (Alessándro), 'Léttere e Ríme,' pág. o. |
| Alleg. o. | |
| Ambr. Cof. o. o. | <i>Ámbra</i> (Francésco d'), 'La <i>Cofanária</i> ,' comédia, átto o. scéna o. |
| Am. Ant. | } ' <i>Ammaestraménti dégli Antíchi</i> ,' raccólti e volgarizzáti da Fra Bartolomméo da San Concórdio, <i>distribuzióne</i> o. <i>rubrica</i> o. am- maestraménto o. |
| Amm. Ant. d. o. r. o. | |
| —— ——— o. o. o. | |
| Amor. | <i>Amorétti</i> (Cárló), 'Viággio ái Tre Lágghi; Maggióre, di Lucáno, e di Cómo.' |
| Ann. Car. | Védi <i>Car.</i> , <i>Caro</i> . |
| Ann. Vang. | ' <i>Annotazioni</i> sópra gli <i>Evangelj</i> .' (<i>Tèsto a pénna. citáto nel Vocaboláριο délla Crúscá.</i>) |
| Ariost. | } <i>Ariósto</i> (Ludovíco), ' <i>Orlándo Furióso</i> ,' cán- to o. stánza o. |
| —— Fur. o. o. | |
| B. | Védi <i>Bocc.</i> |
| Barb. Gr. Gr. | <i>Barberi</i> (J-Ph.), ' <i>Grammaires des Gram- maires Italiennes</i> .' |
| Bellinc. | <i>Bellincióni</i> (Bernárdó), 'Ríme.' |
| Bemb. | } <i>Bémbo</i> (Piétro), ' <i>Stória di Venézia</i> ,' lib. o. pág. o. |
| —— Stor. o. o. | |
| —— Lett. o. o. o. | |
| Ben. Varch. | ——, ' <i>Léttere Volgári</i> ,' volúme o. lib. o. pág. o. Védi <i>Varch</i> . |

| | | |
|-----------------------|---|--|
| Bent. | { | <i>Bentivóglío</i> (Cardinal Guído), ‘ <i>Léttere</i> ,’ |
| — lett. o. | } | léttera o. |
| Benv. Cell. Oref. o. | | <i>Cellini</i> (<i>Benvenuto</i>), ‘ <i>Trattáti</i> (due) dell’ <i>Oreficeria</i> , e délla <i>Scultúra</i> ,’ pag. o. |
| Ber. Tass. lett. | | <i>Tásso</i> (<i>Bernárdo</i>), ‘ <i>Léttere</i> .’ |
| Bern. Orl. o. o. | | <i>Bérni</i> (<i>Francésco</i>), ‘ <i>Orlándo Innamoráto</i> ,’ cánto o. stánza o. |
| — Rim. o. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Rime Burlésche</i> ,’ vol. o. pag. o. |
| B. | { | |
| Bocc. | } | <i>Boccáccio</i> (<i>Giovánni</i>), ‘ <i>Decameróne</i> ,’ <i>Intro-</i> <i>duzióne</i> . |
| — Intr. | | |
| — Introd. | | |
| — Proem. | | —, ‘ <i>Decam.</i> ’ <i>Proémio</i> . |
| — g. o. Proem. | | —, — <i>giornáta</i> o. <i>Proémio</i> . |
| — g. o. n. o. | | —, — <i>giornáta</i> o. <i>novélla</i> o. |
| — g. o. canz. | | —, — <i>giornáta</i> o. <i>canzóna</i> . |
| — Concl. | | —, — <i>Conclusióne</i> . |
| — Corb. | | Védi — <i>Lab.</i> , <i>Luber.</i> o. |
| — Amet. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Améto</i> ,’ pag. o. |
| — Fiam. | { | |
| — Fiamm. o. o. | } | —, ‘ <i>Fiamméttá</i> ,’ lib. o. número o. |
| — Filoc. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Filácolo</i> ’ e ‘ <i>Filócopo</i> ,’ lib. o. |
| — Lab. | { | |
| — Laber. o. | } | —, ‘ <i>Laberinto d’ Amóre</i> ,’ ossia ‘il Cor- baccio,’ núm. o. |
| — Tes. o. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Teséide</i> ,’ cánto o. stánza o. |
| — Testam. | | —, ‘ <i>Testaménto</i> .’ |
| — Vis. o. | { | |
| — Vis. Amor. | } | —, ‘ <i>Amorósa Visióne</i> ,’ cánto o. |
| — Com. Dant. | | —, ‘ <i>Coménto sópra i primi Diciassétte</i> <i>Cánti dell’ Inférno di Dánte</i> .’ |
| — Vit. Dant. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Vita di Dánte Alighiéri</i> ,’ pag. o. |
| Boccal. | | <i>Boccalíni</i> (<i>Traiano</i>), ‘ <i>Ragguágli di Par-</i> <i>násso</i> .’ |
| Boez. Varch. o. o. | | Védi <i>Varch</i> . |
| Borgh. Rip. o. | | <i>Borghini</i> (<i>Raffaéllo</i>), ‘ <i>Il Ripóso</i> ,’ núm. o. |
| — Tosc. o. | | —, (<i>Vincénzo</i>), ‘ <i>Délla Toscana</i> , e délle súe Città,’ discórso, pag. o. |
| — Arm. Fam. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Dell’ Arme délle Famíglie Fioren-</i> <i>tíne</i> ,’ discórso, pag. o. |
| Bott. Stor. Am. l. o. | | <i>Bóttá</i> (<i>Cárló</i>), ‘ <i>Stória délla Guérra délla</i> <i>Independénza dégli Státi Uniti di Améri-</i> <i>ca</i> ,’ lib. o. |
| Brun. | { | |
| Brunet. Tes. o. o. | } | <i>Brunétto</i> <i>Latíni</i> , ‘ <i>Il Tesóro</i> ’ volgarizzáto da Bóno <i>Giambóni</i> , lib. o, cap. o. |
| — Pataff. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Il Patáffio</i> ,’ cap. o. (<i>Tésto a pén-</i> <i>na</i> , citáto nel <i>Vocabolário</i> .) |

| | | |
|-------------------------|---|---|
| Buom. | } | <i>Buommattéi</i> (Benedétto), ‘ <i>Délla Lúngua</i> |
| — Ling. Tosc. o. | | <i>Toscána</i> , <i>Líbrì Dúe</i> , lib. o. trattáto o. |
| o. o. | } | cap. o. |
| Buon. | | <i>Buonarróti</i> (Michel-Ángelo, il vécchio), |
| Buonar. Rim. o. | } | ‘ <i>Ríme</i> ,’ pág. o. |
| — Fier. Introd. | | — (Michel-Ángelo, il giòvane), ‘ <i>La Fíera</i> ,’ comédia in cínque giornáte, <i>Introduzióne</i> . |
| — — — o. o. o. | } | — giornáta o. átto o. scéna o. |
| Burchiell. p. o. s. o. | | <i>Burchiéllo</i> , ‘ <i>Sonétti</i> ,’ <i>párte</i> o. <i>sonétto</i> o. |
| But. Com. Dant. | } | <i>Búti</i> (Francésco di Bártolo da), ‘ <i>Coménto</i> , |
| — Inf. Purg. Par. o. | | ovvéro Lettúra sópra il Poéma di <i>Dánte</i> .’ |
| Cant. Carn. o. | } | <i>Cánti Carnascialéschi</i> , pág. o. (<i>Téstò a pénna</i> , citáto nel Vocabolário.) |
| Car. | | <i>Cáro</i> (Anníbal), ‘ <i>Léttere Familiári</i> ,’ <i>párte</i> |
| Caro. lett. o. o. | } | o. pág. o. |
| — Matt. s. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Mattaccini</i> ,’ <i>sonétto</i> o. |
| Casa Galat. o. | } | <i>Cása</i> (Monsignór Giovánni délla), ‘ <i>Il Galatéó</i> ,’ pág. o. |
| — lett. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Léttere</i> ,’ <i>léttera</i> o. |
| Castigl. Cort. l. o. o. | } | <i>Castighióne</i> (Baldassáre), ‘ <i>Il Cortiáno</i> ,’ |
| Cavale. | | lib. o. pág. o. |
| — Att. Apost. o. | } | <i>Caválca</i> (Fra Doménico), Volgarizzaménto |
| — Espos. Simb. | | dégli ‘ <i>Átti dégli Apóstoli</i> ,’ pág. o. |
| o. o. | } | —, ‘ <i>Esposizióne del Símbolo</i> dégli |
| — Frutt. Ling. | | <i>Apóstoli</i> , lib. o. pág. o. |
| — Med. cuor. | } | —, ‘ <i>Trattáto dé’ Frútti délla Lúngua</i> .’ |
| — Pungil. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Medicína del Cuóre</i> .’ |
| — Specch. Cr. | } | —, ‘ <i>Pungilingua</i> ,’ cap. o. |
| — Stolt. o. | | ‘ <i>Spécchio délla Cróce</i> .’ |
| Cavalcánti. | } | —, Trattáto délle ‘ <i>Trénta Stoltizie</i> |
| Cecch. Dot. o. o. | | dell’ Uómo, pág. o. |
| — Esalt. cr. | } | ‘ <i>Esposizione delle sue Canzoni</i> .’ |
| — Inc. o. o. | | <i>Cécchi</i> (Giovan-María), ‘ <i>La Dóte</i> ,’ comédia, |
| — Spir. o. o. | } | átto o. scéna o. |
| Cesar. | | —, ‘ <i>L’ Esaltazióne délla Cróce</i> ,’ comédia, átto o. scéna o. |
| Cinon. t. o. | } | —, ‘ <i>Gl’ Incantésimi</i> ,’ comédia, átto o. scéna o. |
| | | —, ‘ <i>Lo Spirito</i> ,’ comédia, átto o. scéna o. |
| | } | <i>Cesaróti</i> (Melchiór), Traduziúne dell’ ‘ <i>Ilíade d’ Oméro</i> .’ |
| | | <i>Cinónio</i> , ‘ <i>Osservazióni délla Lúngua Italiána</i> ,’ <i>tómo</i> o. |

| | |
|-----------------------|--|
| Class. | Esémpio tiráto da Autóre <i>Clássico</i> , del quale non si rimémbra il nóme. Occorre rarissime vólte. |
| Cort. Osserv. | <i>Corticélli</i> (Salvadóre), 'Régoles ed Osservazioni della Língua Toscana.' |
| Cr. | } <i>Crescénzi</i> (Piétro dé'), 'Trattáto dell' Agricoltúra, lib. o. cap. o. núm. o.' |
| Cresc. o. o. o. | |
| Cron. Mor. | |
| Crus. | } 'Vocabolário dégli Accadémici délla <i>Crú-sca</i> .' |
| Crú-sca. | |
| Dant. Inf. o. | } <i>Dánte Alighiéri</i> , 'Divína Commédia,' <i>Infér-no</i> , cánto o. |
| — Pur. & Purg. o. | |
| — Par. & Parad. o. | |
| — Conv. | |
| — Rim. | —, 'Ríme.' |
| Dav. | } <i>Davanzáti</i> (Bernárdo), 'Ópere.' |
| Davan. | |
| — Scism. p. o. | —, 'Scisma d' Inghiltérra,' <i>pág. o.</i> |
| — Colt. | —, 'Coltivazione Toscana.' |
| — Tac. ann. l. o. o. | —, Volgarizzaménto dégli ' <i>Annáli di Cornélio Tácito</i> ,' lib. o. <i>pág. o.</i> |
| — St. | } —, Volgarizzaménto délle ' <i>Stórie di Tácito</i> ,' lib. o. <i>pág. o.</i> |
| — Stor. | |
| — Tac. Stor. o. o. | } —, Volgarizzaménto délla ' <i>Germánia di Tácito</i> ,' <i>pág. o.</i> |
| — Tac. Germ. o. | |
| — Vit. Agr. o. | —, Volgarizzaménto della ' <i>Vita di Giúlio Agricola</i> di Tácito,' <i>pág. o.</i> |
| — Tac. Perd. Eloq. o. | —, Volgarizzaménto del ' <i>Diálogo dél-le Cagióni délla Perdúta Eloquénza</i> di Tácito,' <i>pág. o.</i> |
| — Tac. Post. o. | —, ' <i>Postille</i> ai primi séi líbri délla sua traduzióne dégli <i>Annáli di Tácito</i> ,' <i>pág. o.</i> |
| Declam. Quintil. C. | Volgarizzaménto délle ' <i>Declamazioni di Quintiliáno</i> , tésto a pénna di Mattéo Caccini. (<i>Citáto nel Vocabolário</i> .) |
| Demetr. Segn. o. | Volgarizzaménto délla 'Locuzióne di <i>Demétrio Faléreo</i> ' di Piéro Ségni, <i>pág. o.</i> |
| Den. | } <i>Denina</i> (Cárlo), ' <i>Rivoluzioni d' Itália</i> ,' lib. o. <i>cap. o.</i> |
| — Riv. Ital. l. o. | |
| — c. o. | } —, 'Discórso Sóp-ra le Vicénde délla <i>Letteratúra</i> .' |
| — Letter. | |
| — Lett. | } —, ' <i>Saggio sópra la Letteratúra Itali-ána</i> .' |
| — Sag. Letter. | |

| | |
|------------------------|--|
| Dep. Decam. o. | { 'Annotazioni e Discorsi sopra alcuni luoghi del <i>Decamerone</i> di Giovanni Boccaccio, fatti da' <i>Deputati</i> ' [eletti dal Gran-Duca Cosimo I. l' anno 1565, per la correzione di quell' opera], pag. o. |
| Dial. S. Greg. m. | Volgarizzamento de' ' <i>Dialoghi di San Gregorio Magno.</i> ' |
| Din. Comp. o. o. | <i>Compagni (Dino)</i> , 'Storia, ovvero Cronaca Fiorentina, lib. o. pag. o. |
| Dittam. | { ' <i>Il Dittamondo</i> ' di Fazio degli Uberti, lib. |
| — o. o. | { o. cap. o. |
| Eriz. Giorn. | <i>Erizzo</i> (Sebastiano), ' <i>Le Sei Giornate.</i> ' |
| Fav. Esop. o. | Volgarizzamento delle ' <i>Favole d' Esopo</i> ,' pag. o. (<i>Testo a penna, citato nel Vocabolario.</i>) |
| Fior. Vt. c. o. | ' <i>Fiore di Virtù</i> ,' cap. o. |
| Fir. | { |
| Firenz. Asin. | { <i>Firenzuola</i> (Agnolo), Traduzione dell' ' <i>Asino d' Oro d' Apuleio</i> ,' pag. o. |
| — As. d' Or. o. | { |
| — dial. bell. donn. o. | —, ' <i>Dialogo delle Bellezze delle Donne</i> ,' pag. o. |
| — disc. an. o. | —, ' <i>Discorso degli Animali</i> ,' pag. o. |
| — Luc. o. o. | —, ' <i>I Lucidi</i> ,' comedia, atto o. scena o. |
| — nov. o. | —, ' <i>Novelle</i> ,' novella o. |
| — Trin. o. o. | —, ' <i>Trinuzia</i> ,' comedia, atto o. scena o. |
| Fosc. | <i>Foscolo</i> (Ugo), 'Esame Critico de' Commentatori di Dante.' |
| Fr. Giord. | { <i>Fra Giordano</i> da Ripalta, ' <i>Prediche</i> ,' |
| Fra Giord. o. | { pag. o. |
| — S. Pred. o. | —, testo (a penna) <i>Salviati</i> , <i>predica</i> o. (<i>Citato nel Vocabolario.</i>) |
| Fr. Guitt. | { <i>Fra Guittone</i> d' Arezzo, ' <i>Lettere</i> ,' lettera |
| Fra Guitt. lett. o. | { o. |
| Franc. Barb. o. o. | <i>Barberino</i> (Francesco), 'Documenti d' Amore,' poesie, pag. o. verso o. |
| Fr. Sacch. | { |
| Fran. Sacch. | { <i>Vedi Sacch.</i> |
| Franc. Sacch. | { |
| Fris. Elog. Galil. | <i>Frìsi</i> (Paolo), ' <i>Elogio di Galileo Galilei.</i> ' |
| Gal. | { |
| Gall. o. | { <i>Galileo Galilei</i> , ' <i>Saggiatore</i> ,' pag. o. |
| — Mach. Sol. o. | —, ' <i>Istoria e Dimostrazioni intorno alle Macchie Solari</i> , e loro accidenti,' pag. o. |
| Gang. | { <i>Ganganelli</i> (Giovann-Vincenzo Antonio [Papa Clemente XIV.]), ' <i>Lettere.</i> ' |
| — lett. | { |

| | |
|------------------------|---|
| Gell. | } <i>Gelli</i> (Giovam-Battista), 'La <i>Circe</i> ,' diálogo |
| — Circ. o. o. | } o. pág. o. |
| Giamb. l. o. | <i>Giambullari</i> (Pier-Francesco), 'Stória d' Európa,' lib. o. |
| Gian. Stor. Civ. | } <i>Giannone</i> (Piétro), 'Stória Civile del Régno di Nápoli,' lib. o. cap. o. |
| Nap. l. o. c. o. | } |
| Gio. Fior. Pecor. | } <i>Védi Ser Giov. Pecor.</i> |
| g. o. n. o. | } |
| Gio. & Giov. Vill. | } <i>Villani</i> (Giovánni), 'Stória,' lib. o. cap. o. |
| l. o. c. o. o. | } núm. o. |
| Giral. lett. | <i>Giraldi</i> (Girálido), 'Léttere.' |
| Gold. | } <i>Goldoni</i> (Cárló), 'L' <i>Avventurière</i> Onoráto,' |
| — Avvent. | } comédia. |
| — Ver. Am. | — 'Il <i>Véro Amico</i> ,' comédia. |
| Gr. | } Volgarizzaménto dé' 'Grádi di San Girólamo,' cap. o. pag. o. |
| — S. Gir. o. o. | } |
| Gram. Gram. | <i>Védi Barb. Gr. Gr.</i> |
| Guar. Past. Fid. o. o. | <i>Guarini</i> (Giovam-Battista), 'Pastór Fido,' |
| | átto o. scéna o. |
| Guicc. | } <i>Guicciardini</i> (Francesco), 'Stória d' <i>Itália</i> ,' |
| — Stor. o. o. | } lib. o. pág. o. |
| — Stor. Ital. | } |
| Guid. | } <i>Guido</i> Giúdice dälle Colónne di Messína, |
| — o. | } Volgarizzaménto délla 'Stória délla Guér- ra Troiána' pág. o. (<i>Tèsto a pénna, citáto nel Vocabolário.</i>) |
| Incer. c. o. | 'Ríme Antiche d' <i>Incerti Autóri</i> ,' canzóna o. |
| Lab. o. | <i>Védi Bocc. Lab., Laber.</i> |
| Lasc. Sibill. o. o. | <i>Grazzini</i> (Anton-Francesco) détto il <i>Lásca</i> , |
| | 'La <i>Sibilla</i> ,' comédia, átto o. scéna o. |
| — Spir. o. o. | —, 'La <i>Spiritáta</i> ,' comédia, átto o. scéna o. |
| Lib. Cur. Malatt. | Volgarizzaménto del 'Libro, ossía Trattáto délla <i>Cúra</i> di tütte le <i>Malattio</i> .' (<i>Tèsto a pénna, citáto nel Vocabolário.</i>) |
| Libr. Adorn. Donn. | 'Libro dégli <i>Adornaménti delle Dónne</i> .' (<i>Tèsto a pénna, citáto nel Vocabolário.</i>) |
| Lipp. M. o. o. | } <i>Lippi</i> (Lorénzo), 'Il <i>Malmantile</i> Racqui- |
| — Malm. o. o. | } státo,' cánto o. stánza o. |
| Liv. dec. o. | Volgarizzaménto délle 'Déche (Príma e Tërza) di <i>Títo Lívio</i> ,' déca o. (<i>Tèsto a pénna, citáto nel Vocabolário.</i>) |
| Lod. Mar. Rim. o. | <i>Martelli</i> (Lodovico), 'Ríme,' pág. o. |
| Lod. Nov. | <i>Lódoli</i> (Francesco), 'Novélle.' |
| Lor. Med. c. o. | <i>Médici</i> (Lorénzo dé'), 'Canzóni a Báлло, canzóna o. |

| | |
|-------------------------------|---|
| — Nenc. o. | —, ‘ <i>La Nència,</i> ’ stánza o. |
| — Arid. Prolog. | —, ‘ <i>(Lorenzino dé), ‘Aridósio,</i> ’ comédia, <i>Prólogo.</i> |
| — — o. o. | —, ‘ <i>Aridósio,</i> ’ átto o. scéna o. |
| Mach. | } <i>Machiavèlli</i> (Niccolò), ‘ <i>Istórie Fiorentine,</i> ’ lib. o. |
| — Stor. Fior. l. o. | |
| — Com. | —, ‘ <i>Comédie.</i> ’ |
| — lett. | —, ‘ <i>Léttere.</i> ’ |
| — Mandrag. | —, ‘ <i>La Mandrágora,</i> ’ comédia. |
| — Princ. | —, ‘ <i>Il Príncipe.</i> ’ |
| Maestruzz. o. o. | Volgarizzaménto délla ‘ <i>Sómma Pisanélla,</i> ’ détta il <i>Maestrúzzo,</i> ’ lib. o. cap. o. (<i>Tèsto a penna, citáto nel Vocabolário.</i>) |
| Maff. Mer. o. o. | <i>Maffèi</i> (Scipióne), ‘ <i>Mérope,</i> ’ tragédia, átto o. scéna o. |
| Manz. Prom. Spos. c. o. | <i>Manzóni</i> (Alessándro), ‘ <i>I Proméssi Spósi,</i> ’ cap. o. |
| Matt. Fran. | } <i>Franzési</i> (<i>Mattéo</i>), ‘ <i>Ríme Burlésche,</i> ’ vol. o. |
| — Franz. Rim. o. o. | |
| Matt. Vill. o. o. | <i>Villáni</i> (<i>Mattéo</i>), ‘ <i>Stória,</i> ’ lib. o. cap. o. |
| Mes. Bin. Rim. l. o. | <i>Messér Bino</i> , ‘ <i>Ríme Burlésche,</i> ’ lib. o. |
| — Cin. o. | — <i>Cino</i> da Pistóia, ‘ <i>Ríme.</i> ’ pág. o. |
| Metast. Artas. o. o. | <i>Metastásio</i> (Piétro), ‘ <i>Artasérse,</i> ’ drámma, átto o. scéna o. |
| — lett. | —, ‘ <i>Léttere.</i> ’ |
| Miliz. Art. Dis. | <i>Milizia</i> (Francésco), ‘ <i>Dizionário delle Belle Arti del Diségno.</i> ’ |
| Mor. S. Greg. & Gregor. o. o. | } <i>Vedi Zan. da Strat.</i> |
| Nov. Ant. o. | |
| Ovid. Pist. | Volgarizzaménto delle ‘ <i>Pistole d’ Ovidio.</i> ’ (<i>Tèsto a penna, citáto nel Vocabolário.</i>) |
| Pall. | <i>Pallavicino</i> , ‘ <i>Concílio di Trénto.</i> ’ |
| Pass. | } <i>Passavánti</i> (Fra Jácopo), ‘ <i>Spécchio di Vera Peniténza,</i> ’ pág. o. |
| Passav. o. | |
| — Ver. Pen. | |
| — Spec. Ver. Pen. | |
| Past. Fid. o. o. | Védi <i>Guar. Past. Fid.</i> o. o. |
| Pataff. o. | Védi <i>Brun.</i> ; <i>Brunet. Pataff.</i> |
| Pecor. g. o. n. o. | — <i>Gio. Fior. Pecor.</i> |
| Petr. ³ | } <i>Petrárca</i> (Francésco), ‘ <i>Ríme.</i> ’ |
| — s. o. | |
| — c. o. | |
| — lett. | |

| | | | |
|------------------------|---|--|--|
| — Tr. | } | —, ‘ <i>Trionfi.</i> ’ | |
| — Tri. | | | |
| — Trionf. | | | |
| — — Am. | } | —, ‘ <i>Trionfo d’ Amóre.</i> ’ | |
| — — Amor. | | | |
| — — Fam. | | —, — ‘ <i>délla Fáma.</i> ’ | |
| — — Mort. | | —, — ‘ <i>délla Mórte.</i> ’ | |
| — — Tem. | } | —, — ‘ <i>del Témpo.</i> ’ | |
| — — Temp. | | | |
| — — — c. o. | | —, — —, <i>cap. o.</i> | |
| — Uom. ill. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Víte dégli Uómini Illústri,</i> ’ volgarizzáte, <i>pág. o.</i> | |
| Pign. Fav. | | <i>Pignótti</i> (Lorénzo), ‘ <i>Fávole.</i> ’ | |
| Poliz. St. o. o. | | <i>Poliziano</i> , (Ágnolo), ‘ <i>Stánze per la Giostra di Giuliano,</i> ’ <i>cánto o. stánza o.</i> | |
| Pros. Fior. o. | | ‘ <i>Próse Fiorentine,</i> ’ <i>pág. o.</i> | |
| Red. annot. Ditr. | | <i>Rédi</i> (Francésco), ‘ <i>Annotazioni al súo Dittirámbo.</i> ’ | |
| — cons. o. o. | | — ‘ <i>Consulti Médici,</i> vol. o. <i>pág. o.</i> | |
| — Ditr. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Bácco in Toscana,</i> ’ <i>dittirámbo,</i> <i>pág. o.</i> | |
| — Ins. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Esperiénze intórno álla generazióne degl’ Insétti,</i> ’ <i>pág. o.</i> | |
| — lett. o. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Léttere Familiári,</i> ’ vol. o. <i>pág. o.</i> | |
| — Vip. o. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Osservazioni intórno álle Vipere,</i> ’ <i>léttere,</i> vol. o. <i>pág. o.</i> | |
| Ricett. Fior. o. | | ‘ <i>Ricettario Fiorentino,</i> ’ <i>pág. o.</i> | |
| Rim. Ant. p. o. | | ‘ <i>Rime Antiche,</i> ’ <i>ossia Raccólta di Sonétti, Canzóni, ed áltre Rime di divérsi antíchi poéti Toscáni,</i> ’ <i>pág. o.</i> | |
| Rosásco. | | <i>Rosásco</i> (Girólamo), ‘ <i>Délla Língua Toscana, Diáloghi Sétte.</i> ’ | |
| Sacch. n. o. | | <i>Sacchétti</i> (Fránco), ‘ <i>Novélla,</i> ’ <i>novélla o.</i> | |
| — rim. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Rime,</i> ’ <i>pág. o.</i> | |
| — Op. div. o. | | —, ‘ <i>O’pere Diverse,</i> ’ <i>pág. o.</i> | |
| Sag. Nat. esp. o. | | ‘ <i>Saggi di Naturáli Esperiénze,</i> ’ <i>fátte nell’ Accadémia del Címénto, descritti da Lorénzo Magalótti,</i> <i>pág. o.</i> | |
| Salv. Avvert. vol. | } | <i>Salviati</i> (Leonárdo), ‘ <i>Avvertiménti délla Língua sópra il Decameróne,</i> ’ vol. o. <i>lib. o. cap. o.</i> | |
| — o. l. o. | | | |
| — o. o. o. | | | |
| — Granch. o. o. | | —, ‘ <i>Il Gránchio,</i> ’ <i>comédia, átto o. scéna o.</i> | |
| — Spin. o. o. | | —, ‘ <i>La Spina,</i> ’ <i>comédia, átto o. scéna o.</i> | |
| Salvin. Pros. Tosc. o. | | <i>Salvini</i> (Anton-María), ‘ <i>Próse Toscáne,</i> ’ <i>pág. o.</i> | |

| | |
|--|--|
| Scal. S. Agost. | Volgarizzaménto délla ‘ <i>Scála del Paradiso</i> ,’ attribúta a <i>Sant’ Agostino</i> . (<i>Tèsto a penna, citáto nel Vocabolário.</i>) |
| Segn. Crist. instr. } o. o. } | <i>Ségneri</i> (Páolo), ‘ <i>Il Cristiano Istruito</i> nélla sua Lègge,’ pártè o. ragionaménto o. |
| — Mann. Marz. o. | —, ‘ <i>Mánna</i> dell’ ánima,’ mése di <i>Márzo</i> . giòrno o. |
| — — Nov. o. | —, —, mése di <i>Novembre</i> . giòrno o. |
| Sen. } — Pist. o. } | Volgarizzaménto délle ‘ <i>Pistole di Séneca</i> ,’ pistola o. |
| Ser Giov. Fior. } Pecor. } | <i>Ser Giovanni Fiorentino</i> , ‘ <i>Il Pecoróne</i> ,’ giornáta o. novélla o. |
| — Gio. Fior. Pe- } cor. g. o. n. o. } | |
| Soav. Nov. | <i>Soave</i> (Francésco) ‘ <i>Novèlle Moráli</i> .’ |
| Sod. Colt. o. | <i>Soderini</i> (Giovan-Vittório), ‘ <i>La Coltivazione</i> délle Viti,’ pág. o. |
| St. Agost. Citt. Dio. } o. o. } | Volgarizzaménto délla ‘ <i>Città di Dio</i> ’ di <i>Sant’ Agostino</i> , lib. o. cap. o. (<i>Tèsto a penna, citáto nel Vocabolário.</i>) |
| Stor. Pistol. p. o. | ‘ <i>Storie Pistolési</i> , ovvéro délle cose avvenúte in Toscana dal 1300 al 1348,’ pág. o. |
| Stor. Semif. o. | Volgarizzaménto della ‘ <i>Storia di Semifonte</i> ,’ pág. o. |
| Tass. Am. o. o. } — Amint. o. o. } | <i>Tasso</i> (Torquáto), ‘ <i>Aminta</i> , Fávola Boscheréccia,’ átto o scéna o. |
| — Ger. o. o. | —, ‘ <i>Gerusalémme Liberáta</i> , cánto o. stánza o. |
| Teor. Verb. Ital. } part. o. §. n. } | ‘ <i>Teórica dé’ Verbi Italiáni</i> ,’ di Giuséppe Compagnóni, pártè o. parágráfo o. |
| Tolom. } — lett. } | <i>Tolomméi</i> (Cláudio), ‘ <i>Léttere</i> .’ |
| Tratt. segr. cos. } donn. } | ‘ <i>Trattáto délle Segréte cose délle Donne</i> .’ (<i>Tèsto a penna, citáto nel Vocabolário.</i>) |
| Vanz. | <i>Vanzon</i> (Cárlo António), ‘ <i>Grammática Ragionáta délla Língua Italiána</i> .’ |
| Varch. } — Boez. o. o. } | <i>Varchi</i> (Benedétto), Traduzióne délla ‘ <i>Consolazióne Filosofica di Boézio</i> , lib. o. prósa & ríma o. |
| — Ercol. o. | —, ‘ <i>Ercoláno</i> , ossía Ragionaménto sùlle Língue,’ pág. o. |
| — Rim. o. | — ‘ <i>Ríme</i> ,’ pág. o. |
| — Sen. ben. o. o. | Traduzióne dé’ líbri dé’ ‘ <i>Benefizj di Séneca</i> ,’ lib. o. cap. o. |
| Vas. | <i>Vasári</i> (Giórgio), ‘ <i>Trattáto délla Pittúra</i> .’ |
| Vill. | Védi <i>Gio. & Giov. Vill.</i> |

| | |
|----------------------|--|
| Vinc. Mart. rim. o. | <i>Martelli</i> (Vincenzo), 'Rime e Lettere,' pag. o |
| Vit. S. Ant. | ' <i>Vita di Sant' Antonio.</i> ' (Tèsto a penna, citato nel Vocabolario) |
| — S. Cater. | '—— di Santa Caterina da Siena.' |
| — S. Franc. | '—— di San Francesco.' |
| — S. G. Bat. | } '—— di San Giovam-Battista.' |
| — S. Gio. Batt. | |
| — S. Giov. Guald. | |
| (Guad. lib.) o. | '—— di San Giovam-Battista, MS. della Libreria de' Guadagni, pag. o. (Citato nel Vocabolario.) |
| — SS. PP. o. o. | } Volgarizzamento delle 'Vite de' Santi Padri,' vol. o. pag. o. |
| — — Pad. o. o. | |
| Zan. da Strat. o. o. | <i>Zanobi da Strata</i> , Volgarizzamento de' 'Morali di San Gregorio Magno,' lib. o. num. o. |
| Zibald. Andr. o. o. | ' <i>Zibaldone</i> , ovvero Libro di Varie Cose,' tèsto a penna di <i>Andrea Andreini</i> , parte o. pag. o. (Citato nel Vocabolario.) |

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.



INTRODUCTION.

GRAMMAR is the art of *speaking* and *writing* correctly.

SPEAKING and WRITING are the expression of our thoughts by *words*.

WORDS may be considered as *articulate sounds*, or as *signs of our thoughts*.

Words considered as ARTICULATE SOUNDS, are formed of *syllables*, and syllables of *letters*.

SYLLABLES consist of one or more letters pronounced by a single impulse of the voice, and constituting a word, or part of a word.

Words that consist of one syllable, are called *monosyllables*; those that consist of two syllables, are called *dissyllables*; and those that consist of more syllables, are called *polysyllables*.

LETTERS are certain figures or characters, which represent *sounds* and *articulations*.

SOUNDS are simple emissions of the voice; and ARTICULATIONS are the modifications which sounds receive by the movements of the organs of speech. The letters which represent the sounds, as, *a, e, i, &c.*, are called *vowels*; and those which represent the articulations, as, *b, c, d, &c.*, are called *consonants*, because they can only be *sounded with* a vowel.

The union of two vowels, pronounced by a single impulse of the voice, is called a *diphthong*; and that of three vowels pronounced in like manner, is called a *triphthong*.

Words considered as SIGNS OF OUR THOUGHTS, are divided into several classes, which constitute the different PARTS OF SPEECH. These in Italian are nine; viz. the *article, noun, pronoun, verb, participle, adverb, preposition, conjunction, and interjection*.

Of these nine Parts of Speech, the *article, noun, pronoun, verb, and participle*, are VARIABLE, that is, change their termination; the rest are INVARIABLE.

The **ARTICLE** is a word placed before a noun to denote the extent of its signification; as, *il, lo, la*, 'the':—*IL libro*, 'the book'; *Lo sprone*, 'the spur'; *LA casa*, 'the house'.

The **NOUN** is either *substantive*, or *adjective*.

A **SUBSTANTIVE** noun is a word, which serves to denote a person or thing; as, *Piétro*, 'Peter'; *sòle*, 'sun'; *virtù*, 'virtue'.

Substantive nouns are either *proper* or *common*.

A *proper* noun is one, which is individually applicable to a person or thing; as, *Césare*, 'Cæsar'; *Róma*, 'Rome'.

A *common* noun is one, which may be applied to all persons or things of the same kind; as, *uómo*, 'man'; *città*, 'city'.

Some common nouns are also called *collective*, from their presenting to the mind the idea of a collection of persons or things; as, *gènte*, 'people'; *esército*, 'army'.

An **ADJECTIVE** noun is a word added to a substantive to express its quality; as, *dòtto*, 'learned'; *bèlla*, 'beautiful':—*un uómo dòtto*, 'a learned man'; *una bèlla città*, 'a beautiful city'.

Adjectives may express the quality of an object, either *absolutely*, that is, without any relation to other objects, or *relatively* to other objects; which produces different degrees of qualification: these have been reduced to the following three, viz. the *positive*, *comparative*, and *superlative*.

The *positive* is the adjective itself, expressing the quality of an object, without any relation of comparison; as *ricco*, 'rich'; *póvero*, 'poor'.

The *comparative* is the adjective expressing a relation of *superiority*, *inferiority*, or *equality*, between two or more objects in comparison; as, *più, méno*, or *sì ricco*, 'more, less, or so rich'; *più, méno*, or *sì póvero*, 'more, less, or so poor':—*Piétro è più*, or *méno ricco di Tommáso*, 'Peter is more, or less rich than Thomas'; *Tommáso è più*, or *méno póvero di Páolo*, 'Thomas is more, or less poor than Paul'; *Piétro e Tommáso sòno sì ricchi*, or *sì póveri cóme Páolo*, 'Peter and Thomas are so rich, or so poor as Paul'.

The *Superlative* is the adjective expressing the quality of the object in the highest degree of superiority, or the lowest degree of inferiority.

There are two kinds of superlative, the *relative*, and the *absolute*.

The *relative* superlative expresses the superiority or inferiority of an object, with relation to others; as, *il più*, or *il méno ricco*, 'the most, or the least rich'; *il più*, or *il méno póvero*, 'the most, or the least poor':—*Tommáso è IL PIÙ*, or *IL MÉNO ricco*,—*Páolo è IL PIÙ*, or *IL MÉNO PÓVERO, di tutti*; 'Thomas is the most, or the least rich,—Paul is the most, or the least poor, of all'.

The *absolute* superlative shows that the object spoken of possesses a quality in the superlative degree, but without reference to any other; as, *ricchissimo*, 'very rich'; *poverissimo*, 'very poor'.

A great number of Italian nouns are susceptible of a change of termination, which, modifying the primitive idea expressed by them, augments or diminishes their signification; as, *uómo*, 'man'; *omóne*, 'large man': *ruscélllo*, 'brook'; *RUSCELLÉtto*, 'small brook'. The nouns thus altered, are called **AUGMENTATIVES** and **DIMINUTIVES**.

With nouns are usually classed the **NUMERALS**, which are either *cardinal*, or *ordinal*.

Cardinal numbers are those, which determine a collection of objects, with regard to their number or quantity; as, *úno*, 'one'; *diéci*, 'ten'.

Ordinal numbers determine objects with regard to their order or arrangement; as, *primo*, 'first'; *décimo*, 'tenth'.

Italian nouns are varied by *gender* and *number*.

Gender is a division of nouns according to sex. Nouns denoting males are *masculine*; nouns denoting females are *feminine*. This division, which properly regards only nouns having sex, is in Italian extended also to all other nouns, though they have no sex; so that every noun is either of the *masculine* or *feminine* gender. But there are certain nouns which belong to both genders, and these are said to be of the *common* gender.

Number is the designation of one or more objects. There are two numbers, viz. the *singular* and *plural*. The *singular* designates one single person or thing; the *plural*, more than one person or thing.

The various relations of nouns, which in Latin are denoted by different terminations, or *cases*, are expressed in Italian by certain *prepositions* placed before them; and for the *nominative* and *accusative* of the Latin, have been substituted the terms *subjective*, and *objective*; and for the *genitive*, *dative*, and *ablative*,—the terms *relation of possession*, *of attribution*, and *of derivation*.

A **PRONOUN** is a word used instead of a noun, already expressed, to prevent its frequent repetition; and like the noun is either *substantive* or *adjective*.

Substantive pronouns are either *personal*, *conjunctive*, *relative*, or *interrogative*; and *adjective pronouns* are either *possessive*, *demonstrative*, or *indefinite*.

The *personal* pronouns are those, which mark the *persons*.

The *persons* are three, viz. the *first*, *second*, and *third*. The *first* is the person speaking; as, *io*, 'I'; *noi*, 'we':—the *second* is the person spoken to; as, *tu*, 'thou'; *voi*, 'you':—and the *third* is the person spoken of; as, *egli*, 'he'; *ella*, 'she'; *egli*no, *èllo*no, 'they'.

The *conjunctive* pronouns are those, which are always joined to a verb. They are derived from the personal pronouns, and are divided into *conjunctive*, properly speaking; as, *mi*, 'me', or 'to me'; *ti*, 'thee', or 'to thee'; *si*, 'one's self', or 'to ones' self':—*MI duòle*, 'it grieves me'; *TI parla*, 'he speaks to thee'; *SI loda*, 'he praises himself':—and *relative conjunctive* pronouns; as, *ne*, 'of it, of him, of her', or 'of them';—*NE vorréi vedér la fine*, 'I should like to see the end of it'.

The *relative* pronouns are those, which refer to a person or thing, that has been before spoken of; as, *chi*, 'who' or 'he that'; *che*, *il quále*, 'who', or 'which that':—*CHI si umilia si esalta*, 'who', or 'he that humbles himself exalts himself': *l' uòmo*, *CHE* or *il quále scrive*, 'the man, who or that writes'; *il libro*, *CHE* or *il quále io léggio*, 'the book, which or that I read'.

The person or thing, which relative pronouns refer to, is called the *antecedent*.

The *interrogative* pronouns are those, which are used to interrogate, or ask a question; as, *chi?* 'who?' *che?* 'what?' *quále?* 'which?'—*CHI è?* 'who is it?' *CHE fate?* 'what are you doing?' *QUALE voléte?* 'which will you have?'

The *possessive* pronouns are those, which mark the possession of a person or a thing; as, *mio*, 'my', or 'mine'; *tuo*, 'thy', or 'thine'; *suo*, 'his, her, hers', or 'its':—*mio fratèllo*, 'my brother'; *il tuo cappèllo*, 'thy hat'; *questo è suo*, 'this is his, hers', or 'its'.

The *demonstrative* pronouns are those, which point out the particular person or thing of which we speak; as, *questo*, 'this'; *quello*, 'that'; *cotèsto*, 'that near you':—*QUESTO giovine*, 'this youth'; *QUELLO spécchio*, 'that looking-glass'; *COTÈSTO libro*, 'that book near you'.

The *indefinite* pronouns are those, which express a person or thing in a general and unlimited sense; as, *alcúno*, 'some one'; *ogni*, 'every'; *niènte*, 'nothing'.

Italian pronouns, like the nouns, are varied by gender and number.

A *VERB* is a word, which by itself implies affirmation; as, *èssere*, 'to be':—*ÈSSERE amabile*, 'to be amiable': and necessarily supposes a *subject* and a *quality*, to which it affirms that the subject is, or is not attributed; as, *la virtù è amabile*,

‘virtue is amiable’; *la PIGRÍZIA non è LODÉVOLE*, ‘slothfulness is not laudable’.

There is but one verb, strictly speaking; *essere*, ‘to be’; because this alone expresses affirmation. But there are other words, which in themselves contain both the verb *essere*, and the *quality*, which it affirms to belong to the *subject* of which we speak; as, *amàre* (*essere amànte*), ‘to love (to be a lover of)’; *sprezzàre* (*essere sprezzànte*), ‘to despise (to be a despiser of)’:—*egli AMA* (*egli È AMANTE*), ‘he loves (he is a lover of)’; *ella SPREZZA* (*ella È SPREZZANTE*), ‘she despises (she is a despiser of)’; and to these has also been given the name of *verbs*, and they are used to express the quality of the subject, or the action it performs or it undergoes.

Verbs are commonly divided into *active*, *passive*, *neuter*, *pronominal*, and *unipersonal*.

Active verbs are those, that express an action, which falls or may immediately fall upon an *object*; as, *amàre*, ‘to love’:—*amàre LA VIRTÙ*, ‘to love virtue’.

The object upon which the action of the verb falls, is called the *regimen* or *complement* of this verb. Besides this first complement, which is called *direct*, many active verbs may have a second complement, which is called *indirect*; as, *scrivere*, ‘to write’:—*scrivere UNA LETTERA*, ‘to write a letter’:—*scrivere una lettera AD UN AMICO*, ‘to write a letter to a friend.’ This last, however, properly speaking, is rather a *complement* of the *preposition*, which always precedes it.

Passive verbs are those, that express an action which falls upon the *subject*; as *essere amàto*, ‘to be loved’:—*LA VIRTÙ È amàta*, ‘virtue is loved’.

Neuter verbs are those, that express a state of being, or an action which does not fall directly upon an object; as, *dormire*, ‘to sleep’; *nuocere*, ‘to be noxious’.

Pronominal verbs are those, that are varied with two pronouns of the same person; as, *vender-si*, ‘to sell’ or ‘to be sold’:—*QUESTO LIBRO SI vende caro*, ‘this book sells’, or ‘is sold dear’.

To pronominal, properly, belong *reflective* and *reciprocal* verbs.

Reflective verbs are those, that express either the action of a subject which acts upon itself; as, *difender-si*, ‘to defend ones’ self’:—*io MI difendo*, ‘I defend myself’; or an action of the subject, which terminates finally in itself; as, *far-si un dovere* ‘to make to ones’ self a duty’:—*egli SI fa un dovere*, ‘he makes to himself a duty’.

Reciprocal verbs are those, that express the action of several subjects, who act respectively the one upon the other; as, *aiutar-si*; ‘to assist each other’; *noi CI aiutiamo*, ‘we assist each other’.

Unipersonal, or, as they are usually called, *impersonal* verbs, are those, that are used only in the third person singular of each tense; as, *accadere*, 'to happen':—*accáde*, 'it happens'; *accádde*, 'it happened'; *accaderà*, 'it will happen'.

There are moreover two verbs, which generally assist to vary other verbs, and which, consequently, are called *auxiliary verbs*: these are, *avere*, 'to have'; and *essere*, 'to be':—*avére letto*, 'to have read'; *ESSERE partito*, 'to (be) have departed'.

Italian verbs are varied by *mood*, *tense*, *number*, and *person*.

Mood is a particular form of the verb, which shows the manner in which the action, or the state of being, is represented.

There are five moods, viz. the *infinitive*, *indicative*, *conjunctive*, *conditional*, and *imperative*.

The *infinitive*, represents the action in an indefinite manner, and without distinction of person or number; as, *scrivere*, 'to write'.

The *indicative* represents the action absolutely, and without dependence on any other word; as, *io scrivo*, 'I write'.

The *conjunctive* represents the action as depending upon another verb with which it is connected by a conjunction; as, *bisogna, che io scriva*, 'it is necessary, that I write'.

The *conditional* represents the action with dependence upon a condition; as, *io SCRIVERÉI, se potessi*, 'I should write, if I could'.

The *imperative* represents the action in commanding, exhorting, or intreating; as, *scrivi*, 'write thou'; *scrivete*, 'write ye'; *scriviamo*, 'let us write'.

Each of these moods, except the imperative, has different tenses.

Tense is a distinction of time, which shows when the action is done. Time, strictly speaking, is either *present*, *past*, or *future*.

The *present* denotes the action doing by a subject at the very time in which we are speaking; as, *io CANTO*, 'I sing'.

The *past* or *preterite* denotes the action done by a subject before the time in which we are speaking; as, *io CANTÁI*, 'I sang'.

The *future* denotes the action to be done by a subject after the time in which we are speaking; as, *io CANTERÒ*, 'I will sing'.

The preterite is divided into *imperfect* and *perfect*.

The *imperfect* expresses an action done in a time past, but present in respect to another action done in a time also past; as, *io CANTÁVA, quando voi entraste*, 'I was singing, when you came in'.

The *perfect* expresses an action done in a time completely

past, and without reference to any other action; as *io cantái un' ária*, 'I sang an air'.

Tenses are either *simple* or *compound*.

Simple tenses are those, which are formed without the assistance of either the auxiliary verbs *avére*, 'to have', or *éssere*, 'to be'; as, *párlo*, 'I speak'; *vénni*, 'I came'; *loderò*, 'I will praise'.

Compound tenses are those, which are formed of the simple tenses of the auxiliary verb *avére*, 'to have', or *éssere*, 'to be', and the participle of the verb varied; as, *ho parláto*, 'I have spoken'; *sóno venúto*, 'I (am) have come'; *avrò lodáto*, or *sarò lodáto*, 'I will have praised,' or 'will be praised'.

Each tense contains two numbers; the *singular* and *plural*.

The number is *singular*, when one single subject causes the action of the verb; as, *io mángio*, 'I eat';—and it is *plural*, when more subjects contribute to the same action; as, *nói mangiámo*, 'we eat'.

Each number has three *persons*, which are denoted by the personal pronouns, *io*, 'I'; *tu*, 'thou'; *égli*, 'he', or *élla*, 'she'; in the singular;—and *nói*, 'we'; *vói*, 'you'; *églino*, or *élleno*, 'they'; in the plural; as, *io védo*, 'I see'; *tu védi*, 'thou seest'; *égli* or *élla véde*, 'he or she sees':—*nói vediámo*, 'we see'; *vói vedéte*, 'you see'; *églino* or *élleno védono*, 'they see'.

The assemblage of several verbs, forming all their moods, tenses, numbers, and persons, according to the same rule, is called a *conjugation*.

Such verbs as conform to the rule of any conjugation, are called *regular*; and such as differ in any respect, are called *irregular*.

Verbs which are not used in certain tenses, numbers, or persons, are called *defective*.

The **PARTICIPLE** is a word which *partakes* at the same time of the nature of the verb and of the adjective; as, *amánte*, 'loving'; *amáto*, 'loved.' It partakes of the nature of the verb, because it has its signification, and has reference to time; as, *amánte (che áma) Dio*, 'loving (who loves) God'; *amáto (che è amáto) da Dio*, 'loved (who is loved) by God'; and it partakes of the nature of the adjective, because, like an adjective, it qualifies a noun; as, *uómo onoráto*, 'honored man'; *virtù prováta*, 'tried virtue'.

Participles are divided into *present* and *past*.

The *present* participle expresses the action of the subject, or the quality of a noun, at the moment in which we speak; as, *amánte*, 'loving':—*dónna amánte*, 'a loving woman'.

The *past* participle expresses the action or quality as per-

fect or past; as, *temúto*, 'feared':—*castigo TEMÚTO*, 'feared punishment'.

With the participle is usually classed the GERUND, which, like the participle, is an inflexion of the verb, but has nothing in common with the adjective.

Italian participles are varied by gender and number.

An ADVERB is a word, which serves to modify a verb, an adjective, or another adverb, expressing the manner, or circumstances of its signification; as, *più*, 'more'; *molto*, 'very'; *distintamente*, 'distinctly':—*egli parla DISTINTAMENTE*, 'he speaks distinctly'; *siéte MOLTO sávio*, 'you are very wise'; *più sinceramente*, 'more sincerely'.

Adverbs are divided into those of *quality*, *order*, *time*, *place*, *quantity*, *comparison*, &c.

Adverbs of *quality* are those, which express the manner in which things are done; as, *saviamente*, 'wisely'; *elegantemente*, 'elegantly'; *inconsideratamente*, 'inconsiderately':—*egli pensa SAVIAMENTE*, 'he thinks wisely'; *ella scríve ELEGANTEMENTE*, 'she writes elegantly'; *hanno agito INCONSIDERATAMENTE*, 'they have acted inconsiderately'.

Adverbs of *order* serve to express the arrangement of things in regard to one another; as, *prima*, 'first'; *pòi*, 'then'; *da principio*, 'before'; *in séguito*, 'afterward':—*PRIMA andrémo in Frància*, 'we will go first to France'; *pòi in Itàlia*, 'then to Italy'; *DA PRINCIPIO si déve evitàre il mále*, 'we must before avoid evil'; *IN SÉGUITO si déve far del béne*, 'afterward we must do good'.

Adverbs of *time* are those, which express some relation of time; as, *iéri*, 'yesterday'; *oggi*, 'to-day'; *dománi*, 'to-morrow':—*lo vidi IÉRI*, 'I saw him yesterday'; *viéni ÓGGI*, 'come to-day'; *partirò DOMÁNI*, 'I shall depart to-morrow'.

Adverbs of *place* serve to denote the situation or the distance of an object; as, *quí*, 'here'; *là*, 'there'; *vicíno*, 'near'; *lontáno*, 'far':—*son QUI*, 'I am here'; *guardáte LÀ*, 'look there'; *sta QUI VICÍNO*, 'he lives near here'; *è tróppo LONTÁNO*, 'it is too far'.

Adverbs of *quantity* are those, which modify an object in relation to quantity; as, *póco*, 'little'; *assái*, 'much'; *abbastánza*, 'enough':—*parla ASSÁI*, 'he speaks much'; *risflette PÓCO*, 'he reflects little'; *ne ha ABBASTÁNZA*, 'he has enough of it'.

Adverbs of *comparison* serve to denote the different degrees of quality of the objects compared; as, *più*, 'more'; *méno*, 'less'; *così—còme*, 'so—as':—*l' onóre vále PIÙ delle ricchezze*, 'honor is worth more than riches'; *il súo cuore non è MÉN bello del viso*,

'her heart is not less beautiful than her face'; *égli non è sì dó-cile cóme è viváce*, 'he is not so docile as he is lively'.

Adverbs are either *simple* or *compound*. Simple adverbs are those which consist of a simple word; as, *quí*, 'here'; *pói*, 'then'; *béne*, 'well'; and compound adverbs are those, which consist of an adjective and the word *ménte*, 'manner'; as, *dolceménte* (*con dólce ménte*), 'sweetly (in a sweet manner)'. There are besides several expressions, which in several words announce the same idea that might be expressed by one adverb; as, *di buón grádo*, 'willingly'; *quánto prima*, 'very soon'; *all' improvviso*, 'unexpectedly'; and these are called **ADVERBIAL PHRASES**.

A **PREPOSITION** is a word, which is placed before a noun, a pronoun, or a verb, to show its relation to some other word; as, *in*, 'in'; *con*, 'with'; *sénza*, 'without':—*non è in cása*, 'he is not (in the house) at home'; *verrò con voi*, 'I will come with you'; *sénza andar più alle lúnghe*, 'without going any further'.

Prepositions have several denominations, viz. of *place*, *order*, *time*, *union*, *opposition*, &c. according to the several relations they express.

The word which follows the preposition is called its *regimen* or *complement*.

A **CONJUNCTION** is a word, which serves to join words and sentences together; as, *e*, 'and'; *nè*, 'nor, neither'; *ma*, 'but'; *nondiméno*, 'nevertheless':—*bélla e buóna*, 'handsome and good'; *NÈ mángia NÈ béve*, 'he neither eats nor drinks'; *égli è pòvero ma onoráto*, 'he is poor but honored'; *élla è mólto giòvane, e nondiméno è mólto sávia*, 'she is yet very young, and nevertheless she is very wise'.

Besides the general use of connecting words and sentences together, conjunctions sometimes express the particular point of view in which the mind considers the words and sentences so connected; hence the division of conjunctions into *explicative*, *adversative*, *alternative*, *conclusive*, &c.

AN **INTERJECTION** is a word, which is used to express an emotion or affection of the mind; as, *ah!* 'ah!' *oh!* 'oh!' *aimè!* 'alas!'

The affections of the mind may be of *joy*, *grief*, *indignation*, *contempt*, &c. which give to the interjections different denominations.

Of the foregoing Parts of Speech, some are occasionally employed, when they are not absolutely necessary to grammatical construction, but serve, nevertheless, to give strength and energy to the discourse; as, *già*, *mica*, *püre*, *mai*:—*GIÀ Dio non vógliá*, 'may God forbid'; *non son mica fávole*, 'they are not

fables'; *la cosa andò pur così*, 'the affairs went off so'; *MÁ: sí, che io le conósco*, 'yes, that I know them'. These words, when so used, are called **EXPLETIVES**.

WORDS form the whole subject of Grammar. They may be either expressed by the *voice*, or represented in *writing* by characters.

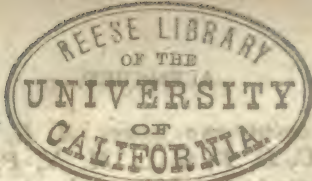
The collection of letters of which the words of a language are formed, is called the **ALPHABET**.

That part of Grammar, which teaches how to express the sounds of words, is called **PRONUNCIATION**.

That part which treats of the different sorts of words and their various modifications, is called **ANALOGY**.

That part of Grammar, which treats of the connexion and right order of words among themselves, is called **SYNTAX**.

That part, which teaches how to write words correctly, is called **ORTHOGRAPHY**.



ITALIAN ALPHABET.



THE *Italian Alphabet* contains *twenty-two letters*, which the modern Romans, following the Latin, name and pronounce as follows :

| (Figure) | (Name) | (Pron.) | (Figure) | (Name) | (Pron.) |
|----------|--------|---------|----------|--------|-----------|
| A | a | ah | M | m | aym' |
| B | b | bay | N | n | ayn' |
| C | c | chay | O | o | o |
| D | d | day | P | p | pay |
| E | e | ay | Q | q | koo |
| F | f | ayf' | R | r | ayr' |
| G | g | jay | S | s | ays' |
| H | h | acca | T | t | tay |
| I | i | ee | U | u | oo |
| J | j | yay | V | v | vay |
| L | l | ayl' | Z | z | dsay'-tah |

The Florentines, on the authority of the "Fathers of the Language,"* name and pronounce them as follows :

| (Figure) | (Name) | (Pron.) | (Figure) | (Name) | (Pron.) |
|----------|--------|---------------------|----------|--------|-----------|
| A | a | ah | M | m | aym'-may |
| B | b | bee | N | n | ayn'-nay |
| C | c | chee | O | o | o |
| D | d | dee | P | p | pee |
| E | e | ay | Q | q | koo |
| F | f | ayf'-fay | R | r | ayr'-ray |
| G | g | jee | S | s | ays'-say |
| H | h | acca | T | t | tee |
| I | i | i cóрто ee cor'-to | U | u | oo |
| J | j | i lúngo ee loon'-go | V | v | vee |
| L | l | élle ayl'-lay | Z | z | dsay'-tah |

* E di questi cotàli sòno mólti idióti, che non suprèbbono l' ABBICCI. (Dant. Conv.)

E'gli il crederèbbe allóra, che guardando vói, ègli crederèbbe, che vói sapèste l' ABBICCI. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 5.)

E fé' edificàre tante badie, quante lettere ha nell' ABBICCI. (Giov. Vill. l. 1. c. 13.)

And of such ones, there are many so ignorant, that do not know even the *ah-bee-chee'*.

He might think so, if looking at you at the same time, he should think that you had learned your *a-b-c*.

And caused so many convents to be built as there are letters in the *a-b-c*.

Of these twenty-two letters, *A, E, I, O, U*, are *vowels*; *B, C, D, F, G, L, M, N, P, Q, R, S, T, V, Z*, are *consonants*; *J* is *considered* as a *vowel*; and *H* is a *simple sign*, having *no sound*.

The Latin letters *K k, X x, Y y*, have no place in the Italian Alphabet.

Instead of *k*, either *c* or *ch* is used; as,

| | |
|--|------------------------------|
| <i>Senza fallo á' calèndi sarà</i> | Without fail by the kalends |
| <i>capitáno Buffalmácco.</i> (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) | Buffalmacco will be captain, |

| | |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>Dicéva un chírie ed un</i> | He said a Kyrie and a |
| <i>Sánctus.</i> (Bocc. g. 8. n. 2.) | Sanctus. |

X is sometimes translated into *s* or *ss*, and sometimes into *cc*; as,

| | |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>Acciocchè io prima éstemplo</i> | So that I might first set the |
| <i>déa a tutti vói.</i> (Bocc. Intr.) | example to all of you. |

| | |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>Un giòvane lor nipóte, che</i> | They sent a young man, |
| <i>avea nóme Alessándro, mandá-</i> | nephew of theirs, called Alex- |
| <i>rono.</i> (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.) | ander. |

| | |
|--|------------------------------|
| <i>Sópra gli álli palági, e só-</i> | It [the wind] leaves it [the |
| <i>pra l' eccélse tórri la láscia.</i> | dust] upon the high palaces |
| (Bocc. g. 4. Proem.) | and the lofty towers. |

The word 'Xerxes' is written with an *s*, — *Sérse*; but the word 'Xanthus' is written with an *x*, — *Xánto*, 'the Scamander'; to distinguish it from *Sánto*, 'Saint.'

For *Y* has been substituted *i*; as,

| | |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>Véggio lunge dá' lághi Avér-</i> | I see far from the Avernian |
| <i>ni, e Stigi.</i> (Petr. s. 265.) | and Stygian lakes. |

The English and German *W w*, in translating proper names, is commonly changed into *u* when it is a vowel, and into *v* or *g* when a consonant; as, *Néuton*, 'Newton': *Vallenstéin*, 'Wallenstein'; *Gálles*, 'Wales.'

PART I.

ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION.



CHAPTER I.

SOUNDS OF THE VOWELS.

A is sounded like *a* in the English word *father* ; as,

(Pronounce)

ÁRA,
Álma,

ah'-rah,
ahl'-mah,

altar ;
soul.

E has two sounds, one *open*, the other *close* :

E open is sounded like *ai* in the English word *fair* ; as,

tÉma,
véna,

taí'-mah,
vaí'-nah,

theme ;
oats.

E close is sounded like *ai* in the English word *pain* ; as,

léga,
méla,

lai'-gah,
mai'-lah,

alliance ;
apple.

I is sounded like *ee* in English ; or like *i* in the English word *machine* ; as,

inno,
lite,

een'-no,
lee'-tay,

hymn ;
strife.

O has two sounds, one *open*, the other *close* :

O open is sounded like *o* in the English word *cord* ; as,

bótta,
rósa,

bot'-tah,
ro'-sah,

blow ;
rose.

O close is sounded like *o* in the English word *bone* ; as,

fòlla,
òra,

fol'-lah,
o'-rah,

crowd ;
hour.

U is sounded like *oo* in the English word *ooze* ; as,

ùso,
tùtto,

oo'-so,
toot'-to,

use ;
all.

When these vowels are at the end of words marked with an accent, they have a quick and sharp sound, which very seldom occurs in the English language ; as,

bontà,
affè,
balli,
falò,
tribù,

bon-tah',
ahf-fay',
bah-lee',
fah-lo',
tree-boo',

goodness ;
in truth ;
bailiff ;
bonfire ;
tribe.

[For Rules how to Determine when the vowels *E, O,* are Pronounced *open,* or *close,* see APPENDIX, A.]

CHAPTER II.

PRONUNCIATION OF THE CONSONANTS.

ITALIAN consonants, except *C, G, R, S, Z,* are pronounced as in English.

C followed by the vowels *e, i,* is pronounced like *ch* in the English words *cherry, chilly* ; as,

céna,
cibo,

chay'-nah,
chee'-bo,

supper ;
food.

G followed by the vowels *e, i,* is pronounced like *j* in English ; or like *g* in the English words *gem, ginger* ; as,

gélo,
síro

'jay'-lo
jee'-ro,

frost ;
turn.

R in the beginning of words, or in the middle

when it begins a syllable, is pronounced like *r* in the English words *ruin*, *marine* ; as,

| | | |
|---------------|-------------------|---------------|
| <i>ripe</i> , | <i>roo'-pay</i> , | <i>rock</i> ; |
| <i>máre</i> , | <i>mah'-ray</i> , | <i>sea</i> : |

But at the end of words, or when it ends a syllable, or when preceded by another consonant, or when doubled, it has a rolling sound to which there is nothing similar in the English language, and which can be acquired only by oral instruction ; as,

| | | |
|-----------------|---------------------|-----------------|
| <i>per</i> , | <i>payr'</i> , | <i>for</i> ; |
| <i>ésto</i> , | <i>ayr'-to</i> , | <i>steep</i> ; |
| <i>átro</i> , | <i>ah'-tro</i> , | <i>black</i> ; |
| <i>órrido</i> , | <i>or'-ree-do</i> , | <i>horrid</i> . |

S in the beginning of words, or when preceded or followed by another consonant, or when doubled, is pronounced *sharp*, like *s* in the English words *saint*, *pulse*, *discount*, *assembly* ; as,

| | | |
|-----------------|--------------------|-------------------|
| <i>sáto</i> , | <i>sahn'-to</i> , | <i>saint</i> ; |
| <i>gél'sa</i> , | <i>jayl'-sah</i> , | <i>mulberry</i> ; |
| <i>é'sca</i> , | <i>ay'-skah</i> , | <i>bait</i> ; |
| <i>lésso</i> , | <i>lays'-so</i> , | <i>boiled</i> . |

Between two vowels, and in the last syllable of all substantive and adjective nouns that end in *ése*, *úso*, *úsa*, it is pronounced *flat*, or *soft* like *z* ; or like *s* in the English word *rose* ; as,

| | | |
|------------------|-----------------------|---------------------|
| <i>viso</i> , | <i>vee'-zo</i> , | <i>visage</i> ; |
| <i>palése</i> , | <i>pah-lay'-zay</i> , | <i>manifest</i> ; |
| <i>abúso</i> , | <i>ah-boo'-zo</i> , | <i>abuse</i> ; |
| <i>confúsa</i> , | <i>con-foo'-zah</i> , | <i>confounded</i> . |

In the last syllable of all adjective nouns ending in *óso*, *ósa*, it is pronounced *sharp* ; as,

| | | |
|-------------------|--------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>virtuóso</i> , | <i>veer-too,o'-so</i> , | <i>virtuous</i> ; |
| <i>maestósa</i> , | <i>mah,ay-sto'-sah</i> , | <i>majestic</i> . |

Z cannot be submitted to certain rules. It can only be said, that, in the beginning of words, or when single, it is pronounced *flat*, or *soft* like *ds* in the English word *Windsor* ; as,

| | | |
|------------------|--------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>zodiaco</i> , | <i>dso-dee',ah-ko</i> , | <i>zodiac</i> ; |
| <i>zanzára</i> , | <i>dsahn-dsah'-rah</i> , | <i>gnat</i> . |

When preceded by a consonant, or when followed by two vowels, or when doubled, it is pronounced *sharp*, like *ts* in the English word *benefits*; as,

| | | |
|------------------|------------------------|-----------|
| <i>cálza,</i> | <i>kahl'-tsah,</i> | stocking; |
| <i>grázia,</i> | <i>grah'-tsee,ah,</i> | grace; |
| <i>bellézza,</i> | <i>bayl-lay'-tsah,</i> | beauty. |

In the last syllable of words ending in *ánza*, *énza*, *ónza*, it is pronounced something like *z* in the English word *razor*; as,

| | | |
|------------------|------------------------|-----------|
| <i>dánza,</i> | <i>dahn'-zah,</i> | dance; |
| <i>cleménza,</i> | <i>klay-mayn'-zah,</i> | clemency; |
| <i>lónza,</i> | <i>lon'-zah,</i> | panther. |

[For a list of Words varying from the general Rules, respecting the Pronunciation of *Z*, see APPENDIX, B.]

CHAPTER III.

OF *J* AND *H*.

J is considered as a vowel in Italian. It is used instead of *ii*, at the end of words, in the plural of some nouns;* and it is sounded like *ee* in the English word *fée*, each *e* being distinctly pronounced; as,

| | | | | |
|---------------|---------|----------------|--------------------|----------|
| <i>témpj,</i> | } for { | <i>témpii,</i> | <i>taym'-pe,e,</i> | temples; |
| <i>stúdj,</i> | | <i>stúdiu,</i> | <i>stoo'-de,e,</i> | studies. |

H has no sound. It is only used to denote the hard sound of the consonants *c*, *g*, before the vowels *e*, *i*; as, in

| | | |
|------------------|-----------------------|-----------|
| <i>chérico,</i> | <i>kay'-ree-ko,</i> | clerk; |
| <i>chitárra,</i> | <i>kee-tahr'-rah,</i> | guitar; |
| <i>ghézzo,</i> | <i>ghy'-tso,</i> | Moor; |
| <i>ghiro,</i> | <i>gee'-ro,</i> | dormouse: |

* We very often in books meet with words in which *j* is used instead of *i*, either at the beginning or in the middle of words; as in *jéri* instead of *ieri*, 'yesterday': *juridico* instead of *iuridico*, 'lawful'; *nója* instead of *nóia*, 'vexation'; *libráto* instead of *libráto*, 'bookseller'; but this use is disapproved by correct writers.

To prolong the sound of the vowels *a, e, i, o, u*, in the interjections,

| | | |
|------|------|-------|
| аh! | āh! | ah! |
| deh! | dāy! | alas! |
| ih! | ēē! | ih! |
| poH! | pō! | pooh! |
| uH! | ōō! | uh! |

To distinguish the words,*

| | | | | | |
|------------|--------|----------|----------|-------|-----------------|
| I have, | Ho, | o, | } from { | o, | or; |
| thou hast, | Hái, | ah',ee, | | ái, | ah',ee, to the; |
| he has, | Ha, | ah, | | a, | ah, to; |
| they have, | Hánno, | ahn'-no, | | ánno, | ahn'-no, year. |

And in each case it is a sign, a mark of distinction rather than a letter.

CHAPTER IV.

DOUBLE CONSONANTS.

Cc followed by the vowels *e, i*, is pronounced like *tch* in the English word *match*; as,

| | | |
|----------|------------------|------------|
| accéto, | aht-chayn'-to, | accent; |
| accidio, | aht-chee'-dee,o, | slaughter. |

Gg followed by the vowels *e, i*, is pronounced like *dg* in the English word *longe*; as,

| | | |
|----------|--------------|-------------|
| oggétto, | od-jayt'-to, | object; |
| oggidr, | od-jee-dee', | now-a-days. |

Ch followed by the vowels *e, i*, is pronounced like *k* in the English words, *kept, keep*; as,

| | | |
|--------|----------|-----------|
| chéto, | kay'-to, | quiet; |
| chíno, | kee'-no, | inclined. |

* Some use the *grave accent* instead of *h* to distinguish these words, writing *ô*, 'I have'; *âi*, 'thou hast'; *â*, 'he has'; *ânno*, 'they have'; in the same way that we distinguish the words *è*, 'it is'; *là*, 'there'; *ne*, 'neither'; from *e*, 'and'; *la*, 'the'; *ne*, 'of it'; &c.; which mode seems to be preferable, as it simplifies the orthography of the words, and dispenses with a useless letter.

Followed by the vowels *ia, ie, io, iu*, it is pronounced like *ki* in the English word *kind*; as,

| | | |
|---------|-------------|----------------|
| chiáve, | k,yah'-vay, | key ; |
| chiésa, | k,yay'-sah, | church ; |
| chióma, | k,yo'-mah, | head of hair ; |
| chiúsa, | k,yoo'-sah, | hedge. |

Gh followed by the vowels *e, i*, is pronounced like *g* in the English words *get, giddy*; as,

| | | |
|---------|-----------|-----------|
| ghémbo, | gaym'-bo, | crooked ; |
| ghíro, | gee'-ro, | dormouse. |

Followed by the vowels *ia, ie, io, iu*, it is pronounced like *gui* in the English word *guide*; as,

| | | |
|-------------|-------------------|-------------|
| ghiánda, | g,yahn'-dah, | acorn ; |
| ghiéra, | g,yay'-rah, | quiver ; |
| ghiótto, | g,yot'-to, | glutton ; |
| teghíuizza, | tayg-g,yoot'-sah, | baking-pan. |

Gl followed by the vowel *i*, and in all words in which *i* is followed by another vowel, is pronounced like *ll* in the English word *brilliant*; as,

| | | |
|---------|-------------|-----------|
| gli, | l,yee', | the ; |
| égli, | ay'-l,yee, | he ; |
| vóglia, | vo'-l,yah, | desire ; |
| cíglío, | chee'-l,yo, | eye-brow: |

But in all words in which *gli* is followed by a consonant, it is pronounced like *gl* in the English word *glimmer*; as,

| | | |
|-------------|--------------------|-------------|
| negligénte, | nay-gee-jayn'-tay, | negligent ; |
| anglicáno, | ahn-gee-kah'-no, | Anglican. |

It has the same sound in the words,

| | | |
|---------|---------------|--------------|
| ángli, | ahn'-glee, | Englishmen ; |
| ánglia, | ahn'-glee,ah, | England. |

Gn followed by the vowels *a, e, i, o, u*, is pronounced something like *ni* in the English word *minion*; as,

| | | |
|----------|-----------------|-----------|
| magágná, | mah-gah'-n,yah, | blemish ; |
| agnéllo, | ah-n,yayl'-lo, | lamb ; |

| | | |
|-------------------|--------------------------|----------|
| <i>incógnito,</i> | <i>een-kó'-n,yee-to,</i> | unknown; |
| <i>bisógeno,</i> | <i>bee-so'-n,yo,</i> | need ; |
| <i>ignúdo,</i> | <i>ee-n,yoo'-do,</i> | naked. |

Sc followed by the vowels *e, i*, is pronounced like *sh* in the English word *shell, ship* ; as,

| | | |
|----------------|----------------------|---------|
| <i>scéna,</i> | <i>shay'-nah,</i> | scene ; |
| <i>scímia,</i> | <i>shee'-mee,ah,</i> | ape. |

Sch followed by the vowels *e, i*, is pronounced like *sk* in the English words *sketch, skill* ; as,

| | | |
|-----------------|-------------------|-----------|
| <i>schérno,</i> | <i>skayr'-no,</i> | mockery ; |
| <i>schífo,</i> | <i>skee'-fo,</i> | skiff. |

Followed by the vowels *ia, ie, io, iu*, it is pronounced like *sk* in the English word *sky* ; as,

| | | |
|------------------|---------------------|------------|
| <i>schíavo,</i> | <i>sk,yah'-vo,</i> | slave ; |
| <i>schíena,</i> | <i>sk,yay'-nah,</i> | the back ; |
| <i>schióppo,</i> | <i>sk,yop'-po,</i> | musket ; |
| <i>schíuma,</i> | <i>sk,yoo'-mah,</i> | froth. |

CHAPTER V.

OF SYLLABLES.

Cia', ció, ciú, are pronounced like *cha, cho, choo*, in the English words *charm, chop, choose* ; as,

| | | |
|----------------|--------------------|--------|
| <i>ciálda,</i> | <i>chahl'-da,</i> | wafer; |
| <i>ciómpo,</i> | <i>chom'-po,</i> | clown; |
| <i>ciúrma,</i> | <i>choor'-mah,</i> | crew. |

Giá, gió, giú, are pronounced like *ja, jo, ju*, in the English words *jar, jove, jury* ; as,

| | | |
|----------------|------------------|----------|
| <i>giálla,</i> | <i>jahl'-lo,</i> | yellow ; |
| <i>giórno,</i> | <i>jor'-no,</i> | day ; |
| <i>giústó,</i> | <i>ju'-sto,</i> | just. |

Sciá, sció, sciú, are pronounced like *sha, sho, shoo*, in the English words *shall, shop, shoot* ; as,

| | | |
|------------------|----------------------|---------|
| <i>sciáme,</i> | <i>shah'-may,</i> | swarm ; |
| <i>sciólto,</i> | <i>shol'-to,</i> | loose ; |
| <i>sciugáto,</i> | <i>shoo-gah'-to,</i> | wiped. |

Guá, gué, guí, are pronounced like *gua, gue, gui*, in the English words *language, languet, languid*; as,

| | | |
|----------|--------------|--------|
| GUÁncia, | gwahn'-chah, | cheek, |
| GUÉrra, | gwayr'-rah, | war; |
| GUÍda, | gwee'-dah, | guide. |

Quá, qué, quí, quó, are pronounced like *qua, que, qui, quo*, in the English words *quality, question, quibble, quote*; as,

| | | |
|-------------|---------------------|-----------|
| QUÁnto, | kwahn'-to, | how-much; |
| QUÉsto, | kway'-sto, | this; |
| QUÍnto, | kween'-to, | fifth; |
| QUotidiáno, | kwo-tee-dee,ah'-no, | daily. |

CHAPTER VI.

DIPHTHONGS AND TRIPHTHONGS.

ITALIAN diphthongs are so pronounced as to give to each vowel its proper sound. They are generally divided into two classes, the *long* and the *short*.

Long diphthongs are those, in which each vowel is as distinctly pronounced as if they formed each a separate syllable; as,

| | | | |
|----|-----------|-------------------|-----------------|
| áe | Áere, | ah',ay-ray, | air; |
| ái | mÁI, | mah',ee, | never; |
| áo | pÁolo, | pah',o-lo, | a paul; |
| áu | Áura, | ah',oo-rah, | breeze; |
| ea | bórea, | bo'-ray,ah, | the north-wind; |
| ee | VEEménza, | vay,ay-mayn'-zah, | vehemence; |
| éi | léI, | lay',ee, | her; |
| éo | Éolo, | ay',o-lo, | Æolus; |
| éu | fÉudo, | fay',oo-do, | feud; |
| ói | vóI, | vo',ee, | you; |
| oó | oóorte, | ko,or'-tay, | cohort; |
| úi | colÚI, | ko-loo',ee, | that-one. |

Short diphthongs are so pronounced, that, of the two vowels, one is so faintly heard as to seem blended with the other ; as,

| | | | |
|-----------|----------------|---------------------|------------|
| <i>ia</i> | <i>fiáto,</i> | <i>fee,ah'-to,</i> | breath ; |
| <i>ie</i> | <i>ciéto,</i> | <i>chee,ay'-lo,</i> | heaven ; |
| <i>io</i> | <i>pióva,</i> | <i>pee,o'-vah,</i> | rain ; |
| <i>iu</i> | <i>piúma,</i> | <i>pee,oo'-mah,</i> | feather ; |
| <i>ua</i> | <i>quáto,</i> | <i>kwahn'to,</i> | how-much ; |
| <i>ue</i> | <i>guéffa,</i> | <i>gwayf'-fah,</i> | cage ; |
| <i>ui</i> | <i>quíto,</i> | <i>kween'-to,</i> | fifth ; |
| <i>uo</i> | <i>tuóno,</i> | <i>too,o'-no,</i> | thunder. |

Triphthongs are generally classed with the short diphthongs, and are pronounced,

| | | | |
|-------------|-----------------|-------------------------|-----------|
| <i>aió</i> | <i>gáio,</i> | <i>gah',yo,</i> | gay ; |
| <i>iei</i> | <i>miéi.</i> | <i>mee,ay',ee,</i> | mine ; |
| <i>uoi</i> | <i>buói,</i> | <i>boo,o',ee,</i> | oxen ; |
| <i>uáio</i> | <i>guáio,</i> | <i>gwah',yo,</i> | wailing ; |
| <i>uóio</i> | <i>cúro,</i> | <i>kwo',yo,</i> | leather ; |
| <i>uói</i> | <i>laccuói,</i> | <i>laht-choo,o',ee,</i> | snares. |

CHAPTER VII.

GENERAL RULES ON THE ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION.

ITALIAN words are pronounced exactly as they are written, there being no silent letter except *h*.

Every vowel always preserves its proper sound, independently of the consonants which accompany it.*

* There is, perhaps, no greater difficulty for foreigners in pronouncing Italian, than that of the vowels *E*, *O*, whose sound, either *open* or *close*, often determines the signification of words ; as in *méle*, *pésca*, *téma* ; *cóllo*, *fóro*, *vóto*, which pronounced with *E* and *O* *open*, mean, 'honey', 'a peach', 'theme' ; 'neck', 'the bar', 'void' : and pronounced with *E* and *O* *close*, signify, 'apples', 'fishing', 'fear' ; 'with the', 'a hole', 'vow'.

[For a list of Words of Similar Orthography, but of Different Signification, distinguished by the Different Sound of *E*, *O*, see APPENDIX, A. (2)]

When consonants are doubled, each of them is separately pronounced ;* as,

| | | |
|------------------|------------------------|------------|
| <i>fratéLLO,</i> | <i>fráh-tayl'-lo,</i> | brother ; |
| <i>addóBBO,</i> | <i>ahd-dob'-bo,</i> | ornament ; |
| <i>erróre,</i> | <i>ayr-ro'-ray,</i> | error ; |
| <i>attréZZi,</i> | <i>aht-trayt'-see,</i> | utensils. |

If a word ends with a consonant, and the following word begins with a vowel, the consonant of the former, in the pronunciation, is joined to the vowel or first syllable of the latter ; as,

| | | |
|-----------------------|------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>per Amóre,</i> | <i>pe-R A-móre,</i> | <i>pay-rah-mo'-ray,</i> |
| | for love sake ; | |
| <i>quÁL Angóscia,</i> | <i>qua-L AN-góscia</i> | <i>kwah-lahn-go'-shah,</i> |
| | what anguish ; | |
| <i>grand' invito,</i> | <i>gran-D IN-vito,</i> | <i>grahn-deen-vee'-to,</i> |
| | great invitation. | |

When *gli* precedes a word beginning with a vowel, the vowel or first syllable of the latter is joined to *gli*, so as to form a single syllable ; as,

| | | | |
|---------------------|-----------------------|------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>GLI onóri,</i> | <i>GLI o-nóri,</i> | <i>lyo-no'-ree,</i> | the honors ; |
| <i>béGLI ócchi,</i> | <i>be-GLI óc-chi,</i> | <i>bay-l,yok'-kee,</i> | beautiful eyes. |

In all Italian words of more than one syllable, there is always one, upon which the voice, in pronouncing the word, is heard stronger than upon the others. This, which is generally effected by raising the voice upon that syllable and letting it fall upon the rest, is commonly called the *tonic accent* of the word. The syllable upon which the tonic accent falls, is pronounced longer than the other syllables ; each of which is not to

* The importance of the observance of this rule will at once be perceived by the learner, when, in advancing in the study of the language, he observes a great number of words written with a double consonant, whose signification would be entirely altered by pronouncing them with a single consonant ; as in *cárra*, *fiócco*, *préssu*, *róssa*, *sérra*, *sónno*, 'car', 'tassel', 'near', 'red', 'saw', 'sleep' : which pronounced with a single consonant, *cáro*, *fióco*, *préso*, *rósa*, *séra*, *sóno*, signify 'dear', 'hoarse', 'taken', 'rose', 'evening', 'I am'.

[For a list of Words, whose Signification is determined by the Pronunciation of double Consonants, see APPENDIX, C.]

occupy more than half the time employed in pronouncing the accented syllable ; as,

| | | |
|--------------------|---------------|---------|
| ón ^{da} , | õN-dăh, | wave ; |
| uccÉllo, | õõt-chăyl-lõ, | bird ; |
| ébano, | ây-băh-nõ, | ebony ; |
| amistÀ, | ăh-měě-stăh, | amity. |

EXERCISE ON THE PRONUNCIATION.

Cédro, citron ; *cénere*, ashes ; *célebre*, celebrated ; *cicatrice*, scar ; *cicalàta*, chit-chat ; *cipolla*, onion ; *ciància*, story ; *ciarlàre*, to prate ; *ciàlda*, wafer ; *ciélo*, heaven ; *ciéco*, blind ; *cioccolàte*, chocolate ; *ciocco*, stump ; *ciò*, this ; *fanciùllo*, child ; *ciurma*, crew ; *ciuffo*, a tuft of hair ; *gènte*, people ; *gènere*, gender ; *giro*, turn ; *gigànte*, giant ; *ginocchio*, knee ; *giardino*, garden ; *giammàì*, never ; *giallo*, yellow ; *giórno*, day ; *giogo*, yoke ; *giocòndo*, merry ; *giòvane*, youth ; *giugno*, June ; *giulio*, gay ; *giudice*, judge ; *giudicare*, to judge ; *rame*, copper ; *rovina*, ruin ; *orróre*, horror ; *parlàre*, to speak ; *férro*, iron ; *órlo*, border ; *mercè*, reward ; *bàrdo*, bard ; *arrovellàre*, to be angry ; *irretire*, to ensnare ; *crudéle*, cruel ; *fórza*, force ; *território*, territory ; *tartàreo*, tartarean ; *salùte*, health ; *sérvo*, servant ; *sòrte*, fate ; *sire*, sire ; *sópra*, above ; *così*, so ; *singolàre*, singular ; *sóle*, sun ; *su*, upon ; *superàre*, to surmount ; *palése*, manifest ; *cortése*, courteous ; *spésò*, expended ; *résò*, rendered ; *rósa*, rose ; *spósa*, spouse ; *risa*, laughter ; *mùsa*, muse ; *virtuóso*, virtuous ; *confuso*, confounded ; *zòlla*, clod ; *zio*, uncle ; *zùppa*, soup ; *zerbino*, a spark ; *zimàrra*, night-gown ; *pózzo*, a well ; *carézze*, caresses ; *carrózza*, couch ; *tàzza*, cup ; *ammazzàre*, to kill ; *pizzico*, pinch ; *órzo*, barley ; *zizzània*, tare ; *rézzo*, shade ; *vizio*, vice ; *zótico*, rude ; *letizia*, joy ; *nazione*, nation ; *témpj*, temples ; *stúdj*, studies ; *esémpj*, examples ; *vizj*, vices ; *eccidj*, slaughters ; *augúrj*, auguries ; *ho*, I have ; *hài*, thou hast ; *ha*, he has ; *hánno*, they have ; *ah ! ah ! deh !* alas ! *ih ! ih ! poh !* pooh ! *uh ! uh ! acciàio*, steel ; *accénto*, accent ; *accidióso*, sluggish ; *laccio*, noose ; *fàcia*, face ; *lacciùolo*, snare ; *oggétto*, object ; *soggiórno*, abode ;

pioggia, rain; *raggio*, ray; *aggiunta*, addition; *oggi*, to-day; *cheto*, quiet; *chino*, inclined; *cherubino*, cherubim; *chimico*, chymist; *chérmes*, cochineal; *chiméra*, chimera; *chicchessia*, whosoever; *chiave*, key; *chiostro*, cloister; *chiusa*, hedge; *chiama*, to call; *chiesa*, church; *chiódo*, nail; *chiérico*, clerk; *ghémbo*, crooked; *ghermire*, to gripe; *ghiro*, dormouse; *ghiribizzo*, whim; *gherone*, gore, *ghirlanda*, garland; *ghiàia*, gravel; *ghiaccio*, ice; *lusinghiere*, flattering; *preghiera*, prayer; *ghiottto*, greedy; *tegghiuzza*, baking-pan; *figli*, children; *fogli*, leaves; *pigliare*, to take; *famiglia*, family; *moglie*, wife; *orgoglio*, pride; *imbroglia*, embarrassment; *fogliuto*, leafy; *figliuolo*, son; *negligenza*, negligence; *neglétto*, neglected; *angli*, Englishmen; *anglia*, England; *anglicano*, Anglican; *campagna*, the country; *magnàmino*, magnanimous; *ingegnere*, engineer; *spignere*, to push; *magnifico*, magnificent; *signóre*, sir; *légno*, wood; *ignúdo*, naked; *scésa*, descent; *scemare*, to diminish; *scéttro*, scepter; *scimia*, ape; *scisma*, schism; *sciagúra*, misfortune; *sciáme*, swarm; *sciancato*, hipped; *sciéncia*, science; *cosciéncia*, conscience; *sciocco*, foolish; *sciorre*, to loose; *sciugatóio*, towel; *sciugare*, to wipe; *schiaúo*, slave; *schiantare*, to tear; *schiena*, the back; *schietto*, candid; *schioppo*, musket; *schiuma*, froth; *guadagnare*, to gain; *guerra*, war; *guardare*, to look; *guertre*, to heat; *guercio*, squint-eyed; *guida*, guide; *guidare*, to guide; *quattro*, four; *qualità*, quality; *quádro*, picture; *quále*, which; *questo*, this; *quercia*, oak; *quiète*, quiet; *quindici*, fifteen; *quívi*, there; *quotidiáno*, daily.

PART II.

ITALIAN ANALOGY.



PARTS OF SPEECH.

(Variable)

(Invariable)

| | |
|--|--|
| L' ARTÍCOLO, <i>the Article</i> ; | L' AVVÉRPIO, <i>the Adverb</i> ; |
| IL NÓME, <i>the Noun</i> ; | LA PREPOSIZÍONE, <i>the Preposi-</i> [<i>tion</i> ; |
| IL PRONÓME, <i>the Pronoun</i> ; | LA CONGIUNZÍONE, <i>the Conjun-</i> [<i>tion</i> ; |
| IL VÉRBO, <i>the Verb</i> ; | L' INTERIEZÍONE, <i>the Interjec-</i> [<i>tion</i> . |
| IL PARTICÍPIO, <i>the Participle</i> : | |

CHAPTER I.

ARTICLES.

THERE are three articles in Italian ; *il, lo, la*, 'the', in the singular ; *i* or *li*,* *gli, le*, 'the', in the plural number.

Il, lo, and *i* or *li, gli*, are used with masculine, *la* and *le*, with feminine nouns.

Il, and *i* or *li*, are put before masculine nouns beginning with a *consonant*, except *z*, or *s* followed by another *consonant* ; as,

| | |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| IL Fratélllo, <i>the brother</i> ; | I figliuóli, <i>the children</i> ; |
| IL maríto, <i>the husband</i> ; | LI pádri, <i>the fathers</i> . |

* We meet with *li* frequently in the Classics, especially in poetry ; but modern writers generally use *i* in preference to it.

Lo and *gli*, are put before masculine nouns beginning with *z*, *s* followed by another consonant, or a vowel ; * as,

| | | | |
|-----------------------|--------------------|---------------------|-------------|
| LO <i>zio</i> , | the uncle ; | GLI <i>zéfiri</i> , | the zephyrs |
| LO <i>strépito</i> , | the noise ; | GLI <i>spróni</i> , | the spurs ; |
| LO <i>innocénte</i> , | the innocent man ; | GLI <i>occhi</i> , | the eyes. |

EXCEPTIONS.

The noun *Dio*, 'God', before its plural, *Déi*, 'Gods', takes the article *gli* ; as,

GLI *Déi*, 'the Gods.

After the preposition *per*, 'for, by, or through', whether the nouns begins with *z*, *s*, or any other consonant, the article *lo* is more properly used ; as,

per LO *amóre*, for the love ; *per* LO *braccio*, by the arm.

In the plural, however, if the noun begins with any consonant but *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant, we may use indifferently, either *gli* or *li* ; as,

| | |
|--------------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>per</i> GLI <i>bóschì</i> , | through the woods ; |
| <i>per</i> LI <i>régni</i> , | through the regions. |

La and *le*, are put before all feminine nouns beginning either with a consonant, or a vowel ; as,

| | | | |
|---------------------|-----------------|----------------------|------------------|
| LA <i>reína</i> , | the queen ; | LE <i>cortesie</i> , | the courtesies ; |
| LA <i>sorélla</i> , | the sister ; | LE <i>mádrì</i> , | the mothers ; |
| LA <i>nobiltà</i> , | the nobleness ; | LE <i>ánime</i> , | the souls. |

The articles *lo*, *la*, before a noun beginning with a vowel ; and *gli*, *le*, before a noun beginning with *i*, *e* ;

* Poets very often use *lo* before nouns beginning with other consonants than *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant ; and *il* before nouns beginning with those consonants ; as,

Lo *giórno se n'andava e l'aer brúno* ;
(Dant. Inf. 2.)

The day was closing, and the dusky air ;

*Segueto appresso il spléndido, e on-
orando—Priciválle* ; (Bocc. Vis. 1.)

Next followed the splendid and hon-
orable Pricivalle ;

GLI *xámi schiánta, abátte, e pórtá
fuóri* ; (Dant. Inf. 9.)

Tears off the boughs, beats down,
and hurls away ;

but in prose this usage is, by all good writers, carefully avoided.

generally drop *o*, *a*, *i*, *e*, and take an apostrophe instead of them;* as,

| | | | |
|-----------------|--------------|--------------------|----------------|
| L' Uòmo, | { the man ; | GL' infèrmi, | { the infirm ; |
| (for LO Uòmo), | | (for GLI infèrmi), | |
| L' Ànima, | { the soul ; | L' Èrbe, | { the herbs. |
| (for LA Ànima), | | (for LE Èrbe), | |

Sometimes the article *il* drops the *i* after a word ending with a vowel, and takes an apostrophe instead of it ; as,

| | | | |
|------------------|------------------------------|-----------------------|-----------------------|
| E' L viso, | { and the coun- tenance ; | uscio 'L colpo, | { the blow issued. |
| (for E IL viso), | | (for uscio IL colpo), | |

EXAMPLES.

L' un fratèllo L' àltro abban-
donàva, e LA sorèlla IL fra-
tèllo, e spèsse vòlte LA dònna
IL sùo maríto. (Bocc. Intr.)

E che maggiór còsa è, LI PÁ-
DRI e LE MÀDRI, I FIGLIUÓLI dì
visitàre e dì servìre schivàvano.
(Bocc. Intr.)

LA REÍNA non sì sapèva sazi-
àre d'udìre LA NOBILTÀ e LE
CORTESÍE del giòvane re. (Nov.
ant. 35.)

Non istétte guári a levàrsi IL
re, il quále LO STRÉPITO dèi ca-
ricànti e dèlle bèstie avèva dèsto.
(Bocc. g. 7. Proem.)

Avèvan LO INNOCÉnte per fál-
sa suspiziòne accusáto. (Bocc.
g. 3. n. 7.)

E con amór si lágna—Ch' ha
sì càldi GLI SPRON, sì dúro IL
fréno. (Petr. s. 140.)

Lucèvan GLI OCCHI suói più
che LA stèlla. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

Al tèmpo DÉGLI DÉI fàlsi e
bugiàrdi. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

One brother abandoned the
other, and the sister the broth-
er, and oftentimes the wife her
husband.

And what is more, the fath-
ers and the mothers shunned
to visit and serve their chil-
dren.

The queen could not be sat-
isfied with hearing of the no-
bleness and the courtesies of
the young king.

The king was not long in get-
ting up, whom the noise of the
beasts and of those who loaded
them had already awakened.

They had accused the in-
nocent man on a false suspi-
cion.

And complains of love, that
has so sharp spurs, and so hard
a bit.

Her eyes shone more than
the star.

In the time of fabled and
false deities.

* *Le* drops the *e* sometimes, and takes an apostrophe instead of it, chiefly in poetry, even before words beginning with any other vowel ; as,

Ei son fra L' anime più nère. (D. Inf. 6.)
Canto L' armi pietóse. (Tass. Ger. 1.)

They are amidst blacker souls.
I sing the pious arms.

Sémpre tenêndo PER LO BRÁCCIO LO inférmo. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

PER LO SÚO AMÓRE adúnque a nòi ti piéga. (Dant. Purg. 1.)

Lásciane andáre PER LI tuó' sètte RÉGNI. (Dant. Purg. 1.)

L' ÁNIMA túa è da viltáte offésa,—LA quál mólte fiáte L' UÓMO ingómbrá,—Sicchè d' onráta imprésa lo rivólve. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

I pensîer son saétte E' L VÍSO un sóle—E' L desír fóco. (Petr.)

Zéfiro tórna, E' L bel témpo riména,—E i fióri, e L' ÉRBE, súa dólce famágliá. (Petr. s. 269.)

DÁGLI ócchi vóstri USCÍO 'L CÓLPO mortále. (Petr.)

Del bel paése là dóve 'L sí suóna. (Dant. Inf. 33.)

Holding always the sick man by the arm.

Then for her love condescend to our desires.

Let us pass through thy seven regions.

Thy soul is by vile fear assailed, which oft,—So overcast a man, that he recoils—From noble undertaking.

The thoughts are arrows, and the countenance a sun,—and the desire fire.

Zephyr returns, bringing back flowers, and herbs, his sweet family.

From your eyes the mortal blow issued.

Of that fair land where *sì* is spoken.

When the articles *il, lo, la*; *i* or *li, gli, le*, are immediately preceded by the prepositions *di*, 'of'; *a*, 'to'; *da*, 'from or by'; *in* or *ne*, 'in'; *con*, 'with'; *per*, 'for, by, or through'; *su*, 'upon'; *fra* or *tra*, 'amongst'; in order to avoid the harshness of sound produced by two monosyllables coming together, they are united to them, so as to form a single word; as,

a i, ÁI, to the; *da gli*, DÁGLI, from or by the;
su la, SÚLLA, upon the; *tra le*, TRÁLLE, amongst the.

Union of the Prepositions DI, A, DA, IN or NE, CON,
PER, SU, FRA or TRA, *with the Article*

IL, the;

| | | |
|-----------------------------|------|-------------------------|
| <i>dì il</i> , | DEL, | of the; |
| <i>a il</i> , | AL, | to the; |
| <i>da il</i> , | DAL, | from or by the; |
| <i>in</i> or <i>ne il</i> , | NEL, | in the; |
| <i>con il</i> , | COL, | with the; |
| <i>per il</i> , | PEL, | for, by or through the; |

su il,
fra il,
tra il,

SUL,
FRAL, }
TRAL, }

upon the;
amongst the.

I or LI, the,

dì i or dì li,
a i or a li,
da i or da li,
in or ne i, or in or ne li,
con i or con li,
per i or per li,
su i or su li,
fra i or fra li,
tra i or tra li,

DÉI or DÉLLI,*
ÁI or ÁLLI,
DÁI or DÁLLI,
NÉI or NÉLLI,
CÓI or CÓLLI,
PÉI or PÉLLI,
SÚI or SÚLLI,
FRÁI or FRÁLLI, }
TRÁI or TRÁLLI, }

of the;
to the;
from or by the;
in the;
with the;
for, by or thro.' the;
upon the;
amongst the.

LO, the;

dì lo,
a lo,
da lo,
in or ne lo,
con lo,
per lo,
su lo,
fra lo,
tra lo,

DÉLLO,*
ÁLLO,
DÁLLO,
NÉLLO,
CÓLLO,
PÉLLO,
SÚLLO,
FRÁLLO, }
TRÁLLO, }

of the;
to the;
from or by the;
in the;
with the;
for, by or thro.' the;
upon the;
amongst thee.

GLI, the;

dì gli,
a gli,
da gli,
in or ne gli,
con gli,
per gli,
su gli,
fra gli,
tra gli,

DÉGLI,*
ÁGLI,
DÁGLI,
NÉGLI,
CÓGLI,
PÉGLI,
SÚGLI,
FRÁGLI, }
TRÁGLI, }

of the;
to the;
from or by the;
in the;
with the;
for, by or thro.' the;
upon the;
amongst the.

* Poets very often use them separate; as,

*Nè mai nascòse il tièl sì fòlta nèb-
bia,—Che, sopraggiunta dal furòr dè'
vènti,—Non fuggisse DA I pòggi, e DA
LE valli. (Petr. c. 14.)*

*DA L' érba, e DA LI fiór déntro a
quél sèno—Pòsti, ciascùn saria di colòr
vinto. (Dant. Purg. 7)*

*'Al Pàdre, al Figlio, A LO Spìrito
Sànto'—Cominciò 'glòria' tütto 'l Pa-
radiso. (Dant. Par. 27.)*

Norever did the sky conceal so thick
a cloud, that, overtaken by the fury
of the wind, it would not flee from the
hills, and the valleys;

By the herbs and flowers, placed
in that recess, in color all would be
surpassed;

'Glory to the Father, to the Son,—
And to the Holy Spirit,' rang aloud—
Throughout all Paradise.

And scrupulous writers before nouns beginning with *z* or *s* followed by another consonant, use *cóllo*, *trállo*, *cóllo*, *trállo*, and *cógli*, *trágli*, *cólle*, *trálle*, and *súgli*, always separated ;* as,

CON LO SPLENDÓRE, with the
[splendor ;

SU LO SMÁLTO, upon the
[enamel ;

TRA LE STÉLLE, among the
[stars ;

CON LA ZÁZZERA, with the
[head of hair ;

CON GLI SCIÓCCHI, with the
[ignorant ;

SU GLI SCÚDI, upon the
[shield.

EXAMPLES.

*Cóme NÉ' Lúcidì seréni sòno
le stélle ornaménto DEL ciélo, e
NÉLLA primavéra i fióri DÉ'
PRÁTI, e DÉ' cólli i rivestiti ar-
buscélli ; così DÉ' Laudévoli co-
stúmi, e DÉ' ragionaménti bellì
sòno i leggiádri mótti. (Bocc.
g. 6. n. 1.)*

*E divenúti più liéti, su si le-
vârono, ed Á' suóni, ed Á' CÁNTI
ed Á' BÀlli da cåpo si diérono.
(Bocc. g. 3. Proem.)*

*Oh, sventuråta ! che si dirå
DÁ' tuói fratélli, DÁ' PARÉNTI,
DÁ' vicíni, quådo si saprà, che
tu sù quì trovåta ? (Bocc. g. 8.
n. 7.)*

*Quådo NÉ' GIARDÍNI entråte,
distésa la dilicåta máno, cogliéte
le rôse, e lasciåte le spíne ståre.
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)*

*Ombróse sélve, óve percóte il
sóle,—Che vi fa có' suói RÁGGI
ålte e supérbe. (Petr. s. 129.)*

As in the bright clear sky,
the stars are the ornament of
the heavens, and in the spring
the flowers are of the meadows,
and the verdant shrubs of the
hills, so witty sayings are the or-
naments of praiseworthy man-
ners and fine conversations.

And having become more
gay, they arose and gave them-
selves once more to playing,
singing, and dancing.

Oh, unfortunate woman ! what
will be said by thy brothers, by
thy relations, by thy neighbors,
when it shall be known, that
thou hast been found here ?

When you enter into the
gardens, extending your deli-
cate hand, you cull the roses,
and leave the thorns.

Shady woods, where strikes
the sun, which renders you
with its rays so lofty and noble.

* And in poetry even before nouns beginning with any other letter ; as,

*Ecco la fiéra CON LA còda agúzza.
(Dant. Inf. 17.)*

Behold the beast with sharpened
tail ;

*Vidi Solón—CON GLI åltri sei di cui
Grécia si vånta. (Petr. Tr. Fam.)*

I saw Solon with the other six of
whom Greece boasts.

*E quindi passai in terra
d'Abruzzi, dove gli uomini e le
femmine vanno in zoccoli su pé'
MONTI. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)*

*Lascio lo féle, e vo pé' dolci
pómi—Promessi a me PER LO
verace DÚCA. (Dant. Inf. 16.)*

*Così avestù ripósti—DÉ' BÉi
vestigi sparsi,—Ancór TRÁ' FIÓ-
RI e l'érba. (Petr. c. 26.)*

*PER GLI ÓCCHI mi passò den-
tro la mēte. (Rim. ant. p. 49.)*

*Era 'l giòrno ch' al Sol si sco-
loráro—PER LA PIETÀ del suo
Fattóre i rái. (Petr. s. 3.)*

*Giúnc nel bósco PER LE FRÓN-
DI ombróso. (Bocc. Tes. 5. 33.)*

*CON LO SPLENDÓR che sua bel-
lézza addúce. (Incer. c. 4.)*

*Non errár CON GLI SCIÓCCHI.
(Petr. c. 47.)*

And then I passed to the land
of Abruzzi, where men and wo-
men go in wooden shoes up
over the mountains.

I leave the gall, in quest of
the sweet fruit, which has been
promised to me by my faithful
guide.

Thus would that thou, (O
heart,) hadst still preserved
some of the beautiful footsteps,
here and there, amongst the
flowers and the grass.

It passed through my eyes
to my mind.

It was the day when the rays
of the sun grew pale, through
pity for his Maker.

He arrived in the wood, shady
on account of its leaves.

With the splendor which
brings her beauty.

Do not wonder in error with
the ignorant.

The English indefinite article *a, an*, is expressed in Italian by the indefinite pronouns *un, úno, úna*, according to the rules already given with regard to the articles *il, lo, la*, 'the'; as,

UN mercatánte, a merchant; ÚNO spiráglío, a breathing-hole;
ÚNA fiámma, a flame; ÚNA zéba, a goat.

Uno, like *lo*, before a noun beginning with a vowel, drops the *o*, but takes no apostrophe instead of it; *úna* drops the *a* and takes an apostrophe; as,

UN uómo, a man; UN' ómbra, a shade;
UN amóre, a love; UN' óra, an hour.

When a noun is taken in a partitive sense, the English adjectives *some* and *any* are expressed by the

words *del, dello, della*, in the singular ; and *dèi, degli, delle*, or *alcuni, alcune*, in the plural ; as,

| | | | |
|------------------|---------------|----------------|---------------|
| DEL PÁNE, | some bread ; | DELL' ÓLIO, | some oil ; |
| ALCÚNE còse, | some things ; | ALCÚNI uómini, | some men ; |
| DÉGLI stroménti, | some instru- | DÉLLE aránce, | some oranges. |
| | [ments ; | | |

EXAMPLES.

In Parígi fu UN gran MER-
CÁTANTE. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

There was in Paris a great merchant.

Èra Arriguccio UN Fiéro UÓ-
MO, e UN FÓrte. (Bocc. g. 7.
n. 6.)

Arriguccio was a haughty and strong man.

Nella quál gróttá dáva alquán-
to lume ÚNO SPIRÁGLIO fáttö nel
mónte. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

In which grotto came some light through a breathing-hole, opened in the mountain.

UN volére, UN AMÓRE *ci ha*
sémpre tenúti legáti e congiúnti,
ed UN medésimo giòrno ci diède
al móndo ; piácciavi, poichè UN'
ÓRA ci tóglic, che simileménte
ÚNA medésima FIÁMMA ci con-
súmi. (Bocc. Filoc.)

One will, one love, has always kept us bound and united, and the same day gave us to the world ; may it please you, then, since the same hour takes us from it, that one same flame should consume us.

Gli diédi DEL PÁNE e DEL cá-
cio. (Firenz.)

I gave him some bread and some cheese.

Úno dé' famigliári di Mes-
sér Néri accése il fuóco, e pó-
sta la padélla sópra il treppiè,
e DELL' ÓLIO méssovi, cominciò
ad aspettáre, che le giòvani gli
gittássero DEL Pésce. (Bocc. g.
10. n. 6.)

One of the domestics of Messer Neri kindled the fire, and having put the frying-pan upon a trevet, and having put some oil in it, he began to wait that the young women should throw into it some fish.

Di niúna còsa servieno, che di
pórgere ALCÚNE CÓSE dagl' in-
férmi addomandáte. (B. Intr.)

They rendered no service, but to reach some things called for by the sick.

EXERCISE I.

[Let the learner here put the right Article according to the gender marked, against the Italian nouns, and the number of the same, as indicated by the English words.]

The sacred Tiber, the Egyptian obelisks, the temples
sácro Tevere, m., *Egiziáni obelíschi*, m., *têmpj*, m.
 still dark with the vapor of the sacrifices, the Flavian
ancóra fóschi *vapóre*, m. *sacrifízi*, m., *Flávio*²
 Amphitheatre which lies like a mangled giant, the
*anfiteátro*¹, m.* *il quále giáce cóme sbranáto*² *gigánte*,¹ m.,
 columns which describe the customs of the soldiery,
colónne, f. *che descrivono* *costumánze*, f. *milizia*, f.,
 the triumphal arches, the space of the Forum, the
*trionfáli*² *árcbi*, m., *spázio*, m. *Fóro*, m.,
 mausoleums, the majestic ruins of the circuses and of the
mausoléi, m., *maestóse*² *ruíne*,¹ f. *círcbi*, m. *e*
 baths, and all the remains of the Roman splendor,
térme, f., *e tútti* *avánzi*, m. *Romána*² *splendidézza*,¹ f.,
 fill the mind | with† | delightful wonder.
émpiono *ánimo*, m. | *dí* | *soáve maravíglia*.

Nero to appease them, ordered that the fasces of the
Neróne per appaciár *li*,[‡] *bandì* *che fásci*, m.
 emperor | should be borne | with the laurel. The
imperatóre, m. | *si portássero* | *allóro*, m.
 senators complained | against | the insolence of the
senatóri, m. *si dolévano* | *di* | *insolénza*, f.
 plebeians, and the plebeians | against | the avarice of the
plebéi, m., *e* *plebéi*, m. | *dí* | *avarízia*, f.
 magistrates and of the great.
magistráti, m. *e* *grándi*, m.

* In this and the following Exercises, the numbers affixed to the Italian words are intended to denote the order in which they are to be placed; as, '*Flávio*² *anfiteátro*¹',—*anfiteátro Flávio*.

† When an English word or phrase cannot be rendered literally, but by an equivalent Italian word or phrase, they are both included between brackets []; as, 'with' *con*; *dí*, 'of'.

‡ The sign *—*, is used to denote, that the words under which it is found, are to be joined in one; as, *per appaciár* *li*,—*per appaciárlí*.

He proposed that (*the*) honors | should be rendered | to Galba,
 —* *Propóse che* ² *onóri*,³m. | *si rendéssero*¹ | a *Gálba*,
 and that the memory of Piso also | should be celebrated. |
e che ³ *memória*,⁴f. *dí*⁵ *Pisóne*⁶ *ánche*² | *si celebrásse*¹. |

He departed | to | carry | to | the temple of (*the*)
 — *Partì* | *per* | *portare* | *in* | *tempio*,m.

Concord the standards of the empire. (*The*) princes
Concórdia,f. *inségne*,f. *impéro*,m. *príncipi*,m.

do more | with their | reputation and | with their |
fánno più | *con la* | *reputazione e* | *con il* |
 advice, than | with their | hand and | with their | arms.
consiglio, che | *con la* | *máno e* | *con le* | *armi*.

Not pardoning, as in (*the*) other armies, the first fault,
Non perdonando, cóme in *áltri esérciti*,m., *prima fálta*,f.,

nor the second, but | he who | left the standard
nè seconda,f., *ma* | *chi* | *lasciava* *inségna*,f.

was immediately beheaded. It appeared to him that he heard
éra subitáménte decapitato. — *parve*² *Gli*¹ *sentire*⁶

| about | (*the*) mid-night people descend in the house.
*in su*³ | ⁴ *mezzanótte*,⁵f. *persóne*¹⁰ *scéndere*⁷ ⁸ *cása*,⁹f.

Having entered into the tower, she began to weep. For
 — *Entrata* *tórre*,f., — *cominciò a piangere*. *Per*

the pain he felt, he began to roar, so that he seem-
dolór,m. — *sentito*, — *cominciò a mugghiár*, *che* — *paréva*

ed a lion. Fleeing through the woods.
leóne,m. *Fuggéndo per* *bósci*,m.

He was seen by a companion | of his. | Having
 — *Fu veduto da* *compagno*,²m. | *suo*.¹ | —

caused him to come | to | a gossip | of hers. | He gave
Fatto lo venire | *da* | *comare*,²f. | *sua*.¹ | — *diede*²

to him a purse with some florins | in it. |
*gli*¹ ³ *bórsa*,⁴f. *con*⁵ ⁷ *fiorini*,⁸m. | *dentro*⁶. |

Having found in the garden some capons, some wine, and
 — *Trovati* *orto*,m. *cappóni*,m., *vino*,m., — *e*

some eggs, he supped | entirely at his ease. |
uova,f., — *cenò* | *a suo bell' ágio*. |

* Such words, as, though necessary in English, are not to be expressed in Italian, are in this part marked with a dash; and such words as are necessary in Italian, but are not expressed in English, are in this language introduced, in italics, and included between parentheses; as, 'He proposed that (*the*) honors should be rendered',—*Propóse che si rendéssero gli onóri*.

CHAPTER II.

SUBSTANTIVE NOUNS.

ALL Italian substantives end with one of the vowels *o, a, e, i, u*.^{*} It is these vowels that show their *gender* and *number*.

GENDER.

Nouns ending in *o* are of the masculine gender ; as,

| | | | |
|-----------------|---------|-------------------|------------|
| <i>libro,</i> | book ; | <i>spécchio,</i> | mirror ; |
| <i>oriuolo,</i> | watch ; | <i>scrittóio,</i> | scrutoire. |

EXCEPTIONS.

Proper names of women ; as,

| | | | | | |
|---------------|----------|----------------|-----------|-----------------|-----------|
| <i>Sáffo,</i> | Sappho ; | <i>E'tro,</i> | Hero ; | <i>Calisto,</i> | Calisto ; |
| <i>Eráto,</i> | Erato ; | <i>Atrópo,</i> | Atropos ; | <i>Alétto,</i> | Alecto : |

Some contracted nouns, generally used in poetry ; as,

| | | | | | |
|-----------------------|---------|------------------------|------------|------------------------|---------|
| <i>immágo,</i> (for } | image ; | <i>testúdo,</i> (for } | tortoise ; | <i>Cartágo,</i> (for } | Car- |
| <i>immáGINE)</i> } | | <i>testúDINE)</i> } | | <i>CartáGINE)</i> } | thage ; |

And the nouns,

| | | | |
|--------------|--------|-------------|-------|
| <i>máno,</i> | hand ; | <i>éco,</i> | echo. |
|--------------|--------|-------------|-------|

are feminine.

Some nouns of animate beings ending in *o*, in the feminine change *o* into *a* ; as,

| | | | |
|-----------------|----------|-----------------|------------|
| <i>colómbo,</i> | pigeon ; | <i>colómbA,</i> | hen-dove ; |
| <i>cavállo,</i> | horse ; | <i>cavállA,</i> | mare ; |
| <i>gátto,</i> | cat ; | <i>gátta,</i> | she-cat. |

^{*} *Lápis*, 'pencil', and some very few foreign nouns, as, *ribes*, 'currants', *chér-mes*, 'cochineal,' &c., are the only exceptions to this rule. But, then, we meet in Italian with many nouns, which, in composition, are made to end with a consonant ; and this on principles, which will be explained in *Part IV*, when treating of ITALIAN ORTHOGRAPHY.

Nouns ending in *a* are of the feminine gender ; as,

cása, house ;

stráda, street ;

pórtá, door ;

chiésa, church.

EXCEPTIONS.

Proper names of men ; as,

Enéa, Æneas ;

Andréa, Andrew ;

Tobía, Toby ;

A'ttíla, Attila ;

Battísta, Baptist ;

Lúca, Luke ;

Nouns of professions exercised by men ; as,

artista, artist ;

scriba, scrivener ;

alchimísta, alchymist ;

legísta, lawyer ;

poéta, poet ;

ebanísta, cabinet-maker :

Nouns of dignity ; as,

pápa, pope ;

dúca, duke ;

gerárca, high-priest ;

patriárca, patriarch ;

monárca, monarch ;

demárca, demarch :

Nouns derived from the Greek, ending in *ma*, *mma* ; as,

clíma, climate ;

diadéma, diadem ;

poéma, poem ;

prísma, prism ;

enímma, enigma ;

prográmma, programma :

Nouns formed of a verb and a noun ; as,

pascibiétola, logger-

santinfizza, hypocrite :

guardaróba, the mas-

[head ;

[ter of the wardrobe ;

And the following,

sofà, sofa ;

sórra, ——— ;

scilóma, long discourse ;

scípa, sot ;

cánapa, hemp ;

baccalà, cod-fish :

are masculine.

The nouns,

idióta, idiot ;

eremíta, hermit ;

anacoréta, anchorite ;

ipócrita, hypocrite ;

apóstata, apostate ;

patrióttá, patriot ;

deícida, deicide ;

parricída, parricide ;

regicída, regicide ;

fraticída, fratricide ;

omicída, homicide ;

matricída, matricide ;

antagonísta, antagonist ;

regalísta, royalist ;

monopolísta, monopo-

[list ;

Deísta, Deist ;

atetsta, atheist ;

Calvinísta, Calvinist ;

[&c.

are of the common gender.

Some names of animate beings ending in *a*, in the masculine change *a* into *o*; as,

| | |
|-------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>cérva</i> , doe; | <i>cérvo</i> , stag; |
| <i>lúpa</i> , she-wolf; | <i>lúpo</i> , wolf; |
| <i>órsa</i> , she-bear; | <i>órso</i> , bear. |

The nouns, *téma*, *pianéta*, *drámma*, *podestà*, in the signification of 'theme', 'planet', 'drama', 'civil magistrate', are masculine; and in the signification of 'fear', 'cope', 'drachm', 'power', are feminine.

EXAMPLES.

Galeotto fu IL LÍBRO e chi lo scrisse. (Dant. Inf. 5.)

The book and he who wrote it were [to us] Galeotto.

O'ra che débbo dire di quèlli che éscono DÁLLO SCRITTÓIO fra la gènte còlla pènnà nell' orécchio. (Càsa Galat. 86.)

Now what must I say of those, who come out of their study among the people with a pen over the ear.

Gli abitatóri di quèsto castèllo con ARMÁTA MÀNO pervénnero al lido. (Guid. 60.)

The inhabitants of this castle with arms in their hands reached the shore.

Tàle che di lontàno—Nèlle valli ÉCO TRÍSTA risuonáva. (Bocc. Tes. 11, 30.)

Such that at a distance sounded in the valleys like a sad echo.

Véro dirò forse, e parrà menzogna—Ch' i sentí trármi délla PRÓPRIA IMÁGO (Petr. c. 4, 8.)

Perhaps I shall tell the truth and it will appear false, that I felt myself drawn away from my own body.

Siccóme quándò IL COLÓMBO si pónne—Préssò al compágno. (Dant. Par. 25.)

As when the dove alights by his mate.

Niúna glória a un' áquila è l'avér vinto ÚNA COLÓMBA. (Bocc. g. n.)

No glory comes to an eagle from having conquered a dove.

In CÀSA TÚA sèi orgoglioso e incomportábile; a càse altrúi, úmile e diméssò. (Varch. Sen. ben. 3. 28.)

In thy house thou art proud and insupportable; and at the houses of others, humble and submissive.

Mise dissenzióne NÉLLA CHIÉSA, tenéndo sètta cóntro al Pápa con cèrti cardináli ed álttri chiéricsi. (Giov. Vill. l. 4, 21, 1.)

He put dissension in the church, plotting against the Pope with certain cardinal and other priests.

*Fu il maggiore, e 'l più sávio
LEGÍSTA, che fósse fino al suo
témpo. (Giov. Vill. 8. 65, 2.)*

*Il mio signóre nella liberalità
a QUÉL gran MONÁRCA non céde.
(Red. Vip. 1. 7.)*

*E cosí figurádo 'l Paradiso,—
Convien saltár lo SAGRÁTO POÉ-
MA,—Côme chi truóva suo cam-
min reciso. (Dant. Par. 23.)*

*Ribáldo, SANTINFÍZZA, gabba-
déi,—Che a quel d'altri pon cin-
que e cavi sei. (Lipp. M. 7. 68.)*

*Or finisci óra QUÉSTO TÚO SCI-
LÓMA, che tu avévi cominciáto di
colúì là. (Salv. Spin. 1. 3.)*

*Paróle, le quáli lo Spirito
Santo sópra la lingua dell' UÓMO
IDIÓTA ponéva. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 4.)*

*Ed úNA LÚPA, che di tútte
bráme—Sembráva cárca. (Dant.
Inf. 1.)*

*Ed ecco, vicíno a léi, uscir d'
úna mácchia fólta UN LÚPO grán-
de e terribile. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.)*

*Perocchè sù mi càccia IL LÚN-
GO TÉMA. (Dant. Inf. 4.)*

*Da QUÉSTA TÉMA acciocchè tu
ti sólve. (Dant. Inf. 2.)*

*Lo BEL PIANÉTA, che ad amár
confórta—Facéva tútto ríder
l'Oriénte. (Dant. Purg. 1.)*

*Ancóra, láscio úNA PIANÉTA
di zendádo vermiglio. (Bocc.
Testam.)*

*DRÁMMA è un componiménto
poético rappresentativo. (Crú-
sca.)*

*Senz' éssa non fermái péso di
DRÁMMA. (Dant. Purg. 21.)*

*Quándo verrà lor NIMÍCA PO-
DÉSTA. (Dant. Inf. 6.)*

He was the greatest and the
wisest lawyer, that had been
seen until his time.

My master in liberality does
not yield to that monarch.

And with such figuring of Pa-
radise,—The sacred strain must
leap, like one that meets—A sud-
den interruption to his road.

Ribald, hypocrite, mocker of
God, who add five to that of
others, and take out six.

Now finish that long discourse
that thou hadst begun about
that man.

Words, which the Holy
Ghost put into the mouth of the
ignorant man.

And a she-wolf who seemed
to be laden with wants of every
kind.

When lo! near her, came
out from a thick hedge a large
and terrible wolf.

For my wide theme so urges
me on.

That thou mayest be relieved
from this fear.

The beautiful planet that in-
vites to love, made all the
orient laugh.

I bequeath, moreover, a cope
of crimson silk stuff.

The drama is a poetical
composition to be represented.

Without which, I did not
rest a moment.

When shall come the Power
adverse to them.

Cóme piú tósto potè, n'andò a colui, che in luógo DEL PODESTÀ v'era. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

As soon as he could, he went to him who filled the place of Podestà.

Nouns ending in *e* are some of them masculine, and some feminine ; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <i>cárme</i> , m., poem ; | <i>fálce</i> , f., reaping hook ; |
| <i>collé</i> , m., hill ; | <i>siépe</i> , f., hedge ; |
| <i>fióre</i> , m., flower ; | <i>néve</i> , f., snow. |

Those ending in *ge*, *le*, *me*, *re*, *se*, *nte*, are generally masculine ; as,

| | |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>rége</i> , king ; | <i>viále</i> , path ; |
| <i>fiúme</i> , river ; | <i>cuóre</i> , heart ; |
| <i>arnése</i> , utensil ; | <i>mónte</i> , mountain. |

EXCEPTIONS.

The nouns,

| | | |
|-------------------------------|----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>légge</i> , law, | <i>falánge</i> , phalanx ; | <i>larínge</i> , larynx ; |
| <i>índole</i> , disposition ; | <i>próle</i> , offspring ; | <i>pélle</i> , skin ; |
| <i>bile</i> , bile ; | <i>válle</i> , valley ; | <i>ipérbole</i> , hyperbole ; |
| <i>árme</i> , arm ; | <i>fáme</i> , hunger ; | <i>spéme</i> , hope ; |
| <i>scüre</i> , hatchet ; | <i>pólvere</i> , dust ; | <i>vépre</i> , brier ; |
| <i>tórre</i> , tower ; | <i>fébbre</i> , fever ; | <i>mádre</i> , mother ; |
| <i>fráse</i> , phrase ; | <i>buióse</i> , dungeons ; | <i>gênte</i> , people ; |
| <i>mênte</i> , mind ; | <i>lênte</i> , lens ; | <i>patênte</i> , patent ; |
| <i>corrênte</i> , current ; | <i>sorgênte</i> , source ; | <i>scmênte</i> , seed ; |

are feminine.

Those ending in *be*, *ce*, *pe*, *te*, *ve*, *ie*, *ine*, *onè*, are, generally, feminine ; as,

| | |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>plébe</i> , common people ; | <i>cicatrice</i> , scar ; |
| <i>siépe</i> , hedge ; | <i>árte</i> , art ; |
| <i>chiáve</i> , key ; | <i>série</i> , series ; |
| <i>immáGINE</i> , image ; | <i>incúDINE</i> , anvil ; |
| <i>ragiòNE</i> , reason ; | <i>naziòNE</i> , nation. |

EXCEPTIONS.

The nouns,

| | | | | | |
|--------------------|------------|-------------------|------------|---------------------|--------------|
| <i>álce</i> , | elk ; | <i>pésce</i> , | fish ; | <i>mántice</i> , | bellows ; |
| <i>códice</i> , | code ; | <i>cálice</i> , | chalice ; | <i>vórtice</i> , | vortex ; |
| <i>pépe</i> , | pepper ; | <i>presépe</i> , | stable ; | <i>rédiçe</i> , | recipe ; |
| <i>váte</i> , | bard ; | <i>látte</i> , | milk ; | <i>límite</i> , | limit ; |
| <i>brève</i> , | a brief ; | <i>concláve</i> , | conclave ; | <i>architráve</i> , | architrave ; |
| <i>críne</i> , | hair ; | <i>cárdine</i> , | hinge ; | <i>confíne</i> , | confine ; |
| <i>disórdine</i> , | disorder ; | <i>glútine</i> , | glue ; | <i>péttime</i> , | comb ; |
| <i>bástóne</i> , | stick ; | <i>mattóne</i> , | brick ; | <i>paragóne</i> , | comparison ; |

are masculine.

The nouns,

| | | | | | |
|------------------|------------|-------------------|---------------|------------------|------------|
| <i>áere</i> , | air ; | <i>cárcere</i> ,* | prison ; | <i>cénere</i> ,* | ashes ; |
| <i>árbore</i> , | tree ; | <i>fólgore</i> , | thunderbolt ; | <i>frónte</i> ,† | forehead ; |
| <i>fónte</i> , | fountain ; | <i>fíne</i> ,† | rope ; | <i>tráve</i> , | beam ; |
| <i>grégge</i> ,* | flock ; | <i>consórt</i> , | consort ; | <i>eréde</i> , | heir ; |
| | | <i>parénte</i> , | parent ; | | |

are of the common gender.

Names of animate beings, ending in *e*, are generally of the common gender ; as,

| | | | |
|----------------|--------|----------------|--------|
| <i>lépre</i> , | hare ; | <i>sérpe</i> , | snake. |
|----------------|--------|----------------|--------|

The noun *dimáne*, when it means 'to-morrow', is masculine ; but when it signifies 'the beginning of the day', is feminine.

The noun *márgine*, when it means 'scar', is feminine ; but when it means 'margin,' 'extremity', is of the common gender.

The nouns *fánte*, and *fine*, when they mean 'foot-soldier'; and 'aim' or 'design', are masculine : but when they mean 'servant'; and 'end' or 'termination', are of the common gender.

The nouns *óste*, and *órdine*, when they mean 'host', an 'inn-keeper'; and 'order', a 'command', are masculine : but when they mean 'host,' an 'army'; and 'order', 'arrangement', or a 'religious order', they are of the common gender.

* *Cárcere*, *cénere*, and *grégge*, in the plural number, *cárceri*, 'prisons', *céneri*, 'ashes'; and *gréggi*, 'flocks', are feminine only.

† *Frónte* and *fíne*, in prose, are feminine only.

EXAMPLES.

*Ennio di quel cantò RÚVIDO
CÁRME. (Petr. s. 153.)*

Ennius sang of him a rude song.

*Quèsta éra móltò bène affóssa-
ta, e con BUÓNA SIÉPE. (Sacch.
n. 91.)*

This was well fortified by a ditch, and by a good hedge.

*Vidi génte álla ríva d'UN gran
FIÚME. (Dant. Inf. 3.)*

I beheld a throng upon the shore of a great stream.

*Un rívo d'acqua chiuríssima,
il quále d'una montagnétta di-
scendéra in ÚNA VÁLLE OMBRÓ-
SA. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)*

A stream of very clear water, which descended from a little hill into a shady valley.

*Serráta la cèlla CÓLLA CHIÁVE,
dirittaménte sen andò álla cáme-
ra dèllo Abáte. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 4.)*

Having locked the cell with the key, he went directly to the chamber of the Abbot.

*Vénne dal ciélo úna colómba
biánca c'me néve, e, mèsso il béc-
co NEL CÁLICE, tútto 'l sángue
si bérre. (Pass. 136.)*

There descended from Heaven a dove as white as snow, and, having put its beak into the chalice, it drank all the blood.

*Ed érvvi, óltre a quèsto, l'ÁERE
assái più FRÉSCO. (Bocc. Intr.)*

And there, besides this, the air is a great deal more fresh.

*Ma poicchè l'ÁERE a diventr
BUÓNA incominciò. (Bocc. Amet.)*

But when the air began to be good.

*Ed entráta nel CHIÁRO FÓNTE
tútta si mise nêlle áque. (Bocc.
Amet.)*

And having entered into the clear fountain, she plunged herself into the water.

*Dintórno ÁLLA FÓNTE si póse-
ro a sedére. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)*

They sat around the fountain.

*Non crêdo UN SÉRPE, che ha 'l
cor cotánto acérbo. (Dittam. 2.
12.)*

I do not believe a serpent, who has a heart so cruel.

*Te non colómba, ma VELENÓSA
SÉRPE conoscéndo, con tútta la
fórza di perseguire inténdo.
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)*

Knowing thee to be not a dove, but a venomous serpent, I intend to persecute thee with all my power.

*Lo stólto sémprè procrástina
di far bène, dicéndo: 'Dimán
farò bène'; e sémprè l'UN DI-
MÁNE dimánda l'ÁLTRO DIMÁNE.
(Albertan. c. 64.)*

The fool always delays to do good, saying: 'To-morrow I will do good.' And one to-morrow ever requires another.

Quando fù desto innânzi LA DIMANE,—Pianger sentii fra 'l sonno i miei figliuoli. (Dant. Inf. 33.)

Si ricordò lei dovère avere UNA MARGINE, a guisa d'una crocetta, sopra l'orecchia sinistra. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

Lo fondo suo, ed ambo le pendici—Fatte éron pietra, e i MARGINI d'allato. (Dant. Inf. 14.)

Posciachè ella si fu condotta ALLA MARGINE dell'alta ripa, nuotando scampammo. (Firenz. Asin.)

Mandando cinquecento FANTI Ghibellini del contado di Firenze. (Giov. Vill. l. 7. c. 109.)

Doloroso più che altro—Sé' fatto FANTE. (Bocc. Tes. 4. 23.)

Avèva Giacomino in casa UNA FANTE ATTEMPATA. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

Un uomo a LIETO FINE pervenuto. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

Questa fu LA FINE dell' imperatore Arrigo. (Giov. Vill. l. 7. c. 22.)

Volendo IL SUO OSTE ésser pagato, primieramente GLI diede l' una. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Così avvenne nel nostro bene avventurato OSTE. (Giov. Vill. l. 11. c. 53.)

Congregò UNA BELLA, e grande, e PODEROSA OSTE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Dal Signor Annibale Ruccellai, potrà ella intendere L' ORDINE delle cose. (Casa, lett. 8.)

Se con sana mente sarà RIGUARDATO L' ORDINE delle cose. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 9.)

When I awoke before the morning, I heard my sons sob in their slumber.

He recollected that she ought to have a scar, like a cross, above the left ear.

Its bed and sloping sides, and both the margins, were petrified.

After that she came to the margin of the high bank, we escaped by swimming.

Sending five hundred Ghibelline foot-soldiers from the territory of Florence.

Wretched more than any other, thou art made a servant.

Giacomino had in his house an elderly servant maid.

A man who had come to a happy end.

This was the end of the Emperor Henry.

His host desiring to be paid, he first gave him that one.

Thus he fell in with our fortunate army.

He collected a fine, large and powerful army.

From Mr Annibal Ruccellai, you may hear the order which I have given to him.

If we should consider with sound mind the order of things.

PRESA L' ORDINE *tra lóro, il trattáto fu riveláto al Dúca.*
(Stor. Pistol. p. 171.)

Having made the arrangement among themselves, they revealed the subject to the duke.

Io ho avúta sémpre speciál dírozióne **AL VÓSTRO ÓRDINE.**
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

I have always had a special devotion to your order.

*Al témpo del détto Pápa Inno-
cénzo si cominciò* **LA SÁNTA ÓR-
DINE dé' Fráti Minóri.** (Giov.
Vill. l. 1. c. 24.)

In the times of the said Pope Innocent, was instituted the order of the Minor Friars.

Nouns ending in *i* are some of them masculine, and some feminine; as,

eclissi, m., eclipse;
brindisi, m., toast;

crisi, f., crisis;
tési, f., thesis.

Nouns of dignity, as,

balì, bailiff; *pári*, peer;

guardasigílli, keeper
[of the seal:]

The noun *dì*, 'day', and its compounds; as,

buondì, good day; *mezzodì*, noon; *oggi-dì*, now-a-days:

Nouns formed of a verb and a noun in the plural; as,

lavacéci, dunce; *graffiasánti*, hypocrite; *guardaportóni*, porter;
leccapiátti, glutton; *cacciadiávoli*, exorcist; *cavadénti*, tooth draw-
[er:]

And the following,

alcalì, alkali; *ambássi*, ambs-aces; *zánni*, merry-andrew;
abbiccì, alphabet; *barbagiánni*, owl; *soprattiéni*, delay;
cremisi, crimson; *diési*, diesis [in music]; *appigiónasi*, notice of
[a house to let:]
are masculine.

The noun *Génesi*, 'Genesis', is of the common gender.

Nouns ending in *u* are some of them masculine, and some feminine; as,

| | | | |
|-----------------------|-----------|----------------------|--------|
| <i>méu</i> , m. | dill; | <i>grù</i> , f. | crane; |
| <i>ragù</i> , m. | ragout; | <i>tribù</i> , f. | tribe; |
| <i>soprappiù</i> , m. | overplus; | <i>gioventù</i> , f. | youth. |

EXAMPLES.

*Significàva gran sècco nëlla
vegnènte stàte, e pòi nëlla oppo-
sizione di QUELLO ECCLÍSSI
gran sopérchio d' àcque.* (Giov.
Vill. l. 11. c. 2.)

*Quèl, che i mèdici nòstri chià-
man CRÍSI.* (Bern. Rim. 1. 16.)

*Cingonlo intórno i suói FAMÓ-
SI PÁRI.* (Ariost. Fur. 38. 79.)

*Il mèdico si fèce lóro incòntro
dicèndo, che Iddio dèsse-lóro IL
BUONDÌ.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

*IL maggiór CACCIADIÁVOLI
non è in Toscana.* (Lor. Med.
Arid. 2. 5.)

*Ma táli còse hánno più DEL
ZÁNNI, e son disonéstè.* (Demetr.
Seng. 67.)

*Comincerémo dal principia
DEL GÉNESI.* (Giov. Vill. l. 11.
c. 2.)

*Lasciásse lóro un per cènto
di quánto hánno, e guadagnàs-
sonsi quell úno col sudóre del
nóito, còme cománda LA GÉNESI.*
(Dav. Scism. p. 38.)

*IL MÉU è CÁLDO ed è érba, il
cui sème è détto con simigliánte
nóme.* (Cr. 6. 78. 1.)

*Io ho giudicáto, che égli sta
oramái bène con quálche frèno
ritenére i càldi impeti DÉLLA
SÚA GIOVENTÙ.* (Firenz. Asin.
178.)

It announced a great drought
in the following summer, and af-
terward at the opposition of that
eclipse, a great abundance of
water.

That, which our physicians
call crisis.

His famous peers surround
him.

The physician went to meet
them, wishing God would give
them a good day.

A greater exorcist is not to
be found in Tuscany.

But such things more become
a merry-andrew, and are in-
decent.

We will commence from the
beginning of Genesis.

That he should leave them
one per centum of what they
have, and that they should earn
that one by the sweat of their
brow, as is commanded in Gen-
esis.

The dill is warm, and it is an
herb whose seed is called by
the same name.

I have thought, that it is
now proper to moderate, with
some restraint, the warm im-
pulses of his youth.

Adjectives, verbs, adverbs, prepositions, when used substantively, are of the masculine gender ; as,

| | |
|----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>bello</i> , beautiful ; | <i>seguirè</i> , to continue ; |
| <i>dòve</i> , where ; | <i>quàndo</i> , when ; |
| <i>còme</i> , how ; | <i>perchè</i> , why ; |
| <i>sì</i> , yes ; | <i>no</i> , no. |

The names of the days of the week, except *Doménica*, ' Sunday ' ; and those of the months, are masculine ; as,

| | |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>Mercoledì</i> , Wednesday ; | <i>Sábato</i> , Saturday ; |
| <i>Aprile</i> , April ; | <i>Agòsto</i> , August. |

Names of trees are masculine ; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>ólmo</i> , elm-tree ; | <i>mirto</i> , myrtle-tree ; |
| <i>nóce</i> , walnut-tree ; | <i>limóne</i> , lemon-tree. |

EXCEPTIONS.

Quércia, oak-tree ; *víte*, vine ; *ginèstra*, broom ;
are feminine.

Names of fruits are feminine* ; as,

| | |
|------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>péra</i> , pear ; | <i>arância</i> , orange ; |
| <i>susina</i> , plum ; | <i>ciriégia</i> , cherry. |

EXCEPTIONS.

Pómo, apple ; *fico*, fig ; *dáttero*, date ;
cédro, citron ; *píno*, pine ; *limóne*, lemon.
are masculine.

Some masculine nouns, when used to denote a feminine object, take a different termination ; as,

| | |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <i>amíco</i> , friend, m. ; | <i>amíca</i> , friend, f. ; |
| <i>cugíno</i> , cousin, m. ; | <i>cugína</i> , cousin, f. ; |
| <i>genitóre</i> , father ; | <i>genitrice</i> , mother ; |
| <i>autóre</i> , author ; | <i>autrice</i> , authoress ; |
| <i>poéta</i> , poet ; | <i>poetessa</i> , poetess ; |
| <i>sacerdóte</i> , priest ; | <i>sacerdotessa</i> , priestess ; |
| <i>dúca</i> , duke ; | <i>duchessa</i> , duchess ; |
| <i>príncipe</i> , prince ; | <i>principessa</i> , princess ; |
| <i>re</i> , king ; | <i>regina</i> , queen. |

* These are generally formed from the names of trees, changing *o* into *a* ; as, *mándorlo*, ' almond-tree ' ; *mándorla*, ' an almond ' ; *gélso*, ' mulberry-tree ' ; *gélso*, ' a mulberry '.

Some names of animate beings denote the feminine by a different word ; as,

uómo, man ;
tóro, bull ;
pórco, pig ;

dónna, woman ;
vácça, cow ;
tróia, sow ;

Some in the feminine take a different termination ; as,

câne, dog ;
leóne, lion ;

cágna, bitch ;
leonéssa, lioness ;

And others are either masculine or feminine, and designate both genders ; as,

córvo, m., crow ;

pantéra, f., panther.

EXAMPLES.

Le dónne, quándo arrívano a quaránta ánni pérđono IL BÉLLO délla gioventúđine. (Libr. Adorn. Donn.)

La regína a Filoména voltáta, le impóse IL SEGUITÁRE. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

IL DÓVE io ho già pensáto. (Bocc. g. 2.)

Saréi conténto di sapére IL QUÁNDO. (Petr. s. 306.)

DEL CÓME non ti cáglia IL PERCHÈ ti dirò. (Bocc. Filoc.)

Son certa DEL SÌ. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)

Ciascúno rispóse DEL NO. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Ancóra IL MERCOLEDÌ, e 'l Venèrdì, e IL SÁBATO. (Maestruzz. 1. 33.)

L'AMORÓ SOMÍRTO—Crésce più volontíer nel césपो intéro. (Alam. Colt. 1. 16.)

LA VÍTE áppo nói è assái conosciúta. (Cr. 4. I. 1.)

When women arrive at forty years they lose the beauty of youth.

The queen turning to Filomena, ordered her to continue.

I have already thought of the where.

I should be happy to know the when.

Do not trouble yourself about the how, I will tell you the why.

I am certain of the affirmative.

Every one answered in the negative.

Even Wednesday, and Friday, and Saturday.

The amorous myrtle grows better in the whole bush.

The vine among us is very well known.

*Ti sérbo gèlse, mândorle,
e SUSÍNE.* (Bocc. Amet. 15.)

*I son quèl dèlle frùtte del mal
ôrto—Che quì riprèndo DÀTTERO
per FÍCO.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

*E di quèsto consìglio fu au-
tríce úna ch'èbbe nòme Polisso.*
(But. Com. Dant.)

*DÓNNA è nòme genérico dèlla
FÈMMINA dèlla spèzie umána.*
(Crúscà.)

*Mi sovviène d'avér fátto man-
giàre al LEÓNE dèlla càrnc d'ú-
na LEONÉSSA.* (Red. Ins. 71.)

*Infra mólte biànche colómbe
aggiúgne più di bellèzza UN NÉ-
RO CÓRVO, che un cándido cigno.*
(Bocc. g. 9 n. 10.)

I keep for thee mulberries, al-
monds, and plums.

He—am I, who fruit from
evil garden brought;—And here
my fig is with a date repaid.

And the author of this coun-
sel was one who was named
Polisso.

Woman is the generic name
of the female of the human
species.

I recollect to have made the
lion eat of the flesh of the li-
oness.

Amongst many white doves
a black crow adds more beauty
than a white swan.

NUMBER, OR FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

Masculine nouns, ending in *o*, *a*, *e*, form the plural by
changing *o*, *a*, *e*, into *i*; as,

| | | | |
|------------------|----------|------------------|-----------|
| <i>libro</i> , | book; | <i>libri</i> , | books; |
| <i>cavállo</i> , | horse; | <i>cavállì</i> , | horses; |
| <i>poéta</i> , | poet; | <i>poéti</i> , | poets; |
| <i>climà</i> , | climate; | <i>climì</i> , | climates; |
| <i>fióre</i> , | flower; | <i>fióri</i> , | flowers; |
| <i>lépre</i> , | hare; | <i>lépri</i> , | hares. |

Feminine nouns, ending in *o*, *e*, form the plural by
changing *o*, *e*, into *i*; as,

| | | | |
|----------------|-----------|----------------|------------|
| <i>máno</i> , | hand; | <i>màni</i> , | hands; |
| <i>àrte</i> , | art; | <i>àrtì</i> , | arts; |
| <i>fónte</i> , | fountain; | <i>fóntì</i> , | fountains. |

Feminine nouns ending in *a*, form the plural by chang-
ing *a* into *e*; as,

| | | | |
|----------------|--------|----------------|---------|
| <i>cása</i> , | house; | <i>càse</i> , | houses; |
| <i>ménsa</i> , | table; | <i>ménse</i> , | tables; |

Nouns ending in *i*, *u*, or in *ie*, or with an *accented vowel*, do not change their termination in the plural; as,

éstasi, extacy;
gru, crane;
spécie, sort;
re,* king;
città,* city;
virtù,* virtue;

éstasi, extacies;
gru, cranes;
spécie, sorts;
re, kings;
città, cities;
virtù, virtues.

The following nouns in the plural have an irregular formation :

Dio, God;
uómo, man;
búe, ox;

Déi, Gods;
uómini, men;
búoi, oxen.

EXAMPLES.

ALCÚNI CAVÁLLI si dipùtano a vetùra, àltri a càrro. (Cr. 6. 9.)

Some horses are destined for burden, others to the carriage.

El divisa la tèrra in SÉTTE CLÍMI. (But. Com. Dant.)

The earth is divided into seven climates.

Ed io 'l provái sul prímò aprír DÉ' FIORI. (Petr. c. 38.)

And I experienced it at the first blooming of the flowers.

CÓLLE mie MÁNI avréi già pósto in tèrra—Qúeste mèmbra noióse. (Petr. s. 29.)

I should have already with my own hands laid in the ground these wearisome limbs,

Qualcúna d' éste nótti—Chiú-da omài quèste DÚE FÓNTI di piánto. (Petr. c. 46.)

Let one of these nights close these two fountains of tears.

E di quéllo un mézzo bicchiér per uómo dèsse ÁLLE prime MÉNSE. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 2.)

And of that [wine] he should give half a tumbler to each man at the first course.

E quèsto è éssere in ÉSTASI. (But. Com. Dant.)

And this is to be in extacy.

LE GRU hánno un lóro re, e tútte lo sèrvono. (Fior. Vt. c. 19.)

The cranes have a king, and all serve him.

Dé' quáli animáli sóno quási infiníte LE SPÉCIE. (Gell. Circ. 2. 29.)

Of which animals, the species are almost infinite.

* Such nouns are generally contracted; as *re* from *rége*, *città* from *cittàde*, *virtù* from *virtùde*; and when they are used entire, that is, without the suppression of any syllable *rége*, *cittàde*, *virtùde*, they change their termination, and make in the plural *régi*, 'kings'; *cittàdi*, 'cities'; *virtùdi*, 'virtues' according to the general rule.

LE CITTÀ son *nemiche*, *amici*
i *boschi*—A' *miei pensieri*. (Petr.
c. 37.)

Cities are unfriendly, the
woods are friendly to my
thoughts.

Tutti i *REGI* del *mondo* sono
meno a vostro sposo. (Fr. Guitt.
lett. 10.)

All the kings in the world
are inferior to your husband.

Tosto GLI *DEI* d' *abisso* in
varie forme—*Concorron d'ogni*
intorno all' alte porte. (Tass.
Ger. 3. 5.)

Soon the gods of the Abyss
in different bands, rush from
all sides to the lofty gates.

Veggendo MOLTI *UOMINI* *nella*
corte del padre usare. (Bocc.
g. 4. n. 1.)

Seeing many men frequent
the court of her father.

Perchè *addivenne*, che i *BUOI*,
gli asini, le *pecore*, per li *campi*
se n'andavano. (Bocc. Introd.)

Wherefore it happened, that
the oxen, the asses, the goats,
went astray through the fields.

Many nouns in *o* in the plural end in *i*, and more
elegantly in *a*; as,

anello, ring;

{ *anelli*, } rings;
or { *anella*, }

labbro, lip;

{ *labbri*, } lips;
or { *labbra*, }

pugno, fist;

{ *pugni*, } fists;
or { *pugna*, }

Some have only the termination in *a* in the plural; as,

miglio, mile;

miglia, miles;

staio, bushel;

staiA, bushels;

uovo, egg;

uova, eggs.

[For a list of Words in *o*, making the plural in *i* or *a*, see APPENDIX, D.]

Riso, 'laughter'; *membro*, 'limb', or 'member of the human body', form their plural in *i* and *a*; *risi*, *risa*, 'laughter'; *membri*, *membra*, 'limbs': but *riso*, 'rice'; *membro*, 'member of a corporation or political body', form their plural in *i* only; *risi*, 'rice'; *membri*, 'members'.

Gesto, 'exploit'; *frutto*, 'the fruit of a tree'; *legno*, 'firewood', form their plural in *i* and *a*; *gesti*, *gesta*, 'exploits'; *frutti*, *frutta*, 'fruits'; *legni*, *legna*, 'wood': but *gesto*, 'gesture'; *frutto*, 'production of the earth', or 'income'; *legno*, 'the hard substance of a tree', 'a ship', or 'a coach', form their plural in *i* only; *gesti*, 'gestures'; *frutti*, 'produce' or 'income'; *legni*, 'billets of wood', 'ships', or 'coaches'.

O'sso, 'bone', has a treble termination in the plural, making *óssi*, *ósse*, *óssa*, 'bones'.

When these nouns take the termination in *a* in the plural, they become feminine, and receive the article *le* before them; as, *le anélla*, 'the rings'; *le míglia*, 'the miles'; *le frúttà*, 'the fruits'; *le ósse* or *le óssa*, 'the bones.'

Finally there are, in Italian, as well as in all other languages, some nouns which have only the singular number; as, all *proper names*,* *names of metals*, and the words *prole*, 'generation'; *progénie*, 'progeny'; *stirpe*, 'race'; *máne*, 'morning'; *miéle*, 'honey,' &c.; and others which have only the plural; as, *lári*, 'household gods'; *annáli*, 'annals'; *calzóni*, 'breeches'; *vánni*, 'wings'; *fórbici*, 'scissars'; *nózze*, 'nuptials'; *eséquie*, 'exequies'; *rénì*, 'the reins'; *mólle* or *mólì*, 'tongs'; *spézie* or *spéjz*, 'spices'; *fróge*, 'the skin over the nostrils of a horse'; &c.

EXAMPLES.

*Fáttoſi preſtare a Madónna
Giacomína un DÉ' ſuoi ANÉLLI,
quìvì per ſua móglie ſpoſò la
Caterina.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

*La lúnga guérra—Che DEL-
L'ANÉLLA fe' sì álte ſpóglic.*
(Dant. Inf. 28.)

*E'lla féce portáre i dúe cap-
póni léſſi, e MÓLTE UÓVA
fréſche.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

*Lasciárono andár Calandríno
con LE maggiór RÍſa del móndo.*
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

*Lo ſpirto DÁLLE bélle MÉM-
BRA ſciólto.* (Petr. s. 259.)

*Tánto più celebrò Tiberio
SÚE GÉſta in ſenáto.* (Dav.
Tac. ann. l. 2.)

*Vivéano quási cóme béſtie di
FRÚTTA, e di ghiánde.* (Giov.
Vill. l. 1. c. 23.)

Having asked Madonna Gia-
comina to lend him one of her
rings, there took Catharine to
wife.

That long war, in which was
made the rich booty of the
rings.

She caused to be brought
the two boiled capons, and
many fresh eggs.

They let Calandrino go with
the greatest laughter in the
world.

The spirit freed from the
beautiful limbs.

Tiberius celebrated so much
the more his exploits in the se-
nate.

They lived like beasts on
fruit and mast.

* When *proper names of persons*, however, are taken as common, they are used also in the plural; as, *i Chiabréra*, *i Filicáia*, *i Rédì*, *i Menzini*, *i Guidì*, *i Frugóni*, e *tánti álti ſublímì e prégiaſſímì ingégni*, 'the Chiabreras, the Filicaias, the Redis, the Menzinis, the Guidis, the Frugonis, and so many other sublime and most worthy geniuses.'

*Il fuoco crêsce per LE LÊGNA,
e quânte più ce ne mêtti mag-
giore si fa. (Fr. Giord. 146.)*

*Fu non solamênte uccîso, ma
fino ALL' ÔSSA divorâto. (Bocc.
g. 2. n. 9.)*

*LA STÎRPE non fa le singu-
lâri persône nóbili, ma le singu-
lâri persône fânno nóbile LA
STÎRPE. (Dant. Conv.)*

*Cristo vôle per súa presênza
onorâr LE NÔZZE di Càna Ga-
liléa, e quîvi fare il primo mirâ-
colo. (Cavalc. Espos. simb. 1.)*

Fire is increased by wood,
and the more you put on, the
larger it becomes.

He was not only killed, but
devoured even to the bones.

Family does not make ex-
traordinary persons noble, but
extraordinary persons render
their family noble.

Christ wished to honor with
his presence the nuptials of
Cana of Galilee, and there to
work the first miracle.

Independently of the change of termination, there are in Italian many nouns, which in the plural undergo a certain change of orthography.

Thus all nouns ending in *ca*, *ga*, in order to preserve in the plural before the vowels *i*, *e*, the same sound which *c*, *g*, have in the singular before the vowel *a*, take an *h*, in the plural after the consonant *c*, *g*; as,

monârca, monarch;
colléga, colleague;
mónaca, nun;
vérga, rod;

monârchi, monarchs;
collégni, colleagues;
mónache, nuns;
vérghè, rods.

Nouns ending in *co*, *go*, consisting of two syllables, also take an *h* in the plural after *c*, *g*; as,

giuóco, sport;
luógo, place;

giuóchi, sports;
luóghì, places.

EXCEPTIONS.

Grêco, 'Greek'; *pôrco*, 'hog'; in the plural make, *Gréci*, 'Greeks'; *pôrci*, 'hogs.' *Mágo*, 'magician', in the plural makes either *mághì*, or *mági*, 'magicians'.

Nouns in *co*, *go*, of more than two syllables, if *co*, *go*, are preceded by a consonant, take an *h* in the plural; and if they are preceded by a vowel they are written without *h*; as,

| | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>bifólco</i> , laborer; | <i>bifólchi</i> , laborers; |
| <i>albérco</i> , inn; | <i>albérghi</i> , inns; |
| <i>médico</i> , physician; | <i>médici</i> , physicians; |
| <i>teólogo</i> , theologian; | <i>teólogi</i> , theologians. |

EXCEPTIONS.

The following nouns,

| | |
|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>cárico</i> , charge; | <i>óbliggo</i> , obligation; |
| <i>fóndaco</i> , warehouse; | <i>ripiéggo</i> , expedient; |
| <i>párroco</i> , parson; | <i>catálogo</i> , catalogue; |
| <i>stómaco</i> , stomach; | <i>impiéggo</i> , employment; |
| <i>mánico</i> , handle; | <i>gastígo</i> , punishment; |
| <i>tráfíco</i> , trading; | <i>intrígo</i> , intrigue; |

in the plural make,

| | |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| <i>cárichi</i> , charges; | <i>óbligghi</i> , obligations; |
| <i>fóndachi</i> , warehouses; | <i>ripiégghi</i> , expedients; |
| <i>párrochi</i> , parsons; | <i>catáloghi</i> , catalogues; |
| <i>stómachi</i> , stomachs; | <i>impiégghi</i> , employments; |
| <i>mánichi</i> , handles; | <i>gastíghi</i> , punishments; |
| <i>tráfíchi</i> , tradings; | <i>intríghi</i> , intrigues. |

Several other nouns in *co*, *go*, are indifferently written with or without the *h*; as,

| | | |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------|------------------|
| <i>mendíco</i> , beggar; | { <i>mendíchi</i> , } | { beggars ; |
| | { or <i>mendíci</i> , } | |
| <i>equivoco</i> , equivocate; | { <i>equivóchi</i> , } | { equivocoques ; |
| | { or <i>equivoci</i> , } | |
| <i>diálogo</i> , dialogue; | { <i>diáloghi</i> , } | { dialogues ; |
| | { or <i>diálogi</i> , } | |
| <i>apólogo</i> , apologue; | { <i>apóloghi</i> , } | { apoloques. |
| | { or <i>apólogi</i> , } | |

[For a list of Nouns ending in *co*, *go*, and making the plural in *ci*, *gi*, or *chi*, *ghi*, see APPENDIX D. (2.)]

Nouns ending in *cia*, *gia*, and *ccia*, *ggia*, *unaccented*, form their plural by changing *a* into *e*, and suppressing the *i*; as,

| | |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>lância</i> , lance; | <i>lance</i> , lances; |
| <i>frância</i> , fringe; | <i>fränge</i> , fringes; |
| <i>fréccia</i> , arrow; | <i>frécce</i> , arrows; |
| <i>piaggia</i> , strand; | <i>piägge</i> , strands. |

Nouns ending in *cio*, *gio*, and *ccio*, *ggio*, *unaccented*, form their plural by changing *o* into *i*, and suppressing the *i* that they have in the singular; or what is the same, by suppressing only the *o*; as,

| | |
|------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>bácio</i> , kiss; | <i>báci</i> , kisses; |
| <i>frégio</i> , honor; | <i>frégi</i> , honors; |
| <i>laccio</i> , snare; | <i>lacci</i> , snares; |
| <i>raggio</i> , ray; | <i>raggi</i> , rays. |

But if *cia*, *gia*, and *ccia*, *ggia*, or *cio*, *gio* and *ccio*, *ggio* are *accented*, the *i* is never suppressed; as,

| | |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>elegía</i> , elegy; | <i>elegíe</i> , elegies; |
| <i>farmácia</i> , pharmacy; | <i>farmacíe</i> , pharmacies; |
| <i>leggio</i> , reading-desk; | <i>leggíi</i> , reading-desks. |

Nouns ending in *chio*, *ghio*, *glio*, form the plural by suppressing the *o*; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>occhio</i> , eye; | <i>occhi</i> , eyes; |
| <i>múgghio</i> , bellowing; | <i>múgghi</i> , bellowings; |
| <i>scóglio</i> , rock; | <i>scógli</i> , rocks. |

Nouns ending in *áio*,* *óio*, also form their plural by suppressing the *o*; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <i>fornáio</i> , baker; | <i>fornái</i> , bakers; |
| <i>filatóio</i> , spinning-wheel; | <i>filatói</i> , spinning-wheels. |

All other nouns ending in *io*, if *io* is *unaccented*,

* Most nouns in *áio* end also in *áro*; as, *libráio* or *libráro*, *fornáio* or *fornáro*; when they take this last termination, in the plural they make *librári*, 'booksellers'; *fornári*, 'bakers'; according to the general rule.

form their plural by changing *io* into *j*; but if *io* is *accented*, they form it by changing the *o* of *io* into *i*; as,

stúdio, study;
benefizio,* benefit;
rio, rivulet;
desio, desire;

stúdj, studies,
benefizj, benefits;
rii, rivulets;
desii, desires.

The noun *móglie*, 'wife', forms the plural by suppressing the *e*; *mógli*, 'wives'.

E X A M P L E S.

La contéssa Matélida fondò un nobile monastério di MÓNACHE. (Giov. Vill. l. 4. c. 20.)

The countess Matilda founded a noble convent of nuns.

Il dì che costèi nâcque éran le stêlle—In LUÓGHI átti ed elétti. (Petr. c. 44.)

On the day when this lady was born, the stars were in high and chosen places.

Tra brútti PÓRCI piú dégni di gâlle,—Che d' áltro cibo fatto in umân úso. (Dant. Purg. 14.)

'Midst brute swine—Worthier of acorns than of other food—Created for man's use.

I sâvj si partírono, e tornârsi á lóro ALBÉRGI. (Nov. ant. 6.)

The sages went away, and returned to their dwellings.

Si suól ricórrere né' máli pericolósi á MÉDICI eccellétti. (Casa. lett. 49.)

In dangerous diseases we are accustomed to have recourse to excellent physicians.

Ponéndo lóro grandíssimi CÁRICHI di monéte. (Stor. Pist. 170.)

Laying upon them very great imposts of money.

Le rispóste vive, le novél'e vi érano, e gli APÓLOGI. (Pros. Fior. 6.)

There were witty answers, stories, and fables.

Spárti costóro per la piccòla càsa, párte n' andò nélla córte, e póste giù lor LÁNCE, avvénne che úno di lóro gittò la sua LÁNCIA nel fiéno. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

These having spread themselves through the small house, and having laid down their lances, it happened that one of them threw his lance into the hay.

* Many nouns in *zio*, end also in *cio* or *gio*; as, *benefizio* or *beneficio*, *servizio* or *servigio*; but, however they may end, constantly form the plural in *j*; as, *benefizj* or *beneficj*, 'benefits'; *servizj* or *servigj*, 'services'.

*Già nēlla sommità dē' più
alti mōnti apparivano i RÀGGI
dēlla surgēnte lūce. (Bocc. g.
8. proem.)*

*Le giocōnde óde, e le lascive
ELEGÍE, a tūtte le áltre studiōse
árti antipóngono. (Dav. Tac.
Perd. Eloq.)*

*Io solēva ésser úno dēgli óCCHI
del cāpo vōstro. (Pecor. g. 4.
n. 2.)*

*Mi paréa per tūtto, dōve che
io mi volgēssi, sentíre MÚGGHI,
úrli, e strída di divērsi e fero-
cissimi animáli. (Lab. 29.)*

*Che giòva dúnque, perché tūt-
ta spálme—La mia barchétta,
poichè infra gli scógli—E'
ritenuta. (Petr. c. 39.)*

*Dónne, noi siámo giòvani
FORNÁI,—Dell' ártē nōstra buón
maēstri assái. (Cant. Carn.
34.)*

*Il quále, nē' liberáli STÚDI
ammaestráto, sommamēnte i va-
lorósi uómini onoráva. (Bocc.
Vit. Dant.)*

*Apprēso costoro le siróccie
e le MÓGLI lóro, tūtte di brúno
vestíte, vènnero. (Bocc. g. 3.
n. 7.)*

Already on the summit of
the highest mountains appeared
the rays of the rising light.

They prefer the merry odes
and the lascivious elegies to all
the other studious arts.

I used to be one of the eyes
of your head.

I seemed to hear, wherever
I turned, the bellowings, the
howlings, and the cries of dif-
ferent and very ferocious ani-
mals.

What does it avail to spread
all the sails of my bark, if she
is impeded among the rocks.

Ladies, we are young bakers
very well skilled in our art.

Who, being well skilled in
liberal pursuits, greatly honored
learned men.

After them came their sisters
and their wives, all dressed in
mourning.

VARIATION OF NOUNS.

Italian nouns are varied by means of certain preposi-
tions placed before them ; viz. *DI*, 'of', in the genitive,
or *relation of possession* ; *A*, 'to', in the dative, or *rela-
tion of attribution* ; *DA*, 'from or by', in the ablative,
or *relation of derivation*. The nominative, or *subjective*,
and the accusative, or *objective*, are distinguished by the
place they occupy in the sentence.

Proper nouns are generally varied with the *prepositions*
only : common nouns with the *prepositions* and the ar-

ticles *il, lo, la*; *i* or *li, gli, le*, 'the'. When common nouns are used in an indefinite sense, they are varied with the *prepositions* and the pronouns *uno, una*, 'a' or 'an'; *alcuni, alcune*, 'some'.

Variation of a Proper Noun.

| | | | |
|------------------|----------------------|-------------------|--------------------------|
| Subjective (N.)* | — | <i>Césare,</i> | <i>Cæsar;</i> |
| Relation of | { Possession (G.) — | <i>di Césare,</i> | of <i>Cæsar;</i> |
| | { Attribution (D.) — | <i>a Césare,</i> | to <i>Cæsar;</i> |
| | { Derivation (Ab.) — | <i>da Césare,</i> | from or by <i>Cæsar;</i> |
| Objective (Ac.) | — | <i>Césare,</i> | <i>Cæsar.</i> |

Before a noun beginning with a vowel, the preposition *di* drops the *i* and takes an apostrophe in its stead; and the preposition *a* takes a *d* after it; as,

D' António, } of Anthony; *AD António,* } to Anthony.
(for *DI António*), } (for *A António*), }

Variation of Common Nouns.

Masculine Noun, beginning with a Consonant, varied with the article *il*.

| | Singular. | Plural. |
|-----------------|---|--|
| Subjective (N.) | — <i>il libro</i> , the book; | <i>i</i> or <i>li libri</i> , the books; |
| Relat. { | Poss. (G.) — <i>del libro</i> , of the book; | <i>déi libri</i> , of the books; |
| | Attr. (D.) — <i>al libro</i> , to the book; | <i>ai libri</i> , to the books; |
| | Der. (Ab.) — <i>dal libro</i> , from the [book; | <i>dai libri</i> , from the [books; |
| Objective (Ac.) | — <i>il libro</i> , the book; | <i>i libri</i> , the books. |

* To facilitate the Variation of these and other nouns, to those who are accustomed to the *Latin Declension*, we have added to each *relation* the Initial of the name of the corresponding *case* in Latin; thus (N.) stands for *nominative*; (G.) for *genitive*; &c.

Masculine Noun, beginning with a Consonant, varied with the article *lo*.

| | Singular. | Plural. |
|-----------------|---|---|
| Subjective (N.) | — <i>lo spécchio</i> , the mirror ; | <i>gli spécchi</i> , the mirrors ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. (G.)— <i>dello spécchio</i> , of [the mirror ; | <i>dégli spécchi</i> , of the [mirrors ; |
| | { Attr. (D.)— <i>allo spécchio</i> , to [the mirror ; | <i>àgli spécchi</i> , to the [mirrors ; |
| | { Der. (Ab.)— <i>dallo spécchio</i> , from [the mirror ; | <i>dàgli spécchi</i> , from the [mirrors ; |
| Objective (Ac.) | — <i>lo spécchio</i> , the mirror ; | <i>gli spécchi</i> , the mirrors. |

Masculine Noun, beginning with a Vowel.

| | Singular. | Plural. |
|-----------------|--|---|
| Subjective (N.) | — <i>l' amico</i> , the friend ; | <i>gli amí-i</i> , the friends ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. (G.)— <i>dell' amico</i> , of the [friend ; | <i>dégli amíci</i> , of the [friends ; |
| | { Attr. (D.)— <i>all' amico</i> , to the [friend ; | <i>àgli amíci</i> , to the [friends ; |
| | { Der. (Ab.)— <i>dall' amico</i> , from [the friend ; | <i>dàgli amíci</i> , from the [friends ; |
| Objective (Ac.) | — <i>l' amico</i> the friend ; | <i>gli amíci</i> , the friends. |

Feminine Noun, beginning with a Consonant.

| | Singular. | Plural. |
|-----------------|--|---|
| Subjective (N.) | — <i>la cása</i> , the house ; | <i>le cásé</i> , the houses ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. (G.)— <i>della cása</i> , of the [house ; | <i>délle cásé</i> , of the houses ; |
| | { Attr. (D.)— <i>alla cása</i> , to the [house ; | <i>álle cásé</i> , to the houses ; |
| | { Der. (Ab.)— <i>dalla cása</i> , from [the house ; | <i>dálle cásé</i> , from the [houses ; |
| Objective (Ac.) | — <i>la cása</i> , the house ; | <i>le cásé</i> , the houses. |

Feminine Noun, beginning with a Vowel.

| | Singular. | Plural. |
|------------------|---|--|
| Subjective (N.)— | <i>l' ánima</i> , the soul ; | <i>le ánime</i> , the souls ; |
| Relat. { | Poss. (G.)— <i>dell' ánima</i> , of the [soul ; | <i>délle ánime</i> , of the souls ; |
| | Attr. (D.)— <i>all' ánima</i> , to the [soul ; | <i>álle ánime</i> , to the souls ; |
| | Der. (Ab.)— <i>dall' ánima</i> , from [the soul ; | <i>dálle ánime</i> , from the [souls ; |
| Objective (Ac.)— | <i>l' ánima</i> , the soul ; | <i>le ánime</i> , the souls. |

Variation of Common Nouns used in an Indefinite Sense.

Masculine Noun.

| | Singular. | Plural. |
|------------------|---|---|
| Subjective (N.)— | <i>un uccéllo</i> , a bird ; | <i>alcúni uccélli</i> , some birds ; |
| Relat. { | Poss. (G.)— <i>d' un uccéllo</i> , of a [bird ; | <i>d' alcúni uccélli</i> , of some [birds ; |
| | Attr. (D.)— <i>ad un uccéllo</i> , to a [bird ; | <i>ad alcúni uccélli</i> , to some [birds ; |
| | Der. (Ab.)— <i>da un uccéllo</i> , [from a bird ; | <i>da alcúni uccélli</i> , from some [birds ; |
| Objective (Ac.)— | <i>un uccéllo</i> , a bird ; | <i>alcúni uccélli</i> , some birds. |

Feminine Noun.

| | Singular. | Plural. |
|------------------|---|---|
| Subjective (N.)— | <i>úna mēla</i> , an apple ; | <i>alcúne mēle</i> , some apples ; |
| Relat. { | Poss. (G.)— <i>d' úna mēla</i> , of an [apple ; | <i>d' alcúne mēle</i> , of some [apples ; |
| | Attr. (D.)— <i>ad úna mēla</i> , to [an apple ; | <i>ad alcúne mēle</i> , to some [apples ; |
| | Der. (Ab.)— <i>da úna mēla</i> , [from an apple ; | <i>da alcúne mēle</i> , from some [apples ; |
| Objective (Ac.)— | <i>úna mēla</i> , an apple ; | <i>alcúne mēle</i> , some apples. |

EXERCISE II.

[The learner will supply the article according to the Gender of the nouns and will form their Plural and vary them, according to the preceding rules.]

The study of (the) belles lettres. The country of the
stúdio *bélla* *léttera.* *paíse*

Amazons. The fable of the frogs. The virtues of the
Amázone. *fávola* *râna.* *virtù*

Romans. The hatred of the enemies. The poets of (the)
Románo. *ódio* *nemico.* *poéta*

Latium.

Lázio.

He gave praise to the valiant,* consolation to the infirm,*
 — *Dáva lóde* *valénte,* *confórto* *inférmo,*

example to all.* He has bought the horse of the prince for
esêmpio *tútto.* — *Ha compráto* *cavállo* *príncipe per*

a small sum of money. (The) fortune is sometimes
piccola sómma *danáro.* *fortúna* *è quálche vólta*

unjust towards (some) | unhappy creatures, | who deserve
ingiústa vérsó *alcúni* | *infelice,* | *che méritano*

a better fate. He proposed the model of the future
migliór sórte. — *Propóse* *modéllo* *avveníre²*

government, avoiding all the things, which | had |
govérno¹, *scanzándo tútte* *cósa,* *che* | *éranó* |

lately displeased. The prince took the public
frescaménte spiaciúte. *príncipe tólse* ⁴ *públici⁶*

books | from the hands | of the | questors, and
libro⁵ | *di* *máno¹* | *ái²* | *questóre³,* *e*

| entrusted | them | to the prætors.
diéde cúra² | *ne¹* | *pretóre.*

The cries and (the) howlings of the savages spread (the)
strído e *úrlo* *salvágio spárséro*

terror among the Europeans. Thousands of people, who
terróre *Européo.* *Migliáio* *gênte,* *che*

were present at the speech of Regulus to the Romans,
éranó pres'nti a *orazióne* *Régolo* *Románo,*

* To the valiant, to the infirm, to all, here used in the plural number.

wept; and he departed to return to Carthage, as he
piànseno; ed égli partissi per ritornàre Cartàgine, còme —
 had promised, amidst the acclamations of the multitude.
avèva promèssò, fra acclamaziòne moltitudine.

Thetis, wishing to render Achilles invulnerable, dipped him
Tètide, bramàndo di rëndere Achille invulneràbile, immèrse² lo¹

in the river Styx, holding him by one | of his | heels.
fiùme Stige, tenèndo-lo per ùno | dèlle | calcagno.

They conducted him to the spot, and by threats and
— condússero² Lo¹ sìto, e con minaccia e

promises they disposed him to ascend the walls.
promèssa — dispòsero² lo¹ a salire mûro.

He led | into | the field twelve hundreds of buffaloes, nine
— Menò | a | càmpo dódici centinàio di búfala, nòve
 hundred cows, many calves, and over a thousand hogs.
cènto vácça, assài² vitèlla¹, e òltre a mîlle pòrco.

She had | her | cheeks all burnt by the many tears she
— Avèva | le | guància tütte àrse per mólte lágrima —

had shed. Weeping, she | fell | at | his | feet,
— — Piangèndo, — | si lasciò cadère² | a'3 | glì¹ | piède⁴,

and humbly asked | his | pardon | for | (the) past
ed umilmènte domandò⁶ | glì⁵ | perdonànza⁷ | di¹ | ² passàti⁴

injuries. | There was found | in a city of Lycia, a
oltràggio.³ | Si trovò | in città di Lícia,

book, which had brass leaves, — (the) leaves of brass.
libro, che avèa — — fóglio ràme.

Calandrino waited all the following evening with his
Calandrino stètte tütta regnènte² sèra¹ con suoi

contrivances to catch a bat.
artificio per pigliàre vispistrèllo.

CHAPTER III.

ADJECTIVE NOUNS — COMPARATIVES AND SUPERLATIVES.

ITALIAN Adjectives end with one of the vowels, *o*, *a*, *e*.

GENDER.

Adjectives ending in *o*, are masculine, and become feminine by changing *o* into *a* ; as,

| | | |
|-------------------|--------------|--|
| <i>virtuoso</i> , | { virtuous ; | { <i>uómo virtuoso</i> , m., virtuous man ; |
| <i>virtuosa</i> , | | { <i>fanciulla virtuosa</i> , f., virtuous [young woman : |
| <i>sincero</i> , | { sincere, | { <i>amóre sincero</i> , m., sincere love ; |
| <i>sincera</i> , | | { <i>natura sincera</i> , f., blameless na- [ture. |

Adjectives ending in *e*, are of the common gender ; as,

| | | |
|---------------------------------------|---|--|
| <i>cortese</i> , m. & f., courteous ; | { | <i>módo cortese</i> , m., courteous [manner ; |
| | | <i>ánima cortese</i> , f., courteous [soul : |
| <i>fedele</i> , m. & f., faithful ; | { | <i>consiglio fedele</i> , m., faithful [counsel ; |
| | | <i>guida fedele</i> , f., faithful guide. |

FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

Adjectives ending in *o*, *e*, form the plural by changing *o*, *e*, into *i* ; as,

| | | |
|-------------------|----------------|--|
| <i>améno</i> , | { delightful ; | { <i>piacére améno</i> , s., delightful pleasure ; |
| <i>améni</i> , | | { <i>luóghi améni</i> , p., delightful places : |
| <i>prudente</i> , | { prudent ; | { <i>génte prudente</i> , s., prudent people ; |
| <i>prudenti</i> , | | { <i>uómini prudenti</i> , p. m., prudent men ; |
| | | { <i>vérghini prudenti</i> , p. f., prudent virgins. |

The adjective *bello*, 'handsome', 'beautiful', before nouns beginning with *s* followed by another consonant, *z*, or a vowel, makes *begli* in the plural; as,

begli specchi,

beautiful mirrors;

begli zaffiri,

beautiful sapphires;

begli occhi,

beautiful eyes.

Adjectives ending in *a*, form the plural by changing *a* into *e*; as,

preziosa, } precious; { *gioia preziosa*, s., precious jewel;
preziose, } { *pietre preziose*, p., precious stones.

Adjectives ending in *co*, *go*; *ca*, *ga*; *cio*, *gio*; *cia*, *gia*; *chio*, *ghio*, *glio*; and *io*, in the singular, follow, in the plural, the rules already given for the formation of the plural of Substantives.

AGREEMENT OF ADJECTIVES.

Italian adjectives agree with their substantives in gender and number; as,

uomo dotto ed ammaestrato, a learned and well-instructed man;

buona e virtuosa gente, good and virtuous people;

valorosi uomini, belle donne, leggiadri giovani, brave men, fair women, pretty youths.

EXAMPLES.

Grande intendimento è quello d'un uomo virtuoso, come fu costui. (Fr. Sacch. n. 75.)

Great is the understanding of a virtuous man, as he was.

La Sibilla è bellissima fanciulla, bene allevata, e virtuosa. (Lasc. Sibill. 11.)

The Sibyl is a very beautiful young woman, well bred, and virtuous.

Sia manifesta la clemenza, e SINCÉRO AMÓRE, che il dëtto re portava al nóstro comúne. (Giov. Vill. 1. 1. c. 2.)

Quêsta NATÚRA al sùo fattóre uníta,—Quál fu creáta, fu SINCÉRA e buóna. (Dant. Par. 7)

O ÁNIMA CORTÉSE Mantována. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

In dúbbio státo sù FEDÉL CONSÍGLIO. (Petr. c. 49.)

Prése a persuadér Tibério, ch' é vivésse fudri di Róma, in LUÓGHI AMÉNI. (Dav. Tac. am. 4. 95.)

Laónde, secúndo ch' io póssó far conghiettúra, che è quéllo che i PRUDÉNTI UÓMINI chiámano indovináre, tu móstri d'essere innamoráta agraménte. (Firenz. Asin. 150.)

Vérgine sággia, e del bel número úna—Délle beáte VÉRGINI PRUDÉNTI. (Petr. c. 49.)

In me movéndo dé' BÉGLI ÓCCHI i rái—Cria d' amór pensiéri. (Petr. s. 9.)

E trovò in quélta cásca mólte PREZIOSE PIÉTRE, e légate, e sciólte. (Bocc. g. 2 n. 4.)

Rícchi délle préde dé' Fiorentini. (Giov. Vill. 1. 9. c. 320.)

Mólti chérici, eziandio da LÚNGHE párti, cominciárono a veníre al sèrvo di Dio. (Vit. S. Giov. Gualb. 295.)

D'un medésmo peccáto al mónda LÉRCI. (Dant. Inf. 15.)

Quélle árche d' argénto,—Che stimerésti piéne di tesóro,—Spórté son piéne di vesécche BÚGE. (Tass. Am. 1. 2.)

Let the clemency, and sincere love, which the said king bore to our community, be manifest.

This nature with its Maker thus conjoined,—Created first was blameless, and good.

O courteous Mantuan soul.

In a doubtful condition so faithful counsel.

He undertook to persuade Tiberius, that he should live in some delightful place, out of Rome.

Therefore, as far as I can conjecture, which is what prudentmen call to guess, you appear to be greatly in love.

Wise Virgin, and one of the beautiful number of the blessed prudent virgins.

Turning the beams of her beautiful eyes to me; creates thoughts of love.

And she found in that chest many precious stones, some set, and some not set.

Enriched with the booty of the Florentines.

Many clergymen, even from distant parts, began to come to see the servant of God.

By one same sin polluted in the world.

Those chests of silver, which you would imagine to be filled with treasures, are baskets filled with empty bladders.

Così per li gran SÁVJ si confessa,—Chè la Fenice muóre, e pòi rinásce. (Dant. Inf. 24.)

UÓMO DÓTTO delle scrittùre, ED AMMAESTRÀTO della fede di Crìsto. (Add. Cavalc. Att. Apost. 113.)

Mia sorèlla è quèsta—Nàta di BUÓNA E VIRTUÓSA GÉNTE. (Arios. Fur. 18. 82.)

Quánti VALÓROSI UÓMINI, quante BÉLLE DÓNNE, quánti LEGGIÁDRI GIÓVANI, la sèra vegnènte, nell' àltro móndo cenàrono con li lóro passàti! (Bocc. Intr.)

So mighty sages tell, that the Phoenix dies, and springs forth with renascent.

A man learned in Holy Writ, and well instructed in the Christian faith.

This is my sister, born of good and virtuous people.

How many brave men, how many fair women, how many pretty youths, the coming evening, supped in the other world with their departed friends!

COMPARATIVES.

Comparatives are generally formed, by prefixing to the *adjective* or *positive* the adverb *più*, 'more', to express a relation of *superiority*: *méno*, 'less', to express a relation of *inferiority*: and *sì* or *così*; 'so', *tánto*, 'so', 'so much'; *quánto*, 'as', 'as much'; *quánto più*, 'the more'; *quánto méno*, 'the less'; *altrettánto*, 'as', 'as much'; to express a relation of *equality*, between the objects compared; as,

| | | |
|----------------------------|---------------------------------|------------------|
| <i>lieto</i> , happy; | PIÙ LIÈTO, | more happy; |
| <i>altéra</i> , proud; | MÉNO ALTÈRA, | less proud; |
| <i>bèlla</i> , beautiful; | SÌ OR COSÌ BÈLLA, | so beautiful; |
| <i>sáno</i> , healthy; | TÁNTO SÁNO, | so healthy; |
| <i>famóso</i> , famous; | QUÁNTO FAMÓSO, | as famous; |
| <i>altiero</i> , proud; | QUÁNTO PIÙ ALTIÈRO, | the more proud; |
| <i>nocènte</i> , guilty; | QUÁNTO MÉNO NOCÈNTE, | the less guilty; |
| <i>conténti</i> , pleased; | { ALTTRETTÁNTO CON- TÈNTI, } | as much pleased. |

Comparatives of superiority and inferiority generally require before the second of the objects compared, or, what is the same, the *second term of comparison*, the

preposition *di*, 'than', if it be a *substantive noun* or *pronoun*, or a *numeral adjective*; and the conjunction *che*, 'than', if it be any *other adjective*, a *verb*, or an *adverb*;* as,

| | |
|---|---|
| PIÙ lieto DI ME, | more happy than I; |
| MEN bello DEL VISO, | less beautiful than the face; |
| PIÙ DI MILLE scogli, | more than a thousand rocks; |
| PIÙ forte CHE SÁVIO, | more strong than wise; |
| non MENO odorifere CHE SIÉNOLE spèzie, | } not less odoriferous than are the drugs; |
| PIÙ bella CHE MÁI, | |
| | more handsome than ever. |

Sometimes these comparatives are formed by the adverbs *méglio*, 'better', and *péggio*, 'worse'; and then they always require *di*, or *che*, before the second term of comparison; according to the general rule;* as,

| | |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| MÉGLIO D' ALTRE diecimília dóbbre, | better than another ten thousand pistoles; |
| una delle PÉGGIO maritate CHE SÍÁ, | one of the worst-married that there is. |

Very often the second term of comparison is a *verb understood* or a *pronoun and a verb*, and then this second term of comparison always requires *che* before it; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| scorgévasi PIÙ pómpa CHE [scorgévasi] lealtà, | there was perceived more pomp than sincerity. |
| PIÙ bella CHE [è] una lámia, | more beautiful than a lamia. |
| scappò PÉGGIO CHE [scáppa] un tóro, | he fled worse (more violently) than a bull; |
| inténdi MÉGLIO CH' io non RAGIÓNO, | thou understandest better than I can speak; |

* This, however, is not without exception, as we not seldom meet, in the Classics, with expressions similar to these:

U'na dónna PIÙ bella assái CHE 'L
SÓLE. (Petr. c. 24.) A woman a great deal more beautiful than the sun.

Reputiámci MENO cáre CHE TUTTE
l'altre? (Bocc. Introd.) Do we consider ourselves less dear than all the others?

Io so MÉGLIO CHÉ ÁLTRO uómo far
ciò che io vóglío. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.) I know how to do what I wish, better than any other man.

Comparatives of equality always require before the second term of comparison another adverb correlative to that by which they are formed. Thus,

| | | | | | |
|----------------------------|---------------|------------|----------------------------------|------|----------------|
| <i>si</i> or <i>così</i> , | so, as ; | } requires | <i>còme</i> , | as ; | } the more, or |
| <i>tanto</i> , | so, so much ; | | <i>quánto</i> , | as ; | |
| <i>quánto</i> , | as, as much ; | | <i>tanto</i> , | as ; | |
| <i>quánto più</i> , | the more ; | | <i>tanto più</i> , or | | |
| <i>quánto ménò</i> , | the less ; | | <i>tanto ménò</i> , | | |
| | | | <i>tanto ménò</i> , or | | } the less, or |
| | | | <i>tanto più</i> , | | |
| <i>altrettanto</i> , | as, as much ; | | <i>quánto</i> , or <i>còme</i> , | as : | |

| | |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>sì lieta còme bella</i> , | as glad as fair ; |
| <i>TANTO sàno QUANTO io</i> , | as healthy or strong as I ; |
| <i>QUANTO [egli] era famoso</i> , | as much as he was famous, |
| <i>TANTO [ella] era bellissima</i> , | she was beautiful ; |
| <i>QUANTO PIÙ altiero, TANTO</i> | the more proud, the less be- |
| <i>MÉNÒ amato</i> , | loved ; |
| <i>QUANTO MENO nocente, TANTO</i> | the less guilty, the more im- |
| <i>PIÙ impaziente</i> , | patient ; |
| <i>ALTRETTANTO contenti, CÒME</i> | as pleased as if the Duke |
| <i>se fosse venuto il Duca</i> , | had come. |

Sometimes *còme*, 'as', and *quale*, 'as', 'like', are used to form these comparatives, and then they require the correlatives *così*, 'thus', and *tale*, 'such' ; as,

| | |
|--|-------------------------------|
| <i>CÒME il freddo mi offese, COSÌ il</i> | as the cold injured me, thus |
| <i>caldo mi fa noia</i> , | the heat annoys me ; |
| <i>QUALE [colpo] assino dà in pa-</i> | the ass who kicks against the |
| <i>rete, TAL [colpo] riceve</i> , | wall, receives such a blow as |
| | he gives. |

Tanto, *quánto*, *altrettanto*, and *quale*, and their correlatives, sometimes are made to agree with the nouns with which they are used ; as,

| | |
|---|---------------------------------|
| <i>tante volte quante</i> , | as many times as ; |
| <i>quante NE veggono, tante NE</i> | as many as they see, so many |
| <i>desiderano</i> , | they desire ; |
| <i>cinquanta Paternòstri, e altret-</i> | fifty Paternosters, and as many |
| <i>tante Avemarie</i> , | Ave-Marias ; |
| <i>pagato di tale moneta, quali le</i> | paid in such money, as the |
| <i>derrate erano state vendute</i> , | provisions had been sold for. |

Often the adverbs *così* and *tanto* are suppressed, and the comparative is formed by the use of their correlatives only ; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| [<i>così</i>] <i>bianco</i> <i>come</i> <i>néve</i> , | white as snow ; |
| <i>l'attenderò</i> [<i>tanto</i>] <i>quánto</i> <i>vuoi</i> , | I will wait for thee as long as thou wishest. |

To increase or diminish the force of comparatives, we make use of the adverbs *troppo*, *molto* or *assai*, or *via* or *vie*, 'far', 'much,' or 'a great deal', before *più*, and *méno* ; as, *troppo*, *molto*, or *assai* *più* — *via* or *vie* *più*, 'much,' or 'a great deal more' ; *troppo*, *molto*, or *assai* *méno* — *via* or *vie* *méno*, 'much' or 'a great deal less' ; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>TROPPO PIÙ</i> <i>bélla</i> , | a great deal more beautiful ; |
| <i>MOLTO PIÙ</i> <i>càre</i> , | much more dear ; |
| <i>ASSAI PIÙ</i> <i>lucénte</i> , | far more bright ; |
| <i>VIE PIÙ</i> <i>fórtè</i> , | a great deal more strong ; |
| <i>MOLTO MEN</i> <i>fórti</i> , | much less able. |

EXAMPLES.

La rividi più bélla e MÉNO
ALTÉRA. (Petr. s. 261.)

I saw her again, more beautiful and less proud.

Nessùn rísse giammái PIÙ
DI ME LIÉTO. (Petr. c. 7.)

None ever lived more happy than I.

Deh ! se non hai DEL VÍSO il
cor MEN BÉLLO. (Ariost. Fur. c. 4.)

Ah ! if thou hast not a heart less beautiful than thy face.

E sperándo venire in mighiór
pórtò—Pói m'è condússe in PIÙ
DI MÍLLE SCÓGLI. (Petr. c. 21.)

And hoping to come to a better harbor, he conducted me upon more than a thousand rocks.

Sappiáte che quélle càmere sò-
no NON MÉNO ADORÍFERE, CHE
SIÉNO i bóssoli delle SPÉZIE
della vóstra bottéga. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

Know that those chambers are not less odoriferous, than are the boxes of drugs in your shop.

Sarò PIÙ CHE MÁI BÉLLA.
(Petr.)

I shall be more beautiful than ever.

Quéllo, che valse MÉGLIO
D' ALTRE DIECIMÍLIA DÓBBRE.
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

That, which was more valuable than another ten thousand pistoles.

Io son pur una delle peggior maritate femine che sta al mondo. (Firenz. Luc. 4. 1.)

Scorgévasi in questo parlare di Tiberio più pompa che lealtà. (Dav. Ann. Tac. 1. 1.)

Ella è una giovane quaggiù che è più bella che una lamia. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

Peggio che un toro scappò dall'altare. (Dav. Storie.)

Sé' sàvio e 'nténdi mé' ch'i non ragióno. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

Volta per me sí lieta come bella. (Dant. Par. 2.)

Se io avéssi cosí bella cotta come ella. (Nov. ant. 25.)

Tanto il fáccia Dio sàno delle réni quánto io. (Bocc.)

Quánto trá' cavaliéri éra il Marchése famoso, tanto la donna tra tutte l'altre donne del mondo éra bellíssima. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 5.)

Tanto più ciéco son io di te quánto più sòno amánte. (Guar. Past. Fid. 3. 3.)

E'ssa tanto più impazientemente sostenéva quéstá nóia quánto méno si sentíva nocén-te. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

Della venuta de' cavaliéri, i Fiorentini furono altrettánto conténti, come se fósse venúto il dúca in persóna. (Giov. Vill. 1. 10.)

Demétrio, nostro amico, sudì dire, che altrettánto gli è delle parole della fólle génte, quánto dé' suóni che fa il vénto. (Sen. Pist.)

I am indeed one of the worst-married women in the world.

There was perceived in this speech of Tiberius more pomp than sincerity.

There is a young woman here below more beautiful than a lamia.

He fled from the altar worse (more violently) than a bull.

Thou art wise, and understandest better than I can speak.

Turning to me with aspect as glad as fair.

If I had so beautiful a dress as she.

May God make him as strong in his loins as I am.

As much as the Marquis was famous among the knights, the lady was beautiful among the other ladies.

I am as much more blind than thou as I am more enamoured.

She bore this vexation so much the more impatiently, the less she felt guilty.

The Florentines were as pleased with the arrival of the knights, as if the Duke had come in person.

Demetrius, our friend, used to say, that it happens with the words of foolish persons, as it does with the sounds which the wind makes.

*E CÔME IL trôppo FRÉDDO
quêsta nôtte MI OFFÊSE, COSÌ IL
CÁLDO M' incomincia a FAR gran-
dissima NÓIA. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)*

*Assài dêe bastàre a ciascúno,
se 'QUÁLE ÁSINO DÀ IN PARÊTE,
TAL RICÊVE', sênza volére òltre
ingiuriàre. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.)*

*TÂNTE VÓLTE QUÂNTE êlla
nêlla memôria mi viêne. (Bocc.
Filoe.)*

*Non sôno i gióvani d' una
contênti, ma QUÂNTE NE VÊG-
GONO, TÂNTE NE DESÍDERANO.
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)*

*La mattîna si vuòle andàre àl-
la chiêsa, e quívi dire CINQUÁN-
TA PATERNÓSTRI E ALTRET-
TÂNTE AVENARÍE. (Bocc. g.
3. n. 4.)*

*Videsi DI TAL MONÉTA PAGÁ-
TO, QUÁLI LE DERRÁTE ÉRANO
STÁTE VENDÚTE. (Bocc. g. 6.
n. 5.)*

*Un vestiménto di lino sottilis-
simo, e BIANCO CÔME NÉVE.
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)*

*I'o volentiêri — T' ATTENDE-
RÒ QUÁNTO VUOI. (Maff. Mer.
4. 2.)*

*TRÓPPO PIÙ BÉLLA gli pàrve,
che stimáto non avêa. (Bocc. g.
7. n. 7.)*

*MÓLTO PIÙ BÉLLE e PIÙ CÀRE,
che nôi non siámo. (Bocc. Intr.)*

*Onđ' êlla fêssi — LUCÊNTE
PIÙ ASSÀI di quél ch' ell' éra.
(Dant. Par. 5.)*

*Vêdi Sansóno—VIE PIÙ FÓR-
TE CHE SÁVIO. (Petr.Tr. Amor.)*

*Elle sôno MÓLTO MEN FÓRTI
che gli uómini a sostenére.
(Bocc. Introd.)*

And as the excessive cold
last night injured me, thus the
heat begins now to annoy me
greatly.

It ought to be quite sufficient
for any one, that 'the ass who
kicks against the wall, receives
such a blow, as he gives,' with-
out wishing to cause any far-
ther injury.

As many times as she comes
into my remembrance.

Young people are not satisfi-
ed with one; but as many they
see, so many they desire.

In the morning we must go
to church, and there say fifty
Paternosters and as many Ave-
Marias.

He saw himself paid in such
money as the provisions had
been sold for.

A garment of linen very fine,
and white as snow.

I will wait for thee willingly
as long as thou wishest.

She appeared to him a great
deal more beautiful than he
had imagined.

Much more fair and much
more dear, than we are.

Whence she became far more
bright than she had been.

See Sampson a great deal
more strong than wise.

They are much less able
than men to bear.

EXERCISE III.

He has no other—more children than him. I know not, who
 — *ha*² *Non*¹ — *figliuólo* *lúì.* — *so*² *Non*¹ *chi*

could recover | my property | more properly than thou.
póssa riscuótere | *il mio* | *convenévole* *te.*

Peter, who had more desire of eating than of sleeping,
Piétro, che avéva *vóglià mangiare* *dormíre,*

asked whether there was any thing | for | supper. We
domandáva *se* *vi fósse alcuna còsa.* | *dà* | *céna.*

are less powerful than the Greeks, they have more
siámo *poderóso* *Gréco,* *éssi hánno*

bravery, wealth, and wisdom than we. Who | would fare |
prodézza, tesóro, e sapére *nói.* *Chi* | *starébbe* |

better than I, if that money* were mine? In this
me, se quel denáro fóssero míti? *quésto*

season the nights are longer than the days. He began
stagíone *nótte sòno lúngo* *dì:* — *Cominciò*

to coast along (the) Barbary, robbing every-one who
a costeggiàre — *Barberia, rubándo ciascúno* *che*

| was less powerful | than he. I | do not | say, that it
potéva méno | *lúì.* | *non* | *dico, che éi*

is not a sin, but God pardons | (of) | greater sins to
*sia*² *non*¹ — *peccáto, ma Iddio perdóna* | (*dé*) | *gránde* — *a*

| him who | repents himself. It appeared that she was
chi | *pénite*² *si*¹. — *Paréa* *che élla fósse*

whiter than (the) snow. She afflicts more than she con-
biáncò *néve.* — *Affligge* — *con-*

soles (not).
*sóla*² *non*¹.

None in this wretched world was so miserable as I
Niúno *quésto sciaguratò móndo fu* *mísero* *io*

am. Am I not as beautiful† as (is) the wife of
 — *sóno*² *io*³ *Non*¹ *bélla* *sia* *móglic*

Richard? Who commended him so much as thou?
Ricciárdo? *Chi* *commendò*² *il*¹ *tu?*

* That money, in the plural number.

† Beautiful, in the feminine gender,

The master gave as much faith to the words of Bruno, as
maestro diède fède paròla Bruno,

| was due | to any truth. | I began |
| si sarèbbe convenuta | qualunque verità. | comincià³ |

to flee as much as I could. I will defend her certainly
a⁴ fuggirè⁵ — ¹ — potèi². Io difenderò³ la² — per cèrtol

as much as I | shall be able. |
— io | potrò. |

The more the heart is excited, the less can (the)
cuorè è commosso, può

man express | his | feeling. The more crazy he is
uomo esprimere | il suo | sentimento. pazzo ègli² è¹

than you, the more he is enamoured. As | it came into his
vai, — è innamorato. | gli venne in

mind, | so he did. I wish to go to hear (the) mass,
pensièro, | — féce. Io vòglio andare — mèsso,

and recommend myself to God as much as I can.
e raccomandàndar — mi Dio — — pòsso.

| His | presence | will make it appear to us | much more
| La sua | presènza | cèlo farà parère |

joyful. | For | (the) which object (the) fortune was | a great
allègro. | A | quále oggètto fortuna fu² | a great

deal more | propitious to him. This family is far greater,
³ | propizia⁴ gli.¹ Questo famiglia è grande,

and a great deal more known. A great deal more pure
conosciuta. pura

than a white dove.
cândido colómba.

SUPERLATIVES.

Relative superlatives are formed by prefixing the articles *il, i* or *li*, 'the', for the masculine, and *la, le*, 'the', for the feminine, to the comparative; as,

più fòrte, more strong; *IL più fòrte*, the most strong;
più vezzosi, more graceful; *I più vezzosi*, the most graceful;
méno frésca, less fresh; *LA méno frésca*, the least fresh;
più bèle, more beautiful; *LE più bèle*, the most beautiful.

When these superlatives are followed by a second term of comparison, and this is a *noun* or a *pronoun*, they require the prepositions *di*, 'of or in'; *fra* or *tra*, 'amongst'; after them; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>il più forte</i> DI TUTTI <i>gli</i> <i>uomini,</i> | the strongest of all men; |
| <i>i più vezzosi</i> <i>fanciulli</i> DEL MONDO, | the most graceful children in the world; |
| <i>il più perfetto</i> TRA TANTI, | the most perfect amongst so many. |

If the second term is a *verb*, the superlative requires the conjunction *che*, 'that'; after it; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>il più felice</i> CHE <i>si</i> TRÓVI <i>sotto le stéllé,</i> | the happiest man that can be found under the stars; |
| <i>il più sávio</i> <i>uomo</i> CHE FÓSSE al móndo, | the wisest man ever was in the world. |

When the object compared, or the *first term of comparison*, precedes the superlative, the article of this superlative is generally suppressed; as,

| | |
|--|----------------------------|
| <i>il fióre</i> [il] <i>più bello,</i> | the most beautiful flower; |
| <i>l' età</i> [la] <i>men frésca,</i> | the least fresh age. |

Absolute superlatives are formed by changing the last vowel of the plural of adjectives, into *íssimo* for the masculine, and into *íssima* for the feminine; as,

| | |
|--------------------------|---|
| <i>bélli,</i> beautiful; | <i>bellíSSIMO,</i> very beautiful; |
| <i>ricche,</i> rich; | <i>ricchíSSIMA,</i> very rich; |
| <i>fedéli,</i> faithful; | { <i>fedelíSSIMI,</i> } very faithful. { <i>fedelíSSIME,</i> } |

A few adjectives take the termination *érrimo*, for the masculine, and *érrima*, for the feminine, in their superlative; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| <i>célebre,</i> celebrated; | <i>celebéRRIMO,</i> very celebrated; |
| <i>sálubre,</i> wholesome; | <i>salubéRRIMA,</i> very wholesome; |
| <i>ácre,</i> severe; | <i>acéRRIMO,</i> very severe. |

These superlatives may be also formed by prefixing the adverbs *troppo*, *mólto*, or *assái*, 'very', to the positive; as,

| | |
|-----------------------|----------------------------------|
| <i>piéne</i> , full; | <i>TRÓPPO piéne</i> , very full; |
| <i>ràre</i> , rare; | <i>MÓLTO rare</i> , very rare; |
| <i>vicini</i> , near; | <i>ASSÁI vicini</i> , very near: |

Or by making use of such expressions as, *sópra ógni áltro*, 'above every other one'; *sénza módo*, 'exceedingly'; *sénza fine*, 'extremely'; *fuór di misúra*, 'beyond measure'; &c.; as,

| | |
|----------------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>SÓPRA ÓGNI ÁLTRO felice</i> , | happy above every other one; |
| <i>gróssO SÉNZA MÓDO</i> , | exceedingly coarse; |
| <i>beáta SÉNZA FINE</i> , | extremely blessed; |
| <i>dolénTe FUÓR DI MISÚRA</i> , | grieved beyond measure. |

Very often we form them by repeating the adjective; as,

| | |
|-------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| <i>vivo</i> , lively; | <i>vivo vivo</i> , very lively; |
| <i>piccino</i> , small; | <i>piccino PICCINO</i> , very small; |
| <i>lénTa</i> , slow; | <i>lénTa LÉNTA</i> , very slow. |

To increase the force of superlatives, we use the adverbs, *più*, 'more'; *mólto*, 'much'; *tánto*, 'so much'; before them; and sometimes we raise the repeated adjective to the superlative degree;* as,

| | |
|-----------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>PIÙ nobilíssimo</i> , | very noble; |
| <i>MÓLTO bellíssima</i> , | extremely beautiful; |
| <i>TÁNTO bellíssima</i> , | so very beautiful; |
| <i>grándi GRANDÍSSIMI</i> , | exceedingly great. |

There are a few adjectives, which beside their regular

* This form of expression is found in the earlier classics, though very seldom adopted by modern writers.

Italian form, retain in the comparative and superlative degree the irregular form which they have in Latin; as,

| | | | | |
|------------------|------------------------|------------|-------------------------|-------------|
| <i>buono</i> , | { <i>più buono</i> , | { better; | { <i>bonissimo</i> , | { best; |
| [good; | { or MIGLIÓRE, | | { or ÓTTIMO, | |
| <i>cattivo</i> , | { <i>più cattivo</i> , | { worse; | { <i>cattivissimo</i> , | { worst; |
| [bad; | { or PEGGIÓRE, | | { or PÉSSIMO, | |
| <i>grande</i> , | { <i>più grande</i> , | { greater; | { <i>grandissimo</i> , | { greatest; |
| [great; | { or MAGGIÓRE,* | | { or MÁSSIMO, | |
| <i>piccolo</i> , | { <i>più piccolo</i> , | { smaller; | { <i>piccolissimo</i> , | { smallest; |
| [small; | { or MINÓRE,* | | { or MÍNIMO, | |

to which may be added,

| | | |
|----------------------|-------------|------------|
| SUPERIÓRE, superior; | { SUPRÉMO, | { highest; |
| | { or SÓMMO, | |
| INFERIÓRE, inferior; | INFIMO, | lowest. |

EXAMPLES.

*Raccóntano ancóra, che tra
l'oro fu E'rcole, IL PIÙ FÓRTE DI
TÚTTI GLI UÓMINI.* (Dav. Tac.
Germ.)

They relate also, that among
them was Hercules, the strong-
est of all men.

*E'ran i più bélli, e i PIÙ VEZ-
ZÓSI FANCIÚLLI DEL MÓNDO.*
(Bocc. g. 3.)

They were the most beau-
tiful and the most graceful
children in the world.

*E di tórtole ho préso úna
nidiáta—LE PIÙ BÉLLE del
móndo.* (Bocc. Amet. 15.)

And I have taken a nest-full
of turtles, the most beautiful in
the world.

*TRA TÁNTI, e sì béi vólti IL
PIÙ PERFÉTTO.* (Petr. s. 201.)

The most perfect amongst so
many, and so beautiful coun-
tenances.

* From these two comparatives are derived the substantives *maggióre* and *minóre*, which, used in the plural, are equivalent—*maggióri*, to 'parents', 'ancestors', 'superiors';—*minóri*, to 'inferiors'; as,

Disubbidiente á' suói MAGGIÓRI;
(Pass.)

Disobedient to his parents.

Chi fur li MAGGIÓR tuói? (Dant.
Inf. 10.)

Who were thy ancestors?

*E però non rénde débita reverénza álli
MAGGIÓRI, né débita mansuetúdi-
né álli MINÓRI.* (Bocc. Com. Dant.
Inf. 8.)

Therefore he neither treats with
due reverence his superiors, nor
with due mildness his inferiors.

Sarò IL PIÙ FELÍCE, e contento uómo, CHE SI TRÓVI SOTTO LE STÉLLE. (Macch. Com.)

E'gli éra IL PIÙ SÁVIO, ed il più avvedúto UÓMO CHE AL MÓNDÓ FÓSSE. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.)

IL FIÓRE PIÙ BÉLLO dell' età nostra. (Lod. Mart. Rim.)

Quél fuóco, ch'io pensái, che fósse spénto—Da L'ETÀ MEN FRÉSCA. (Petr. c. 13.)

Assái sosténne—Per BELLÍSSIMO amór quèsti al sùo témpo. (Petr. s. 172.)

Fátta fáre úna RICCHÍSSIMA coróna d'óro e di piétre preziose, per coronársi re di Lombardía. (Giov. Vill. l. 11. c. 76.)

Per la lóro singolár pietà vérsó quèsta Sánta Sède, e vérsó tútti noi, suói FEDELÍSSIMI servitóri. (Casa, lett. 23.)

Archíta, ingegnér CELEBÉRIMO tra gli antichí. (Segn. Crist. instr. 3. 2.)

Il reobárbaro si è lóro medicina SALUBÉRRIMA. (Tratt. segr. cos. donn.)

Il Dúca di Gheldéri, ACCÉRIMO nimíco sùo. (Guicc. Stor. 6.)

Nè dúbito púnto che non sién di quèlli, che diránno le cose détte ésser TRÓPPO PIÉNE di mótti e di ciánce. (Bocc. Concl.)

Son MÓLTO RÁRE a cercáre le notízie. (Borgh. Tosc. 352.)

E un giòrno, ASSÁI VICÍNI délla cámera, sèco medésmi, cominciárono a ragionáre. (Bocc. n. 1.)

I shall be the most happy and the most contented man, that can be found under the stars.

He was the most wise, and the most wary man ever was in the world.

The most beautiful flower of our age.

That fire, which I thought would be extinguished by maturer age.

This one suffered much in his time for the love of a very beautiful person.

Having caused to be made a very rich crown of gold and of precious stones, in order to crown himself king of Lombardy.

Through their singular piety towards this Holy See, and towards us all, its most faithful servants.

Archytas, a very celebrated architect amongst the ancients.

Rhubard is for them a very wholesome medicine.

The Duke of Ghelderi, his most severe enemy.

Nor doubt I at all, that there are many, who will say, that the things which I have said are very full of words and idle stories.

News is very rare to be found.

And one day, very near that room, they began to talk among themselves.

*Estimáva il prénce sóPRA
óGNI ÁLTRO FELÍCE. (Bocc. g.
2. n. 7.)*

*Uómo materiále, e GRÓSSO
SÉNZA MÓDO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)*

*Fámmi, che puói, délla súa
grázia dégno, SÉNZA FÍNE O
BEÁTA. (Petr. c. 49.)*

*DOLÉnte FUór DI MISÚRA,
sénza alcún indúgio, ciò che il
re domandáva féce. (Bocc. g.
2. n. 7.)*

*E'bbe un cavállo, e dá' suói
fánti il féce vívo vívo scorticáre.
(Nov. ant. 54.)*

*Basì, e diventò PICCÍN PICCÍNO.
(Buonar. Fier. 2. 4.)*

*E'lla sen va notándo LÉNTA
LÉNTA. (Dant. Inf. 17.)*

*Iddío féce l'uómo PIÙ NOBI-
LÍSSIMO che gli áltri animáli.
(Crusca.)*

*Vide l'ómbra súa MÓLTO BEL-
LÍSSIMA. (Nov. Ant. 43.)*

*Apprésso i quáli Biancafóre
veniva TÁNTO BELLÍSSIMA, che
ógni comparazióne ci saría
scársa. (Bocc. Filoc. 7.)*

*O'nde próva nêllo stómaco
travágli GRÁNDI GRANDÍSSIMI.
(Red. cons. 1. 16.)*

*To non podréi trattáre per la
salúte dé' miéi fratélli con MAG-
GIór affezióne d'ánimo, nè con
MIGLIór módo di quéllo, che ho
ío trattáto. (Casa. lett. 21.)*

*Col PEGGIÓRE spírto di Ro-
mágnà—Trováí un tal di vói,
che per su' ópra—In ánima in
Cocito già si bágnà. (Dant.
Inf. 33.)*

*O'nde nel cêrchio MINÓRE in
etérno è consúnto. (Dant. Inf.
11.)*

He thought the prince happy
above every other one.

An exceedingly coarse and
uncouth man.

Make me, O you who can,
extremely blessed lady, worthy
of his favor.

Grieved beyond measure,
without any delay, he did that
which the king wished.

He had a horse, and caused
it to be flayed all alive by his
servants.

He came near dying, and
became very small.

It went on sailing very slow.

God made man much more
noble than the other animals.

He saw his shadow extreme-
ly beautiful.

Next whom came Biancaflore
so very beautiful, that every
comparison would fail.

Wherefore he experiences
exceedingly great pains in his
stomach.

I could not act for the wel-
fare of my brothers with greater
interest, nor in a better manner
than that in which I have
acted.

In company with the worst
spirit of Romagna I found such
an one of you, as, for his do-
ings, even now in soul is plung-
ed in Cocytus.

Whence in the smaller circle
is eternally consumed.

*Il quále dálla pàrte SUPERI-
ÔRE àlla INFERIÔRE dà il sùo
dólce, e consonànte suôno.
(Declam. Quintil. C.)*

Which from the superior to
the inferior part gives its sweet
and harmonious sound.

*Le vólte piène d' ÔTTIMI vini.
(Bocc. g. 3.)*

The cellars full of the best
wines.

*Esséndo státo in víta un
PÉSSIMO uómo. (Bocc. n. 1.)*

Having been in his life a
very bad man.

*La MÁSSIMA attività dé' rággi
solári. (Sag. Nat. esp.)*

The greatest power of the
solar rays.

*Le MÍNIME alterazióni del
fréddo. (Sag. Nat. esp.)*

The smallest alterations of
cold.

EXERCISE IV.

Let the strongest of all the Romans come forward.
— 3 4 5 *tutto*^{6 7} *Románo*⁸ *Venga*¹ *innanzi*².

The rostra were immediately covered with the
² *rôstro*³ *Furono*¹ *subitamente*⁵ *coperti*⁴ | with the | *dé'* |

heads of the most illustrious patricians. He caused, in
téschio ² *illústre*³ *patrízio*¹ -- *Féce,*

a short space of time, | to be made | one of the most
— *piccolo spázio* *témpo* | *fàre* |

beautiful, and of the largest, and of the richest palaces,
béllo *grande* *ricco palágio,*

which had ever been seen. I esteem him the most
*fôssero*² *mái*¹ *státi vedúti.* *I'o réputo*² *il*¹

handsome, the most agreeable, the most graceful, and the
béllo, *piacévole,* *leggiádرو,*

most wise knight that | can be found | in the kingdom of
sávio cavaliére | *trovâr si pôssa*⁵ | ¹ *reáme*² ³

France. He was the most amusing man in the world.
*Frância*⁴ — *E'ra* *sollazzévole uómo* *móndo.*

She is the most happy woman in the world. The
— *E'* ¹ ³ *felíce*⁴ *dónna*² *móndo.*

planet most remote from the earth. The most furious
pianéta *remóto* *térرا.* ² *furióso*³

enemies with | their | tall persons, and long spears strike
nemico¹ | le loro | alto persóna, | lúngo ásta fediscono

| from a distance. |
da discosto.

Having taken a very large stone, she | let it fall | into
— Présa | gránde piétra, — | la lasciò cadére | in

the well. The stone in reaching (in) the water made a
pózzo. | piétra — giungéndo | acqua féce

very great noise. They were dressed | in | a garment
gránde rumóre. — E'rano vestúti | di | vestiménto

of very fine linen. She was a very beautiful woman,
sottíle² lino.¹ — E'ra — | dóнна,

wise, and very virtuous. He is a very austere man. A
sávio, | onésto. E'gli è | ácre² uómo.¹

very celebrated poet. They would commit themselves
célebre poéta. E'lle vorrébbero² méttre⁴ | síⁱ

quite alive | to the flames. | You are exceedingly good.
vívo³ | nel | fuóco. | — Síete | buóno.

I will be the best husband in the world. He was
Io sarò | maríto | móndo. E'gli éra

the worst man, that | perhaps ever was born. | Be sure,
uómo, | forse mái nascésse. | Síate certo,

that I have a greater desire | of it | than you. The
che io ho² — | ³ vóglia⁴ | ne¹ | vói. The ²

very great confidence which he has with us | makes him say
³ confidénza⁴ che⁵ — ha⁶ con⁷ noi⁸ | Gliél fa díre¹

so. | We have drunk | of the | best wine. He
— Abbiámo bevúto | d' un | víno. —

| does not pardon him | the smallest fault. The highest
Non gli perdóna | | cólpa.

parts were wrapt | in | a dark cloud.
parte érano avvólte | d' | oscúro² nébbia.¹

CHAPTER IV.

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES.

AUGMENTATIVES.

THERE are three kinds of augmentatives ; those that express *bigness* or *grandeur* ; those that express *vigor* or *beauty* ; and those that express *contempt*.

To express bigness or grandeur, we change the last vowel of nouns, if masculine, into *óne*, *ózzo*, and, if feminine, into *óne*, *ózza* ; as,

| | |
|--------------------------------|--|
| <i>cappéllo</i> , hat ; | <i>cappellóNE</i> , large hat ;* |
| <i>forésA</i> , country girl ; | <i>foresóZZA</i> , fine country girl ; |
| <i>béllo</i> , handsome ; | <i>bellóNE</i> , large and handsome ; |
| <i>frésca</i> , fresh ; | <i>frescóZZA</i> , fine and fresh. |

When a feminine noun takes the termination *óne*, in the augmentative, it becomes masculine ; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <i>dónna</i> , f., woman ; | <i>donnóNE</i> , m., large woman ; |
| <i>campána</i> , f., bell ; | <i>campanóNE</i> , m., large bell. |

To express vigor or beauty, we use *ótto*, *óccio*, for the masculine, and *ótta*, *óccia*, for the feminine ; as,

| | |
|--------------------------|--|
| <i>gióvane</i> , youth ; | <i>giovanóTTO</i> , handsome and [vigorous youth ; |
| <i>bélla</i> , fair ; | <i>bellóCCIA</i> , very fair ; |
| <i>grándE</i> , large ; | <i>grandóTTA</i> , handsome and [large ; |
| <i>gróssa</i> , large ; | <i>grossóCCIA</i> , very large and firm. |

* It is impossible to give in any other tongue the full and exact meaning of Italian Augmentatives and Diminutives ; the translations, therefore, throughout this chapter, must be regarded as attempts at expressing by several words, and as far as the English permits it, the change of signification which, in Italian, is effected by a simple change of termination, forming one of the striking beauties of this language.

To express contempt, we use the terminations *áccio*, *ázzo*, *ástro*, for the masculine, and *áccia*, *ázza*, *ástra*, *áglia*, for the feminine ; as,

| | | | |
|------------------|-------------|----------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>libro</i> , | book ; | <i>libráccio</i> , | bad book ; |
| <i>pópolo</i> , | people ; | <i>popolázzo</i> , | populace ; |
| <i>giovane</i> , | young man ; | <i>giovanástro</i> , | contemptible [young man ; |
| <i>gente</i> , | folks ; | <i>gentáglia</i> , | rabble. |

We can join the augmentative termination of bigness to that which expresses contempt, and that of contempt to that of bigness ; and thus form a double augmentative ; as,

| | | | | | |
|------------------|----------|--------------------|----------------|-------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>uomo</i> , | man ; | <i>omáccio</i> , | bad man ; | <i>omaccio'ne</i> , | a very [bad man ; |
| <i>ribáldo</i> , | ribald ; | <i>ribaldóne</i> , | great ribald ; | <i>ribaldona'ccio</i> , | very [great ribald. |

And sometimes by repeating the termination of contempt, we form a treble augmentative ; as,

| | | | |
|------------------------|--------------------|---------------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>bianco</i> , | white ; | <i>biancástro</i> , | whitish ; |
| <i>biancastro'ne</i> , | slightly whitish ; | <i>biancastronáccio</i> , | of a [dirty white. |

EXAMPLES.

*Per in capo CAPPELLÓNI
grandi álla Spagnuóla.* (Lasc.
Sibill. 2. 2.)

Having on their heads very
large hats after the Spanish
fashion.

*E'ra úna piacévole, e frésca
ORESÓZZA.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 2.)

She was a pleasant and fresh
fine country girl.

*Non vidi mái uómini più
ELLÓNI.* (Caro. lett. 2. 137.)

I never saw more large,
handsome men.

*Védi tu, dóнна mìa, cóme le
óstre sónó tutte FRESCÓZZE ?*
Agn. Pand. 47.)

Dost thou see, my good
woman, how ours are all fine
and fresh ?

*A'lle guagnél, tu séi UN BEL
ONNÓNE.* (Bern. rim. 2. 7.)

In truth, you are a fine large
woman.

Sonáte IL CAMPANONE. (Buonar. Fier. 2. 3. 9.)

Ring the large bell.

Il valoroso, e già bel GIOVANNOTTO *Alcibiade fu molto famoso.* (Matt. Franz. rim. 169.)

The valorous and handsome and vigorous youth Alcibiades was very famous.

Oh! come ella è ora, e frescoccia, e BELLÓCCIA. (Las. Spir.)

Oh! how very fresh, and fair she is now.

Io avéa una conca assai GRANDÓTTA. (Mes. Bin. rim. 1. 202.)

I had a pan very handsome and large.

Ella è GROSSÓCCIA, *tarchiata, e giuliva.* (Lor. Med. Nenc.)

She is very large and firm, well-limbed, and gay.

Fec' egli di quelle un famoso LIBRACCIO. (Allegr. 92.)

He made of them a famous bad book.

Io non son nato della fèccia del POPOLÁZZO. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

I was not born of the dregs of the populace.

Noi non temiamo d' un GIOVANASTRO. (Dav. Tac. Ann. 1.)

We do not fear a contemptible young man.

Guidava, gli accoltellanti Giuliano, le ciurme Appollinare, non come capitani, ma licenziosi e pigri, come la lor GENTÁGLIA. (Dav. Tac. Stor. 3.)

Julian led the gladiators, Appollinaris the rowers, not as captains, but as licentious, and slothful men, like their rabble.

Accadde, che questi OMACCIONI *furono sconoscenti de' benefici ricevuti da Giove.* (Fir. dial. bell. donn.)

It followed, that these very bad men were ungrateful for the benefits received from Jupiter.

Quel RIBALDONACCIO *del fratello ha consumato tanto.* (Cecch. Dot. 1. 2.)

That very great ribald of the brother has consumed so much

Essendo questo un certo BIANCASTRONACCIO *senza troppo barba.* (Fir. nov. 7.)

This one being a certain man of a dirty white (pale) color and without much beard.

EXERCISE V.

[This and the following Exercise on Diminutives, are introduced solely for the purpose of habituating the learner to the formation of such words; but as all nouns are not susceptible of the same modification, and as the employment of one termination in preference to the others depends entirely on usage and euphony, nothing but constant reading, and the study of the classics, can teach the proper use of these words.]

He is a coarse and good-for-nothing man. That
— *E' grãde,² e³ da nùlla⁴ uòmo.¹ Cotèsta*
a dirty, ugly servant. The kitchens of (the) great
súdicio² fãnte.¹ cucína

Buttons are always filled with cooks. Go home,
piótti sòno sèmpre pièno di cuòco. Andàtevene a càsa
great contemptible fool, you appear to me to be beside
scioccòne, voi parète² mi¹ uscìto

(f) yourself. Take that large cup, and wash it well. Thou
vói. Pìglia quèl tàzza, e lãva-lo bène. Tu
at a fine large woman. He had in that chamber a
i dónna. E'gli avèra quèllo càmera

large old chest, which had been made since the time of his
cassòne, che éra fãtto fin dãllo² ³
father's grand-father. He bites them all with that ugly
padre⁴ àvolo.¹ E'gli mórde² le¹ tütte con quèllo

mouth. This great fool wants to teach me how to know
bocca. Quèsto pècora mi vuòl far conòscere

(he) things, as if I were born yesterday. Each of
he) còsa, còme se io fòssi nãta ieri. ognùno² —

them had a bad large sword. They opened a large box
— *Avèra¹ spãda. — Aprìrono càssa*

of their father. I speak only of ungrateful, and very
del lóro² padre.¹ I'o pãrlo sólo ingrãto, e

roud men. Ring the large bell, behold the council of
spèrbo —. Sonãte campãna, ècco consìglio

the widows, that enter. People, that are born of the dregs
vedóva, che éntra. Génte, che è nãta féccia

the rabble. I never saw men so very handsome.
pépolo. — Non vidi mài uòmo così bèllo.

She would appear to you a fine large woman. They | scat-
E'lla parrébbe² vil bélla fémína. — |

tered themselves | through that rabble.
Si spársero per quéllo ciúrma.

DIMINUTIVES.

Diminutives may be divided into four classes, viz. those that express *kindness* or *tenderness*; those that express *smallness* or *prettiness*; those that express *compassion*; and those that express *contempt* or *indignation*.

To express kindness or tenderness, we change the last vowel of nouns into *eréllo*, for the masculine, and into *erélla*, for the feminine; as,

| | |
|---------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| <i>vecchio</i> , old man; | <i>vecchierÉLLO</i> , poor old man; |
| <i>pázza</i> , fool; | <i>pazzerÉLLA</i> , poor little fool. |

To express smallness or prettiness, we use the terminations *ino*, *étto*, *éllo*, *úccio*, *úzzo*, for the masculine, and *ina*, *étta*, *élla*, *úccia*, *úzza*; for the feminine; as,

| | |
|---------------------------|--|
| <i>fanciullo</i> , boy; | <i>fanciullino</i> , little boy; |
| <i>ruscélo</i> , brook; | <i>ruscellÉTTO</i> , small brook; |
| <i>finéstra</i> , window; | <i>finestrÉLLA</i> , little window; |
| <i>bócca</i> , mouth; | <i>boccúCIA</i> , pretty little mouth; |
| <i>úmido</i> , damp; | <i>umidúZZO</i> , slightly damp. |

Some feminine nouns take the terminations *ino*, *étto*, *éllo*, in the diminutive, and then they become masculine; as,

| | | |
|-------------------------------|-------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <i>cása</i> , f., house; | <i>casÍNO</i> , m., | small house, or [country-house; |
| <i>capánna</i> , f., cottage; | <i>capannÉTTO</i> , m., | little cottage; |
| <i>pórtá</i> , f., door; | <i>portÉLLO</i> , m., | small door, or [carriage-door. |

To express compassion, we use the termination *ic-
 ciuólo*, for the masculine, and *icciuóla*, for the feminine;

Others have quite an irregular termination ; as,

mercánte, merchant ; *mercantuólo*, little miserable merchant ;
págla, straw ; *pagliúca*, small piece of straw ;
bácio, kiss ; *baciózzo*, cordial smacking kiss ;
amáro, bitter ; *amarógnolo*, bitterish.

[For a List of such Diminutives, see APPENDIX, E.]

We may join two different terminations in the formation of diminutives ; and then we form a double diminutive, which sometimes, besides the idea of kindness or tenderness, expresses also that of prettiness or compliment ; and sometimes serves to diminish the object still more, and to convey also the idea of prettiness ; as,

cattivo, miserable man ; *cattivéllo*, a wretched man ;
cattivellu'ccio, wretched little man ;

libro, book ; *libréto*, small book ; *librett'no*, pretty little [book.]

Sometimes we make use of the diminutive termination to diminish the augmentative ; and when we wish to express contempt for the object represented by the name already diminished, we augment the diminutive ; as,

ladro, robber ; *ladrone*, highwayman ; *ladronce'llo* ;
[pilferer ;

dáma, lady ; *damúzza*, petty lady ; *damuzzaccia*,
[pretended lady.]

Finally, such is the genius of the Italian language in this respect, that we may even modify the verbs and adverbs by one or more syllables added to them ; thus,

From *baciáre*, to kiss ; we make *baciucchiáre*, { to give many
 little kisses
 one after
 another ;

“ *cantáre*, to sing ; “ { *canterelláre*, } to hum ;
 { or *canticchiáre*, }

“ *póco*, little ; “ { *pochino*, } very little ;
 { or *pocolino*, }

“ *béne*, well ; “ { *benino*, } pretty well ;
 { *benóne*, } very well.

EXAMPLES.

Móvesi 'l VECCHIERÉL canúto, e bíanco. (Petr. s. 14.)

O PAZZERÉLLA, tu non sai quéllo che si è fáttö. (Macch.)

Che ancór m' odiásti esséndo FANCIULLÍNO. (Bern. Ol. 1. 21.)

*Che non per vísta, ma per suóno è nóto — D' un RUSCEL-
LÉTTO, che quívi discénde.* (Dant. Inf. 34.)

*Vide entráre un tópo per la
FINESTRELLA.* (Nov. ant. 90.)

Quélla BOCCÚCCIA sánta. (Bellinc.)

*Dúbito che non sia un póco
UMIDÍZZO.* (Crusea.)

*Dal primo píano di QUÉSTO
CASÍNO si scénde in áltre stánze
sóttö térra.* (Borgh. Rip. 132.)

*Che abbíamo nói a fáre, se
non a menárló in QUÉSTO CA-
PANNÉTTO.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

*Sálse sul fico, e fu giúnto AL
PORTÉLLO.* (Lor. Med. c. 119.)

*Un OMICCIUÓLO di píccola
condizióne.* (Franc. Sacch. Op.
div. 134.)

*Avéte vói mái pósto ménte a
quéste DONNICCIUÓLE?* (Agn.
Pand 6.)

*Egli è un cértó OMICCIÁTTO,
che non è nessún di vói, che veg-
géndolo non l'avésse a nóia.* (Lor. Med. Arid. prol.)

*E vi mándano, a lor capric-
cio, gli OMICCIÁTTOLI non so-
laménte, ma i barbassóri.* (Al-
leg. 181.)

The hoary and white-headed
poor old man moves on.

O poor little fool, you don't
know what has been done.

For you hated me from the
time I was a little boy.

Discovered not by sight, but
by the sound of a small brook
that descends there.

He saw a mouse enter
through the little window.

That divine, pretty little
mouth.

I doubt whether it is not
somewhat slightly damp.

From the first story of this
small house we descend into
other rooms under ground.

What else have we to do,
but to bring him into this little
cottage.

He climbed the fig tree, and
reached the small door.

A poor little man of low
condition.

Have you ever thought of
these wretched little women?

He is a certain despicable
puny fellow, that there is none
of you, who on seeing him
would not dislike him.

And they send to you, ac-
cording to their whim, despi-
cable ignorant men as well as
great and learned.

*VIL FEMINÉLLA in Púglia il
prénde.* (Petr.)

*Una GENTÍL piaceról GIO-
VINÉLLA.* (Mos. Cin.)

Un BUÓN OMICCIUÓLO. (Bocc.
g. 3. n. 1.)

*I FIGLIUÓLI ancór TENERÉL-
LI.* (Fir. Disc. an. 79.)

*Con úna BOCCÚCCIA PICCO-
LÍNA.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

*Quéste DONNICCIUÓLE VE-
DOVÉTTE.* (Agn. Pand. 6.)

*Esséndo già úna PARTICÉLLA
dèlla nótte passáta.* (Bocc. g. 1.)

*Avéndo un LUMICÍNO in má-
no.* (Matt. Fran. Rim.)

*Con quélle sùe manéne BIAN-
COLÍNE.* (Fir. Asin. 41.)

*MERCANTUÓLO di quáttro de-
nári.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

*Tra véccia, e lóglio, e brúcio-
li, e FAGLIÚCHE.* (Car. Matt.
s. 8.)

*Se non m' avéssi dáto tal
BACIÓZZO.* (Pataff. 9.)

*Di sapóre AMARÓGNOLO,
mólto ácre, e penelrativo.* (Ri-
cett. Fior. 19.)

*Ritornò alla còrte più giallo,
e più CATTIVELLÚCCIO, che mái.*
(Franc. Sacch. nov. 74.)

*Mi hánno portáto quì il LI-
BRETTINO dégli enímmi del Si-
gnór Coltellini.* (Red. lett. 2.)

*Vi prégo, che, innánzi che
colésto LANDRONCÉLLO váda al-
tróre, mi facciáte réndere un
mío páio d' úlse.* (Bocc. g. 8.
n. 5.)

A vile, contemptible little
woman, in Apulia captivates
him.

A genteel, agreeable little
girl.

A good, poor little man.

The young ones [of the
dove] yet very young.

With a pretty little mouth.

These wretched young
widowed women.

A small part of the night
having already passed.

Having a small light in his
hand.

With her small pretty
white hands.

Little miserable merchant
worth four farthings.

Between vetch, darnel,
shavings, and small pieces of
straw.

If thou hadst not given me
such a cordial smacking kiss.

Of a taste bitterish, very
acid, and penetrating.

He returned to the court
more pale, and wretched than
ever.

They have brought me here
the pretty little book of enig-
mas of Mr Coltellini.

I pray you, that, before
this pilferer goes elsewhere,
you would make him return to
me a pair of spatterdashes of
mine.

*Esséndomi accattàta un pó' di
DAMUZZÁGGIA salvática. (Alleg.
57.)*

Having obtained somewhat
of the character of an uncouth
pretended lady.

*Allór la BACICCUHIÁI. (Pa-
taff. 9.)*

Then I gave her many little
kisses one after another.

*Accertátevi, che ío vi pórtu
un BENÓNE grandóne. (Car.
lett. 1.)*

Be assured, that I love you
hugely.

EXERCISE VII.

The little boy took out all the flowers, that he
gióvine trásse tútto fióre, che égli
had in the little basket. With a pretty little mouth,
avéva canéstro. Con bócca,
whose lips looked like two little rubies. | Dost thou
le cúi lábbro parévano — dúe rubíni. | tu²
think | that I will suffer that thou | shouldst pawn my |
Crédi¹ | che ío sóffera che tu | m' impégni la |
little gown? He conducted me through certain
gonnélla? E'gli míse² mi¹ per cértá
remote narrow lanes. Like the little sheep that
fuór di máno,² stráda.¹ Côme pécora, che
come out | of the | fold, | first one, | then two, | then
éscono | dal | chiúso, | ad úna, | a dúe, | a
three, | and the others remain a little timid, lowering
tre, | e | áltra stánno tímida, atterán-
down | their | eyes and | their | nose. Clothed | in |
do | gli | ócchio e | il | múso. Vestito | di |
sackcloth, with a miserable little hat. She was
súcco, con — vil cappéllo. E'lla éra
somewhat slightly malicious. I have found him with a
alquánto malizióso. I'o ho² trováto³ lo¹ con
little book in his hand. | Do not be sparing with
libro — máno. | Non vogliáte éssermi
me | of a discreet little smile. The other was a child
avára | discrétu ríso. áltru éra fanciúllu
very small, who | was | not yet one year old.
píccolo, che | avéa³ | non² ancóra¹ un⁴ ánnu⁵ —

Who is this contemptible little man, that has come | to
Chi è quèsto *uómo, che è² venúto³* | *a dir*
insult | us in our house? He had | on | his head
villania⁴ | *ci¹ 5 nóstra⁷ cása⁶* — *Avéva* | *in* | — *cápo*
a torn little cap. Little boxes made | of | boards.
róto *berétta.* *cassóne* *fátti* | *con* | *ásse.*
Accompany the little master. Thus the blind little
Accompagnáte *padróne.* *Così* *ciéco*
child flatters (the) lovers. The poor little woman,
fanciúlo lusinga *amánte.* *vécchia,*
having heard these words, said, Have a very
— *udite quèsto paróla, disse, Abbiáte*
little (of) patience.
tánto *pazienza.*

CHAPTER V.

NUMERALS.

CARDINAL NUMBERS.

| | | | | |
|---------------------|-------------|----------------------|---|----------------|
| <i>U'no,</i> | one ; | <i>vent' úno,</i> | { | twenty-one ; |
| <i>due,</i> | two ; | or <i>ventúno,</i> | | |
| <i>tre,</i> | three ; | <i>ventidúe,</i> | | twenty-two ; |
| <i>quáttro,</i> | four ; | <i>ventitrè,</i> | | twenty-three ; |
| <i>cínque,</i> | five ; | <i>ventiquáttro,</i> | | twenty-four ; |
| <i>séi,</i> | six ; | <i>venticinque,</i> | | twenty-five ; |
| <i>sétte,</i> | seven ; | <i>ventiséi,</i> | | twenty-six ; |
| <i>ótto,</i> | eight ; | <i>ventisétte,</i> | | twenty-seven ; |
| <i>nóve,</i> | nine ; | <i>vent' ótto,</i> | { | twenty-eight ; |
| <i>diéci,</i> | ten ; | or <i>ventótto,</i> | | |
| <i>undici,</i> | eleven ; | <i>ventinóve,</i> | | twenty-nine ; |
| <i>dódicí,</i> | twelve ; | <i>trénta,</i> | | thirty ; |
| <i>trédici,</i> | thirteen ; | <i>tréntúno,</i> | | thirty-one ; |
| <i>quattórdici,</i> | fourteen ; | <i>tréntótto,</i> | | thirty-eight ; |
| <i>quindici,</i> | fifteen ; | <i>quaránta,</i> | | forty ; |
| <i>sédici,</i> | sixteen ; | <i>cinquánta,</i> | | fifty ; |
| <i>diciassétte,</i> | seventeen ; | | | |
| <i>dicióttó,</i> | eighteen ; | | | |
| <i>diciannóve,</i> | nineteen ; | | | |
| <i>vénti,</i> | twenty ; | | | |

| | | | |
|-----------------------|-----------------|------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>sessánta</i> , | sixty ; | <i>mille</i> , | thousand ; |
| <i>settánta</i> , | seventy ; | <i>duemila</i> , | } two thousand ; |
| | | or <i>dumila</i> , | |
| <i>ottánta</i> , | eighty ; | <i>tremila</i> , | three thousand ; |
| <i>novánta</i> , | ninety ; | <i>millecénto</i> , or | } eleven hun- [dred ; |
| | | <i>mille e cénto</i> , | |
| <i>cénto</i> , | hundred ; | <i>diecimila</i> , | ten thousand ; |
| <i>duecénto</i> , | } two hundred ; | <i>centomila</i> , | hundred thous- [and ; |
| <i>ducénto</i> , | | | |
| or <i>dugénto</i> , | | | |
| <i>trecénto</i> , | three hundred ; | | |
| <i>quattrocénto</i> , | four hundred ; | <i>milíone</i> , | million. |
| | | | |

The numbers *ventiséi*, *ventisétte*, *quarantaséi*, *ottantasétte*, are sometimes contracted into *venzéi*, 'twenty-six' ; *venzétte*, 'twenty-seven' ; *quaranzéi*, 'forty-six' ; *ottanzétte*, 'eighty-seven'.

Cénto, when followed by *quaránta*, *cinquánta*, *sessánta*, *settánta*, loses its last syllable, and makes *cenquaránta*, 'one hundred and forty' ; *cencinquánta*, 'one hundred and fifty' ; *censessánta*, 'one hundred and sixty' ; *censettánta*, 'one hundred and seventy'.

Cardinal numbers, except *úno* and its compounds, are generally of the common gender ; as,

| | |
|------------------------------|----------------|
| <i>sette ánni</i> , m., | seven years ; |
| <i>quíndici stéllé</i> , f., | fifteen stars. |

The Italians make use of these numbers, instead of the ordinal, to indicate the days of the month ; and then they are preceded by the masculine articles *i* or *li* ; or by the words *ái*, *állí*, or *addì* ; as,

| | |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------------|
| LI VENTIQUÁTTRO <i>Giúgno</i> , | the 24th of June ; |
| ÁI DICIÓTTO <i>di Dicémbre</i> , | on the 18th of December ; |
| ÁLLI QUATTÓRDICI <i>di Gennáio</i> , | on the 14th of January ; |
| ADDÌ DÓDICI <i>di Márzo</i> , | on the 12th of March. |

EXCEPTION.

The first day of the month is indicated by the ordinal number *primo*, 'first,' preceded in like manner by *il*, *al*, or *addì*.

When they are used to indicate the hours of the day, they are preceded by the feminine article *la, le*; but then the word *óra*, 'hour'; *óre*, 'hours'; is either expressed or understood; as,

| | |
|----------------------------|---------------|
| LE DUE <i>óre</i> , | two o'clock; |
| LE QUÁTTRO [<i>óre</i>], | four o'clock. |

U'no, and its compounds *ventúno*, *trentúno*, &c., before feminine nouns, like other adjectives, change *o* into *a*; as,

| | |
|--------------------------|--------------------|
| UNA <i>LÍBRA</i> , | one pound; |
| novantina <i>RUÓTA</i> , | ninety-one wheels. |

When cardinal numbers are used as substantives, all but *tre* and those ending in *i*, are made to vary in the plural; as,

| | |
|---------------------|--------------|
| due <i>cinqui</i> , | two fives; |
| tre <i>novi</i> , | three nines. |

Mille and *milióne*, in the plural make *míla* and *milióni*; as,

| | |
|--------------------------------|---------------------|
| dicióto <i>MÍLA</i> , | eighteen thousand; |
| un <i>milióne di MILIÓNI</i> , | a million millions. |

EXAMPLES.

Vivette ánni VENZÉI. (Franc. Sacch. rim. 40.)

He lived twenty-six years.

Ne figliò VENZÉTTE dello stéssu colóre. (Red. Ins. 47.)

It [a scorpion] brought forth twenty-seven [scorpions] of the same color.

Déntro la città di Róma vi sòno QUARANZÉI chiése cardina-láne. (Brun. Tes. 3. 3.)

Within the city of Rome there are forty-six cardinal churches.

Un milióne, e OTTANZÉTTE migliaia, e cinquecêto fiorini d'oro. (Dav. Tac. Post. 429.)

One million and eighty-seven thousand and five hundred gold florins.

Avéndovi in quel concílio CENQUARANTÓtto vèscovi. (Petr. Uom. ill. 82.)

There being in that council one hundred and forty-eight bishops.

CENCINQUÁNTA dē' suoi cava-
liéri mandò in cōntra all' óste dē'
Fiorentini. (Giov. Vill. l. 9.)

Più di CENSETTÁNTA ánni
cultivárono gli Dēi sēnza ídolo.
(St. Agost. Citt. Dio. 4. 31.)

*La vóglia e la ragión combat-
tul' hángo—sétte, e SETT' ÁNNI.*
(Petr. s. 80.)

*QUÍNDICI STÉLLE, che in di-
vērse pláge—Lo ciélo avvían
di tánto seréno.* (Dant. Par.
13.)

Di Ferrára, LI VENTIGUÁTTRO
GIÚGNO, Mille seicéto sétte.
(Bent. lett. I.)

A'I DICÍOTTO DI DICÉMBRE.
(Dav.)

*A'LLI QUATTÓRDICI DI GEN-
NAIO.* (Macch.)

Il détto ángo ADDÌ DÓDICI DI
MÁRZO. (Giov. Vill.)

*Che óra è?—Sóno LE QUÁT-
TRO.* (Class.)

E'ccotì la nótte, écco LE DÚE
ÓRE, écco le quáttro. (Firenz.)

Tógli ÚNA LÍBRA di castróne.
(Burchiell. p. 2. s. 1.)

A'ltre NOVANTÚNA RUÓTA.
(Dant. Conv.)

E diciámo DUE CÍNQUI, due
sétti, TRE NÓVI, perchè quéstì
numerali, sēmpre che stángo per
sustantivi, si declinano. (Buom.
Ling. Tosc. 2. 8. 13.)

E'ran per número DICÍOTTO
MÍLA. (Bemb. Stor. 12. 176.)

Al pádre Carrára rēnda in
mto nōme UN MILIÓNE DI MILÍO-
NI di salutì. (Red. lett. 2.)

He sent one hundred and
fifty of his horsemen against
the Florentine host.

They adored their gods, with-
out idols, for more than one
hundred and seventy years.

Inclination and reason have
striven for seven after seven
years.

Fifteen stars, which in dif-
ferent spheres enliven the
skies with so much serenity.

Ferrara, 24th June, 1607.

On the 18th December.

On the 14th January.

On the 12th of March of the
said year.

What o'clock is it?—It is
four o'clock.

Behold night, behold two
o'clock, behold four o'clock.

Take one pound of mutton.

Other ninety-one wheels.

And we say two fives, two
sevens, three nines, because
these numerals, when they
stand as substantives, are de-
clined.

They were eighteen thous-
and in number.

Give to father Carrara, in
my behalf, a million millions
of salutations.

ORDINAL NUMBERS.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|---------------------|---------------------------------------|------------------|
| <i>Primo,</i> | first; | <i>*ventesimoprímo,</i> | } twenty-first; |
| <i>secóndo,</i> | second; | <i>vige imoprímo</i> or | |
| <i>térzo,</i> | third; | <i>ventunésimo,</i> | } twenty-second; |
| <i>quárto,</i> | fourth; | <i>*ventesimosecóndo,</i> | |
| <i>quínto,</i> | fifth; | <i>vigesimosecóndo,</i> or | } |
| <i>sésto,</i> | sixth; | <i>ventiduéximo,</i> | |
| <i>settimo,</i> | seventh; | | |
| <i>ottávo,</i> | eighth; | <i>*trentésimo,</i> or | } thirtieth; |
| <i>nóno,</i> | ninth; | <i>trigésimo,</i> | |
| <i>décimo,</i> | tenth; | <i>*trentesimoprímo,</i> | } thirty-first; |
| <i>decimoprímo,</i> | } eleventh; | <i>trigesimoprímo,</i> or | |
| <i>*undécimo</i> or | | <i>trentunésimo,</i> | |
| <i>undicésimo,</i> | } twelfth; | <i>*quarantésimo,</i> or | } fortieth; |
| <i>decimosecóndo,</i> | | <i>quadrágésimo,</i> | |
| <i>*duodécimo,</i> | } thirteenth; | <i>*cinquantésimo,</i> | } fiftieth; |
| <i>dodécimo,</i> or | | <i>quinquagésimo,</i> or | |
| <i>dodicésimo,</i> | } fourteenth; | <i>quingentésimo,</i> | |
| <i>*decimotérzo,</i> | | <i>*sessantésimo,</i> or | } sixtieth; |
| <i>terzodécimo,</i> or | <i>sessagésimo,</i> | | |
| <i>tredicésimo,</i> | } fifteenth; | <i>*settantésimo</i> or | } seventieth; |
| <i>*decimoquárto,</i> | | <i>settuagésimo,</i> | |
| <i>quartodécimo,</i> or | } sixteenth; | <i>*ottantésimo,</i> or | } eightieth; |
| <i>quattordicésimo,</i> | | <i>ottagésimo,</i> | |
| <i>*decimoquínto,</i> | } seventeenth; | <i>*novantésimo,</i> or | } ninetieth; |
| <i>quintodécimo,</i> or | | <i>nonagésimo,</i> | |
| <i>quindicésimo,</i> | } eighteenth; | <i>centésimo,</i> | } hundredth; |
| <i>*decimosésto,</i> | | <i>ducentésimo,</i> or | |
| <i>sestodécimo,</i> or | } nineteenth; | <i>dugentésimo,</i> | } hundredth; |
| <i>sedicésimo,</i> | | <i>trecentésimo,</i> three hundredth; | |
| <i>*decimosétimo,</i> | } twentieth; | <i>millésimo,</i> | } thousandth; |
| <i>settimodécimo,</i> or | | <i>miliónésimo,</i> | |
| <i>diciassettésimo,</i> | | | |
| <i>*decimottávo,</i> | | | |
| <i>ottodécimo,</i> or | | | |
| <i>diciottlésimo,</i> | | | |
| <i>*decimonóno,</i> | | | |
| <i>nonodécimo,</i> or | | | |
| <i>diciannovésimo,</i> | | | |
| <i>*ventésimo,</i> or | | | |
| <i>vigésimo,</i> | | | |

* We mark with an asterisk those, amongst the different names of the same numbers, that are most in use.

The ordinal numbers from *primo* to *décimo*, and *ventésimo*, *trentésimo*, &c., before feminine nouns change *o* into *a*; and in the plural change *o* into *i*, for the masculine, and *a* into *e*, for the feminine; as,

| | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>la prima</i> DÓNNA, | the first woman; |
| <i>le térze</i> PERCÔSSE, | the third stripes; |
| <i>la cinquantésima</i> LÉTTERA, | the fiftieth letter; |
| <i>i primi</i> * DÌ, | the first days: |

And their compounds, *quartodécimo*, *decimoséttimo*, &c., change both the last vowel of the last, and the last vowel of the first of the two component numbers; as,

| | |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>la quartadécima</i> CONDIZIÓNE, | the fourteenth condition; |
| <i>la decimaséttima</i> STOLTÍZIA, | the seventeenth folly. |

EXAMPLES.

Délle quáli LA PRIMA chiamerémo Pampinéa, la secónda Fiamméta, Filoména la térza, &c. (Bocc. Introd.)

The first of whom we will call Pampinea, the second Fiammetta, the third Filomena, &c.

Nessúno—Le secónde aspettáva nè LE TÉRZE [percósse.] (Dant. Inf. 18.)

None waited for the second, nor the third [stripes.]

Frà Guittóne, nëlla LÉTTERA che nel mio códice è la CINQUANTÉSIMA. (Red. annot. Ditr.)

Fra Guittone, in the letter which in my MS. copy is the fiftieth.

E né' DÌ PRIMI déntro al divín sèno—Nasccémmo. (Bocc. Amet. 96.)

And in the first days we were born in the divine bosom.

LA QUARTADÉCIMA CONDIZIÓNE, che déve avère la confessiòne, si è acceleráta, (Passav. 176.)

The fourteenth condition, which the confession ought to have, is that of being early.

LA DECIMASÉTTIMA STOLTÍZIA, è di quèlli che vógliono fuggire. (Cavalc. Stolt. 228.)

The seventeenth folly, is that of those who desire to flee.

* *Primi* is sometimes used as a substantive, and then has the signification of 'ancestors', 'parents'; as,

Fieraménte fúro avvérsi — A me e à miéi PRIMI, e a mia páte. (Dant. Inf. 10.)

They were fiercely adverse to me, to my ancestors, and to my party.

COLLECTIVE, DISTRIBUTIVE, AND PROPORTIONAL NUMBERS.

Collective.

| | | | |
|--------------------|-----------------------------|----------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>Paio</i> , | a pair ; | <i>quarantina</i> , | two scores, <i>or</i> |
| <i>*cinquina</i> , | the number of five ; | <i>cinquantina</i> , | [forty ; |
| <i>settina</i> , | the number of | | [and a half ; |
| | [seven ; | <i>sessantina</i> , | three scores, <i>or</i> |
| | | | [sixty ; |
| <i>decina</i> , | ten, <i>or</i> half a | <i>settantina</i> , | seventy, <i>or</i> three |
| | [score ; | | [scores and a half ; |
| <i>dodicina</i> | } a dozen ; | <i>ottantina</i> , | four scores, <i>or</i> |
| <i>or dozzina</i> | | | [eighty ; |
| <i>ventina</i> , | a score, <i>or</i> twenty ; | <i>novantina</i> , | ninety, <i>or</i> four |
| <i>trentina</i> , | thirty, <i>or</i> a score | <i>centinaio</i> , | [scores and a half ; |
| | [and a half ; | <i>migliaio</i> , | a hundred ; |
| | | | a thousand ; |

Distributive.

| | | | |
|--------------------|--------------|---------------------|-----------------|
| <i>U'na metà</i> , | one half ; | <i>un sesto</i> , | one sixth ; |
| <i>un terzo</i> , | one third ; | <i>un settimo</i> , | one seventh ; |
| <i>un quarto</i> , | one fourth ; | <i>un ottavo</i> , | one eighth ; |
| <i>un quinto</i> , | one fifth ; | <i>un nono</i> , | one ninth ; &c. |

Proportional.

| | | | |
|--------------------|-------------|--------------------|----------------|
| <i>Doppio</i> , | double ; | <i>quintuplo</i> , | quintuple |
| <i>triplo</i> , | triple ; | <i>décuplo</i> , | ten-fold ; |
| <i>quádruplo</i> , | quadruple ; | <i>céntuplo</i> , | a hundred-fold |

Collective, distributive, and proportional numbers follow the rules of other adjectives.

* *Treina*, *quattrina*, *seina*, *ottina* &c., are sometimes used by the Italians in common language, to express 'the number of three', 'of four', 'of six', 'of eight', &c., but they have never been employed by good writers.

With numeral adjectives are generally classed the following words ; viz,

| | | | | |
|------------------|-----------------|-----------------|-----------------|--------------------------|
| <i>ámbi,</i> | <i>ambidúe,</i> | <i>ambidúi,</i> | <i>ambidúo,</i> | } both, both of them. |
| <i>ámbe,</i> | <i>ambedúe,</i> | <i>ambedúi,</i> | <i>ambedúo,</i> | |
| <i>ámbo,</i> | <i>ambodúe,</i> | | <i>ambodúo,</i> | |
| | <i>amendúe,</i> | | <i>amendúo,</i> | |
| <i>amendúni,</i> | | | | |
| <i>amendúne,</i> | | | | |
| <i>entrámbi,</i> | | | | |

A'mbi, its compounds, and *amendúni*, are used in speaking of masculine objects : *ámbe*, its compounds, and *amendúne*, in speaking of feminine : the others may be used for both genders ; as,

| | |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| <i>ámbi</i> AMÁNTI, | both lovers ; |
| <i>ambidúe</i> SÁVJ, | both sages ; |
| <i>ámbe</i> LE LÚCI, | both eyes ; |
| <i>ambedúe</i> DÓNNE, | both women ; |
| <i>ámbo</i> CONVÉRSI, | both turned ; |
| <i>ámbo</i> LE BRÁCCIA, | both arms ; |
| <i>amendúo</i> GLI EMISPÉRI, | both hemispheres ; |
| <i>amendúe</i> LE SPÓNDE, | both shores ; |
| <i>amendúni</i> PÓRCI, | both hogs ; |
| <i>amendúne</i> CÔSE, | both things, <i>or</i> both of them ; |
| SOFRONIA ed OLÍNDÓ | Sofronia and Olindo both of |
| <i>d'una cittáde entrámbi,</i> | the same city. |

EXAMPLES.

FILÉNO e TÍRSI ÁMBI novélli
AMÁNTI. (Vinc. Mart. rim.
4.)

Philenus and Thyrsis both
new lovers.

L'ÚNO e L'ÁLTRO SÁVIO dicéa
véro, perciò ad AMBIDÚE donóe.
(Nov. ant. 23.)

Both sages told the truth,
therefore he gave to both.

E sién nel cuór puníte ÁMBE
LE LÚCI—Ch'álla stráda d'amór
mì fúron dúci. (Petr. c. 8.)

And let the heart bear pun-
ishment for both eyes, which
led me to the road of love.

Allóra AMBEDÚE [dónne]
entrárono nëlla fósso. (Nov.
ant. 35.)

Then both [women] entered
into the ditch.

Al fine ÁMBÓ CONVÉRSI al
giústo sèggio. (Petr. c. 48.)

Finally both turned to the
seat of justice.

Con AMBO LE BRÁCCIA mi
prése. (Dant. Inf. 19.)

He seized me with both
arms.

Il confíne—D' AMENDÚO GLI
EMISPÉRI. (Dant. Inf. 20.)

The confine of both hemi-
spheres.

Per cùí tremávano AMENDÚE
LE SPÓNDE. (Dant. Inf. 9.)

On account of which both
shores trembled.

AMENDÚNI [pórci] MÓRTI
cáddero in térra. (Bocc. In-
trod.)

Both [hogs] fell dead to the
earth.

Nélla vóstra elezióne sta, di
tórre quál più vi piáce DÉLLE
DÚE [còse], -ò AMENDÚNE.
(Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

It is at your choice, to take
which of the two [things] you
like best, or both.

Colti SOFRÓNIA, OLÍNDÓ égli
s'appélla—D' úna cittáde EN-
TRÁMBI, e d'úna féde. (Tass.
Ger. 2. 16.)

She is called Sofronia, he
Olindo, both of the same city
and of the same faith.

EXERCISE VII.

He sent his brother with six cohorts, and five
— Mandò sùo fratélló còrte, e
hundred horsemen | to | Térra di Lavóro. He made him
cavállo | in | — féce² Gli¹
grieve for this sin forty days. He passed | from |
piángere — quéstó peccáto dī. — Passò | di |
Tunis | to | Apulia with more than eight hundred Spanish
Túnisi | in | Púglia Spagnuólo²
horsemen. Metellus was already in Lombardy | with |
cavalière.¹ Metélló éra già Lombardiá | còlla |
his army of three legions, who was coming | from |
súo² óste¹ legióne, che veníva | di |
France. Being already about (to) thirty years old.
Francia. Esséndo già di préso² —³ ⁴ áнно⁵ vécchio.¹
I have here two hundred livres, | with | which I intended
Io ho quì líra, | di | cùí io voléva
to have bought a farm. And this was four hundred years
compráre podére. E ciò fu áнно
before (that) Rome | was begun. | He was of the age
ánxi che Róma² | si cominciásse.¹ | — E'ra — età

of twenty-six or twenty-seven (years). One hundred and
o *anno.* — —

seventy archers. He sent one hundred and fifty | of |
sagittário. — *Mandò* — — *de'* |

his soldiers.
suo *fante.*

They went to Messina the twenty-fourth of December.
 — *Andarono* *Dicembre.*

He | was baptized | on the sixteenth, in St. John's. On
 — | *Battezzossi* | *San Giovanni.*

the eighteenth of December, having heard of the insurrection
Dicembre, — *udita* *rivolta*

of the legion, | he went out | (of) the palace dressed | in |
legione, | *s' uscì* | — *palagio vestito* | *di* |

black. The first of the month I will pay you. Come at
néro. *mese* — *pagherò²* *vi.¹* *Venite a*

(the) six o'clock, and we will speak | of it. | He arrived
 — *e* — *parleremo²* | *ne.¹* | — *Giunse*

at Milan at (the) one o'clock | in | the night. At (the)
a Milano a — | *di* | *notte.* *A*

twelve o'clock | I went to see | our ambassador.
 — | *mi portai dal* | *nostro ambasciadore.*

It | was worth | thirty-one livres. Thou didst usurp one
 — | *Valèva* | *lira.* — *Usurpasti* —

hundred and seventy-five thousand gold florins. | He came
 — *d'oro²* *fiorinol.* | *Sì*

to an agreement | | on | condition of paying sixty thousand
accordò | | *con* *condizione* *pagare*

ducats to the conquerors. Salute him | for me | a thousand
ducato *vincitore.* *Salutate* — *lo²* | *me¹* | —

millions of times.
vólta.

Here begins the eleventh book. He arrived happily
Qui comincia *2 libro.¹* — *Arrivò felicemente*

to the fortieth year | of | his life. Contradicting (to)
anno *della* | *sua* *vita.* *Contradicendo*

himself in the fourteenth chapter. Boniface the Eighth
sè medesimo *2 capitolo.¹* *Bonifazio³* — *4*

being Pope in Rome, the Abbé of Cligni came to the
Esséndo' pápa² 5 Róma,⁶ 10 Abbáte¹¹ 12 13 vénne⁷ 8

court. | In | the time of the Emperor Frederic the First.
córtē.⁹ | A | tēmpo Imperatóre Federico —

The twenty-first stanza.
stánza.

He had tied both | his | feet. | I bit | both | my |
— Avéva legáti | i | pitde. | Mi mórsi | le |
 hands through grief. They entered both | into | the garden.
máno per dolóre. — Entrárono | in | giardíno.
 I gave it to both.
— ho² dáto³ Lo.¹

CHAPTER VI.

SUBSTANTIVE PRONOUNS.

PERSONAL AND CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

THE Italian personal pronouns are the following :

| | Singular. | | Plural. |
|-------------|----------------------------------|---|-----------------------------|
| 1st Person, | <i>io</i> , m. & f., I ; | | <i>nói</i> , m. & f., we ; |
| 2d Person, | <i>tu</i> , m. & f., thou ; | | <i>vói</i> , m. & f., you ; |
| 3d Person, | <i>egli</i> , he ; | { | <i>égli</i> , |
| | or <i>éssó</i> , m., he or it ; | | or <i>églino</i> , |
| | <i>élla</i> , she ; | | or <i>éssi</i> , m., |
| | or <i>éssa</i> , f., she or it ; | | <i>élle</i> , |
| | | | or <i>élleno</i> , |
| | | | or <i>éssé</i> , f., |
| | | | } they. |

Singular and Plural.

3d Person, *sè*, m. & f., { one's self, himself, herself,
 itself, themselves.

Conjunctive pronouns are derived from the personal pronouns, and are divided into *conjunctive*, properly speaking, and *relative* conjunctive pronouns.

Personal pronouns are varied with the *prepositions* only.

VARIATION OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

I O.

SINGULAR.

| | | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. |
|------------|---------|----------------------|------------|-----------|
| Subjective | (N.) | <i>io,</i> | | I ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. | (G.)— <i>dî me,</i> | | of me ; |
| | { Attr. | (D.)— <i>a me,</i> | <i>mi,</i> | to me ; |
| | { Der. | (Ab.)— <i>da me,</i> | | from me ; |
| Objective | (Ac.) | <i>me,</i> | <i>mi,</i> | me : |

PLURAL.

| | | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. |
|------------|---------|-----------------------|------------------|-----------|
| Subjective | (N.) | <i>nôî,</i> | | we ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. | (G.)— <i>dî nôî,</i> | | of us ; |
| | { Attr. | (D.)— <i>a nôî,</i> | <i>ne or ci,</i> | to us ; |
| | { Der. | (Ab.)— <i>da nôî,</i> | | from us ; |
| Objective | (Ac.) | <i>nôî,</i> | <i>ne or ci,</i> | us. |

TU.

SINGULAR.

| | | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. |
|------------|---------|----------------------|------------|-------------|
| Subjective | (N.) | <i>tu,</i> | | thou ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. | (G.)— <i>dî te,</i> | | of thee ; |
| | { Attr. | (D.)— <i>a te,</i> | <i>ti,</i> | to thee ; |
| | { Der. | (Ab.)— <i>da te,</i> | | from thee ; |
| Objective | (Ac.) | <i>te,</i> | <i>ti,</i> | thee : |

PLURAL.

| | | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. |
|-------------|---------|-----------------------|------------|-------------|
| Subjective. | (N.) | <i>vôî,</i> | | ye or you ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. | (G.)— <i>dî vôî,</i> | | of you ; |
| | { Attr. | (D.)— <i>a vôî,</i> | <i>vi,</i> | to you ; |
| | { Der. | (Ab.)— <i>da vôî,</i> | | from you ; |
| Objective | (Ac.) | <i>vôî,</i> | <i>vi,</i> | you. |

GLI.

SINGULAR.

| | | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. |
|------------|---------|-----------------------|-------------------|------------|
| Subjective | (N.) | <i>égli,</i> | | he ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. | (G.)— <i>dî lui,</i> | <i>ne,</i> | of him ; |
| | { Attr. | (D.)— <i>a lui,</i> | <i>gli or li,</i> | to him ; |
| | { Der. | (Ab.)— <i>da lui,</i> | <i>ne,</i> | from him ; |
| Objective. | (Ac.) | <i>lui,</i> | <i>il or lo,</i> | him : |

PLURAL.

| | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. | |
|------------|--------------------------------------|---------------------------|-------------|-------------|
| Subjective | (N.)— <i>égli</i> or <i>églino</i> , | | | they ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. (G.)— <i>dì loro</i> , | | <i>ne</i> , | of them ; |
| | { Attr. (D.)— <i>a loro</i> , | <i>loro</i> , | | to them ; |
| | { Der. (Ab.)— <i>da loro</i> , | | <i>ne</i> , | from them ; |
| Objective | (Ac.)— <i>loro</i> . | <i>gli</i> or <i>li</i> , | | them. |

ESSO.

SINGULAR.

| | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. | |
|------------|--------------------------------|--------------|-------------|------------------|
| Subjective | (N.)— <i>éssò</i> , | | | he or it ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. (G.)— <i>d' éssò</i> , | | <i>ne</i> , | of him or it ; |
| | { Attr. (D.)— <i>ad éssò</i> , | <i>gli</i> , | | to him or it ; |
| | { Der. (Ab.)— <i>da éssò</i> , | | <i>ne</i> , | from him or it ; |
| Objective | (Ac.)— <i>éssò</i> , | <i>lo</i> , | | him or it : |

PLURAL.

| | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. | |
|------------|--------------------------------|---------------------------|-------------|-------------|
| Subjective | (N.)— <i>éssi</i> , | | | they ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. (G.)— <i>d' éssi</i> , | | <i>ne</i> , | of them ; |
| | { Attr. (D.)— <i>ad éssi</i> , | | | to them ; |
| | { Der. (Ab.)— <i>da éssi</i> , | | <i>ne</i> , | from them ; |
| Objective | (Ac.)— <i>éssi</i> , | <i>gli</i> or <i>li</i> , | | them. |

ELLA.

SINGULAR.

| | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. | |
|------------|-------------------------------|-------------|-------------|------------|
| Subjective | (N.)— <i>élla</i> , | | | she ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. (G.)— <i>dì léi</i> , | | <i>ne</i> , | of her ; |
| | { Attr. (D.)— <i>a léi</i> , | <i>le</i> , | | to her ; |
| | { Der. (Ab.)— <i>da léi</i> , | | <i>ne</i> , | from her ; |
| Objective | (Ac.)— <i>léi</i> , | <i>la</i> , | | her : |

PLURAL.

| | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. | |
|------------|--------------------------------------|---------------|-------------|-------------|
| Subjective | (N.)— <i>élle</i> or <i>élleno</i> , | | | they ; |
| Relat. | { Poss. (G.)— <i>dì loro</i> , | | <i>ne</i> , | of them ; |
| | { Attr. (D.)— <i>a loro</i> , | <i>loro</i> , | | to them ; |
| | { Der. (Ab.)— <i>da loro</i> , | | <i>ne</i> , | from them ; |
| Objective | (Ac.)— <i>loro</i> , | <i>le</i> , | | them. |

ÉSSA.

SINGULAR.

| | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. |
|------------|------------------------------|-------------|------------------|
| Subjective | (N.)— <i>éssa</i> , | | she or it ; |
| Relat. { | Poss. (G.)— <i>d' éssa</i> , | | of her or it ; |
| | Attr. (D.)— <i>ad éssa</i> , | <i>le</i> , | to her or it ; |
| | Der. (Ab.)— <i>da éssa</i> , | | from her or it ; |
| Objective | (Ac.)— <i>éssa</i> , | <i>la</i> , | her or it ; |

PLURAL.

| | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. |
|------------|------------------------------|-------------|-------------|
| Subjective | (N.)— <i>ésse</i> , | | they ; |
| Relat. { | Poss. (G.)— <i>d' ésse</i> , | | of them ; |
| | Attr. (D.)— <i>ad ésse</i> , | | to them ; |
| | Der. (Ab.)— <i>da ésse</i> , | | from them ; |
| Objective | (Ac.)— <i>ésse</i> , | <i>le</i> , | them. |

SÈ.

| | Personal. | Conjunc. | Relat. |
|------------|----------------------------|-------------|-------------------|
| Subjective | (N.)— <i>sè</i> , | * | |
| Relat. { | Poss. (G.)— <i>di sè</i> , | | of one's self ; |
| | Attr. (D.)— <i>a sè</i> , | <i>si</i> , | to one's self ; |
| | Der. (Ab.)— <i>da sè</i> , | | from one's self ; |
| Objective | (Ac.)— <i>sè</i> , | <i>si</i> , | one's self. |

Io, tu, egli, ella ; noi, voi, egli or egliino, elle or elleno, are applied to animate beings ; *esso, éssa ; éssi, ésse ; sè*, may be applied both to animate and inanimate beings.

The pronouns *esso, éssa*, are used sometimes to express the *self-same*, the very object of which we speak ; and then they are elegantly supplied by the words *déssu, déssa*, but in the *subjective* only ; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>in ÉSSA lúce,</i> | in that very light ; |
| <i>ÉSSO Messér Tedáldo,</i> | the same Messer Tedaldo ; |
| <i>tu non par DÉSSO,</i> | thou dost not seem thyself ; |
| <i>el' è ben DÉSSA,</i> | it is she, herself. |

* *Sè* is used to express a relation of identity with the subject, and has no *Subjective*.

In familiar conversation, the Italians very often employ *lui*, and *lei*, as subjectives, instead of *egli* and *ella*; but this usage, though authorized by some writers, ought never to be followed in the written language.

We find also in some classics *egli* and *ella*, used for *lui* and *lei*; and *elle* for *loro*; as, *memoria d' ELLA*, 'memory of her'; *e suon di man con ELLE*, 'and striking of hands with them': and *ello* for *egli* and for *lui*; *elli* for *eglino* and for *loro*; as, *ELLO passò per l'isola di Lénno*, 'he passed by the island of Lemnos'; *guàrdati da ELLO*, 'guard yourself against him'; *ELLI stàvano pensierosi*, 'they were pensive'; *ch' alcuna glòria i rei arrèbber d' ELLI*, 'for the guilty souls would derive no glory from them'; this license, nevertheless, must be left entirely to the Poets.

La for *ella*, *le* for *elleno*, and *gli* for *egli* and for *eglino*; as, *LA mi scusi*, 'excuse me'; *LE mi dicano*, 'tell me'; *GLI era qui*, 'he was here'; &c.; are contractions, which, however common they may be in Tuscany, and supported by the authority of several writers, are notwithstanding to be carefully avoided in the written language, especially in an elevated style of composition.

The pronouns *io*, *tu*, *egli*, *ella*, *esso*, are often used as mere expletives; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>s' io morissi, io,</i> | if I should die; |
| <i>tu di' tue parole, tu,</i> | thou mayest say what thou [pleasest; |
| <i>EGLI è una compassione a [vederlo,</i> | it excites pity to see him; |
| <i>ELLA non andrà così,</i> | it shall not be so; |
| <i>andiamo con Esso lui,</i> | let us go with him. |

Io is sometimes written *i'*; and *egli*, *eglino*, are contracted into *ei*, and often written *e'*; as,

| | |
|--|-----------------------------|
| <i>i' non so ridire,</i> | I cannot say; |
| <i>Ei débbe aver inteso,</i> | he must have heard; |
| <i>Ei si gittàro in sulla spiágga,</i> | they leaped upon the shore; |
| <i>E' pensò,</i> | he thought; |
| <i>domandò chi E' fòssero,</i> | he asked who they were. |

When the pronouns *me*, *te*, *se*, are preceded by the preposition *con*, 'with', we often transpose the preposi-

tion, make an elision of the *n*, and form of them a single word ; as,

| | | |
|----------------|-------|-------------------------------|
| <i>con me,</i> | MÉCO, | with me ; |
| <i>con te,</i> | TÉCO, | with thee ; |
| <i>con sè,</i> | SÉCO, | with one's self, himself, &c. |

We find in the classics *nóscó, vóscó* ; used for *con nói*, 'with us', and *con vói*, 'with you' ; but these expressions have become obsolete.

Italian personal pronouns are very often suppressed, the termination of the verb being sufficient to indicate the person ; as,

| | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>andiamo</i> [nói] <i>a Róma,</i> | let us go to Rome ; |
| [égli] <i>domandò chi fóssero,</i> | he asked who they were. |

The English reflexive pronouns *myself, thyself, ourselves, &c.*, are expressed in Italian by the *personal pronouns*, and the word *stéssó*, m., *stéssa*, f., or *medésimo*, m., *medésima*, f., for the singular ; and *stéssi*, m., *stésse*, f., or *medésimi*, m., *medésime*, f., for the plural ; as,

| Singular. | | Plural. | | |
|-----------|--|---|--|--------------|
| 1st Per. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{io stéssó,} \\ \text{or medésimo, m.} \\ \textit{io stéssa,} \\ \text{or medésima, f.} \end{array} \right\}$ | myself; | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{nói stéssi,} \\ \text{or medésimi, m.} \\ \textit{nói stésse,} \\ \text{or medésime, f.} \end{array} \right\}$ | ourselves; |
| 2d Per. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{tu stéssó, m.} \\ \textit{tu stéssa, f.} \end{array} \right\}$ | thyself; | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{vói stéssi, m.} \\ \textit{vói stésse, f.} \end{array} \right\}$ | yourselves; |
| 3d Per. | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{égli stéssó,} \\ \text{or éssó stéssó, m.} \\ \textit{élla stéssa,} \\ \text{or éssa stéssa, f.} \end{array} \right\}$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{himself,} \\ \text{or itself;} \\ \text{herself,} \\ \text{or itself;} \end{array} \right\}$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{églino stéssi,} \\ \text{or éssi stéssi, m.} \\ \textit{èlleno stésse,} \\ \text{or ésse stésse, f.} \end{array} \right\}$ | them-selves. |
| | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{sè stéssó, m.} \\ \textit{sè stéssa, f.} \end{array} \right\}$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{one's self,} \\ \text{himself,} \\ \text{herself,} \\ \text{or itself;} \end{array} \right\}$ | $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{sè stéssi, m.} \\ \textit{sè stésse, f.} \end{array} \right\}$ | |

EXAMPLES.

*Vid' io IN ÉSSA LÚCE áltre
lucérne. (Dant. Par. 8.)*

In that very light I saw
other luminaries.

*Quantúnque il maggióre a
diciott' ánni non aggiugnésse,
quándo ÉSSO MESSÉR TEDÁLDO,
riéchissimo vénne a mórtte.
(Bocc. g. 2, n. 3.)*

Although the eldest was not
arrived to the age of eighteen,
when this same Messer Tedal-
do died very rich.

*TU NON mi PAR DÉSSO.
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)*

Thou dost not seem to me
thyself.

*ELL' È BEN DÉSSA, ancóra è
in víta. (Petr. s. 290.)*

It is she herself, she is yet
alive.

*Che farébbe égli s'io moríssi,
io? (Macch. Com.)*

What would he do if I should
die?

*TU DI' TÚE PARÓLE, TU; io
per me non mi terrò mái sálva,
se nói non la incantiámo. (Bocc.
g. 7. n. 1.)*

Thou mayest say what thou
pleasest; as for me I shall
never consider myself safe, if
we do not enchant her.

*E/GLI È ÚNA-COMPASSIÓNE A
VEDÉRLO. (Macch. Com.)*

It excites pity to see him.

*E/LLA NON ANDRÀ COSÌ, ch' io
non te ne pághi. (Bocc. g. 9.
n. 5.)*

It shall not be so, that I will
not pay you for it.

*ANDIÁMO CON ÉSSO LÚI A
RÓMA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)*

Let us go to Rome with him.

*I' NON SO ben RIDÍR com' i'
v' entrái. (Dant. Inf. 1.)*

I cannot say how I entered
it.

*E/I DÉBBE AVÉRE INTÉSO,
che tu ragióni di lui. (Gell.
Circ. 2. 39.)*

He must have heard, that
thou speakest of him.

*OND' ÉI SI GITTÁR tútti IN
SÚLLA SPIÁGGIA. (Dant. Purg.
2.)*

Wherefore they leaped all
upon the shore.

*Laónde é' gli PENSÒ di volére
la seguénite mattína ristoráre.
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)*

Therefore he thought to
restore them on the following
morning.

*Menáti i gentiluómini nel
giardíno, corteseménite gli DO-
MANDÒ, CHI É' FÓSSERO. (Bocc.
g. 10. n. 9.)*

Having led the gentlemen
in the garden, he courteously
asked them, who they were.

*E in ségno di ciò, ne réco
MÉCO dèlle sùe cose più càre.
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)*

*Mio figlio ov' è, e perchè non
è TÉCO? (Dant. Inf. 10.)*

*Quél giòrno ch' io lasciài
gràve, e pensósa—Madónna, e' l
mio cor sÉCO. (Petr. s. 212.)*

*I'o MEDÉSIMO non so quél
ch' i' m' vóglío. (Petr. s. 103.)*

*E tu, TU STÉSSO, talóra a me
usbérgo di mia glória tu sémbrì.
(Alf. Saul. 2. 1.)*

*Ma com' è, che sì grán romór
non suóne—Per àltri mēssi, o
per LÉI STÉSSA il sēnta? (Petr.
s. 213.)*

Non cóme fiámma che per
fórza è spēnta,—Ma che per
SÈ MEDÉSMA si consúme. (Petr.
Tri.)*

And as a proof of this, I will
take with me those things
which are the most dear to her.

Where is my son, and why
is he not with thee?

That day when I left my
lady serious and pensive, and
my heart with her.

I know not myself what I
want.

And thou, thyself, sometimes
seemest to me the shield of my
glory.

But how is it, that so great a
rumor does not sound through
other messengers, or that she
does not hear it herself.

Not like a flame which is
extinguished by force, but like
one which consumes itself.

EXERCISE VIII.

I know, better than any other man, how to do
so, — àltro uómo, — far
that which I please. God never will have
ciò che vóglío. Iddío mái non avrà
mercy | on | me for this sin. Thou wilt ask
misericórdia | di | questo peccáto. dirái²
her whether she wants any thing. You appear
lel se vuól nùlla. paréte
to be a man of God, how do you say such
— uómo Dio, cóme — ² díte¹ cotésto
words? Without expecting any reprehension from
paróla? Sénza atténdere — riprensione
you. The magistrate begun to have pity
Podestà cominciò ad avér compassione³

upon her. She pleases me so much, that I
di¹ 2. piace² mi¹ tanto, che
 could not express it. Having taken leave of him,
potréi² non¹ dir lo. — Prêso commiato³ da¹ 2,
 he returned to his house. They never return
séne tornò — casa. mái non réndono²
 it, and we return it as soon as we have
la¹, e rendiámo² la¹ — cóme — abbiámo²
 used it. We are ready to do it, since
adoperáta³ la¹. siámo présti di fár lo, poichè
 it pleases you. She would drive me out of the
— piace² vi¹. scaccerbbe² mi¹ fuór —
 house. I have spoken to him of you. We
cása. ho² rhigionáto³ gli¹
 make better work. You promised to me to
facciámo lavoro. promettéste² mi¹ di
 let me speak with your wife. Be
fár mi parláre con la vóstra² donna¹. Státe
 joyful, you are in your house. Do not trust
lietaménte, siéte vóstra² cása¹. Non vi fidáte
 to them. They* had all gone to church.
di érano tütte andáte chiésa.

It is he, himself. She does not seem to
— E! — non sêmbra di
 be herself. Many years (they) have not passed.
esser móltro⁵ áнно⁶ 1 sóno³ non² passáti⁴.
 They went with him. Come with me. I have
— Andáron : Veníte non
 nothing to do with thee. We have seen them
ho niénte a far — abbiámo² vedúti³ Gli¹
 ourselves. She herself has brought them to me.
— 5 ha³ portáte⁴ le² Me¹.
 Thou hast said it thyself. They began to
— hdi² détto³ Lo¹ — cominciárono³ a⁴
 speak amongst themselves.
ragionáre⁵ Séco¹ 2.

* They, in the feminine gender.

Conjunctive Pronouns.

| | Singular. | | Plural. |
|----------|---|--|---|
| 1st Per. | <i>mi</i> , m. & f., { to me ; me ; } | | <i>ne</i> or <i>ci</i> , m. & f., { to us ; us ; } |
| 2d Per. | <i>ti</i> , m. & f., { to thee ; thee ; } | | <i>vi</i> , m. & f., { to you ; you ; } |
| 3d Per. | { <i>gli</i> or <i>li</i> ,* m., to him or it ; <i>il</i> or <i>lo</i> ,* m., him or it ; <i>le</i> ,* f., to her or it ; <i>la</i> ,* f., her or it ; } | | { <i>loro</i> , m., to them ; <i>gli</i> or <i>li</i> ,* m., them ; <i>loro</i> , f., to them ; <i>le</i> ,* f., them. } |

Singular and Plural.

| | | | |
|---------|--|--|---|
| 3d Per. | { <i>si</i> , m. & f., { to one's self, to himself, to herself, to itself or to themselves ; } | | { <i>si</i> , m. & f., { one's self, himself, herself, itself or themselves ; } |
| | { <i>ne</i> , m. & f., { of him or it, of her or it, of them ; } | | { <i>ne</i> , m. & f., { from him or it, from her or it, from them. } |

Mi, *ti*, *ne* or *ci*, *vi*, are applied to animate beings only ; the others may be applied both to animate and inanimate beings.

Conjunctive pronouns take the place of personal pronouns, when these pronouns are in the *objective* or *relation of attribution*, and are closely connected with a verb ; as,

MI pot ete t orre [for *pot ete t orre*
A ME],

you can take away from
me ;

non TI p ssono mu vere [for
non p ssono mu vere TE],

they cannot move thee ;

NE sar bbe gran bi simo [for
sar bbe A NOI gran bi simo],

it would be in us a great
fault ;

* The pronouns *il*, *lo*, *la*, *li*, *gli*, *le*, appear, in orthography, to be the same words as the articles *il*, *lo*, *la*, *li*, *gli*, *le*. The learner, however, will observe, that when the words *il*, *lo*, &c., are followed by a *noun*, a verb in the *infinitive* mood, or any other word used as a *noun*, they are always *articles* ; but when they are followed by a verb in a tense of the *indicative*, the *conjunctive*, or the *conditional* mood, or when they are joined to a verb, they are always *conjunctive* pronouns.

| | |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| <i>CI</i> ha guidàti [for <i>ha guidàti</i> NÒI], | it has guided us ; |
| <i>GLI</i> venne a memòria [for <i>ven-</i> <i>ne a memòria A LUI</i>], | there came into his mind ; |
| <i>LI</i> si era mostràto [for <i>si era</i> <i>mostràto A LUI</i>], | he had shown himself to him ; |
| <i>LI</i> condànni [for <i>condànni</i> LÓRO], | it should condemn them ; |
| <i>IL</i> chiamò [for <i>chiamò LUI</i>], | she called him ; |
| <i>LO</i> avésse fatto dolènte [for <i>avésse fatto LUI dolènte,</i>] | it had afflicted him ; |
| <i>LA</i> mandò [for <i>mandò LEI</i>], | he sent her ; |
| <i>LE</i> potésse tornàre [for <i>potésse</i> <i>tornàre A LEI</i>], | it might cause her ; |
| <i>LE</i> donerò [for <i>donerò LÓRO</i>], | I will give them ; |
| <i>era parùto LÓRO</i> [for <i>era pa-</i> <i>rùto A LÓRO</i>], | it had seemed to them ; |
| <i>SI</i> véde davànti [for <i>véde da-</i> <i>vànti A SÈ</i>], | he sees before him ; |
| <i>SI</i> lasciò cadére [for <i>lasciò ca-</i> <i>dére SÈ</i>], | she let herself fall ; |
| <i>mi piàce di parlàrNE</i> [for <i>pià-</i> <i>ce A me di parlàre DI ÉSSO</i>], | it pleases me to speak of it ; |
| <i>a quàn'i NE giacévano</i> [for <i>a</i> <i>quàn'ti DI LÓRO giacévano</i>], | from as many of them as were abed. |

If the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, li, lo, le, la, si, ne*, are followed by a verb beginning with a *vowel*, they commonly lose the *i* and take an apostrophe in its stead ; as,

| | |
|----------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>M' ha ròtto,</i> | he has bruised me ; |
| <i>c' immòlle,</i> | thou suckest us ; |
| <i>L' offendéva,</i> | he offended them ; |
| <i>N' avrémmo,</i> | we should have from him. |

When they are preceded by a verb they are joined to it so as to form one single word ; as,

| | |
|------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>donàrMI,</i> | to give me ; |
| <i>pàrvetI,</i> | it appeared to thee ; |
| <i>mandàrLO,</i> | to send him ; |

bisognándogli,
dicéndoli,

he being in want ;
telling him.

In using the pronouns *il, lo, li, gli, la, le*, we follow the rules already given with regard to the articles *il, lo, la*, ' the ' ; as,

IL consénti,
chi LO scrisse,
L' Amerò,
GLI aspettáva,

thou consentest to it ;
he who wrote it ;
I will love him ;
he expected them.

The pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, si, ne*, are often used as mere expletives ; as,

io MI sòno,
se tu TI hai posto mente,
s'èmpre che tu CI viverai,
ciò che voi VI dite,
SI uscì del palágio,
che NE fósse del buon
uòmo,

I am ;
whether thou hast minded ;
as long as thou livest ;
what you say ;
he went out the palace ;
what had become of the good
man.

EXAMPLES.

Voi MI POTÉTE TÓRRE quánto
téngo, e DONÁRMI, siccòme vòstro
uòmo a chi vi piáce. (Bocc. g.
3. n. 9.)

You can take away from me
all I have, and give me, like
one of your men, to whomso-
ever it pleases you.

S'égli PÁRVETI il fáullo mio
così gránde, che NON TI PÓSSONO
MUÓVERE a pietáte alcuna le
amàre lágrime, nè gli úmili
priéghi, muóvati alméno quésto
sólo mio átto. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

If my fault appeared to thee
so great, that neither my bitter
tears, nor my humble prayers,
can move thee to pity, at
least let this single act of mine
move thee.

Il MANDÁRLO fuóri di cása
nóstra così inférmo NE SARÉBBE
GRAN BIÁSIMO. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

To send him out of our house,
so infirm as he is, would be in
us a great fault.

Il vòstro sénno, più che il
nóstro avvediménto, CI HA GUI-
DÁTI. (Bocc. Intr.)

Your wisdom, more than our
foresight, has guided us.

BISOGNÁNDOLI úna buóna
quantità di danári, GLI VÉNNE
A MEMÓRIA un ricco Giudéo.
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

Being in want of a good sum
of money, there came into his
mind a rich Jew.

*Il següente di apparve per
visiõe Cristo a Ruberto, DICEN-
DOLI, che in fôrma di lebbroso
LI SI ERA MOSTRATO, volendo
provare la sua pietà. (Giov.
Vill. l. 4. c. 18.)*

*O LI CONDANNI a sempiterno
pianto. (Petr. s. 214.)*

*Assai volte invano IL CHIAMÒ.
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 6.)*

*Se d'una còsa sòla non LO
AVESSE la fortuna FATTO DO-
LENTE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)*

*Ad una lor possesiõe LA ne
MANDÒ. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 7.)*

*Cominciò a dubitare, non quel
suo guardar così fiso movesse
la sua rusticità ad alcuna còsa,
che vergogna LE POTÉSSE TOR-
NARE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)*

*S' elle vi piacciono, io LE VI
DONERÒ. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)*

*Nè ERA ancora LOR PARUTO
alcuna volta, tanto gaiamente
cantar gli usignuoli, quanto
quella mattina parèva. (Bocc.
g. 7. Proem.)*

*DAVANTI SI VÉDE due, che
verso lui con una lanterna in
mano venieno. (Bocc. g. 2. n.
5.)*

*E'ssa sopra il seno del Conte
SI LASCIÒ con la testa CADERE.
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)*

*E'gli MI PIACE DI PARLARNE.
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)*

*E'gli, pianamente andando,
A QUANTI NE GIACÉVANO, a tutti
in simil maniera tagliò i capelli.
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 2.)*

*M' HA con un bastone tutto
ROTTO. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)*

The following day, Christ
appeared in a vision to Robert,
saying to him, that he had
shown himself to him in the
form of a leper, to try his pity.

Or it should condemn them
to eternal woe.

She called him many times
in vain.

If fortune had not afflicted
him in one thing alone.

He sent her to a farm of
theirs.

She began to doubt, lest her
looking so fixedly should move
his uncouthness to do some-
thing, which might cause her
shame.

If you like them, I will give
them to you.

Nor had it ever seemed to
them, that the nightingales had
at any time sung so cheerfully,
as they appeared to do that
morning.

He sees before him two per-
sons, who came towards him
with a lantern in their hands.

She let her head fall on the
bosom of the Count.

It pleases me to speak of it.

He, walking softly, from as
many of them as were abed, cut
a tuft of hair in the same man-
ner.

He has bruised me all over
with a stick.

*E nell' etérna pói s'è mal
c'immólle.* (Dant. Inf. 12.)

And in the eternal [life]
thus miserably thou suckest us.

*Dicéndo che quéllo che donéa
diféndérle l'offendéva.* (Fav.
Esop. 67.)

Saying that he who ought to
have defended them, offended
them.

*Se égli sapésse lavorâr l'órto,
io mi crédo, che nôi n'avrémmo
buón servigio.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

If he knew how to cultivate
the garden, I believe that we
should have from him good
service.

Nè tu il consénti, Amóre.
(Tass. Ger. 2. 15.)

Nor thou dost consent to it,
O Love.

*Galeóttó fu il libro, e chi lo
scrísse.* (Dant. Inf. 5.)

The book, and he who wrote
it, were [to us] Galeotto.

*I'o ho amáto, ed ámo Guiscár-
do, e quánto viverò l'amerò.*
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

I have loved, and love Guis-
cardo, and will love him as
long as I live.

Gli aspettáva. (Bocc. g.
3. n. 7.)

He expected them.

*I'o mi s'óno un póvero pelle-
gríno.* (Bocc. Filoc. 1. 5.)

I am a poor pilgrim.

*I'o non so, se tu t'hái pósto
ménte, cóme nôi siámo tenúte
strétte.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

I know not, whether thou
hast minded, how close we are
kept.

*Con túo d'ánno ti ricorderái,
sémpré che tu ci viverái, del
nóme mio.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 4.)

To thy sorrow thou wilt re-
member my name, as long as
thou livest.

*Andáte, gocciólóni; vói non
sapéte ciò che vói vi díte.*
(Bocc. g. 6. n. 6.)

Go away, fools; you do not
know what you say.

*Del palágio s'uscì, e fug-
gíssi a casa.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

He went out the palace,
and fled to his house.

*La dóнна se ne vénne, e del
buón úomo domandò, che ne
fósse.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

The woman came, and asked
what had become of the good
man.

When the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *gli*, *ne* or *ci*, *vi*, *si*, are immediately followed by the pronouns *lo*, *la*, *gli*, *li*, *le*, *ne*, they are generally united and form a single word; as,

mi lo, MÉLO, him or it to me; *ci li*, CÉLI, them to us;
ti la, TÉLA, her or it to thee; *vi gli*, VÉGLI, them to you.

*Union of the Pronouns MI, TI, GLI, NE or CÍ, VI, SI,
with the Pronouns LO, LA, GLI, LI, NE.*

MI, to me ;

| | | |
|--|--|--|
| <i>mi lo,</i> | (inviáte) MÉLO,* | (send) him or it to me ; |
| <i>mi la,</i> | (mostráte) MÉLA, | (show) her or it to me ; |
| <i>mi gli, mi li, mi le,</i> } | (prestáte) { MÉGLI, MÉLI, MÉLE, } | (lend) them to me ; |
| <i>mi ne,</i> | (dáte) MÉNE, | { (give) to me of it, or to me of them ; some of it, [or some of them. |

TI, to thee ;

| | | |
|--|--|--|
| <i>ti lo,</i> | TÉLO* (invío), | (I send) him or it to thee ; |
| <i>ti la,</i> | TÉLA (móstro), | (I show) her or it to thee ; |
| <i>ti gli, ti li, ti le,</i> } | TÉGLI TÉLI TÉLE } (présto), | (I lend) them to thee ; |
| <i>ti ne,</i> | TÉNE (do), | { (I give) to thee of it, or to [thee of them ; &c. |

GLI, to him or her ;

| | | |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------------|---|
| <i>gli lo,</i> | GLIÉLO (invía), | { (he sends) him or it to him [or her ; |
| <i>gli la,</i> | GLIÉLA (móstra), | { (he shows) him or it to him [or her ; |
| <i>gli li, gli le,</i> } | GLIÉLI GLIÉLE } (présta), | { (he lends) them to him or [her ; |
| <i>gli ne,</i> | { GLIÉNE —LÉNE } (dà), | { (he gives) to him or her of it, or to him or her of them ; —to her of it, or to her of [them ; &c. |

* Some writers use these pronouns, with exception of *gliélo*, &c., separate ;—
ME LO SE LO, NE LO or CE LO, &c.

NE or CI, to us ;

| | | | |
|--|--------------|---|--------------------------|
| <i>ne lo,</i> <i>or ci lo,</i> } | (inviáte) | { NÉLO or CÉLO, } | (send) him or it to us ; |
| <i>ne la,</i> <i>or ci la,</i> } | (mostráte) | { NÉLA, or CÉLA, } | (show) her or it to us ; |
| <i>ne gli,</i> <i>or ci gli,</i> <i>ne li,</i> <i>or ci li,</i> <i>ne le</i> <i>or ci le,</i> } | (prestáte) | { NÉGLI, or CÉGLI, NÉLI, or CÉLI, NÉLE, or CÉLE, } | (lend) them to us ; |
| <i>ci ne,</i> | (dáte) CÉNE, | { (give) to us of it, or to us [of them ; &c. | |

VI, to you ;

| | | |
|--|---------------------------|---|
| <i>vi lo,</i> | VÉLO (inviámo), | (we send) him or it to you ; |
| <i>vi la,</i> | VÉLA (mostriámo), | (we show) her or it to you ; |
| <i>vi gli,</i> <i>vi li,</i> <i>vi le,</i> | { VÉGLI VÉLI VÉLE } | { (prestíámo), (we lend) them to you ; |
| <i>vi ne,</i> | VÉNE (diámo), | { (we give) to you of it, or [to you of them ; &c. |

SI, to one's self ;

| | | |
|--|---------------------------|--|
| <i>si lo,</i> | SÉLO (inviano), | { (they send) him or it to [themselves ; |
| <i>si la,</i> | SÉLA (móstrano), | { (they show) her or it to [themselves ; |
| <i>si gli,</i> <i>si li,</i> <i>si le,</i> | { SÉGLI SÉLI SÉLE } | { (préstano), (they lend) them to them- [selves ; |
| <i>si ne,</i> | SÉNE (dánno), | { (they give) to themselves of it, or to themselves of [them ; &c. |

Mélo, télo, gliélo, nélo or célo, vélo, sélo, &c., before a verb beginning with a *consonant*, except *z*, and *s* followed by another *consonant*, often drop the *o* ;

and before a verb beginning with a *vowel*, drop the *o* and take an apostrophe in its stead ; as,

MEL *Disse*,
TEL *Trarrò*,
non GLIÉL *celái*,
GLIÉL' *Apérsi*,
CEL' *Avéte fátta*,
SEN' *Entrò*,

he told it to me ;
I will draw it for you ;
I did not conceal it from him ;
I revealed it to him ;
you have deceived us ;
she entered.

When the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, *gli*, *le*, &c., are preceded by the adverb *écco*, 'behold', they form with this a single word ; as,

éccomi,
éccoci,
éccole,

behold me ;
behold us ;
behold them.

When the pronoun *lo* is preceded by the adverb *non*, 'no, not', it is, more elegantly, changed into *il* and joined with the adverb in a single word ; as,

non il, *NOL véde*,
non il, *NOL négo*,

she does not see him ;
I do not deny it.

EXAMPLES.

Tu di' di fármelo vedére né' vívi. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 4.)

Thou sayest, that thou wilt make me see it amongst the living.

MEL *Dísse il pádre mio, ch'io mi guardássi — Di por già mái nélla Messénia il piéde.* (Maff. Mer. 3. 4.)

My father told me, that I should take care never to set my foot in Messenia.

Per vedér fáre il tómo a qué' maccheróni, e tórmene úna satólla. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

To see those \ maccheroni falling down, and give myself a bellyful.

Sénza alcún maéstro io TEL TRARRÒ ottimaménte. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)

Without any master, I will draw it for you very well.

Po non méne maraviglio, nè TÉNE so ripigliáre. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

I do not wonder at it, nor do I know how to reprove you for it.

No ch'era d'ubbidir disideroso
—NON GLIÉL CELÁI ma tutto
GLIÉL' APÉRSI. (Dant. Inf.
10.)

Gli amici nòi abbiámo quáli
CÉGLI eleggiámo. (Bocc. g.
10. n. 8.)

La donna udéndo quésto, e
dopo molte riconfermazióni
fátteLENE dal Zéppa, credéndolo,
dísse. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.)

Vedéndo l'uómo la semplicità
del fanciúllo GLIÉNE vénne
pietà. (Matt. Vill. 10. 30.)

Vói CEL' AVÉTE FÁTTA.
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

Quánte CÉNE vedéte vói, le
óui bellézze sién fátte cóme le
míe? (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

Cóme quésto avvenúto mi sia,
brieveménte VEL farò chiáro.
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 4.)

Mi piáce di fárvENE più
chiáre con úna piccola novellétta.
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

In procésso di témpo SE LE
riprése. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 3.)

SEN' ENTRÒ nélla casa del
póver uómo. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

Lo scoláre, accostátosi all'ú-
scio, dísse: "E'CCOMI quì, ma-
dónna." (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

E'CCOLE, che élla medésima
piangéndo mel' ha riportáte.
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

E'lla o lo sprézza, o NOL VÉDE,
o non s'avvéde. (Tass. Ger. 2.
16.)

Po NOL pósso negár, e NOL
NÉGO. (Petr. s. 202.)

I, who was desirous of obey-
ing, did not conceal it, but re-
vealed to him all.

We have such friends as we
choose them for us.

The lady hearing this, and
after many confirmations of it
made to her by Zeppa, believ-
ing it, said.

The man seeing the sim-
plicity of the boy, took pity up-
on him.

You have deceived us.

How many of them do you
see, whose beauties are such
as mine?

How this happened to me,
I will explain to you briefly.

It pleases me to make you
more conscious of it, with a
small tale.

In the progress of time he
took them back.

She entered in the house of
the poor man.

The scholar, coming to the
door, said: "Behold me here,
madam."

Behold them, which she her-
self weeping has brought back
to me.

She either despises him, or
does not see him, or does not
understand.

I cannot deny it, and do not
deny it.

EXERCISE IX.

But what wishest thou that I should say to her
Ma che vuoi che dica² I
 | for you, | if it happens that I should speak
da tua parte, | se avviene che favelli²
 to her? They will rob us, and perhaps will take
I ? — ruberanno² ¹, e³ forse⁴ torranno⁶
 (to us) even | our | life. I will lodge you
⁵ anche | la | vita. albergherò² ¹
 willingly, as I can. The youth told him every
volentieri, come potrò. giovanetto disse² ¹ ogni
 thing. I will pardon him willingly, and pardon
cósa. — perdonerò³ ² Volentieri¹, e⁴ perdonò⁷
 him now. He gave to him | his | benediction,
⁶ óra⁵. — Diéde — | la sua | benedizíone,
 holding him for a very holy man. How | does
tenéndo — santo uomo. Che |
 it appear | to thee? Have I well kept | my |
páre² | ¹ ? ho² ³ ben⁴ serbata⁵ | la⁶ |
 promise to you? My brother writes to me, that
proméssa⁷ ¹ ? mio³ fratello⁴ Scrive¹ — ², che
 without any fail, I | should send | to him one thousand
sénza alcun fallo, | abbia mandati² | ¹ —
 gold florins; | otherwise | | his | head will be cut off
d'óro² fiorino¹; | se non³ | | la⁷ tēsta⁸ sarà⁵ tagliata⁶
 (to him.) I have not deceived you | to | deprive
⁴ ho³ non¹ ingannata⁴ ² | per | tor —
 you of | your property. | Certainly although thou
— | il vostro. Certo quantunque
 affirmest it, I | do not believe | that thou believest
afférmi² ¹, ³ | non crédo⁴ | che⁵ ⁶ créda⁸
 it. Having turned himself to | his | wife, he
⁷ — Vólto — | la | móglie, —
 asked her if she had had them. If thou | dost
domandò² ¹ se³ — avésse⁶ avuti⁴ ⁵. Se | non
 not do it, | thou wilt repent thyself of it so many
fai² lo¹, | ³ pentrai⁶ ⁴ — ⁵ tanta
 times, that thou | wilt die | of it.
vólta, che | vorràí morire² | ¹.

He granted it to him freely. I want to go
 — *concedette*³ ² *Liberamente*¹. — *Voglio andare*
 | and | tell him, that he | should go away. | Leave
 | *a* | *dir* ¹, *che* | *séne vada*. | *Lascia*
 me, I beg it of thee (thee of it). That which he
 , *prégo*² — — — ¹ *Quello che*
 afterwards said to me, I do not dare to tell it to
*pòi disse*² ¹, *non oso dir*
 you, if first you do not pardon me. The song
 , *se prima* — *non perdonate*² ¹. ² *canzone*³
 being finished, the master said: "What dost thou think
 — *Finita*¹, *maestro disse*: "*Che* — — —
 of it (does it appear to thee of it)?" You did not
 — — — *páre*² ¹?" *non*
 believe it, when I told it to you. Having kept
*credevate*² ¹, *quando*³ *dissi*⁵ ⁴. *Avendo* *serbati*²
 them full a year | to | return them to him, I gave
*gli*¹ *ben*³ ⁴ *anno*⁵ | *per*⁶ | *rènder*⁷ ⁹ ⁸, ¹⁰ *dièdi*¹²
 them away for the love of God. Behold me; what
¹¹ — *amór* *Dio*. ; *che*
 | do you want | of | me? Behold one (of them),
voléte | *da* | [?] ¹ *una*³ ²
 behold another of them.
¹ *un'altra*³ ².

RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

Relative Pronouns.

Singular and Plural.

Chi, m. & f. who, he or she that, they that;

che, m. & f. } who, which, that;
cui, m. & f. }

Singular.

Plural.

quále, m. & f. who, which, *quáli*, m. & f.

Chi refers to persons only; *che*, *cui*, *quále*, both to persons and things.

Che is chiefly used in the *subjective*, and *cui* in all other relations, but the *subjective*; *chi*, *quále*, are used in all their relations; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| CHI offénde, ódia, | he that offends, hates; |
| A CHI non si mette navi- gándo, | to him who does not set him- self navigating; |
| quella, CHE io cerco, | she, whom I seek; |
| gli ócchi DI CHE io parlái, | the eyes of which I spoke; |
| A CUI si ammógia, | to which she unites herself; |
| D CUI fosse l'ingiúria ri- cevúta, | from whom the offence was received; |
| IL QUÁLE éra piactévole gióvane, | who was an agreeable young man; |
| préssó ÁLLA QUÁLE sia ri- pósto un dilettevole piáno, | near which should be situated a delightful plain; |
| uno D É' QUÁLI éra chiamá- to Panfílo, | one of whom was called Pam- philus; |
| i nómi D ELLE QUÁLI rac- conteréi, | whose names I would relate. |

Cui is generally used instead of *chi*, *che*, *quále*; as,

| | |
|---|------------------------------|
| non guardándo CUI [or CHI] motteggiaásse, | not minding whom she jeered; |
| coléi, CUI [or CHE] égli amá- va, | she, whom he loved; |
| colúí, CUI [or IL QUÁLE] io uccisi, | he, whom I killed. |

Che is sometimes used instead of *quále*; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| un cavalíer, CHE [or IL QUÁ- LE] Itália onóra, | a knight, whom Italy honors; |
| la miséria in CHE [or NÉL- LA QUÁLE] éra venúta, | the misfortune into which she had fallen: |

Sometimes it is used with the article *il*, in the signifi-
cation of *la quál cosa*, 'which thing'; as,

| | |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| IL CHE [or LA QUÁL CÓSA] dispiacque loro, | which thing displeased them; |
| DEL CHE avvedútosí, | which thing he having ob- served. |

Sometimes it is used in the signification of *cósa*, 'thing'; *che cósa*, 'what thing'; as,

| | |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| <i>un bel</i> CHE [or <i>una bella</i> <i>cósa</i>], | a fine thing; |
| <i>senza saper</i> CHE [or CHE <i>cósa</i>] <i>speráre</i> , | without knowing what thing to hope: |

And sometimes it is equivalent to the English pronoun 'what' only; as,

| | |
|------------------------------|----------------------------|
| CHE <i>dolóre io sento</i> , | what pain I feel; |
| CHE <i>ciáncie tu di</i> , | what stories thou tellest. |

Che before a vowel drops the *e*, and takes an apostrophe in its stead; as,

| | |
|---------------------------|-------------------|
| CH' <i>égli è usáto</i> , | which is wont; |
| di CH' <i>io parlái</i> , | of which I spoke. |

Quále is sometimes used instead of *chi*; as,

| | |
|--|------------------------------|
| <i>fólle è</i> QUÁLE [or CHI] <i>créde</i> , | foolish is he who believes; |
| QUÁLE [or CHI] <i>più possiède</i> , | he who [possesses] has more: |

And sometimes it is equivalent to the English pronoun 'what'; as,

| | |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------|
| QUÁLE <i>fósse la cagíone</i> , | what the cause was; |
| QUÁLE <i>fósse l' ánimó di léi</i> , | what her mind was. |

Quále, unless followed by *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant, in the singular drops the *e*; and in the plural makes *quái*, and *quá'*, as,

| | |
|----------------------------|-------------------|
| QUÁL <i>amore</i> , | what love; |
| la QUÁL <i>cósa</i> , | which thing; |
| i QUÁI <i>vizj</i> , | which vices; |
| álle QUÁ' <i>léttere</i> , | to which letters. |

To avoid the ambiguity, which would arise in Italian, from the inversion of the different words of a sen-

tence, when the pronouns *che*, *quále*, refer to the *object* of the proposition, they are changed for the pronoun *cúi*. Thus the phrase, 'the city which the wood conceals', if 'city' is the *subject* of the proposition, is rendered *la città CHE* or *la QUA'LE il bósco ascónde*, 'the city which conceals the wood'; but if 'city' is the *object* of the proposition, then it is rendered *la città cúi il bósco ascónde*, 'the city which the wood conceals';

as,

l'uómo CHE Dio non téme,

the man who does not fear
God;

P'uómo cúi sónno piglia,

a man who is seized by sleep.

Instead of *di cúi*, *del* or *délla quále*, *déi* or *délle quáli*; *da cúi*, *dál quále*; *con cúi*, *col quále*; *per cúi*, *per lo quále*, &c., we often find used the adverb *ónde*, which then assumes the nature of a relative pronoun; as,

*quéi sospiri óNDE [or DI
CÚI] lo nudriva il cuore,*

those sighs with which I
nourished my heart;

*nélla prigióne óNDE [or
DÁLLA QUÁLE] è sciólta,*

in the prison from which she
is released;

*ógni láccio óNDE [or COL
QUÁLE] il mio córe è
avvinto,*

every tie with which my
heart is bound;

*quéllo uscíuolo óNDE [or
PER LO QUÁLE] éra en-
tráto,*

that little door through which
he had entered.

Before a vowel, *onde* drops the *e*, and takes an apostrophe instead of it; as,

OND' io,

of which I;

OND' éra,

through which he [was] had.

Chi, *che*, *cúi*, are varied with the *prepositions only*; *quále* is varied both with the *prepositions* and the *article il* or *la*, 'the', according to the gender of the object it refers to.

The prepositions *di*, *a*, are often elegantly suppressed before *cui*; as,

in casa [di] cui tra morto,

in whose house he had died ;

*voi [a] cui fortuna ha posto
in mano il freno,*

you, into whose hands fortune
has put the reins.

EXAMPLES.

*CHI OFFÉNDE, ÓDIA, e non
diméntica. (Dav. Vit. Agr.)*

He that offends, hates, and
does not forget.

*Quél piacére, CH' ÉGLI È
USATO di dâre A CHI tróppo NON
SI MÉTTE nê suói pélaghi NA-
vigándo. (Bocc. Proem.)*

That pleasure, which it is
wont to give to him who does
not set himself navigating
too much through its seas.

*QUÉLLA, CH'ÍO CÉRCO e non
ritróvo in térra. (Petr. s. 34.)*

She whom I seek, and do
not find on earth.

*GLI ÓCCHI DI CH'ÍO PARLÁI
sì caldaménte. (Petr. s. 251.)*

The eyes of which I spoke so
warmly.

*Mólti son gli animáli A CUI
SI ANNÓGLIA. (Dant. Inf. 1.)*

Many are the animals to
which she unites herself.

*Nélla ménte ritorndndosi chi
égli éra, e quál FÓSSE L'INGIÚ-
RIA RICEVUTA, e perchê, e DA
CUI. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)*

Revolving in his mind, who
he was, and what the offence
received was, and why, and
from whom received.

*Dionéo, IL QUÁLE, óltre ad
ogni áltro, ÉRA PIACÉVOL GIÓ-
VANE. (Bocc. Introd.)*

Dionéo, who was agreeable
beyond every other young
man.

*Una montágnâ áspra ed értâ,
PRÉSSO ÁLLA QUÁLE UN BEL-
LISSIMO piáno e dilettevole sia
ripósto. (Bocc. Introd.)*

A mountain rough and steep,
near which is situated a very
beautiful and delightful plain.

*DÉ' QUÁLI ÚNO ÉRA chia-
máto PAMFÍLO. (Bocc. Introd.)*

One of whom was called
Pamphilus.

*Sétte giovani dónne, I NÓMI
DÉLLE QUÁLI ÍO in própria fór-
ma racconteréi. (Bocc. Introd.)*

Seven young women, whose
names I would relate in their
true form.

*NON GUARDÁNDO CUI MOT-
TEGGIÁSSE, credéndo vincere fu
vinta. (Bocc. g. I. n. 10.)*

Not minding whom she
jeered, believing to conquer
she was conquered.

*COLÉI maritándo, CUI EGLI
AMÁVA. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)*

Marrying her, whom he
loved.

COLÚI, CÚI ÍO UCCÍSI.
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

He, whom I killed.

SÓPRA IL MÓNTE TARPÉO, CAN-
ZÉN, VEDRÁI—UN CAVALIÉR, CH'
ITÁLIA TUTTA ONÓRA. (Petr. c.
6.)

On the Tarpeian mountain,
O Song, thou wilt see a knight,
whom all Italy honors.

DIÁNA, CHE CONOSCÉRA LA MI-
SÉRIA IN CHE BIANCAFIÓRE ÉRA
VENÚTA, TEMPERÒ LE SUE ÍRE CON
GIÚSTO FRÉNO. (Bocc. Filoc. l.
4.)

Diana, who knew the mis-
fortune into which Biancafiore
had fallen, moderated her anger
with a proper restraint.

AVÉVAN SENTÍTO PERCHÈ PRÉSA
LA NINETTA FÓSSE; IL CHE FÓRTE
DISPIÁCQUE LÓRO. (Bocc. g. 4.
n. 3.)

They had heard why Ninetta
had been taken; which thing
displeased them much.

DEL CHE AVVEDÚTOSI MAR-
CELLO, DISSE. (Dav. Stor. l. 4.)

Which thing Marcellus hav-
ing observed, said.

MÍ PARÉVA UN BEL CHE L'ÉS-
SERNE FUÓRA. (Bern. rim. l. 74.)

It appeared to me a fine thing
to be out of it.

LA GIOVANE PRÉSE BUÓNO AUGÚ-
RIO D' AVÉR QUÉSTO NÓME UDÍTO,
E COMINCÌÒ A SPERÁR SÉNZA
SAPÉR CHE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

The girl took it as a good
omen, to have heard this name,
and began to hope, without
knowing what [thing] to hope.

DÍO IL SA, CHE DOLÓRE ÍO
SÉNTO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

God knows [it] what pain I
feel.

PO NON SO CHE ANDREÚCCIO, NÈ
CHE CIÁNCE SON QUELLE, CHE TU
DÍ. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

I know not what Andreuccio,
or what stories these are which
thou tellest.

FÓLLE È QUÁL CRÉDE, CHE
PER SUÓI CONSIGLI MUÓVER PÉSSA
L'ÓRDINE DEL CIÉLO. (Dittam.)

Foolish is he who believes,
that he can change the decrees
of heaven by his deliberations.

QUÁL PIÙ GÉNTE POSSIÉDE—
COLÚI È PIÙ DA' SUÓI NEMÍCI AV-
RÓLTO. (Petr. c. 29.)

He who has more subjects,
is surrounded by more enemies.

LAÓNDE FÁTTO CHIAMÁRE IL
SINISCÁLCO, E DOMANDÁTO QUÁL
FÓSSE DEL ROMÓRE LA CAGIÓNE.
(Bocc. g. 6. Proem.)

Having, therefore, caused the
senechal to be called, and hav-
ing asked what the cause of the
noise was.

LA DÓNNA, CONOSCÉNDÓ QUÁL
FÓSSE L'ÁNIMO DI LÉI, LASCIÒ
STÁRE LE PARÓLE. (Bocc. g. 2. n.
8.)

The woman, knowing what
her mind was, abandoned the
conversation.

QUÁL AMÓRE AVREBBE I SOSPIRÍ
DI TÍTO FÁTTI A GISÍPPO NEL CUÓR
SENTÍRE, SE NON COSTÉI? (Bocc.
g. 10. n. 8.)

What love could the sighs
of Titus, have caused Gisippus
to feel in his heart, if not that of
her.

LA QUÁL CÔSA *veggêndô Andreuccio*. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

Which thing Andreuccio seeing.

I QUÁI VÍZJ *procêdono da quêsta velenôsa radice*. (Amm. Ant. 317.)

Which vices proceed from this venomous root.

A' LLE QUÁ' LÊTTERE *io mi rimétto*. (Casa. lett. 18.)

To which letters I refer.

Che *attênde ciascûn uôm che Dio non téme*. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Which waits for every man who does not fear God.

E *caddi côme l' uôm cûi sônno piglia*. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

And I dropped down, like a man who is seized by sleep.

Vói che *ascoltâte in rîme spârse il suôno—Di quêi sospîriond' io nudrîva il cuôre*. (Petr. s. 1.)

You who hear in scattered rhymes the sound of those sighs with which I nourished my heart.

NÉLLA BÉLLA PRIGIÓNÈ OND' *ôra è sciôlta—Pôco éra stâta ancôr l' âlma gentîle*. (Petr. c. 44.)

The gentle soul had been but a short time in the beautiful prison from which she is now released.

I *âggio in ôdio la spéme, e i delîri—Ed ôgni lâccio ônde'l mío côr è avvînto*. (Petr. s. 75.)

I hold in hatred the hope, the ravings, and every tie with which my heart is bound.

PER QUÉLLO USCIUÔLO, OND' *éra énttrato, il mise fuôri*. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

She put him out of that little door through which he had entered.

Il *buôn uôm, in câsa cûi mórto éra, disse*. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 8.)

The good man, in whose house he had died, said.

VÓI, CÛI FORTÚNA HA PÔSTO *in mâno il frêno—Dêlle bête contrâde*. (Petr. c. 29.)

You, into whose hands fortune has put the reins of the beautiful countries.

EXERCISE X.

| | | | | |
|---------------------------------------|--|--------------------|--|--|
| He determined | | to find | | who had done this. |
| — | | <i>Pensô</i> | | <i>di volêr trovâre</i> |
| | | | | <i>avêsse² fâtto³ quêsto¹</i> . |
| This wretched little man who is here, | | I saw there | | |
| <i>Quêsto cattîvo</i> | | — | | <i>è² quî¹, 5 vîdî⁴ l'ê³</i> |
| (that | | was) sleeping, | | whilst |
| | | <i>si dormiva,</i> | | <i>mêntre</i> |
| | | | | I was dividing |
| | | | | <i>dividêva³</i> |
| | | | | the |
| | | | | 1 |

things stolen with him whom afterwards I killed. Render
*furto*² *colui* ——— *uccisi*. *Rendi*
 me at least the clothes | (of mine) | (the) which I have
almeno *panno* | *miei* | *ho*²
 left there. (The) Fiammèta, whose hair* was curly,
*lasciati*¹ *vi*², , *capello erano crespo*,
 long, and of the color of gold. This is the ring,
lungo, e — — — *oro*. *Questo è anello*,
 which she already carried | to | France the first
*già*² *portò*¹ | *in* | *Francia* *primo*
 time that she made that journey | with her |
volta that — *fèce* *quel cammino* | *col* |
 brother. Neither I, nor the one from whom I
fratello. ——— , *nè colui*
 received her, | ever knew | whose daughter | she
*ebbi*² *her*¹ | *non sapemmo mai*³ | *figliuola*⁶ | *si*
 was. | She, who knew well, that which she had
*fosse*³ | , *sapèva bene*, *ciò* — *avèva*³
 to do. Having turned herself to Pamphilus, who
*a fare*². ——— *Rivolta* ——— *Panfìlo*,
 sat *sedeva*⁴ | at | her right, pleasantly said to him. The
*dalla*¹ | *sua*² *déstra*,³ *piacevolmente*⁵ *disse*⁷ *è*⁶ *3*
 first (of whom), to whom the queen gave | such a |
*primo*⁴ *1* *2* *3* *6* *7* *regina*⁹ *impòse*¹¹ | *tal*⁹ |
 charge, was Philostratus, who began in this way.
*carico*¹⁰, *fu Filòstrato*, — *cominciò questo maniera*.
 Are you that woman, who must come to speak
Siète *quello donna*, *dovete*² *venire*³ *a*⁴ *parlare*⁵
 to him? The young man is the son of Landolphus
¹? *giovane* *è* — *figliuolo Landolfo*
 of Prócida, by (the) whose means thou art a king;
 , *per* *2* *opera*¹ *sé*¹ — *re*;
 the young woman is the daughter of Marin Bùlgaro,
giovane *è* — *figliuola*
 (the) whose power causes that thou art not now | sent
potènza *fa* *2* *3* *sia*⁵ *non*⁴ *oggi*¹ | *scac*
 away | from | I'schia.
*città*⁶ | *di* |

* Hair. in the plural number.

The woman, hearing him speak whom she held
donna, udendo costui parlare tenéva
 for a dumb man, | was quite amazed. | | She went
 — *mùtolo* —, | *tutta stordì.* | | *sen' uscì⁹*
 out | of the church, by that way through which he had
 — *chiésa,¹⁰ Per¹ quéllo² via³* ⁴ ⁵ — *erá⁹*
 come. Now, | determine | without any other delay,
venuto.⁷ Or, ti consiglia | senza áltro indugio,
 and | take | that man whom you wish most. To
e | ti piglia⁴ | — — ¹ — vuó³ più.²
 (the) which, I could not resist, for any thing in
 — *potréi⁷ non⁶ resistere,⁹* ¹ — *cósa²*
 the world. By the hundred steps by which
³ *móndo.⁴ Per* *scaglione per*
 | one ascends | to the Tarpeian rock. | At | (the)
si sále | Tarpéo —. | Di |
 which thing, all the others frightened began to
cósa, tutto áltro spaventati cominciárono³ a¹
 flee. He saw the lady, who loves my brother.
fuggire.³ vide donna, áma mio fratello.
 Behold the young man, whom his daughter loves.
E'cco giòvane, sua² figlia³ áma.¹

Interrogative Pronouns.

The relative pronouns *chi*, *che*, and *quále* or *quáli*, when used to ask a question, become *interrogative* pronouns.

Chi always denotes a person : *che* denotes things, or the quality of persons and things : *quále* or *quáli* denotes both persons and things, or the qualities of persons and things ; as,

CHI siéte voi?

CHI è QUESTI?

CHE [cósa] hái?

CHE uómo è?

CHE ORAZIONE?

Who are you?

Who is this one?

What ails thee?

What man is he?

What prayer?

QUÁL DIÁVOLO?

What demon?

QUÁL PAÚRA?

What fear?

QUÁLI LÈGGI?

What conditions?

Although both *che* and *quále* denote things or the qualities of persons and things, it is nevertheless to be observed, that, when we inquire of an object without reference to its intrinsic merit, *quále* is generally used; but if our inquiry refers to the intrinsic merit of the object, we use *che* in preference; as,

QUÁL fu la cagione?

What was the cause?

QUÁL dūce fīa dēgno?

What leader would be worthy?

CHE gēnte ē?

What [kind of] people are they?

CHE peccāti hāi fātto?

What [kind of] sins hast thou committed?

Cui is often used as an interrogative pronoun, instead of *chi*; as,

Con cūi [or con chi] sēi
stāto?

With whom hast thou been?

The pronouns *che*, and *quále* or *quáli*, are used also in *exclamations*; as,

CHE vedūta amāra!

What a sad sight!

QUÁL pōlvēre!

What dust!

QUÁI martiri!

What torments!

Interrogative pronouns are varied with the *prepositions* only.

EXAMPLES.

De' quāi nē io, nē 'l duca mīo
s'accōrse—Se non quādo gri-
dār: "CHI SIETE VOI?" (Dant.
Inf. 25.)

Of whom neither I nor my
leader was aware until they
exclaimed: "Who are you?"

CHI È QUÉSTI che così starnu-
tisce? (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

Who is this that sneezes
thus?

CHE HAI TU, Bocca? (Dant.
Inf. 32.)

What ails thee, Bocca?

CHE UOMO È costui? (Bocc.
g. 1. n. 1.)

What man is this?

*E vói CHE ORAZIÓNE usáte
di dire, camminándo?* (Bocc.)

And what prayer are you
wont to say, when you travel?

QUÁL DIÁVOL ti tócca? (Dant.)

What demon touches thee?

*QUÁLI LÉGGI? quáli minacce?
QUÁL PAÚRA?* (Bocc. g. 10.
n. 8.)

What conditions? what
threats? what fear?

*Ma dítemi, QUÁL FU LA CA-
GIÓNE per la quále vói con lui vi
turbáste?* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

But tell me, what was the
cause that you were displeased
with him?

*QUÁL DÚCE FÍA DÉGNO di
lóro?* (Tass. Ger. I. 52.)

What leader will be worthy
of them?

*CHE GÉNTE È, che par nel
duél sì vinta?* (Dant. Inf. 3.)

What people are these, who
seem so overcome with woe?

CHE PECCÁTI HÁI tu FÁTTO?
(Bocc.)

What sins hast thou com-
mitted?

*CON CÚI ti CRÉDI tu ÉSSERE
státo?* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

With whom dost thou think
to have been?

*Ah! CHE VEDÚTA AMÁRA e
irista!* (Tass. Ger. 19. 105.)

Ah! what a bitter and sad
sight!

*QUÁL per l'ária stésa—PÓL-
VERE i' véggio!* (Tass. Ger.
3. 10.)

What dust do I see spread
through the air!

QUÁI MARTÍRI! (Crusca.)

What torments!

*E se non piàngi, DI che pián-
ger sudli?* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

And if at this, thou dost not
weep, at what art thou accus-
tomed to weep!

EXERCISE XI.

| | | | |
|---|--|--|-------------------|
| Who knocks picchia | below? laggiù? | What fear have you? paúra avéte | Who ? |
| chastised you castigò ² vi ¹ | thus? così? | What do we do? — ² facciámo ¹ ? | What do — |
| we wait for? — attendiámo? | What do we dream of? — sogniámo? | What sleep, sónno, | |
| or what lethargy has o letárgo ha | lulled thus sopito ² così ¹ | thy la tua | virtue? virtù? |
| chains, what prison, caténa, | what crosses cárcere, | would be sufficient? cróce ci basterébbero? | |

Who does not know that without money* (the) idleness
 — non sa senza denaro poltroneria

cannot subsist? "Woman, what dost thou do?" to
 non può durare? "Donna, — tu² fai?"

whom the woman replied: "Dost thou not see it?"
 donna rispose: " — tu⁴ Non¹ vedi³ lo²?"

What is this secret? And what is this supposition?
 è cotesto segreto? E è questa supposizione?

What thing is that which you have made me eat?
 cosa è questo — avete² fatto³ mangiàre¹

"Sir, | I must | ask | your | pardon | for |
 "Signóre, | a me conviène | domandàr | vi | perdóno | di |

a great fault." The master said: "And | for | what?"
 gran fallo." ² maestro³ Disse:¹ "E | di | ?"

What | wilt thou pay | me | for? | What couldst
² | pagherai tu⁴ | ³ | Di¹ | potresti²

thou do me? If thou doest so, what | shall we
 — fare³ ¹? Se fai così, ² | vivem

live | on? | Alas! and in what manner? The admiral
 noi³ | di¹? Oimè! e módo? ⁴ ammiraglio⁵

asked him then, what thing had brought him to
 Domandó¹ — ² allora³, ⁶ cosa⁷ avésse⁹ condotto¹⁰ him⁸ ¹¹

that. Dost thou know who those are, (the) whom
 quéllo.¹² — ² Conosci¹ color siéno,

thou wishest (that) | should be burnt? | The king replied | in
 vuoi | s'ardano? | re rispose | di

the negative. | What sins hast thou committed, that thou
 nó. | peccato hai fatto, —

wishest to confess thyself. | In | what have these
 vuoi² confessare³ ti¹. | Di | hanno² questo⁴

two young men offended thee? But what? they are
⁵ giovanc⁶ offeso³ ¹? Ma ² — son

human faults, and usual faults.
 umana² colpa,¹ e usata² colpa.¹

Oh, what a bitter sight! What glorious triumphs!
 O, — amara² veduta!¹ glorioso² trionfo!¹

What splendid spoils! O, my son, what flame
 superba spóglia! O, mio² figliuol¹, fiamma

is kindled for thee!
 è accesa² ¹ ²!

* Money, in the plural number.

CHAPTER VII.

ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

THE Italian possessive pronouns are the following :

Singular.

| | | |
|-----------------------|--------------------|------------------------|
| <i>Mio</i> , m. | <i>mía</i> , f. | my or mine, |
| <i>túo</i> , m. | <i>túa</i> , f. | thy or thine, |
| <i>súo</i> , m. | <i>súa</i> , f. | his, her, hers or its, |
| <i>nóstro</i> , m. | <i>nóstra</i> , f. | our or ours, |
| <i>vóstro</i> , m. | <i>vóstra</i> , f. | your or yours, |
| <i>súo</i> , m. | <i>súa</i> , f. } | their or theirs, |
| <i>lóro</i> , m. & f. | } | |

Plural.

| | |
|-------------------------|--------------------|
| <i>miei</i> m. | <i>mie</i> , f. |
| <i>tuói</i> ,* m. | <i>túe</i> , f. |
| <i>suói</i> ,* m. | <i>súe</i> , f. |
| <i>nóstri</i> , m. | <i>nóstre</i> , f. |
| <i>vóstri</i> , m. | <i>vóstre</i> , f. |
| { <i>suói</i> ,* m. | { <i>súe</i> , f. |
| { <i>lóro</i> , m. & f. | { |

il mio légo,
la túa figliolétta,
i suói avversárij,
le nóstre pómpe,
il lóro andáre,
le lóro paróle,

my bark ;
 thy little daughter ;
 their adversaries ;
 our pomps ;
 their deportment ;
 their words.

Mio, *túo*, *súo*, *nóstro*, *vóstro*, and *lóro*, are sometimes used with the article substantively,—*il mio*, *il túo*, *il súo*, &c. ; and then the word *avére*, ‘property’, is understood ; and they are equivalent to ‘my property’, ‘thy property’, &c. ; as,

mángi DEL SÚO,

let him eat of his own [proper-

non mangerà DEL NÓSTRO,

he will not eat of ours. [ty ;]

* Poets for the sake of Rhyme, often use *núí*, *vúí*, instead of *nói*, ‘we’; *vói*, ‘you’. This license is extended also to *tuói*, *suói*, which in poetry are often changed into *túí*, ‘thy or thine’; *súí*, ‘his, her, hers or its’; their or theirs’; as,

“*Di rádo—Incóntra*,” *mi rispóse*,
 “*che, di nú’í—Fáccia ’l cammíno alcún*,
per quál ío vado.—Ver’ è, ch’ áltra
fiáta quaggiù fu’í,—Congiuráto da
quella Eritón crúda,—Che richiamáva
l’ómbre á’ córpi su’í.” (Dant. Inf. 9.)

Tósto ch’ al piè délla súa tómba fu’í,
—Guardómmi un póco, e pói quási
sdegnóso—Mi dimandò: “Chi fur ò
maggiór tui.” (Dant. Inf. 10.)

Nói udirémo e parlerémo a vu’í.
 (Dant. Inf. 5.)

“Seldom happens,” replied he to me, “that any one of us goes through the way, which I am going. But I was there below once before, conjured by that cruel Erichtho, who recalled the shades to their bodies.”

As soon as I reached the foot of his tomb, he looked at me awhile, and then, almost with contempt, he asked me: “Who were thy ancestors.”

We will hear and speak to you.

Miei, tuoi, nostri, and *loro*, are also used substantively,—*i miei*, *i tuoi*, *i suoi*, *i nostri*, *i loro*; and then the word *parenti*, ‘relations’; *amici*, ‘friends’; *compagni*, ‘companions’; *familiari*, ‘domestics’; *soldati*, ‘soldiers’; or *seguaci*, ‘followers’, is understood; and they are equivalent to ‘my relations’, ‘thy friends’, ‘his companions’, ‘our domestics’, ‘your soldiers’, ‘their followers’; as,

incontra Á’ MIEI,
pregato DÁ’ SUOI,

against my relations;
requested by his friends.

Possessive pronouns are sometimes expressed by the conjunctive pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *gli*, *le*, &c., and we say ‘*ME’lo prendo in braccia*, instead of *lo prendo nelle MI’E braccia*, ‘I take him in my arms’; *LE si gittò ai pièdi*, instead of *si gittò ai SUOI pièdi*, ‘he threw himself at her feet’; &c.; as,

MI si strugge il cuore,

my heart melts;

GLI si gittò al collo,

she threw herself on his neck;

SI lasciò cascar l’uncino,

he let his hook fall.

To avoid the ambiguity which in many instances would arise, in Italian, from the indiscriminate use of the possessive pronouns *suo*, *sua*, *suoi*, *sue*; when these pronouns do not relate to the *subject* of the proposition, they are changed for the personal pronouns *di lui*, *di lei*, ‘of him,’ ‘of her’. Thus in the phrase ‘John loves Peter and his children,’ if the pronoun *his* relates to *John*, the *subject* of the proposition, it is expressed by *i suoi*; as, *Giovanni ama Pietro e i suoi figliuoli*, ‘John loves Peter and his [John’s] children’; but if *his* does not relate to John, but to *Peter*, the *object* of the proposition, then it is expressed by *i di lui*; as, *Giovanni ama Pietro e i di lui figliuoli*, ‘John loves Peter and his [Peter’s] children’:

mandò ad uccidere suo
padre,

he sent to kill his father [the
father of him who sent];

sua sorella e i figli di
lei,

her sister and her children [the
children of her sister].

The pronouns *suo, sua, suoi, sue*, are very often expressed by *lui, di lei*, even in cases when no ambiguity would arise; as,

la ingratitudine DI LUI, his ingratitude;
alla casa DI LEI, to her house.

Possessive pronouns are generally varied with the *repositions* and *articles*.

EXAMPLES.

Diétro al mío LÉGNO, che can-
do várca. (Dant. Par. 2.)

Behind my bark, which singing
cuts its way.

Se tu ti conténti di lasciáre ap-
résso di me quésta TÚA FIGLIO-
ÉTTA, io la prenderò volentiéri.
 Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

If thou art willing to leave with
me this little daughter of thine, I
will take her with pleasure.

A lli tribúni párve luógo e tém-
d'assáire I SUÓI AVVERSÁRJ.
 iv. dec. 3.)

This appeared to the tribunes a
proper place and time to assail their
adversaries.

Pássan vóstri triónfi, e VÓSTRE
ÓMPE. (Petr. cap. 11.)

Your triumphs and your pomps
pass away.

Non umán veraménte ma divi-
—LOR ANDÁR éra, e LOR sánte
ARÓLE. (Petr. Trionf.)

Their deportment and their holy
words truly were not human, but
divine.

Or MÁNGI DEL SÚO, s'égli ne ha,
è DEL NÓSTRO NON MANGERÀ
li. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Let him eat of his own property,
if he has any, for he will not eat
of ours.

Perchè quel pópolo è sì émpio—
cóntra Á' MIÉI in ciascúna súa
gge. (Dant. Inf. c. 10.)

Why is that people so fell against
my kin in all their laws.

Vássene, pregáto DÁ' SUÓI, a
Chiássi. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 8.)

He goes to Chiassi at the re-
quest of his friends.

Nel pensárló MI SI STRÚGGE IL
core. (Maff. Mer. 4. 7.)

In thinking of it my heart melts.

Piangéndo GLI SI GITTÒ AL
collo. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Weeping, she threw herself on
his neck.

SI LASCIÒ CASCÁR L' UNCÍNO
piédi. (Dant. Inf. 21.)

He let the hook fall at his feet.

Égli lo MANDÒ AD UCCÍDERE
il PÁDRE. (Class.)

He sent him to kill his father,
[the father of him who sent.]

*Mia madre ama egualmente
sua sorella, e i figli di lei.*
(Crusca.)

My mother loves equally her
sister, and her children, [the chil-
dren of her sister.]

*Avendo riguardo alla ingra-
titudine di lui verso mia ma-
dre mostrata.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

Considering his ingratitude
shown towards my mother.

*Cominciò a ripararsi vicino ál-
la casa di lei.* (Bocc. g. 2. n.
8.)

He began to resort near her
house.

EXERCISE XII.

He loved more (the) my life than (the) your
amò più vita
benevolence. Fearing that he | should be | reprehended,
benevolenza. Temendo — — | non fosse | ripreso,
he kept (the) his love concealed as much as he
— tenéva⁶ ³ ⁴ amóre⁵ nascóso⁷ — — ¹ —
could. Since thou art my friend, I will show it
potéva.² Perchè séi amíco, insegnerò³ la¹
to thee. (The) thy virtue is great, and known
² virtù è mólto, e conosciuto
| every where. | In coming out (from) the church
per tútto. — Uscendo chiesa
he saw this count, and (the) his little children, who
— vide questo cónte, e figliuólo,
asked alms. She refused to be familiar with
addomandavano² limósina¹. rifiutáva — — — —
him—(the) (his familiarity.) The holy Friar, who had
— dimestichezza. santo Fráte, avéa²
confessed him, having ascended | (on) | the pulpit,
confessató³ ¹ — salito | in sù | pèrgamo
began to preach wonderful things of him, and
cominciò³ a²⁰ predicáre²¹ maravigliósa¹⁸ cósa¹⁹ ¹ ² e⁴
of (the) his life, of (the) his fastings, of (the) his
⁵ ⁶ ⁷ ⁸ ⁹ ¹⁰ ¹¹ ¹²
vita⁷, digiúno¹⁰,
simplicity, and of (the) his innocence. I often observed
semplicità¹³, e¹⁴ ¹⁵ ¹⁶ innocenza.¹⁷ spesso miráva

how much the sun had run of (the) his luminous
quánto ² *sóle*³ *avésse*¹ *trascórso*⁴ ⁵ ⁶ *luminóso*⁸

journey. But what | shall we say | to those who
viaggio.⁷ *Ma* | *dirémo nói* | *colóro*

feel so much pity | for | (the) my hunger? The
*hámmo*⁵ *cotánte*⁶ *compassióne*⁷ | *di*¹ | ² ³ *fáme*⁴?

public places of Rome are full of ancient likenesses
*público*² *luógo*¹ *Róma son piéno* *ántica* *immáigne*

of (the) my ancestors. It is not my intention | to |
maggióre. — *è*² *Non*¹ *intenzíone* | *di* |

explain | at | present, that which the laws of (the)
spiegáre | *al* | *présente, quéllo* *légge*

friendship demand. I | did not seek | | to | attach
amicizia *vógliono.* *I* | *non cercái* | | *di* | *impórre*

any blemish to the honesty, and to the purity of
alcúno mácola *onestà,* *e* *chiarézza*

(the) your blood. Who could reply to (the) your
sángue. *Who* *could* *reply* *to* *(the)* *your*
saprèbbe rispóndere

wise words? In (the) happiness they are unhappy,
sávio paróla? *felicità* — *sóno mísero,*

in (the) riches poor, and in (the) their adventures
ricchézza méndico, *e* *ventúra*

unfortunate.
sciaguráto.

The lady then said to that one: "Come, and
*dónna allóra*⁴ *dísse*¹ ² *colúi*³ : " *Viéni,* *e*

ask thy property—(the) (thine). I have not deceived you
dománda — — — *ho*³ *non*¹ *ingannáto*⁴ ²

| to | rob you of your property—(the) (yours). Not only
per | *tór* — — — *Non solaménte*

hast thou gambled my property—(the) (mine), but thou hast
m'hái — *giuocáto* — — — *, ma* — *hái*³

also prevented (the) my going. He | astonished |
*sópra*¹ *ciò*² *impedito* *andáta.* — | *Féce maravigliáre* |

| his | father, and all (the) his relations, and every
il | *pádre,* *e* *tútti* — — — *, e* *cias-*

one else who knew him. Minghino with (the) his com-
cún áltro conoscéva² ¹.

panions concealed himself in the house of a friend
— ripóse² sí¹ — cása amíco²

of his. Cimon, who had already descended with
— ¹. Cimóne, éra⁴ già¹ discésó⁵

(the) his troops, | had determined | | to | flee | into |
² ³ —, | avéa présó consíglío | | di | fuggíre | in |

some neighbouring wood.
alcúno vicíno² sélva¹.

| Feigning | not | to | know him, | she
| Fátto sembiánte | non² | di¹ | conoscér —, | si póse a
 sat | at his—(to him at the) feet. I set in
sedére² | — — ¹ ³ piéde. — pósi² —

my—(to me in the) heart | to | give thee that which
— ¹ ³ — cuóre | di | dár — quéllo

thou wentest seeking, and I have given it to thee.
andávi cercándo, e — diédi — ² ¹.

Peróttó recognised him, and weeping threw himself
riconóbbe² ¹, e piangéndo gittó³ sí²

at his—(to him at the) feet, and embraced him, saying :
— — ¹ ⁴ piéde, — e abbracciò — llo, dicéndo :

“My father!” Tedáldo speaks with the woman, and
“mío² Pádre !”¹ párla dónna, e

frees her husband—(the husband of her) from death.
libera — — maríto móрте.

He sent him to kill his father—(the father of him
mandò² ¹ ad uccídere pádre — — —

who sent). My father loves his brother, and his
— — pádre áma fratéllo, e —

children—(the children of him—his brother).
— — fíglío — —

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Singular.

| | | |
|------------------------|--------------------------------------|---|
| <i>Quêsto</i> , m. | <i>quêsta</i> , f. | this ; |
| <i>quéllo</i> , m. | <i>quélle</i> , f. | that ; |
| <i>cotêsto</i> , m. | <i>cotêsta</i> , f. | } that near you ; |
| or <i>codêsto</i> , m. | <i>codêsta</i> , f. | |
| <i>costúi</i> , m. | he, this man ; | <i>costêi</i> , f. she, this woman. |
| <i>colúi</i> , m. | he, that man ; | <i>colêi</i> , f. she, that woman. |
| <i>cotestúi</i> , or | { he, the or that } man near you. | <i>cotestêi</i> , or { she, the or that wo- |
| <i>codestúi</i> , m. | | <i>codestêi</i> , f. { man near you. |

Plural.

| | | |
|----------------------------|---------------------|------------------------------------|
| <i>Quêsti</i> , m. | <i>quêste</i> , f. | these. |
| <i>quélle</i> , m. | <i>quélle</i> , f. | those. |
| <i>cotêsti</i> , m. | <i>cotêste</i> , f. | } those near you. |
| or <i>codêsti</i> , m. | <i>codêste</i> , f. | |
| <i>costóro</i> , m. & f. | | they, these men, these women. |
| <i>colóro</i> , m. & f. | | they, those men, those women. |
| <i>cotestóro</i> , or | | { they, the or those men near you, |
| <i>codestóro</i> , m. & f. | | |

El'sto, *êsta*, for *quêsto*, *quêsta*, 'this,' have become obsolete.

Quêsto, *quéllo*, and *cotêsto* or *codêsto*, may be used in speaking of both persons and things ; *costúi*, *colúi*, and *cotestúi* or *codestúi*, denote persons only.

Quêsto and *costúi* are employed to point out an object near the person speaking ; *cotêsto* or *codêsto*, and *cotestúi* or *codestúi*, to point out an object near the person spoken to ; and *quéllo* and *colúi*, to point out an object at a distance from both the person speaking and the person spoken to ; * as,

* From the pronouns *quêsto*, *quéllo*, and *cotêsto* or *codêsto*, some derive the adverbs *quí* or *quá*, *colí* or *colá*, *costí* or *costá*, which are used to designate a place, according to the rule already given for the use of the pronouns ; saying, *quí* or *quá*, 'there,' in pointing out a place near the person speaking ; *costí* or *costá*, 'there near you,' in pointing out a place near the person spoken to ; and *colí* or *colá*, 'there,' in pointing out a place at a distance both from the person speaking and the person spoken to.—(The rule is correct ; but as to the derivation, it appears to us, that the pronoun *quêsto* is derived from the adverb *quí* and the pronoun *êsto*, *qu(i)êsto*, and the pronoun *quéllo* from the adverb *quí* and the pronoun *éllo*, *qu(i)éllo* ; rather than that *quí* is derived from *quêsto* or *quéllo*.)

| | |
|-----------------------------|---------------------------|
| QUÉSTO <i>denáro</i> , | this money ; |
| QUÉLLA [<i>dónna</i> ,] | that lady ; |
| COTÉSTI <i>pánni</i> , | those clothes ; |
| COSTÉI* <i>è un sóle</i> , | this woman is like a sun. |
| COLÚI <i>che ne invia</i> , | that man who sends us. |
| <i>battéte</i> COTESTÓRO,* | beat those [boys]. |

This rule is equally observed, when the pronouns *quésto*, *quéllo*, and *cotésto* or *codésto*, point out an abstract substance, or a thing which is in the person speaking, the person spoken to, or the person spoken of ; as,

| | |
|----------------------------|------------------|
| QUÉSTI <i>sospiri</i> , | these sighs ; |
| QUÉLLA <i>allegrezza</i> , | that merriment ; |
| COTÉSTE <i>paróle</i> , | those words. |

Quéllo, followed by a noun beginning with a *vowel* drops the *o* and takes an apostrophe in its stead ; and followed by a noun beginning with *any consonant* but *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant, drops its last syllable. Followed by a noun beginning with a *vowel*, *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant, in the plural it makes *quégli* ; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| QUÉL <i>possénte è Ércole</i> , | that powerful one is Hercules ; |
| QUELL' <i>áltro è Demofónte</i> , | the other is Demophoön ; |
| QUÉGLI <i>ángeli</i> , | those angels ; |
| QUÉGLI <i>spíriti</i> , | those spirits. |

Quélli, followed by a word beginning with a consonant, is contracted into *quéi*, and often written *qué* ; as,

| | |
|--------------------------|----------------------|
| QUÉI <i>dólci lúmi</i> , | those sweet lights ; |
| QUÉ' <i>compágni</i> , | those companions. |

Quésta, followed by the nouns *matína* or *máne*, ‘ morning ’ ; *séra*, ‘ evening ’ ; *nótte*, ‘ night ’ ; often drops the first syllable, and forms with them a single word ; as,

| | | |
|-------------------------|-------------|--------------------------|
| <i>questa matína</i> , | STAMÁTTINA, | } this morning ; |
| or <i>questa máne</i> , | STAMÁNE, | |
| <i>questa séra</i> , | STASÉRA, | this evening ; |
| <i>questa nótte</i> , | STANÓTTE, | to-night, or last night. |

* Observe, that after the pronouns *costúi*, *colúi*, *cotestúi* or *codestúi*, &c. we never use the substantive *uómo*, ‘ man ’, or *dónna*, ‘ woman ’, in the feminine ; and do not say *costúi uómo*, *coléi dónna* ; but simply *costúi*, for ‘ this man ’ ; *coléi*, for ‘ that woman ’ ; &c. : *costúi*, *colúi*, *cotestúi*, &c., containing in themselves both the adjective pronouns *quésto*, *quéllo*, *cotésto*, &c., and the substantive pronoun *lúi*, or *léi* in the feminine, &c.—*costúi* or *quésto lúi*, ‘ this man ’ ; *coléi* or *quélle léi*, ‘ that woman ’ ; &c.

Quêsto, *quéllo*, and *cotêsto* or *codêsto*, are often used substantively, and then they are equivalent to *quêsta còsa*, ‘this thing’; *quêlla còsa*, ‘that thing’; &c. as,

udito QUE'STO (or *quêsta* having heard this (or this thing);
còsa),

COTE'STO (or *cotêsta còsa*) that (or that thing) ought not to
non si vorrêbbe fare, be done.

We say sometimes *in quêsto*, *in quêsta*, *in quéllo*, *in quêlla*, and then the words *istânte*, ‘instant’; *momêto stêssò*, ‘very moment’; *óra stêssa*, ‘very hour’; *occasione stêssa*, ‘very occasion’; are understood; and *in quêsto*, *in quêlla*, are equivalent to ‘in this very moment,’ ‘in that very hour’; &c. as,

IN QUÊSTO soppravnênne la at this very instant came the
fânte, servant;

vidi IN QUE'LLA ùna nâve I saw at that very moment a
picciolêtta, rather small bark.

Quéllo, in speaking of a city, territory, country, &c., is equivalent to *città*, *território*, *paêse*, &c.; as,

QUÉL di Perùgia, the territory of Perugia;

QUÉL di Bérghamo, the country of Bergamo.

We very often use *quêsti*, *quégli*, and *cotêsti* or *codêsti*, in the singular, in speaking of persons, but in the subjective only; and then *quêsti* is equivalent to *quest' uòmo*, ‘this man’; *quégli*, to *quell' uòmo*, ‘that man’; *cotêsti*, to *cotest' uòmo*, ‘that man near you’; as,

QUÊSTI è il mio Signóre, this is my master;

QUÉGLI è Cáo, that is Cacus;

COTÊSTI, che ancór vive, that one who is yet alive.

When *quégli* is so used, in the plural, it makes *quégliu* (*quégli uòmini*), ‘those men.’

Quégli followed by a word beginning with a consonant is, like *quelli*, contracted into *quéi*, and often written *qué*; as,

QUÉI che fu presénte, he who was present;

QUÉ' rispóse, that one answered.

Quésto and *quéllo*, and *quésti* and *quégli*, sometimes serve to denote two objects already spoken of; *quésto* and *questi* being used for the near, and *quéllo* and *quégli* for the distant object; and then they correspond to the English expressions *the latter* and *the former*; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| QUÉSTI <i>si credono aver dagli iddii il ministéro</i> | the latter think to derive their ministry from the gods, the former, their secret; |
| QUÉLLI <i>il segreto,</i> | |
| QUÉGLI <i>vuole, che io ti perdóni, e QUÉSTI, che in te in-crudelísca,</i> | the former demands that I should pardon thee, the latter that I should be cruel with thee. |

To the above demonstrative pronouns may be added *ciò*, ‘this or that’; which is equivalent to *quésto*, *quéllo*, and *cotésto* or *codésto*; in the signification of *quésta*, *quéllo*, or *cotésta* or *codésta cosa*, ‘this, that, or that thing near you’; but it never refers to a person; as,

| | |
|------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| CIÒ <i>ch’ io ne sento,</i> | that which I think of it; |
| <i>ch’ è ciò che tu di’?</i> | what is that which thou sayest? |
| CIÒ <i>udito,</i> | having heard this [thing.] |

The Italian expressions, *ciò che*, *quésto che*, *quéllo che*, generally correspond to the English pronoun *what*, used in the signification of ‘this which’ or ‘that which’; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------|
| CIÒ CHE <i>tu hai a fare,</i> | what thou hast to do; |
| QUÉLLO CHE <i>dicéva Adriáno,</i> | what Adrian said. |

Demonstrative pronouns are varied with the *prepositions only*.

Sometimes the preposition *di*, ‘of,’ is suppressed before the pronouns *costui*, *colui*, and *cotestui* or *codestui*, and the pronouns are put before the noun with which they are connected; as,

| |
|---|
| <i>al costui témpo</i> (<i>for al témpo</i> in the time of this one; |
| <i>di costui</i>), |

| | |
|--|-----------------------------|
| <i>për lo COLÚI consìglio (for per lo consìglio DI colúi),</i> | by the counsel of that one; |
| <i>per le COSTÓRO òpere (for per le òpere DI costóro),</i> | for the deeds of those. |

EXAMPLES.

*Signóra, tenéte QUÉSTO DENÁ-
RO.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 1.)

Madam, take this money.

*Le mie nótti fa trístè, e i giòrni
oscùri—QUÉLLA, che n'ha portáto
i pensíer miéi.* (Petr. s. 250.)

That lady who has taken away
my thoughts makes my nights sad,
and my days gloomy.

*Veggéndovi COTÉSTI PÁNNI, vi
ho credúto lúi.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

Seeing you with those clothes, I
took you for him.

*Così COSTÉI ch' è tra le dónne
UN SÓLE.* (Petr. s. 9.)

Thus this woman, who is like a
sun amongst the other women.

*La dónna, che COLÚI CHE a te
NE INVÍA—Spéssò dal sónno la-
grimándo dèsta.* (Petr. s. 8.)

The lady, who often wakens from
his sleep, weeping, him who sends
us to thee.

*Perchè BATTÉTE vói COTESTÓ-
RO?* (Nov. ant. 45.)

Why do you beat those boys?

*Che fánno méco omái QUÉSTI
SOSPÍRI,—Che nascéan di dolóre?*
(Petr. c. 33.)

What do these sighs which
sprung from grief do now with me?

*Ilo giudicheréi ottimaménte fát-
to, che quélla fésta, QUÉLLA ALLE-
GRÉZZA, che nói potéssimo, pren-
dèssimo.* (Bocc. Introd.)

I should think it very well done
that we should take that enjoyment
—that merriment, which we could.

*Vói mi paréte uómo di Dío,
còme díte vói COTÉSTE PARÓLE?*
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

You appear to me to be a man
of God, how do you say those
words?

*Colúi ch' è sécoè QUÉL POSSÉN-
TE e fòrte ÉRCOLE, QUELL' ÁLTRO
DEMOFÓNTE.* (Petr. Tr. Am.)

That one who is with him, is
that powerful and strong Hercules,
the other is Demophoön.

*QUÉGLI ÁNGELI, e QUÉGLI SPÍ-
RITI.* (Cinon. t. 4.)

Those angels and those spirits.

*QUÉI DÓLCI LÚMI—S'acquístan
per ventúra, e non per ártè.* (Petr.
s. 224.)

Those sweet lights are ac-
quired by good luck and not by
art.

*E cosí la portò a QUÉ' suói
COMPÁGNI.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 2.)

And thus he carried her to those
companions of his.

*Di quèsto di STAMATTÍNA sarò
io tenúto a vói.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Of this of this morning I am indebted to you.

*STAMÁNE éra un fanciúullo, e or
son vécchio.* (Petr. c. 11.)

This morning I was a boy, and now I am an old man.

*Égli ci è STASÉRA venúto un dé'
suoi fratélli.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

There came this evening one of her brothers.

*Ubbriáco, fastidióso, tu non c'
entrerái STANÓTTE.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)

Drunkard, troublesome man, thou wilt not enter there to-night.

UDÍTO QUÉSTO. (Petr. Tr. Tem.)

Having heard this.

*Figliuóla mía, COTÉSTO NON
SI VORRÉBBE FÁRE.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)

My daughter, that ought not to be done.

*IN QUÉSTO LA FÁNTE di léi
SOPPRAVVÉNNE.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

At this very instant her servant came in.

*Com' i' VÍDI ÚNA NÁVE PICCIO-
LÉTTA—Venír per l' áqua vérsó
nói IN QUÉLLA.* (Dant. Inf. 8.)

As I saw at that very moment coming through the water towards us a rather small bark.

*Passándo per QUÉLLO DI PE-
RÚGIA.* (Stor. Pist. 50.)

Passing through the territory of Perugia.

*QUÉSTI È IL MÍO SIGNÓRE,
quèsti veraménte è Messér Torélló.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

This is my master, this is truly Master Torello.

*QUÉGLI È CÁCO—Che sótto il
sázzo di mónte Aventino,—Di sán-
gue féce spésse vólte láco.* (Dant. Inf. 25.)

That is Cacus, who oftentimes shed lakes of blood under the rock of Mount Aventine.

*COTÉSTI, CHE ANCÓR VÍVE, e
non si nóma,—Guardaré' io per
vedér, s' il conóscó.* (Dant. Par. 11.)

I should like to look at that one, who is still alive and does not tell who he is, to see whether I know him.

*QUÉGLINO rivoléano i lóro strác-
ci.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 2.)

Those ones wanted again their rags.

*E dísse cóse—Incredíbili a QUÉI,
CHE FU PRESÉNTE.* (Dant. Par. 17.)

And said things incredible to him who was present.

*QUÉ' RISPÓSE: "Io sóno cadú-
to in úna fósso."* (Nov. ant. 36.)

That one answered: "I have fallen into a ditch."

*Non solaménte il pópolo, ma i
nóbili, e i sacerdoti: QUÉSTI SI
CRÉDONO AVÉR DÁGLI IDDÍI IL
MINISTÉRO, QUÉLLI IL SEGRÉTO.* (Dav. Germ.)

Not only the people, but the noblemen, and the priests: the latter think to derive their ministry from the gods, the former, their secret.

QUÉGLI VUÓLE, CHE ÍO TI PER-
DÓNÌ, E QUÉSTI CHE, *cóntro a mia*
natiúra, IN TE INCRUDELÍSCA.—
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

A volérvene díre CIÒ CH' ÍO NE
SÉNTO. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

Va vía, figliuólo, CH' È CIÒ,
CHE TU DI' ? (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

CIÒ UDÍTO *si addolorávano gli*
aiúti, e fremévano i nóstri. (Dav.
Stor. 1. 2.)

Tu sái ben CIÒ CHE TU HÁI A
FÁRE. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

L' óste udéndo *quéllo che la*
dónna dicéva, e QUÉLLO CHE DI-
CÉVA ADRIÁNO; *cominciò a cré-*
dere, che Pinuccio sognásse.—
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)

AL COSTÚI TÉMPO. (Giov. Vill.)

PER LO COLÚI CONSÍGLIO.
(Bocc.)

PER LE COSTÓRO ÓPERE. (Bocc.
g. 5. n. 1.)

The former demands that I
should pardon thee, and the latter
that, against my nature, I should
be cruel with thee.

To tell you that which I think
of it.

Away with thee, my son, what
is that which thou sayest ?

Having heard this the auxiliary
troops were grieved, and our own
were in a rage.

Thou knowest well what thou
hast to do.

The host hearing what the lady
said, and what Adrian said, began
to believe that Pinuccio was
dreaming.

In the time of this one.

By the counsel of that one.

For the deeds of those.

EXERCISE XIII.

This sin is that which (the) divine justice has
peccáto è *divíno giustízia ha²*

not wished to leave unpunished. May God grant
non¹ volúto lasciáre impuníto. — *Dío díá²*

you that joy, and that good which you desire.
¹ allegrezza, e *béne* *desideráte.*

What is that secret of which you speak? At this
è *secréto* — *parláte?* *A*

none dared | to | answer. That was a trifling
niúno ardì | *di* | *rispóndere.* *fu* — *pícciolo*

thing, and thou didst well to do with it what thou
cósa, e — facésti béne a fár ne —
 didst (*with it*). There was in that court this usage.
facésti² ne¹. — Éra córte usánza.

Passing by the cell of this one, he heard the
Passándo davánti célula, — senti

noise which they—(these ones) made together. He
schiamázzo — facévano² insiémel¹.

| did not work | at all, but a thousand times | a |
| non lavoráva | púnto, ma — vólta | il |
 day, he would run to the window | to | see this
dì, — corréva finêstra | per | vedére

woman. It appeared to him to be safe, and out
— páreve³ 1 2 éssere sicúro, e fuór
 of the hands of those who had taken him.
máno avévano³ preso¹ 2

Those ones make me enter here | to | deceive
fánno³ 1 entráre⁴ ci² | per | ingannár
 me. Having departed from that one with (*the*) whom
Partitosi

he had been so long, | he came | | to | England.
— éra² státo³ lungaménte¹ | séne venne | | in | Inghiltérra.

I will pay thee | for | this time, and | for |
pagherò² 1 | di | vólta, e | di |
 that. I have heard what you have spoken of me.
ho intéso — avéte⁴ ragionáto³ 1 2

And on this occasion | he perceived | | that he had |
Ed — s' accórse | | avére |

a very beautiful woman for a wife. | Dost thou
béllo donna — móglie. | Non ódi

not hear | what he says? This one is the arch-
tu | díce? | archi-

bishop Ruggéri. That one is Brutus. Conceiving
véscovo . é Brúto. Prendéndo

a sudden hope of being able to return once more
- súbita speránza | potére ritornáre⁵ ancóra¹

in the royal state, | by | the counsel of that one.
² *reale*⁴ *stato*³, | *per* | *consiglio*² — ¹

All those who believe so are deceived. In Cyprus
Tutti *crédono*² *così*¹ *sóno* *ingannati*. *Cipri*

and in Rhodes the rumors and the disturbances
e *Ródi* ² *rumóre*³ *e*⁴ ⁵ *turbaménto*⁶

were great, and lasted a long time | through | the
*fúrono*¹ *gránde*⁷, *e* — — *lúngo* *témpo* | *per* |

deeds of these ones.
*ópera*² — ¹.



INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

Of indefinite pronouns, the following are used only in the singular, and cannot be put before nouns in the plural number :

| | |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>qualche</i> , m. & f. | some, any ; |
| <i>ógni</i> , m. & f. | all, every ; |
| <i>chiunque</i> , m. & f. | } whoever, whosoever ; |
| <i>chisivógli</i> a, m. & f. | |
| <i>chi che</i> , m. & f. | |
| <i>chicchessia</i> , m. & f. | } whatever, whatsoever ; |
| <i>che che</i> , m. & f. | |
| <i>chicchessia</i> , m. & f. | |
| <i>qualunque</i> , m. & f. | } whosoever, whatsoever ; |
| <i>qualsivógli</i> a, m. & f. | |
| <i>qualsisia</i> , m. & f. | |
| <i>núlla</i> , m. & f. | } nothing. |
| <i>niénte</i> , m. & f. | |

| | | |
|-------------------------|-------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>úno</i> , m. | <i>úna</i> , f. | one ; |
| <i>unáltro</i> , m. | <i>unáltra</i> , f. | another ; |
| <i>qualcúno</i> , m. | <i>qualcúna</i> , f. | } some, some one, some body ; |
| <i>qualchedúno</i> , m. | <i>qualchedúna</i> , f. | |

| | | |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>ognùno</i> , m. | <i>ognùna</i> , f. | } every one, every body ; |
| <i> ciascùno</i> , m. | <i> ciascùna</i> , f. | |
| <i> ciaschedùno</i> , m. | <i> ciaschedùna</i> , f. | |
| <i>verùno</i> , m. | <i>verùna</i> , f. | } no one, nobody. |
| <i>nessùno</i> , m. | <i>nessùna</i> , f. | |
| or <i>nissùno</i> , m. | <i>nissùna</i> , f. | |
| <i>neùno</i> , m. | <i>neùna</i> , f. | |
| or <i>niùno</i> , m. | <i>niùna</i> , f. | |
| <i>nullo</i> , m. | <i>nulla</i> , f. | |

EXCEPTIONS.

O'gni, before numeral adjectives, as in the phrases *ògni dúc mési*, 'every two months'; *ògni séi págine*, 'every six pages'; *ògni diéci soldáti*, 'every ten soldiers'; and in the word *ognissánti*, 'the day of All-saints'; is used with nouns in the plural.

Qualche has been used, by some writers, with nouns in the plural, as, *qualche vérdi bóschi*, 'some green woods'; but such examples are not to be imitated.

The following are used in both numbers :

| Singular. | | Plural. |
|-------------------------|------------------------------------|--|
| <i>tàle</i> , m. & f. | such ; | <i>tàli</i> , m. & f. such ; |
| <i>cotàle</i> , m. & f. | { such, such a one ; | <i>cotàli</i> , m. & f. { such, such ones ; |
| <i>alcùno</i> , m. | { some, some one, some body. | <i>alcùni</i> , m. |
| <i>alcùna</i> , f. | | <i>alcùne</i> , f. |
| <i>talùno</i> , m. | | <i>talùni</i> , m. |
| <i>talùna</i> , f. | | <i>talùne</i> , f. |
| <i>cérto</i> , m. | { certain ; | <i>cérti</i> , m. |
| <i>cérta</i> , f. | | <i>cérte</i> , f. |
| <i>stéssso</i> , m. | { same ; | <i>stéssi</i> , m. |
| <i>stéssa</i> , f. | | <i>stésse</i> , f. |
| <i>medésimo</i> , m. | | <i>medésimi</i> , m. |
| <i>medésima</i> , f. | | <i>medésime</i> , f. |

| | | | |
|-------------------------|------------------------------|-------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <i>áltro</i> , m. | } other ; | <i>áltri</i> , m. | } others ; |
| <i>áltra</i> , f. | | <i>áltre</i> , f. | |
| <i>tútto</i> , m. | } all ; | <i>tútti</i> , m. | } all, every one, every body ; |
| <i>tútta</i> , f. | | <i>tútte</i> , f. | |
| <i>alquánto</i> , m. | } a little, somewhat ; | <i>alquánti</i> , m. | } a few, not many ; |
| <i>alquánta</i> , f. | | <i>alquánte</i> , f. | |
| <i>tánto</i> , m. | } so much ; | <i>tánti</i> , m. | } as many ; |
| <i>tánta</i> , f. | | <i>tánte</i> , f. | |
| <i>cotánto</i> , m. | | <i>cotánti</i> , m. | |
| <i>cotánta</i> , f. | | <i>cotánte</i> , f. | |
| <i>altrettánto</i> , m. | } as much, as much more ; | <i>altrettánti</i> , m. | } as many, as many more ; |
| <i>altrettánta</i> , f. | | <i>altrettánte</i> , f. | |
| <i>póco</i> , m. | } a little, a few ; | <i>póchi</i> , m. | } few ; |
| <i>póca</i> , f. | | <i>póche</i> , f. | |
| <i>mólto</i> , m. | } much ; | <i>mólti</i> , m. | } many ; |
| <i>mólta</i> , f. | | <i>mólte</i> , f. | |
| <i>tróppo</i> , m. | } too much ; | <i>tróppi</i> , m. | } too many. |
| <i>tróppa</i> , f. | | <i>troppe</i> , f. | |

Chiúnque, *chisivógli*, *chi che*, *chicchessía*, *qualcúno*, *qualchedúno*, *ognúnσ*, *talúno*, are applied to persons only ; the others may be applied both to persons and things.

Núlla, *niénte*, ‘nothing,’ mean also ‘some or any thing,’ and *nessúno* or *nissúno*, *neúno* or *niúno*, *verúno*, ‘nothing, no one, nobody,’ mean also ‘some or any thing, any one, any body’ ; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>s’ élla viúol NÚLLA</i> , | if she wants any thing ; |
| <i>se égli si sentisse NIÉNTE</i> , | if he felt any thing ; |
| <i>non rimarrébbe a sostenér</i> <i>péna NESSÚNA</i> , | there would not remain any punishment to suffer ; |
| <i>se va in NIÚN luógo</i> , | if he goes to any place ; |
| <i>s’ égli ha bontáte VERÚNA</i> , | if he has any good quality. |

Alcúno, ‘some,’ is sometimes used instead of *niúno*, ‘nothing, no one’; as,

chè ALCÚNA glória avrébbero, for they would derive no glory;
che ALCÚNA via darébbe, which would afford no way.

A'ltro is sometimes used instead of *altra cosa*, ‘some or any thing else’; as,

avrésti détto ÁLTRO; thou wouldst have said something else;

háí fatto ÁLTRO? hast thou done any thing else?

A'ltri is often used in the singular, in speaking of persons; and then it is equivalent to *altr' uómo*, ‘another man,’ or ‘another person,’ ‘others’; as,

nè vói, nè ÁLTRI potrà dire ch' io non l' ábbia vedúta, neither you nor any other man can say that I have not seen it;

per non fidármene ad ÁLTRI, not to trust to other persons.

When *áltri* is thus used, in any other *relation*, than the subjective or the objective, it is changed into *altrúi*; as,

ho détto mále d' ALTRÚI, I have spoken ill of another;
le presteréi ad ALTRÚI, I would lend them to others;
che io da ALTRÚI non sia udíto, that I should not be heard by any other person.

A'ltri is also used in a distributive sense, and then it corresponds to the English pronouns *one — another*; *the one — the other*; *some — others*; as,

ÁLTRI fa rémi, ed ÁLTRI vol-ge sárte, the one makes oars, the other twists ropes;

ÁLTRI sen váda errándo, ÁLTRI rimánga ucciso, ÁLTRI ídol si fáccia un dólce sguárdo, let some go wandering, let some be killed, let others place their happiness in a sweet look.

Altrúi is sometimes used with the article, and then the words *avére*, *sostánza*, ‘property’, ‘patrimony’, are understood, and *l’ altrúi* is equivalent to ‘another’s property’, ‘patrimony’, &c.; as,

| | |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>domandár l’ ALTRÚI,</i> | to demand another’s property |
| <i>logorár DELL’ ALTRÚI,</i> | to use the property of others. |

U’no and *áltro* are sometimes used with the article, *l’ úno*, *l’ áltro*; and then *l’ úno* corresponds to *the one*, *the former*, and *l’ áltro* to *the other*, *the latter*. *U’no* and *áltro*, when so used, in the plural make *gli úni*, *gli áltri*, for the masculine; and *le úne*, *le áltre*, for the feminine; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>l’ età l’ ÚNO, e l’ ÁLTRA avéa trasformáti,</i> | age had changed the one and the other; |
| <i>e DELL’ ÚNE, e DELL’ ÁLTRA fácci quéllo che crédi,</i> | and with the one and with the other do what thou thinkest. |
| <i>GLI ÚNI teménti Annibale, GLI ÁLTRI Filippo,</i> | the former fearing Annibal, the latter Philip. |

The expressions *l’ úno e l’ áltro*, *l’ úna e l’ áltra*; *gli úni e gli áltri*, *le úne e le áltre*, correspond to the English pronouns *both*, *both of them*; as,

| | |
|----------------------------------|-------------|
| <i>l’ ÚNO E l’ ÁLTRO córno,</i> | both horns; |
| <i>l’ ÚNA E l’ ÁLTRA stélla,</i> | both stars. |

L’ un l’ áltro, *l’ úna l’ áltra*; *gli úni gli áltri*, *le úne le áltre*, are equivalent to the English pronouns *one another*, *each other*; as,

| | |
|---|-------------------------------|
| <i>SI AMÁVANO l’ UN l’ ÁLTRO,</i> | they loved one another; |
| <i>l’ UN l’ ÁLTRO inténti a-rì-guardársi,</i> | intent to look at each other. |

In úno, is equivalent to the English expression *at the same time*; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>Mésta mi véde, ma IN UN fug-gír dal súo cospétto,</i> | he sees me sad, but at the same time to flee from his presence. |
|--|---|

Senz' áltro sometimes corresponds in English to *without doubt, certainly, &c.* ; as,

egli SENZ' ÁLTRO sarà col re, he without doubt is with the king.

Per áltro means *otherwise, this excepted, as for the rest, &c.* ; as,

PER ÁLTRO sávio, e avvedúto, as for the rest, wise and prudent.

Tále in the singular often drops the *e* and makes *tal* ; and in the plural is contracted into *tái*, and sometimes written *tá'* ; as,

| | |
|---------------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>TAL fu mia stélla,</i> | such was my star ; |
| <i>TÁI dimostrazioni,</i> | such demonstrations ; |
| <i>TÁ' palági,</i> | such palaces. |

Indefinite pronouns are generally varied with the *prepositions only* ; except *stésso, medésimo, áltro*, which are varied with the *prepositions* and *articles*.

The prepositions *di, a*, are elegantly suppressed before the pronoun *altrúi* ; and sometimes the preposition *di* is suppressed, and *altrúi* placed between the article and the noun with which it is connected ; as,

| | |
|--|-------------------------------|
| <i>le piághe [di] altrúi,</i> | the wounds of others ; |
| <i>la fortuna si fa [a] altrúi incóntro,</i> | fortune goes to meet others ; |
| <i>bagnáto nell' ALTRÚI sángue, [for</i> | bathed in another's blood. |
| <i>nel sángue di altrúi],</i> | |

To the above pronouns may be added *chi, quále, più, méno, parécchi, parécchie*, and *si*, which are also used as indefinite pronouns.

Chi is sometimes used instead of *alcúno* ; as,

| | |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>in quésto lóco può arrivar CHI</i> | in this place may arrive some |
| <i>ti frastórni,</i> | one who will disturb thee : |

and sometimes instead of *nessuno*; as,

quivi non è CHI légga, nè CHI scriva, there is no one there who reads,
and none who writes.

Chi is also used in a distributive sense, and then it is equivalent to the English pronouns *one* — *another*; *the one* — *the other*; *some* — *others*; as,

portando, CHI fióri, CHI érbe odorífere, e CHI díverse maniere di spezierie, carrying, some flowers, some,
sweet herbs, and others, different kinds of spices.

Quále is used in a distributive sense, and corresponds to *one* — *another*; as,

QUÁL se n' andò in contádo, e QUÁL quà, e QUÁL là, one went into the country, and
another here, and another there.

Più and *parécchi, parécchie*, as indefinite pronouns, are equivalent to the English pronoun *several*; as,

PIÙ giòrni, several days;
PARÉCCHI áltri, several others;
PARÉCCHIE óre, several hours.

Più and *méno* sometimes take the article, — *il più, il méno*; *i più* or *le più, i méno* or *le méno*; and then *il più, i più* or *le più*, are equivalent to *the most, the greater part*; and *il méno, i méno* or *le méno*, to *the least, the smaller part*; as,

IL PIÙ del témpo, the greater part of the time;
I PIÙ morivano, the most of them died;
LE PIÙ si trovavano in Berlinzone, the greater number of them
were found in Berlinzone;
il Paradiso è DÉI MÉNO, Paradise is for the smaller
number.

Si is used for both genders and both numbers in the *objective* only, and corresponds to the English words *one, we, people, they, &c.*; as,

| | |
|---|---------------------------|
| SI <i>vêde</i> , | one sees ; |
| SI <i>è dëtto</i> , | we have said ; |
| SI <i>videro</i> , | people saw ; |
| SI <i>prométtono</i> [<i>mólte</i>] <i>cóse</i> , | they promise many things. |

Si and the verb, in these and similar expressions, hold the place of a *passive proposition*, and may be equally well rendered in English by the verb *to be* ; as,

| | |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| SI <i>rendéssero gli onóri a Gál-</i> | honors should be rendered |
| <i>ba, e SI celebrásse la me-</i> | to Galba, and the memory |
| <i>mória di Pisone,</i> | of Piso should be celebrated. |

When *si* is followed by the particle *ne*, we change the *i* of *si* into *e* ; as,

| | |
|----------------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>non SE NE troverebbe uno,</i> | they would not find one. |
|----------------------------------|--------------------------|

EXAMPLES.

| | |
|---------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>Tu le dirái, s' ÉLLA VUÓL NÚL-</i> | Thou wilt ask her, whether she |
| <i>LA. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)</i> | wants any thing. |

| | |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>Il domandò SE ÉGLI SI SENTÍS-</i> | He asked him whether he felt |
| <i>SE NIÉNTE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)</i> | any thing. |

| | |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <i>Che NON RIMARRÉBBE A SOS-</i> | That there would not remain in |
| <i>TENÉR PÉNA NESSÚNA nel purga-</i> | purgatory any punishment to suffer |
| <i>tório per gli peccáti, (Pass.)</i> | for sins. |

| | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>SE Filíppo VA óggi in NIÚN</i> | If Philip goes to-day to any |
| <i>LUÓGO. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)</i> | place. |

| | |
|--------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| <i>Per le tentazióni si próva l'</i> | By temptations it is proved |
| <i>uómo, s' ÉGLI HA BONTÁTE VE-</i> | whether a man has any good qual- |
| <i>RÚNA. (Pass. p. 47.)</i> | ity. |

| | |
|--|-----------------------------|
| <i>CH' ALCÚNA GLÓRIA i réi</i> | For the guilty would derive |
| <i>AVRÉBBER d' élli. (Dant. Inf. 3.)</i> | no glory from them. |

| | |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>Ch' ALCÚNA VÍA DARÉBBE a</i> | Which would afford no way |
| <i>chi su fósse. (Dant. Inf. 12.)</i> | to him who should be above. |

| | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>ÁLTRO AVRÉSTI DÉTTO, se tu</i> | Thou wouldst have said another |
| <i>m' avéssi vedúto a Bológna.—</i> | thing, if thou hadst seen me in Bo- |
| <i>(Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)</i> | logna. |

O, ÁLTRO HÁI *tu FÁTTO?* (Bocc. n. 1.)

Oh, hast thou done any thing else?

NÈ VÓI, NÈ ÁLTRI *con ragióne mi potrà più DÍRE CH' ÍO NON L' ÁBBIA VEDÚTA.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

Neither you, nor others can any longer say rightly that I have not seen it.

PER NON FIDÁRMENE *ad ÁLTRI, ío medésima tel son venúta a significáre.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

Not to trust to others, I myself have come to inform thee of it.

Io ho DÉTTO MAL D' ALTRÚI. (Bocc.)

I have spoken ill of others.

CHE ÍO DA ALTRÚI *che da léi UDÍTO NON SÍA.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

That I should be heard by no other, but by her.

ÁLTRI FA RÉMI, ED ÁLTRI VÓLGE SÁRTE. (Dant. Inf.)

Some make oars, and others twist ropes.

ÁLTRI *dispérso* — SEN VÁDA ERRÁNDÓ: ÁLTRI RIMÁNGA UC-CÍSO: — ÁLTRI, *in cùre d' amór soáve immérso*, — ÍDOL SI FÁC-CIA, UN DÓLCE SGUÁRDO, *un ríso.* (Tass. Ger. 4. 18.)

Let some of them go dispersed, and wandering: let some be killed: let others, plunged in the cares of pleasing love, place their happiness in a sweet look, a smile.

Con le vóci úmili, e mansuète *nel DOMANDÁR L' ALTRÚI.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

With humble and mild words in demanding the property of others.

Si dispóse a volér LOGORÁR DELL' ALTRÚI. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

She disposed herself to use the property of others.

Tánto L' ETÀ L' ÚNO E L' ÁLTRO, *da quéllo che ésser soléano, gli AVÉA TRASFORMÁTI.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

So much had age changed the one and the other from what they were used to be.

Che le mie cóse ed élla ti siéno *raccomandáte, E QUÉLLO DELL' ÚNE E DELL' ÁLTRA FÁCCI, CHE CRÉDI, che siéno consolazióne dell' ánima mía.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Let my things and her be recommended to thee, and with the one and with the other do what thou thinkest would be of any consolation to my soul.

Immagináí di volér fáre, sic-cóme fecero i Saguntíni, o gli Abidéi, GLI ÚNI TEMÉNTI ANNÍ-BALE *Cartaginése, E GLI ÁLTRI FILÍPPO Macedónico.* (Bocc. Fiamm. 5. 53.)

I thought of doing as the Saguntines and the Abydeans did, the former fearing Annibal the Carthaginian, the latter Philip the Macedonian.

Scaldáva il sol già L' ÚNO E L' ÁLTRO CÓRNO — *Del Táuro.* (Petr. cap. 1.)

The sun was already warming both the horns of Taurus,

*Ov' è 'l bel cìglio, e L' ÚNA E
L' ÁLTRA STÉLLA — Ch' al còrso
del mío viver lúme dènno? (Petr.
s. 258.)*

Where is the beautiful brow and
both those stars which gave light
to my life?

*L' UN L' ÁLTRO di eguále
amóre SI AMÁVANO. (Bocc.)*

They loved one another with an
equal love.

*L' UN L' ÁLTRO A RIGUARDÁR-
SI INTÉNTI. (Tass. Ger.)*

Intent to look at each other.

*MÉSTA ognór MI VÉDE, mésta
è véro, MA IN UN DAL SÚO COS-
PÉTTO FUGGÍR mi véde. (Alf.
Filip. 1. 1.)*

He sees me always sad, sad it is
true, but at the same time he sees
me flee from his presence.

*ÉGLI SENZ' ÁLTRO SARÀ COL
RE. (Maff. Mer. 2. 3.)*

He without doubt is with the
king.

*RÍCCO, e SÁVIO, E AVVEDÚTO
PER ÁLTRO, ma avaríssimo. —
(Bocc. g. 6. n. 2.)*

Rich, and wise, and prudent
otherwise, but very avaricious.

*LE PIÁGHE ALTRÚI. (Petr. s.
6.)*

The wounds of others.

*Ricòrdati che úna vòlta senza
più, suòle avveníre, che LA FOR-
TÚNA SI FA ALTRÚI INCÓNTRO
col viso liéto, e col grémbo apérto.
(Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)*

Remember that once and no
more, it is wont to happen, that for-
tune goes to meet others with joy-
ful countenance, and open bosom.

*NELL' ALTRÚI SÁNGUE già
BAGNÁTO e tinto. (Petr. s. 29.)*

Already bathed and stained with
another's blood.

*TAL FU MÍA STÉLLA, e tal mìa
crúda sòrte. (Petr. s. 182.)*

Such was my star, and such my
cruel fate.

*Quése TÁI doloróse DIMOSTRA-
ZIONÍ son tróppo vedúte, e cono-
sciúte. (Castigl. Cort. 1. 3.)*

Such painful demonstrations are
too often seen and known.

*E fécer TÁ' PALÁGI, e tá' ma-
ravíglie, che non si potrébbe díre.
(Fr. Gior.)*

And they made such palaces,
and such wonderful things, that
cannot be described.

*IN QUÉSTO LÓCO di leggiér PUÒ
ARRIVÁR CHI TI FRASTÓRNI. —
(Maff. Mer. 3. 4.)*

In this place may easily arrive
one who will disturb thee.

*QUÍVI NON È chi ragióni — Di
Crísto, nè CHI LÉGGA, NÈ CHI
SCRÍVA. (Dant. Par. 12.)*

There is no one there who talks
of Christ, no one who reads, no
one who writes.

Mólti andávano attórno, PORTÁNDO nêlle máni, CHI FIÓRI, CHI ÉRBE ODORÍFERE, E CHI DIVERSE MANIÈRE DI SPEZIERÍE. (Bocc. Introd.)

Many went about carrying in their hands, some, flowers, some, sweet herbs, and others, different kinds of spices.

E le lor dónne, e i figliuóli picciolétti, QUÁL SE N' ANDÒ IN CONTÁDO, E QUÁL QUÀ, E QUÁL LÀ, poveraménte in arnése. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

And of their wives, and young children, one went into the country, and one here, and another there, poorly provided.

PIÙ GIÓRNI feliceménte navigárono. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

They sailed happily several days.

Con PARÉCCHI ÁLTRI. (Petr.)

With several others.

Durò per lo spázio di PARÉCCHIE ÓRE. (Giov. Vill.)

It lasted for the space of several hours.

IL PIÙ DEL TÉMPO, si stánno a mangiáre, e poltrire. (Dav. Germ.)

The greater part of the time they pass in eating and dozing.

I PIÙ sénza alcúna fèbbre, o áltro accidénte MORÍVANO. (Bocc. Introd.)

The most of them died without any fever, or any other symptom.

Máso rispóse, che LE PIÙ SI TROVÁVANO IN BERLINZÓNE. — (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

Maso replied, that the greater number of them were found in Berlinzone.

IL PARADÍSO È DÉI MÉNO, e non déi più. (Segn. Mann. Marz. 31.)

Paradise is for the smaller number, and not for the larger.

Cóme SI VÉDE. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

As one sees.

Cóme s' È DÉTTO. (Dav. Ann.)

As we have said.

VÍDERSI in quéllo esército sol-dáti v'cchi, che non avévano fátto mái guárdia. (Dav.)

People saw in that army old soldiers, who had never been on guard.

QUÁNTO CÓSE gli SI PROMÉTTONO tútto 'l dì. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

How many things they promise him the whole day.

Propóse, che SI RENDÉSSERO GLI ONÓRI A GÁLBA: che anche SI CELEBRÁSSE LA MEMÓRIA DI PISÓNE. (Dav. Stor. l. 4.)

He proposed, that honors should be rendered to Galba, and that the memory of Piso should also be celebrated.

NON SE NE TROVERÉBBE UN maggiór mái. (Bocc. g. 2. fin.)

They would never find one greater.

EXERCISE XIV.

Whoever does otherwise sins. There must be
*fa*² *altrimenti*¹ *pécca.* *Vi* *déve* *éssere*
some deception. Let us give this bread to eat to
inganno. *Diámo* *páne* *a* *mangiáre*
some one. He commanded that every one should
— *Comandò* — *andás.*
go to rest himself. That we | might not cause |
*se*² *a*⁴ *riposáre*⁵ *si*¹. *Acciocchè* | *non* *déssimo* |
(to)₃ any one₄ | to_{da}¹ | think of us. Each
one* of us knows, that the greater part of (the)₁
sa, ₄ ₅ *párte*⁶
her friends — (hers)₂ are dead. You will receive a
— — *sóno*³ *mórto*.⁷ *riceveréte* —
hundred for every one. Every mother is a nurse
mádre *è* — *bália*
of her children. Without any delay, he did what
figliuólo. *Sénza* *indúgio,* — *féce*
the king ordered. No† body perceived | it. |
re *commandáva.* *persóna* *accórse*² | *séne*.¹ |
Here it seemed to me that I saw — (to see) no‡ sanctity, no ‡
Quívi — *párve*¹⁴ ₁₃ — — *véder*¹² ₁ *santità*², ₃
devotion, no ‡ good deed, or example of life.
*divozióne*⁴, ₅ *buóno*⁶ *ópera*⁷, *o*⁸ *esémpio*⁹ ₁₀ *víta*¹¹.
Where every word, every phrase, every mode of
O've *paróla,* *fráse,* *módo* —
expression is explained with clearness. To-morrow I
— *vién* *spiegáto*³ *con*¹ *chiarézza*². *dománi*² —
shall dine with some friends. Some companies of
*Pranzerò*¹ *con* *amíco.* *compagnía*
Belgians collected in haste, and a band of Vitellians.
Bélgi *fátto* *fúria,* *e* *máno* *Vitelliani.*

* Each one, in the feminine gender.

† No, here in the signification of not one, none.

‡ No, in the signification of not any.

one Neapolitan, and that one Milanese. (*The*) one*
Napoletáno,
 of them had a beautiful and large mattress of
 — — *avéa* *béllo*⁴ *e*⁵ *gránde*⁶ *materásso*^{1 2}
 cotton | on | her head, and the other* a very
*bambágia*³ | *in* | — *cápo,* *e*
 large basket full of things. Some went | into |
gránde paniére piéno *cósa.* *sen' andò* | *in* |
 the country, and some here, and some there.
 — *contádo,* *e* *quà,* *e* *là.*

CHAPTER VIII.

OF THE PARTICLES *NE, CI, VI.*

WITH pronouns are generally classed the particles *ne, ci, vi*,† which never vary, and always refer to some person, thing, or place, which has been spoken of before.

Ne may refer to one person or thing, or to more than one, according to the number of the objects, which have been mentioned; and then it is rendered in English by — *of him, of her, of it; of them; with him, with her, &c.; at him, &c.; some of it, some of them; as,*

NE páre innamoráto, he seems enamoured of her;
a quánti NE giacévano tagliò he cut off the hair of as many
i capélli, of them as slept;

* *The one, the other,* in the feminine gender.

† These particles, in orthography, appear to be the same words as the conjunctive pronouns *ne, ci, vi*; their difference in signification, however, is easily ascertained by the meaning of the sentence in which they are used.

non NE poteva pagare i calzari, I could not pay for my shoes with it;

se NE maravigliò, he wondered at it;

NE ho preso, I have taken some of it, or some of them.

Ne may also refer to the place, which one comes from, or goes to; and then it corresponds to the English adverbs — *hence, thence*; as,

mENE venni, I came thence;

quando NE andrète? when shall you go hence?

and sometimes to an indeterminate place; as,

NE è portata dal vento, it is thence carried away by the wind.

Ci, vi, refer to a place, and correspond to the English adverbs — *here, there; hither, thither*; as,

CI era venuto, I had come hither;

non VI poté entrare, he could not enter thither.

Ci, properly, refers to a place near the person speaking, and *vi*, to a place at a distance; as,

CI sono stato altre volte, I have been here formerly;

se tu mai VI torni, if thou shalt ever return there.

This distinction, however, is not observed when the particles *ci, vi*, and the conjunctive pronouns *ci, vi*, would be brought together, as in *io VI VI condurrò, — voi CI CI avete condotti*; in which case, to avoid the harsh sound produced by the repetition of the same word,* we say, without regard to the distance of the place,

io vi CI condurrò, I will conduct you thither;

voi VI ci avete condotti, you have conducted us hither.

* An instance nevertheless, is met with in Boccaccio, in which *ci* is used instead of *vi*, without the occurrence of the repetition of the word on account of the conjunctive pronoun:

Non ci sono in nessun luogo abitanze sì presso, che tu di giorno vi potessi arrivare. (G. 5. n. 3.)

There are nowhere dwellings so near, that you could arrive there before sunset.

Ci, vi, may refer also to persons or things, and then they take the signification of the persons or things, which they refer to ; as,

-pensáste a me ? — ci pensái, did you think of me ? — I thought of you.

baderéte a ciò, or a quèsto ? will you attend to this ? — yes,
— *sì, vi baderò,* I will attend to it.

Ci, vi, are used sometimes instead of *quèsto, quèllo, tale, &c.* in the signification of — *to it, in it, from it, &c.* ; as,

ci troveremo buon compénso, we shall find in it a good compensation ;

ascoltái quèste parole sénza rispóndervi, I listened to these words without replying to them ;

io non vi consentii, I did not consent to it.

When the particles *ci, vi*, are followed by the pronouns *lo, la, li, gli, le*, they are generally united to them so as to form a single word ; as,

VÉLO avéa condótto, he had conducted him there ;
ingégnati di ritenérCELO, contrive to keep him there.

The particles *ne, ci, vi*, are often used as expletives ; as,

NE andò per la càmera, he went through the room ;
ciascùn che CI nasce, every one who is born ;
dòve VI morì, where [there] died.

EXAMPLES.

Égli, pianaménte andándo, A QUÁNTI in quèlla càsa NE GIACÉVANO TAGLIÒ I CAPÉLLI. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 2.) He, walking softly, cut off the hair of as many of them as slept in that house.

Mi davan sì póco saláro, che io NON NE POTÉVA appéna PAGÁRE I CALZÁRI. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.) They gave me so small a salary, that I could hardly pay for my shoes with it.

Quand' io MÉNE VÉNNI. —
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

When I came thence.

La cénere pósta in álto, NE È
PORTÁTA DAL VÉNTO. (Pass. tr.
Hu. c. 4.)

The ashes placed on high, is
thence carried away by the wind.

A'nzi CI ÉRA VENÚTO per do-
vérgli ammoníre. (Bocc. g. 1. n.
1.)

Nay, I had come hither in order
to admonish him.

Sì tårdi vi giünse, che, esséndo
le pórtte serráte; e i pónti leváti,
ENTRÁR NON VI POTÈ DÉNTRO. —
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

He arrived there so late, that,
the gates being shut, and the
bridges raised, he could not enter
thither.

Veraménte CI SÓNO io ÁLTRE
VÓLTE STÁTO; ma sì m' avéa la
paúra di me trátto, chè cosí cóme
se mái non ci fóssi, d' ésserci
státo mi ricordáva. (Lab.)

Truly I have been here former-
ly; but fear had in such a manner
deprived me of my senses, that I
recollected as little of having been
here, as if I never had been here.

Se égli avviéne, che TU MÁI VI
TÓRNI, fa che tu non sù mái più
gelóso. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)

If it happens that thou shalt ever
return there, take care that thou
be no more jealous.

VÓI VI CI AVÉTE CONDÓTTI.
(Fr. Sacch.)

You have conducted us hither.

PENSÁSTE A ME? — sì CI PEN-
SÁI. (Beimb.)

Did you think of me? -- yes, I
thought of you.

Per avventúra l' ópera nóstra
potrà éssere andáta di módo, che
nói CI TROVERÉMO, coll' aiúto di
Dio, BUÓN COMPÉNNO. (Bocc. g.
2. n. 7.)

Perchance our business may
take such a turn, that we shall
find in it, with the assistance of
God, some compensation.

QUÉSTE PARÓLE, non úna vól-
ta, e SÉNZA RISPÓNDERVI alcú-
na cósá, ASCOLTÁI con gráve á-
nimo. (Bocc. Fiam. l. 5.)

To these words, more than once,
and without replying to them any
thing, I listened with a serious
mind.

Ringranziándo Iddío, CHE
CONDÓTTO VEL' AVÉA. (Bocc. g.
2. n. 4.)

Thanking God that had con-
ducted him there.

Sáppi se égli sa lavoráre, ed
INGÉGNATI DI RITENÉRCELO. —
(Bocc.)

Learn whether he knows how
to work, and contrive to keep him
there.

Chetaménte NE ANDÒ PER LA
CÁMERA infíno álla finéstra. —
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Gently he went through the
room as far as the window.

*Natural ragione è di CIASCUN
CHE CI NASCE, la sua vita, quanto
può, aiutare, e conservare, e di-
fendere.* (Bocc. Introd.)

It is a natural thing to every one
who is born to help, preserve, and
defend his life, as much as he can.

*Costui disfece Jerusalem, dove
VI MORÌ, tra d' arme e di fame,
centinaia di migliaia di Giudei.*
(Petr. Uom. ill. 28.)

This one destroyed Jerusalem,
where there died, both by arms and
of hunger, hundreds of thousands
of Jews.

EXERCISE XV.

The miserable Landolfo, although the day before
miserò , *ancorachè* ³ *dì* ⁴ *davanti* ⁵
had called (the) death many times, seeing it near,
avésse ⁹ *chiamato* ⁸ ⁶ *morte* ⁷ *mólto* ¹ *vólta*, ² *vedéndo* — *présta*,
was afraid of it. He wished that I should see
ebbe ² *paúra* ³ ¹. — *Vólle* *vedéssi*
all the holy relics, and they were so many, that,
sánto *reliquia*, e — *fúron* *tánto*,
if I wished to relate them to you, I never should
se *voléssi* ³ *contáre* ⁴ ² ¹, *non* *ver-*
come to an end (of them). “Oh, my master!”
rei ² ³ — *cápo* ⁴ ¹. “Oh, *mío* *maestro*!” ¹,
said Brúno, “I | do not | wonder (myself) at it,
dicéva , “ | *non* | *maraviglio* ³ ¹ ²,
for I have heard say, that they say nothing —
chè *ho* *udíto* *díre*, — — —
| (do not | say anything) of it.” But yet coming
non | *dícono* ² ³ ¹.” *Ma* *pure* *uscíto* —
out thence, he began to wonder (himself) | more
— *incominciò* ³ ⁴ *maravigliáre* ⁵ *si* ² | *an-*
and more. |
córa *più*. ¹ |

Cause (the) generosity | to be painted | here.
Fáte ¹ ⁴ *cortesia* ⁵ | *dipingere* ³ | ².

| Pretending | | to | | have | returned there
Sembiante facendo | | *di* | | *essere*¹ | *tornato*² .²
 with a great deal more merchandise than before.
con *mercanzia* *prima.*

I | cannot | well relate how I entered there. The
 | *non so* | *bén ridire* *cóme entrái*² .¹

church is so full of people, that no * person can
chiésa è sì piena *gente* , *persóna può*³

any more enter there. Andreuccio, fearing, entered
*più*¹ *entrare*⁴ .² , *temendo* , *entrò*²

there, and entering there he thought within himself.
¹ , *e entrando* — *pensò* *con*² *se*¹

If I | can affect | | to | be dumb, I shall be
Se | *so far vista* | | *di* | *esser muto*lo ,² *sarò*⁴

received there surely.
*ricevuto*⁵ ³ *per certo*¹

They† replied: "It is | very | true; since thou
risposero : " — *è*² | *Bene*¹ | *véro* , *perchè*

art the one who makes us stay here. Alas! Zéppa,
séi *fai*³ ² *stare*⁴ .¹ *Ohimè!* ,

what does this mean? Have you then made me
vuól ² *dír* ?¹ *avéte*⁴ .⁵ *Dunque*¹ *fatto*⁶ .²

come here for this? I will cause it* | to be
*venir*⁷ ³ ? *farò*³ ² | *dipin-*

ainted | here, | in such a manner, | that neither
*gere*⁴ | ¹ , | *di* *maniera* , | *nè*

you nor any other one | will be able | to tell me
nè — — | *potrà*² | *dire*⁴ .¹

any longer, that I have not seen it.† These persons §
*più*³ ⁵ ⁶ *abbia*⁹ *non*⁷ *veduta*¹⁰ ⁸ .

make me enter here | to | deceive me. We wish
*fanno*³ ¹ *entrare*⁴ .² | *per* | *ingannár* — *vogliámo*

* No, here in the signification of no one. † They, in the feminine gender.

† It [the generosity — *la cortesia*], in the feminine gender.

§ These persons, for these men near me.

| | | | |
|--------|----------------|--|-------------------------------|
| to go | and | see this holy man ; | but I, for myself, |
| andare | a | vedere santo ; | ma , me, |
| do not | see how we can | get there. | |
| non | vêdo côme — | possiamo ² pervenire ³ ^{1.} | |

CHAPTER IX.

VERBS.

ALL Italian verbs are classed in *three* different *conjugations*, which are distinguished by the termination of their infinitive.

The *first conjugation* comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in *âre* ; as, *amÂRE*, ‘to love.’

The *second* comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in *êre* ; as *temÊRE*, ‘to fear.’

The *third* comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in *îre* ; as, *sentÎRE*, ‘to hear,’ or ‘to feel.’

All the verbs of these three different conjugations, whether *regular* or *irregular*, are conjugated or *varied* with one of the *auxiliary* verbs, *avêre*, ‘to have,’ or *éssere*, ‘to be’.

VARIATION OF VERBS.

Verbs may be varied in four different ways ; viz. *affirmatively*, *negatively*, *interrogatively*, and *interrogative-negatively*.

In the variation of Italian verbs, the personal pronouns are generally suppressed, the persons being sufficiently

indicated by the different terminations ; but when different *persons* have the *same termination*, the pronouns are *expressed*, to avoid the confusion which might thence arise.

The pronouns are also *expressed* in the *imperative mood* ; and also when verbs are varied in the *interrogative form*, since then the *transposition of the pronoun* distinguishes, in conversation, that form from the affirmative.

In varying the following verbs, we have given, between parentheses, the *poetical forms*, or the peculiar inflexions to which poets have submitted some of the persons of certain tenses of these verbs. Some of these are elegantly *used even in prose*, and some are entirely *confined to verse* ; in order to distinguish the latter from the former, the latter are printed in Roman characters.

AUXILIARY VERBS.

Variation of the Verb Avére affirmatively.

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

Avére, to have.

Compound Tenses.

2. — *Past.*

avére avúto, to have had.

3. — *Future.*

avére ad avére,
éssere per avére,
dovére avére, } to have to have, or
to be about to have.

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

avéndo, having.

5. — *Past.*

avéndo avúto, having had.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

avénte, s.
avénti, p.* } having.

7. — *Past.*

|| *avúto*, m. s., *avúti*, p.
avúta, f. s., *avúte*, p.* } had.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | |
|---|----------------------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>ho</i> or <i>ò</i> I have; [(<i>aggio</i>), | <i>abbiamo</i> (<i>avémo</i>), | we have; |
| 2d p. <i>hai</i> or <i>ai</i> , thou hast; | <i>avéte</i> , | you have; |
| 3d p. <i>ha</i> or <i>à</i> (<i>ave</i>), he, she, or it has; | <i>hanno</i> , or <i>anno</i> , | they have. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|--|---------------------------------|------------------|---------|
| 1st p. <i>io avéva</i> I had, or did [or <i>avéa</i> ,† | [have; | <i>avévamo</i> , | we had; |
| 2d p. <i>avévi</i> , thou hadst; | <i>avévate</i> , | you had; | |
| 3d p. <i>égli</i> or <i>élla</i> he or she had; | <i>avévano</i> or <i>avé-</i> | they had. | |
| [<i>avéva</i> or <i>a-</i> <i>véa</i> (<i>avía</i>), | [<i>ano</i> (<i>avieno</i>), | | |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------|----------------|-----------------|-----------|
| 1st p. <i>ébbi</i> , | I had; | <i>avémmo</i> , | we had; |
| 2d p. <i>avésti</i> , | thou hadst; | <i>avéste</i> , | you had; |
| 3d p. <i>ébbe</i> , | he or she had; | <i>ebbero</i> , | they had. |

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|----------------------|---------------------------|------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>avrò</i> , | I shall or will [have; | <i>avrémo</i> , | we shall have; |
| 2d p. <i>avrái</i> , | thou wilt have; | <i>avréte</i> , | you will have; |
| 3d p. <i>avrà</i> , | he or she will [have; | <i>avránno</i> , | they will have. |

* The present participle of the verb *avére* agrees with the subject of the proposition in gender and number. The past participle agrees, sometimes, with the object in gender and number.

† Some say *avévo*, *éro*, *amávo*, &c. instead of *avéva*, 'I had'; *éra*, 'I was'; *amáva*, 'I loved'; &c., but this usage which, indeed, presents the advantage of distinguishing the first from the third person of the imperfect of verbs, is contrary to the authority of the best classics.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

5. — *Compound of the Present, or — Second Perfect.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|-------------------------|-----------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>ho avúto,</i> | I have had ; | <i>abbiamo avúto,</i> | we have had ; |
| 2d p. <i>hai avúto,</i> | thou hast had ; | <i>avete avúto,</i> | you have had ; |
| 3d p. <i>ha avúto,</i> | he or she has [had ; | <i>hanno avúto,</i> | they have had. |

6. — *Compound of the Imperfect, or — Pluperfect.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------------|-------------|-----------------------|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>io avéva avúto,</i> | I had had , | <i>avévamo avúto,</i> | we had had. |
|-------------------------------|-------------|-----------------------|-------------|

7. — *Compound of the Perfect, or — Second Pluperfect.*

| | |
|---------------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>ebbi avúto,</i> | I had had. |
|---------------------------|------------|

8. — *Compound of the Future, or — Future Anterior.*

| | |
|---------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>avrò avúto,</i> | I shall or will have had. |
|---------------------------|---------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---|--------------------------------|---|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io ábbia</i> (<i>ággia</i>), | that I have, or [may have ; | <i>abbiamo,</i> | that we have ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu ábbia</i> or [<i>ábbi</i> (<i>ággi</i>), | that thou have ; | <i>abbiate,</i> | that you have ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli</i> or <i>ella</i> [<i>la ábbia</i> [(<i>ággia</i>), | that he or she [have ; | <i>abbiano,</i> (<i>ággia</i> - [no), | that they have. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|--------------------------------|---|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>io avéssi,</i> | if I had, or should [have ; | <i>avéssimo,</i> | if we had ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu avéssi,</i> | if thou hadst ; | <i>avéste,</i> | if you had ; |
| 3d p. <i>avésse,</i> | if he or she had ; | <i>avéssero</i> (<i>avés</i> - [<i>sino</i>), | if they had. |

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Compound of the Present, or — Perfect.*

| | | | |
|---|--|-----------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io ábbia</i> [<i>avúto,</i> | that I have had, [or may have [had ; | <i>abbiamo avúto,</i> | that we have had. |
|---|--|-----------------------|-------------------|

4. — *Compound of the Imperfect, or — Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi avúto*, | if I had had, or should have had.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|------------------------------------|--|--|------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>avrèi</i> (a- [vría), | I should, would, [or could have; [or might have; | <i>avrémmo</i> , | we should or [would have; |
| 2d p. <i>avrèsti</i> , | thou wouldst [have; | <i>avrèste</i> , | you would have; |
| 3d p. <i>avrèbbe</i> [(avría), | he or she would [have; | <i>avrèbbero</i> (<i>avri- [ano or avri- [eno),</i> | they would have. |

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Compound of the Present, or — Past.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------------|--|------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>avrèi avú-</i> [to, | I should, would, [or could have [had; or might [have had; | <i>avrémmo avúto</i> , | we should or [would have had. |
|----------------------------------|--|------------------------|----------------------------------|

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|---|--------------------------|---|----------------|
| 1st p. | * | <i>abbiamo nói</i> , | let us have; |
| 2d p. <i>abbi</i> (ág- [gi) tu, | have thou; | <i>abbiate vói</i> , | have ye; |
| 3d p. <i>abbia</i> (ág- [gia) <i>égli</i> or [élla, | let him or her [have; | <i>abbiano</i> (ággia- [no) <i>églino</i> or [élleno, | let them have. |

* The first person of the imperative in all verbs is wanting.

Singular.

Plural.

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|---------------------|---------------------|--------------------|
| 1st p. <i>non avrò,</i> | I shall or will not | <i>non avrémo,</i> | we shall or will |
| | [have; | | [not have; |
| 2d p. <i>non avrái,</i> | thou wilt not | <i>non avréte,</i> | you will not have; |
| | [have; | | |
| 3d p. <i>non avrà,</i> | he or she will | <i>non avránno,</i> | they will not |
| | [not have; | | [have. |

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*1st p. [*io*] *non ho avúto,* | I have not had.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|---------------------|---------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io non</i> | that I have not, or | <i>non abbiámo,</i> | that we have not; |
| [<i>abbia,</i> | [may not have; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu non</i> | that thou have | <i>non abbiáte,</i> | that you have |
| [<i>abbia,</i> | [not; | | [not; |
| 3d p. <i>egli or ella</i> | that he or she | <i>non ábbiano,</i> | that they have |
| [<i>non ábbia,</i> | [have not; | | [not. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|--------------------|----------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io non</i> | if I had not, or | <i>non avéssimo,</i> | if we had not; |
| [<i>avessi,</i> | [should not have; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu non</i> | if thou hadst not; | <i>non avéste,</i> | if you had not; |
| [<i>avessi,</i> | | | |
| 3d p. <i>non avés-</i> | if he or she had | <i>non avéssero,</i> | if they had not. |
| [<i>se,</i> | [not; | | |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|------------------|-----------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>non avréi,</i> | I should, would, | <i>non avrémmo,</i> | we should or |
| | [or could not | | [would not have; |
| | [have; or might | | |
| | [not have; | | |
| 2d p. <i>non avré-</i> | thou wouldst not | <i>non avréste,</i> | you would not |
| [<i>sti,</i> | [have; | | [have; |
| 3d p. <i>non avréb-</i> | he or she would | <i>non avrébbero,</i> | they would not |
| [<i>be,</i> | [not have; | | [have; |

Singular.

Plural.

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------|---|-------------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>non abbiamo</i> | let us not have ; |
| 2d p. <i>non avére*</i> | have not thou ; | <i>non abbiate</i> ^{[noi,} <i>vói,</i> | have not ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>non ábbia</i> | let him or let her | <i>non ábbiano</i> | let them not |
| [<i>égli</i> or <i>élla</i>], | [not have ; | [<i>églino</i> or <i>élleno</i>], | [have. |

Variation of Avére, interrogatively.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|-----------------|------------------------|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>ho ío ?</i> | have I ? | <i>abbiamo nói ?</i> | have we ? |
| 2d p. <i>háí tu ?</i> | hast thou ? | <i>avéte vói ?</i> | have you ? |
| 3d p. <i>ha égli</i> or | has he or she ? | <i>hánno églino</i> or | have they ? |
| [<i>élla ?</i>] | | [<i>élleno ?</i>] | |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-----------------|-----------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>avéva ío ?</i> | had I ? | <i>avevamo nói ?</i> | had we ? |
| 2d p. <i>avévi tu ?</i> | hadst thou ? | <i>aveváte vói ?</i> | had you ? |
| 3d p. <i>avéva égli</i> | had he or she ? | <i>avévano églino</i> | had they ? |
| [or <i>élla ?</i>] | | [or <i>élleno ?</i>] | |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-----------------|-------------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>ébbi ío ?</i> | had I ? | <i>avémmo nói ?</i> | had we ? |
| 2d p. <i>avésti tu ?</i> | hadst thou ? | <i>avéste vói ?</i> | had you ? |
| 3d p. <i>ébbe égli</i> | had he or she ? | <i>ebbero églino</i> or | had they ? |
| [or <i>élla ?</i>] | | [<i>élleno ?</i>] | |

* The second person of the imperative of Italian verbs, preceded by the negative particle *non*, is changed for the present of the infinitive of the same verbs : as, *non avére* (instead of *non ábbi*), 'have not [thou].' Poets, however, and Ariosto and Alfieri in particular, have used both forms indiscriminately.

Singular.

Plural.

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|--|----------------------------|---|-----------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>avrò io?</i> | shall or will I [have?] | <i>avrémò nói?</i> | shall or will we [have?] |
| 2d p. <i>avràì tu?</i> | wilt thou have? | <i>avréte vói?</i> | will you have? |
| 3d p. <i>avrà égli</i> [or <i>élla?</i>] | will he or she [have?] | <i>avránno églino</i> [or <i>élleno?</i>] | will they have? |

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

| | |
|---|-------------|
| 1st. p. <i>ho io avúto,</i> or [<i>ho avúto io?</i>] | have I had? |
|---|-------------|

III. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---|--------------------------------------|---|-------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>avréi io?</i> | should, would, or [could I have?] | <i>avrémmo nói?</i> | should or would [we have?] |
| 2d p. <i>avrésti tu?</i> | wouldst thou [have?] | <i>avréste vói?</i> | would you have? |
| 3d p. <i>avrèbbe</i> [<i>égli</i> or <i>élla?</i>] | would he or she [have?] | <i>avrèbbero églino</i> [or <i>élleno?</i>] | would they have? |

Variation of Avére, interrogative-negatively.

I. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|-------------------------|--|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>non ho io?</i> | have I not? | <i>non abbíamo nói?</i> | have we not? |
| 2d p. <i>non háì</i> [<i>tu?</i>] | hast thou not? | <i>non avéte vói?</i> | have you not? |
| 3d p. <i>non ha</i> [<i>égli</i> or <i>élla?</i>] | has he or she [not?] | <i>non hánno égli</i> [<i>no</i> or <i>élleno?</i>] | have they not? |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|---|------------|---------------------------------------|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>non avéva</i> [<i>ío?</i>] | had I not? | <i>non avevámò</i> [<i>nói?</i>] | had we not? |
|---|------------|---------------------------------------|-------------|

3. — *Perfect.*

| | |
|-----------------------------|------------|
| 1st. p. <i>non ébbi io?</i> | had I not? |
|-----------------------------|------------|

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *non avrò io ?* | shall or will I not have ?

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *non ho io avuto,* | have I not had ?
[or *non ho avuto io ?*]

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *non avrei io ?* | should, would, or
[could I not have ?]

Variation of the Verb Éssere.

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

2. — *Past.*

| | | | |
|----------------|--------|---|-----------------|
| <i>Éssere,</i> | to be. | <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <i>éssere státo, m. s.</i> <i>[státi, p.]</i> <i>essére státa, f. s.</i> <i>[státe, p.*]</i> </div> </div> </div> | } to have been. |
|----------------|--------|---|-----------------|

3. — *Future.*

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| <i>éssere per éssere,</i> <i>avére ad éssere,</i> <i>dovére éssere,</i> | <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> </div> </div> </div> | <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> </div> </div> |
| | | } to be about to be, or to have to be. |

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

5. — *Past.*

| | | |
|----------------------------------|---|---|
| <i>esséndo(séndo†),</i> being. | <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> </div> </div> </div> | <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> </div> </div> </div> |
| | | } having been. |

* The past participle of the verb *éssere*, always agrees with the subject, in gender and number; thus we say, *io sono státo*, if the subject is masculine singular; *io sono státa*, if feminine singular; and *nói siamo státi*, if the subject is masculine plural; *nói siamo státe*, if feminine plural, and so on.

† Some authors, and Machiavelli in particular, have used this form constantly in prose.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

(essénte, s.,
essénti, p.,*) } being;

7. — *Past.*

|| státo, m. s.
[státi, p.
státa, f. s.
[státe, p. } been.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|------------|----------------------|-----------|
| 1st p. <i>io sóno,</i> | I am ; | <i>siámo (sémo),</i> | we are ; |
| 2d p. <i>séi or se',</i> | thou art ; | <i>siéte (séte),</i> | you are ; |
| 3d p. <i>è,</i> | he is ; | <i>églino sóno,</i> | they are. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|-------------|----------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>io éra,</i> | I was ; | <i>eravámo</i> (éra- | we were ; |
| | | [mo),† | |
| 2d p. <i>éri,</i> | thou wast ; | <i>eraváte,</i> | you were ; |
| 3d p. <i>égli éra,</i> | he was ; | <i>éranó,</i> | they were. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|-------------|-----------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>fúi,</i> | I was ; | <i>fúmmo,</i> | we were ; |
| 2d p. <i>fósti,</i> | thou wast ; | <i>fóste,</i> | you were ; |
| 3d p. <i>fu (fúe),</i> | he was ; | <i>fúrono</i> (fúnno, | they were. |
| | | [fúnno, fúro, fur, | |
| | | [or fóro), | |

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|----------------------|------------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>sarò (fía),</i> | I shall or will be ; | <i>sarémo,</i> | we shall or will |
| | | | [be ; |
| 2d p. <i>sarái,</i> | thou wilt be ; | <i>saréte,</i> | you will be ; |
| 3d p. <i>sard (fía,</i> | he will be ; | <i>saránno (fíano,</i> | they will be. |
| [fíe), | | [fíeno), | |

* These forms are *obsolete*.

† Old writers have used *éramo* even in prose, and Alfieri has followed their usage in his *Vita*.

Singular.

Plural.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

| | | | |
|---|--------------------------|---|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io sono</i> [<i>stato</i> , m., [<i>stata</i> , f., | I have been ; | <i>siámo státi</i> , m. [<i>státe</i> , f. | we have been ; |
| 2d p. <i>séi státo</i> , [<i>-a</i> , | thou hast been ; | <i>siéte státi</i> , -e, | you have been ; |
| 3d p. <i>è státo</i> , -a, | he or she has [been ; | <i>églino sóno státi</i> , [or <i>élleno státe</i> , | they have been. |

6. — *Pluperfect.*

| | | | |
|--|--------------|----------------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>io éra stá-</i> [<i>to</i> , -a, | I had been ; | <i>eravámo státi</i> , -e, | we had been. |
|--|--------------|----------------------------|--------------|

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

| | | | |
|--|--------------|--------------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>fúi státo</i> , [<i>-a</i> , | I had been ; | <i>fúmmo státi</i> , -e, | we had been. |
|--|--------------|--------------------------|--------------|

8. — *Future Anterior.*

| | | | |
|---|---------------------------------|---------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>sarò státo</i> , [<i>-a</i> , | I shall or will [have been ; | <i>sarémo státi</i> , -e, | we shall or will [have been. |
|---|---------------------------------|---------------------------|---------------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|----------------------------|--------------------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>io sia</i> , | that I be, or [may be ; | <i>siámo</i> , | that we be ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu sia</i> or [<i>sii</i> , | that thou be ; | <i>siáte</i> , | that you be ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli sia</i> , | that he be ; | <i>siáno</i> or <i>sieno</i> , | that they be. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|--|--------------------------------|------------------------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>io fóssi</i> [(<i>fússi</i>),*] | if I were ; or [should be ; | <i>fóssimo</i> , | if we were ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu fóssi</i> , | if thou wert ; | <i>fóste</i> , | if you were ; |
| 3d p. <i>fósse</i> , | if he were ; | <i>fóssero</i> (<i>fóssino</i>), | if they were. |

* This form, as well as *fússe*, and *fússero* used by Villani, Machiavelli, Guicciardini, even in prose, has become *obsolete*.

Singular.

Plural.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | | |
|------------------|-----------------|---------------------|-------------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>io</i> | <i>sía stá-</i> | that I have been, | <i>siámo státi, -e,</i> | that we have |
| | <i>[to, -a,</i> | <i>[or may have</i> | | <i>[been.</i> |
| | | <i>[been ;</i> | | |

4. — *Pluperfect.*

| | | | | |
|------------------|--------------------|-----------------|---------------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io</i> | <i>fóssi</i> | if I had been ; | <i>fóssimo státi, -e,</i> | if we had been. |
| | <i>[státo, -a,</i> | | | |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------|---------------------|
| 1st p. <i>saréi (sa-</i> | I should, would, | <i>sarémmo,</i> | we should <i>or</i> |
| <i>[ría, fóra),</i> | <i>[or could be ;</i> | | <i>[would be ;</i> |
| | <i>[or might be ;</i> | | |
| 2d p. <i>sarésti,</i> | thou wouldst be ; | <i>saréste,</i> | you would be ; |
| 3d p. <i>sarébbe</i> | he would be ; | <i>sarébbéro (sarí-</i> | they would be. |
| <i>[(saría, fóra),</i> | | <i>[ano or saríeno,</i> | |
| | | <i>[fórano),</i> | |

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-------------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>saríi stá-</i> | I should, would, | <i>sarémmo státi,</i> | we should, |
| <i>[to, -a,</i> | <i>[or could have</i> | <i>[-e,</i> | <i>[would, or could</i> |
| | <i>[been ; or might</i> | | <i>[have been.</i> |
| | <i>[have been ;</i> | | |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--------------------------------|--------------|------------------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>siámo nói,</i> | let us be ; |
| 2d p. <i>sía</i> or <i>stí</i> | be thou ; | <i>siáte vói,</i> | be ye ; |
| <i>[tu,</i> | | <i>síano</i> or <i>síeno</i> | let them be. |
| 3d p. <i>sía égli,</i> | let him be ; | <i>[églino,</i> | |

REGULAR VERBS.

Variation of Active Verbs.

Active verbs, in the compound tenses, are varied with the auxiliary verb *avére*, 'to have.'

FIRST CONJUGATION.

Variation of the Verb Amáre.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *áre*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

1. — *Present.**Am-áre* to love.

Compound Tenses.

2. — *Past.**avére amáto*, to have loved.3. — *Future.*

avére ad amáre,
éssere per amáre,
dovére amáre,

} to have to love, or
 } to be about to love.

GERUND.

4. — *Present.**am-ándo*, loving.5. — *Past.**avéndo amáto*, having loved.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

am-ánte, s., *am-*
 [-*ánti*, p.* } loving.

7. — *Past.*

am-áto, m. s.,
 [*am-áti*, p.* } loved.
am-áta, f. s.,
 [*am-áte*, p.* }

* The present participle of active verbs, like that of *avére*, agrees with the subject of the proposition in gender and number. The past participle agrees, sometimes, with the object in gender and number.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------|---|------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>ám-o</i> , | I love, or do [love, or am [loving; | <i>am-íamo</i> , | we love ; |
| 2d p. <i>ám-i</i> , | thou lovest ; | <i>am-áte</i> , | you love ; |
| 3d p. <i>ám-a</i> , | he loves ; | <i>ám-ano</i> , | they love. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------------------|---|-------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío am-áva</i> , | I loved, or did [love, or was [loving ; | <i>am-avámo</i> , | we loved ; |
| 2d p. <i>am-ávi</i> , | thou lovedst ; | <i>am-aváte</i> , | you loved ; |
| 3d p. <i>égli am- [-áva</i> , | he loved ; | <i>am-ávano</i> , | they loved ; |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|----------------------------|--|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>am-ái</i> , | I loved, or did [love ; | <i>am-ámmo</i> , | we loved ; |
| 2d p. <i>am-ásti</i> , | thou lovedst ; | <i>am-áste</i> , | you loved ; |
| 3d p. <i>am-ò</i> , | he loved ; | <i>am-árono</i> (<i>am- [-áro or am-ár</i>), | they loved. |

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|----------------------------|---------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>am-erò</i> ,* | I shall or will [love ; | <i>am-erémo</i> , | we shall or will [love ; |
| 2d p. <i>am-erái</i> , | thou wilt love ; | <i>am-eréte</i> , | you will love ; |
| 3d p. <i>am-erà</i> , | he will love ; | <i>am-eránnno</i> , | they will love ; |

* The verbs of this conjugation in the *future* and the *conditional*, change the *a* of their terminations for *e*, and make *am-erò*, &c.; *am-eréi*, &c.; instead of *am-arò*, &c.; *am-aréi*, &c.

Singular.

Plural.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|--------------------------------|-----------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>ho' amáto,</i> | I have loved ; | <i>abbiámo amáto,</i> | we have loved ; |
| 2d p. <i>háí amáto,</i> | thou hast loved ; | <i>avéte amáto,</i> | you have loved ; |
| 3d p. <i>ha amáto,</i> | he, she, or it has [loved ; | <i>hánno amáto,</i> | they have loved. |

6. — *Pluperfect.*

| | | | |
|---|---------------|-----------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>íó avéva</i> [<i>amáto,</i> | I had loved ; | <i>avevámo amáto,</i> | we had loved. |
|---|---------------|-----------------------|---------------|

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

| | |
|---------------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>ébbi amáto,</i> | I had loved. |
|---------------------------|--------------|

8. — *Future Anterior.*

| | |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>avrò amáto,</i> | I shall or will have loved. |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---|--------------------------------|-----------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío am-i</i> [(<i>ám-e</i>), | that I love, or [may love ; | <i>am-iámo,</i> | that we love ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu am-i,</i> | that thou lovest ; | <i>am-iáte,</i> | that you love ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli am-i</i> [(<i>ám-e</i>), | that he loves ; | <i>ám-ino,</i> | that they love. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|----------------------------------|--|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío am-ássi,</i> | if I loved, or [should love ; | <i>am-ássimo,</i> | if we loved ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu am-ássi,</i> | if thou lovedst ; | <i>am-áste,</i> | if you loved ; |
| 3d p. <i>am-ásse,</i> | if he loved ; | <i>am-ássero</i> (am- [- <i>ássino</i>), | if they loved. |

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | |
|-------------------------------|--|
| 1st p. <i>ío ábbia amáto,</i> | that I have loved, or [may have loved ; |
|-------------------------------|--|

4. -- *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi amáto*, | if I had loved.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|---|---|--------------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>am-eréi</i> , [(<i>am-ería</i>), | I should, would, [or could love, [or might love ; | <i>am-erémmo</i> , | we should, would [or could love ; |
| 2d p. <i>am-erésti</i> , | thou wouldst [love ; | <i>am-eréste</i> , | you would love ; |
| 3d p. <i>am-erébbe</i> , [(<i>am-ería</i>), | he would love ; | <i>am-erébbero</i> (<i>am-</i> [- <i>eriano</i> , <i>am-</i> [- <i>erieno</i>), | they would love. |

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

| | |
|-----------------------------|---|
| 1st p. <i>avréi amáto</i> , | I should, would, or could have [loved ; or might have loved. |
|-----------------------------|---|

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|---------------|------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>am-idmo nói</i> , | let us love ; |
| 2d p. <i>ám-a tu</i> , | love thou ; | <i>ám-áte vói</i> , | love ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>ám-i égli</i> , | et him love ; | <i>ám-ino églino</i> , | let them love. |

Besides the foregoing changes of termination, there are some verbs of the first conjugation, which undergo in some persons and tenses a change of orthography : Thus, verbs ending in *cáre*, *gáre*, in order to preserve the hard sound of *c*, *g*, in all their inflections, take an *h* after those consonants whenever they are followed by *e*, *i* ; as, *cercáre*, ‘to search’ ; *pregáre*, ‘to entreat.’

Variation of the Verb Cercare.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *càre*.)

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|---|---------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>cérc-o</i> , | I search, or do [search, or am [searching ; | <i>cerch-iámo</i> , | we search ; |
| 2d p. <i>cérc-h-i</i> , | thou searchest ; | <i>cerc-áte</i> , | you search ; |
| 3d p. <i>cérc-a</i> , | he searches ; | <i>cérc-ano</i> , | they search. |

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|------------------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>cerch-erò</i> , | I shall or will [search ; | <i>cerch-erémo</i> , | we shall or will [search ; |
| 2d p. <i>cerch-erái</i> , | thou wilt search ; | <i>cerch-eréte</i> , | you will search ; |
| 3d p. <i>cerch-erà</i> , | he will search ; | <i>cerch-eránno</i> , | they will search. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------|--|---------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io cerc-h-i</i> | that I search, or [(<i>cérc-h-e</i>), [may search ; | <i>cerch-iámo</i> , | that we search ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu cerc-h-i</i> | that thou search ; | <i>cerch-iáte</i> , | that you search ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli cerc-h-i</i> | that he search ; [(<i>cérc-h-e</i>), | <i>cérc-ino</i> , | that they search. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|---|--|---|
| 1st p. <i>cerch-eréi</i> | I should, would, [(<i>cerch-ería</i>), [or could | <i>cerch-erémmo</i> , | we should, would, [or could search ; |
| | [search ; or [might search ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>cerch-eré-</i> | thou wouldst | <i>cerch-eréste</i> , | you would search ; |
| | [<i>sti</i> , [search ; | | |
| 3d p. <i>cerch-eréb-</i> | he would search ; | <i>cerch-erébbero</i> | they would search. |
| | [<i>be</i> (<i>cerch-ería</i>), | [(<i>cerch-eriano</i> , [<i>cerch-erieno</i>), | |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| Singular. | | Plural. |
|-------------------------|----------------------------|---|
| 1st p. | | <i>cercH-iámo nói,</i> let us search ; |
| 2d p. <i>cérc-a tu,</i> | search thou ; | <i>cerc-áte vói,</i> search ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>cércH-i</i> | let him, her, or it | <i>cércH-ino égli-</i> let them search. |
| | [<i>égli,</i> [search ; | [<i>no,</i> |

Variation of the Verb Pregáre.(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *gáre*.)

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------|-------------------|--------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>prég-o,</i> | I entreat, or do | <i>pregH-iámo,</i> | we entreat ; |
| | [entreat, or am | | |
| | [entreating ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>prégH-i,</i> | thou entreatest ; | <i>prég-áte,</i> | you entreat ; |
| 3d p. <i>prég-a,</i> | he entreats ; | <i>prég-ano,</i> | they entreat. |

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|---------------------|----------------------|--------------------|
| 1st p. <i>pregH-erò,</i> | I shall or will en- | <i>pregH-erémo,</i> | we shall or will |
| | [treat ; | | [entreat ; |
| 2d p. <i>pregH-erái,</i> | thou wilt entreat ; | <i>pregH-eréte,</i> | you will entreat ; |
| 3d p. <i>pregH-erà,</i> | he will entreat ; | <i>pregH-eránnò,</i> | they will entreat. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|----------------------|--------------------|--------------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío prégH-i</i> | that I entreat, or | <i>pregH-iámo,</i> | that we entreat ; |
| | [(<i>prégH-e</i>), | | |
| | [may entreat ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu prégH-i,</i> | that thou entreat ; | <i>pregH-iáte,</i> | that you entreat ; |
| 3d p. <i>égli prégH-i</i> | that he entreat. | <i>prégH-ino,</i> | that they entreat. |
| | [(<i>prégH-e</i>), | | |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|--|---|---|
| 1st p. <i>pregH-eréi</i> [(<i>pregH-ería</i>), | I should, would, [or could en- [treat; or might [entreat; | <i>pregH-erémmo</i> , | we should, would, [or could en- [treat; |
| 2d p. <i>pregH-eré-</i> [<i>sti</i> , | thou wouldst en- [treat; | <i>pregH-eréste</i> , | you would en- [treat; |
| 3d p. <i>pregH-eréb-</i> [<i>be</i> (<i>pregH-</i> [<i>-eria</i>), | he would en- [treat; | <i>pregH-erébbero</i> [(<i>pregH-eriano</i> , [<i>pregH-erieno</i>), | they would en- [treat. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|---|----------------------------------|---|-------------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>pregH-íamo nôi</i> , | let us entreat; |
| 2d p. <i>prég-a tu</i> , | entreat thou; | <i>prég-áte vôi</i> , | entreat ye; |
| 3d p. <i>prégH-i</i> [<i>égli</i> , | let him, her, or it [entreat; | <i>prégH-ino égli-</i> [<i>no</i> , | let them entreat. |

Verbs ending in *ciäre*, *giäre*, drop the *i*, which follows *c*, *g*, whenever *ci*, *gi*, precede *e*, *i*; as, *baciäre*, ‘to kiss’; *fregiäre*, ‘to adorn.’

Variation of the Verb Baciäre.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ciäre*.)

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|---------------------------------------|-------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>báci-o</i> , | I kiss or do kiss, [or am kissing; | <i>bac-íamo</i> , | we kiss; |
| 2d p. <i>bác-i</i> , | thou kissest; | <i>baci-áte</i> , | you kiss; |
| 3d p. <i>báci-a</i> | he kisses; | <i>báci-ano</i> , | they kiss. |

Singular.

Plural.

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|------------------|--------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>bac-erò,</i> | I shall, or will | <i>bac-erémo,</i> | we shall, or will |
| | [kiss ; | | [kiss ; |
| 2d p. <i>bac-erái,</i> | thou wilt kiss ; | <i>bac-eréte,</i> | you will kiss ; |
| 3d p. <i>bac-erà,</i> | he will kiss ; | <i>bac-eránnò,</i> | they will kiss. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|------------------|------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io bác-i</i> | that I kiss, or | <i>bac-íámo,</i> | that we kiss ; |
| [(bác-e), | [may kiss ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu bác-i,</i> | that thou kiss ; | <i>bac-íáte,</i> | that you kiss ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli bác-i</i> | that he kiss ; | <i>bác-ino,</i> | that they kiss. |
| [(bác-e), | | | |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|------------------|---------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>bac-eréi</i> | I should, would, | <i>bac-erémmo,</i> | we should, would, |
| [(bac-ería), | [or could kiss ; | | [or could kiss ; |
| | [or might kiss ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>bac-erésti,</i> | thou wouldst | <i>bac-eréste,</i> | you would kiss ; |
| | [kiss ; | | |
| 3d p. <i>bac-erébbe</i> | he would kiss ; | <i>bac-erébbero</i> | they would kiss. |
| [(bac-ería), | | [(bac-eriano, | |
| | | [bac-erieno), | |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|----------------|------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>bac-íámo nói,</i> | let us kiss ; |
| 2d p. <i>bác-i-a tu,</i> | kiss thou ; | <i>bác-i-áte vói,</i> | kiss ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>bác-i egli,</i> | let him kiss ; | <i>bác-ino églina,</i> | let them kiss. |

Variation of the Verb Fregiäre.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *giäre*.)

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|--|--------------------|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>fréGI-o</i> , | I adorn, do adorn, [or am adorning; | <i>freg-iämo</i> , | we adorn; |
| 2d p. <i>frég-i</i> , | thou adornest; | <i>freg-iäte</i> , | you adorn; |
| 3d p. <i>fréGI-a</i> , | he adorns; | <i>fréGI-ano</i> , | they adorn. |

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|----------------------------|----------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>freg-erò</i> , | I shall or will [adorn; | <i>freg-erémo</i> , | we shall or will [adorn; |
| 2d p. <i>freg-erái</i> , | thou wilt adorn; | <i>freg-eréte</i> , | you will adorn; |
| 3d p. <i>freg-erà</i> , | he will adorn; | <i>freg-eránno</i> , | they will adorn. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|---------------------------------|--------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io frég-i</i> [(frég-e), | that I adorn, or [may adorn; | <i>freg-iämo</i> , | that we adorn; |
| 2d p. <i>tu frég-i</i> , | that thou adorn; | <i>freg-iäte</i> , | that you adorn; |
| 3d p. <i>egli frég-i</i> [(frég-e), | that he adorn; | <i>frég-ino</i> , | that they adorn. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---|--|---|---------------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>freg-eréi</i> [(freg-ería), | I should, would, [or could adorn; [or might adorn; | <i>freg-erémmo</i> , | we should, would, [or could adorn; |
| 2d p. <i>freg-erésti</i> , | thou wouldst a- [dorn; | <i>freg-eréste</i> , | you would adorn; |
| 3d p. <i>freg-erébbe</i> [(freg-ería), | he would adorn; | <i>freg-erébbero</i> , [(freg-eriano), [freg-erieno), | they would adorn. |

Singular.

Plural.

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|---------------------------|-----------------|-------------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>freg-iámo nói,</i> | let us adorn ; |
| 2d p. <i>fregi-a tu,</i> | adorn thou ; | <i>fregi-áte vói,</i> | adorn ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>freg-i égli,</i> | let him adorn ; | <i>freg-ino églino,</i> | let them adorn. |

Verbs ending in *iáre*, in which *ia* form one syllable, drop the *i* whenever it is followed by another *i* ; as,

Noiáre, ‘to annoy.’

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *iáre*.)

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------|-----------------|-----------------|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>nói-o,</i> | I annoy, do an- | <i>no-iámo,</i> | we annoy ; |
| | [noy, or am | | |
| | [annoying ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>nó-i,</i> | thou annoiest ; | <i>noi-áte,</i> | you annoy ; |
| 3d p. <i>nói-a,</i> | he annoys ; | <i>nói-ano,</i> | they annoy. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|-------------------|-----------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io nó-i</i> | that I annoy or | <i>no-iámo,</i> | that we annoy ; |
| [(nói-e), | [may annoy ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu nó-i,</i> | that thou annoy ; | <i>no-iáte,</i> | that you annoy ; |
| 3d p. <i>égli nó-i</i> | that he annoy ; | <i>nó-ino,</i> | that they annoy. |
| [(nói-e), | | | |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|-------------------------|-----------------|-----------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>no-iámo,</i> | let us annoy ; |
| 2d p. <i>nói-a tu,</i> | annoy thou ; | <i>noi-áte,</i> | annoy ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>nó-i égli,</i> | let him annoy ; | <i>nó-ino,</i> | let them annoy. |

Verbs ending in *iâre*, in which *ia* form two syllables, drop the *i*, only when it would be followed by the vowels *ia*; as,

Inviâre, 'to send.'

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|--------------------------------------|-------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>inví-o</i> , | I send, do send, [or am sending ; | <i>inv-iâmo</i> , | we send ; |
| 2d p. <i>inví-i</i> , | thou sendest ; | <i>inví-âte</i> , | you send ; |
| 3d p. <i>inví-a</i> , | he sends ; | <i>inví-ano</i> , | they send. |

SECOND CONJUGATION.

The verbs of this conjugation are commonly divided into two classes, those ending in *ēre* (*long*), and those ending in *ĕre* (*short*) : both of these in the *perfect* have two terminations, *éi* and *étti* ; except a few which have the termination *éi* only.

Variation of the Verb Temére.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ēre* (*long*) ; and of those which in the *perfect* end in *éi* and *étti*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

2. — *Past.*

Tem-ére, |to fear. || *avére temúto*, |to have feared.

3. — *Future.*

| | |
|---------------------------|---|
| <i>avère a temére,</i> | } to have to fear, or to be about to fear. |
| <i>èssere per temére,</i> | |
| <i>dovère temére,</i> | |

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*5. — *Past.*

| | | | |
|------------------|-----------|-----------------------|----------------|
| <i>tem-éndo,</i> | fearing ; | <i>avéndo temúto,</i> | having feared. |
|------------------|-----------|-----------------------|----------------|

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*7. — *Past.*

| | | | |
|----------------------|-------------|--|-----------|
| <i>tem-énte, s.,</i> | } fearing ; | <i>tem-úto, m. s.,</i> [<i>tem-úti, p.,</i> <i>tem-úta, f. s.,</i> [<i>tem-úte, p.,</i> | } feared. |
| <i>tem-énti, p.,</i> | | | |

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------|---|---|------------|
| 1st p. <i>tém-o,</i> | I fear, or do [fear, or am [fearing ; | <i>tem-iámo</i> (<i>tem-</i> [<i>-émo</i>), | we fear ; |
| 2d p. <i>tém-i,</i> | thou fearest ; | <i>tem-éte,</i> | you fear ; |
| 3d p. <i>tém-e,</i> | he fears ; | <i>tém-ono,</i> | they fear. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|---|---|--|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>íio tem-éva</i> [or <i>tem-éa,</i> | I feared, or did [fear, or was [fearing ; | <i>tem-evámo,</i> | we feared ; |
| 2d p. <i>tem-évi,</i> | thou fearest ; | <i>tem-eváte,</i> | you feared ; |
| 3d p. <i>égli tem-</i> [<i>-éva</i> or <i>tem-éa,</i> | he feared ; | <i>tem-evano</i> or [<i>tem-éano,</i> [(<i>tem-ieno</i>), | they feared. |

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|--|----------------------------|---|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>tem-ÉI</i> or [<i>tem-ÉTTI</i> , [(<i>tem-é'</i>)], | I feared, or did [fear; | <i>tem-émmo</i> , | we feared ; |
| 2d p. <i>tem-ésti</i> , | thou fearedst ; | <i>tem-éste</i> , | you feared ; |
| 3d p. <i>tem-È</i> or [<i>tem-ÉTTE</i> [(<i>tem-éo</i>)], | he feared ; | <i>tem-ÉRONO</i> or [<i>tem-ÉTTERO</i> [(<i>tem-éro</i> , <i>tem-ér</i>) | they feared. |

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|---------------------------|---------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>tem-erò</i> , | I shall or will [fear; | <i>tem-erémo</i> , | we shall or will [fear ; |
| 2d p. <i>tem-eràì</i> , | thou wilt fear ; | <i>tem-eréte</i> , | you will fear ; |
| 3d p. <i>tem-erà</i> , | he will fear ; | <i>tem-eránno</i> , | they will fear. |

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|-----------------|-------------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>ho temúto</i> , | I have feared ; | <i>abbiamo temúto</i> , | we have feared. |
|---------------------------|-----------------|-------------------------|-----------------|

6. — *Pluperfect.*

| | | |
|---------------------------------|--|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>io aveva temúto</i> , | | I had feared. |
|---------------------------------|--|---------------|

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

| | | |
|-----------------------------|--|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>ebbi temúto</i> , | | I had feared. |
|-----------------------------|--|---------------|

8. — *Future Anterior.*

| | | |
|-----------------------------|--|------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>avrò temúto</i> , | | I shall or will have feared. |
|-----------------------------|--|------------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|--------------------------------|-------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io tém-a</i> , | that I fear, or [may fear ; | <i>tem-idmo</i> , | that we fear ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu tém-a</i> or [<i>tém-i</i> , | that thou fear ; | <i>tem-idte</i> , | that you fear ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli tém-a</i> , | that he fear ; | <i>tém-ano</i> , | that they fear. |

Singular.

Plural.

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------------|--|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io tem-éssi</i> , | if I feared, or [should fear ; | <i>tem-éssimo</i> , | if we feared ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu tem-éssi</i> , | if thou fearedst ; | <i>tem-éste</i> , | if you feared ; |
| 3d p. <i>tem-ésse</i> , | if he feared ; | <i>tem-éssero</i> (<i>tem- -éssino</i>), | if they feared. |

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | |
|---------------------------------|---|
| 1st p. <i>io abbia temúto</i> , | that I have feared, or [may have feared. |
|---------------------------------|---|

4. — *Pluperfect.*

| | |
|----------------------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io avéssi temúto</i> , | if I had feared. |
|----------------------------------|------------------|

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|--|---|---------------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>tem-eréi</i> [(<i>tem-ería</i>), | I should, would, [or could fear ; [or might fear ; | <i>tem-erémmo</i> , | we should, would, [or could fear ; |
| 2d p. <i>tem-erésti</i> , | thou wouldst [fear ; | <i>tem-eréste</i> , | you would fear ; |
| 3d p. <i>tem-erébbe</i> [(<i>tem-ería</i>), | he would fear ; | <i>tem-erébbero</i> [(<i>tem-eriano</i> , [<i>tem-erieno</i>), | they would fear. |

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

| | |
|------------------------------|---|
| 1st p. <i>avréi temúto</i> , | I should, would, or could have [feared ; or might have feared. |
|------------------------------|---|

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|---------------------------|----------------|-------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>tem-idmo nói</i> , | let us fear ; |
| 2d p. <i>tém-i tu</i> | fear thou ; | <i>tem-éte vói</i> , | fear ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>tém-a égli</i> , | let him fear ; | <i>tém-ano églino</i> , | let them fear. |

Variation of the Verb Tessere.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ĕre* (*short*); and of those which in the *perfect* end in *ĕi* only.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

2. — *Past.*

Tĕss-ere, |to weave. || *avĕre tessúto*, |to have woven.

3. — *Future.*

avĕre a tessere,
ĕssere per tessere,
dovĕre tessere, } to have to weave, or
to be about to weave.

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

5. — *Past.*

tĕss-ĕndo, |weaving. || *avĕndo tessúto*, |having woven.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

7. — *Past.*

tĕss-ĕnte, s., } weaving.
tĕss-ĕnti, p., }
|| *tĕss-úto*, m. s., } woven.
[*tĕss-úti*, p., }
tĕss-úta, f. s., }
[*tĕss-úte*, p., }

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *tĕss-o*, | I weave, or do | *tĕss-idmo* (*tĕss-* | we weave.
[weave, or am | [-ĕmo), |
[weaving; |

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io tess-éva* or *tess-éa*, | I wove, or did weave, or
[was weaving.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------------------|----------------|----------------------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>tess-éi</i> , | I wove, or did | <i>tess-émmo</i> , | we wove ; |
| | [weave ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tess-ésti</i> , | thou wovest ; | <i>tess-éste</i> , | you wove ; |
| 3d p. <i>tess-è</i> (<i>tess-</i> | he wove ; | <i>tess-érono</i> (<i>tess-</i> | they wove. |
| <i>[-éo]</i> , | | <i>[-éro]</i> , | |

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *tess-erò*, | I shall or will weave.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *ho tessúto*, | I have woven.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *io avéva tessúto*, | I had woven.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. *ébbi tessúto*, | I had woven.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. *avrò tessúto*, | I shall or will have woven.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io téss-a*, | that I weave, or may weave.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io tess-éssi*, | if I wove, or should weave.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *io abbia tessúto*, | if I wove, or should weave.

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *io avéssi tessúto*, | if I had woven.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *tess-eréi* (*tess-ería*), | I should, would, *or* could weave ;
[or might weave.]

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. *avréi tessúto*, | I should, would, *or* could have
[woven ; *or* might have woven.]

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. |
2d p. *téss-i tu*, | weave thou.

[For a list of Verbs of the Second Conjugation, that in the *perfect* end in *éi*, or in *éi* and *étti*, see APPENDIX, F.]

Verbs ending in *cēre* (*long*), in order to preserve the soft sound of *c* in all their inflections, take an *i* after that consonant, whenever it is followed by *a*, *o*, *u* ; as,

Tacére, ‘ to be silent.’

(Paradigm of verbs ending in *cēre* (*long*)*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

7. — *Past.*

taci-úto, m. s., *taci-úti*, p., } been silent.
taci-úta, f. s., *taci-úte*, p., }

* These verbs are subject, also, to some irregularities, which will be noticed in treating of *Irregular Verbs*.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|-------------------|------------------------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>táci-o*</i> (tác- [ci-o), | I am silent ; | <i>tac-íamo,</i> | we are silent ; |
| 2d p. <i>tác-i,</i> | thou art silent ; | <i>tac-éte,</i> | you are silent ; |
| 3d p. <i>tác-e,</i> | he is silent ; | <i>táci-ono</i> (tác- [ci-ono), | they are silent. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|--|------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io táci-a</i> [(tác- [ci-a), | that I be silent, or [may be silent ; | <i>tac-íamo,</i> | that we be silent ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu táci-a</i> [(tác- [ci-a), | that thou be si- [lent ; | <i>tac-íate,</i> | that you be si- [lent ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli táci-a</i> [(tác- [ci-a), | that he be silent ; | <i>táci-ano</i> (tác- [ci-ano), | that they be si- [lent. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--|---------------------|--|--------------------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>tac-íamo nói,</i> | let us be silent ; |
| 2d p. <i>tác-i tu,</i> | be thou silent ; | <i>tac-éte vói,</i> | be ye silent ; |
| 3d p. <i>táci-a</i> (tác- [ci-a) <i>égli,</i> | let him be silent ; | <i>táci-ano</i> (tác- [ci-ano) <i>églino,</i> | let them be si- [lent |

Verbs ending in *cere* (*short*) take an *i* after *c*, in the *past participle* only ; as, I. *pásc-ere*, ‘to feed’ ; 7. — *pasci-úto*, m. s., *pasci-úti*, p. ; *pasci-úta*, f. s. ; *pasci-úte*, p., ‘fed.’

Verbs ending in *iere* drop the *i*, whenever it is followed by another *i* ; as,

Émpiere, ‘to fill.’

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *iere*.)

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------|---|-----------------------------------|-----------|
| 1st p. <i>émpr-o,</i> | I fill, or do fill, or [am filling ; | <i>emp-íamo</i> (emp- [i-émo), | we fill ; |
|-----------------------|---|-----------------------------------|-----------|

* *Tácio*, pronounce both the Romans and Florentines, following the orthography of the best prose writers (and not *táccio*, as poets have, sometimes, been obliged to say), to distinguish this from *táccio*, a form of the verb *tacciare*, ‘to blame.’

Singular.

Plural.

| | | | |
|------------------------|---------------|--------------------|------------|
| 2d p. <i>émp-i</i> , | thou fillest; | <i>émp-i-éte</i> , | you fill; |
| 3d p. <i>émp-i-e</i> , | he fills, | <i>émp-i-ono</i> , | they fill. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|-----------------|--------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io émp-i-a</i> | that I fill, or | <i>émp-iámo</i> , | that we fill; |
| [(<i>émp-i-e</i>), | [may fill; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu émp-i-a</i> | that thou fill; | <i>émp-iáte</i> , | that you fill; |
| [or <i>émp-i</i> , | | | |
| 3d p. <i>égli émp-i-a</i> | that he fill; | <i>émp-i-ano</i> , | that they fill. |
| [(<i>émp-i-e</i>), | | | |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|-------------------------|---------------|--------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>émp-iámo</i> , | let us fill; |
| 2d p. <i>émp-i tu</i> , | fill thou; | <i>émp-i-éte</i> , | fill ye; |
| 3d p. <i>émp-i-a</i> | let him fill; | <i>émp-i-ano</i> , | let them fill. |
| [<i>égli</i> , | | | |

THIRD CONJUGATION.

The verbs of this conjugation are divided into three classes, those which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, end in *o*; those which end in *isco*; and those which have *both* of these *terminations*.

Variation of the Verb Sentire.

(Paradigm of the verbs of the third conjugation which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, end in *o* only.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

2. — *Past.*

| | | | |
|-------------------|----------|------------------------|----------------|
| <i>Sent-íre</i> , | to hear. | <i>avére sentíto</i> , | to have heard. |
|-------------------|----------|------------------------|----------------|

3. — *Future.*

avère a sentîre,
èssere per sentîre,
dovère sentîre, } to have to hear, or
to be about to hear.

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

sent-éndo, | hearing.

5. — *Past.*

|| *avéndo sentîto,* | having heard.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

(*sent-énte, s.,*
sent-énti, p.,) } hearing.

7. — *Past.*

| *sent-îto, m. s.,*
| [*sent-îti, p.,*
| *sent-îta, f. s.,*
| [*sent-îte, p.,*] } heard.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------|--|-------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>sént-o,</i> | I hear, or do [hear, or am [hearing; | <i>sent-iámo,</i> | we hear; |
| 2d p. <i>sént-i,</i> | thou hearest; | <i>sent-íte,</i> | you hear; |
| 3d p. <i>sént-e,</i> | he hears; | <i>sént-ono,</i> | they hear. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|--|---|--|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>îo sent-îva</i> [or <i>sént-ia,</i> | I heard, or did [hear, or was [hearing; | <i>sent-ivámo,</i> | we heard; |
| 2d p. <i>sént-îvi,</i> | thou heardest; | <i>sent-iváte,</i> | you heard; |
| 3d p. <i>égli sent-</i> [<i>îva</i> or <i>sént-ia,</i> | he heard; | <i>sent-ivano</i> or [<i>sént-iano</i> [(<i>sént-ieno</i>), | they heard. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|---|---------------------------|--|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>sént-îi,</i> | I heard, or did [hear; | <i>sént-îmmo,</i> | we heard; |
| 2d p. <i>sént-îsti,</i> | thou heardest; | <i>sént-îsle,</i> | you heard; |
| 3d p. <i>sént-î</i> (<i>sént-</i> [<i>-îo</i>), | he heard; | <i>sént-îrono</i> (<i>sént-</i> [<i>-îro, sént-tîr</i>), | they heard. |

Singular.

Plural.

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|----------------------------|----------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>sent-irò</i> , | I shall or will [hear ; | <i>sent-irémo</i> , | we will hear ; |
| 2d p. <i>sent-irái</i> , | thou wilt hear ; | <i>sent-iréte</i> , | you will hear ; |
| 3d p. <i>sent-irà</i> , | he will hear ; | <i>sent-iranno</i> , | they will hear. |

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

| | |
|----------------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>ho sentíto</i> , | I have heard. |
|----------------------------|---------------|

6. — *Pluperfect.*

| | |
|----------------------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>io avéva sentíto</i> , | I had heard. |
|----------------------------------|--------------|

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

| | |
|------------------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>ébbi sentíto</i> , | I had heard. |
|------------------------------|--------------|

8. — *Future Anterior.*

| | |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>avrò sentíto</i> , | I shall or will have heard. |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------|--------------------------------|--------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io sent-A</i> , | that I hear, or [may hear ; | <i>sent-iámo</i> , | that we hear ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu sent-A</i> | that thou hear ; | <i>sent-iáte</i> , | that you hear ; |
| [or <i>sent-I</i> , | | | |
| 3d p. <i>egli sent-A</i> , | that he hear ; | <i>sent-ANO</i> , | that they hear. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------------|----------------------------------|---|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io sent-íssi</i> , | if I heard, or [should hear ; | <i>sent-íssimo</i> , | if we heard ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu sent-íssi</i> , | if thou heardest ; | <i>sent-íste</i> , | if you heard ; |
| 3d p. <i>sent-ísse</i> , | if he heard ; | <i>sent-íssero</i> (sent- [-íssino), | if they heard. |

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | |
|----------------------------------|---|
| 1st p. <i>io abbia sentíto</i> , | that I have heard, or [may have heard. |
|----------------------------------|---|

4. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi sentíto*, | if I had heard.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|--|--|---------------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>sent-iréi</i> [(<i>sent-iría</i>), | I should, would, [or could hear ; [or might hear ; | <i>sent-irémmo</i> , | we should, would, [or could hear ; |
| 2d p. <i>sent-irésti</i> , | thou wouldst [hear ; | <i>sent-iréste</i> , | you would hear ; |
| 3d p. <i>sent-irébbe</i> [(<i>sent-iría</i>), | he would hear ; | <i>sent-irébbero</i> [(<i>sent-iriano</i>), | they would hear. |

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*1st p. *avréi sentíto*, | I should, would, or could have
[heard ; or might have heard.

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|----------------------------|----------------|--------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>sent-íamo nói</i> , | let us hear ; |
| 2d p. <i>sént-i tu</i> , | hear thou ; | <i>sent-íte vói</i> , | hear ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>sént-a égli</i> , | let him hear ; | <i>sént-ano églino</i> , | let them hear. |

Variation of the Verb Esibíre.

(Paradigm of those verbs of the third conjugation, which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, have the termination *isco* only.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.**Esib-íre*, | to offer.|| *avére esibíto*, | to have offered.

3. — *Future.*

avére ad esibíre,
éssere per esibíre,
dovére esibíre, } to have to offer, *or*
to be about to offer.

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

5. — *Past.*

esib-éndo, | offering. || *avéndo esibíto,* | having offered.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

7. — *Past.*

esib-énte, s.,
esib-énte, p., } offering. || *esib-íto, m. s.,*
[esib-íti, p.,
esib-íta, f. s.,
[esib-íte, p., } offered.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-----------------------|---------------------|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>esib-ísco,</i> | I offer, <i>or</i> do | <i>esib-iámo,</i> | we offer ; |
| | [offer, <i>or</i> am | | |
| | [offering ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>esib-isci,</i> | thou offerest ; | <i>esib-íte,</i> | you offer ; |
| 3d p. <i>esib-isce,</i> | he offers ; | <i>esib-íscono,</i> | they offer. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío esib-íva* *or esib-ía,* | I offered, *or* did offer, *or*
[was offering.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *esib-úi,* | I offered, *or* did offer.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *esib-irò,* | I shall *or* will offer.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *ho esibíto,* | I have offered.

6. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéva esibíto*, | I had offered.7. — *Second Pluperfect.*1st p. *ébbi esibíto*, | I had offered.8. — *Future Anterior.*1st p. *avrò esibíto*, | I shall or will have offered.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|-------------------|----------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io esib-</i> | that I offer, or | <i>esib-iámo</i> , | that we offer ; |
| [-íSCA, | [may offer ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu esib-</i> | that thou offer ; | <i>esib-iáte</i> , | that you offer ; |
| [-íSCA, or <i>esib-</i> | | | |
| [-íSCHI, | | | |
| 3d p. <i>egli esib-</i> | that he offer ; | <i>esib-íscano</i> , | that they offer. |
| [-íSCA, | | | |

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *io esib-íssi*, | if I offered, or should offer.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*1st p. *io ábbia esibíto*, | that I have offered, or
[may have offered.4. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi esibíto*, | if I had offered.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *esib-iréi* (*esib-iría*), | I should, would, or could offer ;
[or might offer.

Singular.

Plural.

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

| | |
|------------------------------|--|
| 1st p. <i>avrei esibito,</i> | I should, would, or could have [offered; or might have offered. |
|------------------------------|--|

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|-------------------------|----------------|---------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>esib-iámo,</i> | let us offer; |
| 2d p. <i>esib-ísci,</i> | offer thou; | <i>esib-íte,</i> | offer ye; |
| 3d p. <i>esib-ísca,</i> | let him offer; | <i>esib-íscano,</i> | let them offer. |

Variation of the Verb Abborríre.

(Paradigm of those verbs of the third conjugation, which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, end both in *o* and *isco*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

2. — *Past.*

| | | | |
|--------------------|-----------|-------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>Abborr-íre,</i> | to abhor. | <i>avére abborrito,</i> | to have abhorred. |
|--------------------|-----------|-------------------------|-------------------|

3. — *Future.*

| | |
|------------------------------|---|
| <i>avére ad abborríre,</i> | } to have to abhor, or to be about to abhor. |
| <i>éssere per abborríre,</i> | |
| <i>dovére abborríre,</i> | |

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

5. — *Past.*

| | | | |
|---------------------|------------|--------------------------|------------------|
| <i>abborr-éndo,</i> | abhorring. | <i>avéndo abborrito,</i> | having abhorred. |
|---------------------|------------|--------------------------|------------------|

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

7. — *Past.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|--------------|---------------------------|-------------|
| <i>abborr-énte, s.,</i> | } abhorring. | <i>abborr-íto, m. s.,</i> | } abhorred. |
| <i>abborr-énte, p.,</i> | | <i>[abborr-íti, p.,</i> | |
| | | <i>abborr-íta, f. s.,</i> | |
| | | <i>[abborr-íte, p.,</i> | |

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---|--|--|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>abbórr-o</i> , or [<i>abborr-isco</i> , | I abhor, or do [abhor, or am [abhorring; | <i>abborr-íamo</i> , | we abhor; |
| 2d p. <i>abbórr-i</i> , or [<i>abborr-isci</i> , | thou abhorrest; | <i>abborr-íte</i> , | you abhor; |
| 3d p. <i>abbórr-e</i> , or [<i>abborr-ísce</i> , | he abhors; | <i>abbórr-ono</i> , or [<i>abborr-íscono</i> , | they abhor. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1st p. <i>to abborr-íva</i> or <i>abborr-ía</i> , | I abhorred, or did abhor, or [was abhorring. |
|---|---|

3. — *Perfect.*

| | |
|---------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>abborr-íi</i> , | I abhorred, or did abhor. |
|---------------------------|---------------------------|

4. — *Future.*

| | |
|----------------------------|------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>abborr-irò</i> , | I shall or will abhor. |
|----------------------------|------------------------|

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

| | |
|-------------------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>ho abborr-íto</i> , | I have abhorred. |
|-------------------------------|------------------|

6. — *Pluperfect.*

| | |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>to avéva abborr-íto</i> , | I had abhorred. |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------|

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

| | |
|---------------------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>ébbi abborr-íto</i> , | I had abhorred. |
|---------------------------------|-----------------|

8. — *Future Anterior.*

| | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>avrò abborr-íto</i> , | I shall or will have abhorred. |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|----------------------------------|---|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io abbórr-A</i> , [or <i>abbórr-ísCA</i> , | that I abhor, or [may abhor ; | <i>abbórr-iámo</i> , | that we abhor ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu abbórr-A</i> , [or <i>abbórr-I</i> ; or [<i>abbórr-ísCA</i> , or [<i>abbórr-ísCHI</i> , | that thou abhor ; | <i>abbórr-iáte</i> , | that you abhor ; |
| 3d p. <i>égli abbórr-</i> [<i>-A</i> , or <i>abbórr-</i> [<i>-ísCA</i> , | that he abhor ; | <i>abbórr-ANO</i> , or <i>ab-</i> [<i>borr-ísCANO</i> , | that they abhor. |

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *io abbórr-íssi*, | if I abhorred, or should abhor.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*1st p. *io ábbia abbórríto*, | that I have abhorred, or
[may have abhorred.4. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi abbórríto*, | if I had abhorred.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *abbórr-iréi* (*abbórr-iría*), | I should, would, or could abhor ;
[or might abhor.

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*1st p. *avréi abbórríto*, | I should, would, or could have ab-
[horred ; or might have abhorred.

V. IMPERATIVE.

| Singular. | | Plural. | |
|---------------------------|-----------------|-------------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>abborr-íamo nói,</i> | let us abhor ; |
| 2d p. <i>abborr-i,</i> or | abhor thou ; | <i>abborr-íte vói,</i> | abhor ye ; |
| [<i>abborr-ísci tu,</i> | | | |
| 3d p. <i>abborr-a,</i> or | let him abhor ; | <i>abborr-ano,</i> or | let them abhor. |
| [<i>abborr-ísca</i> | | [<i>abborr-íscano</i> | |
| [<i>égli,</i> | | [<i>églino,</i> | |

[For a list of Verbs of the Third Conjugation, that in the *present* of the *indicative* end in *o*, in *isco*, or in *o* and *isco*, see APPENDIX, G.]

Verbs ending in *círe*, in order to preserve the soft sound of the *c* in all their inflections, take an *i* after that consonant, whenever it is followed by *a*, *o* ; as,

Cucíre, ‘ to sew.’

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *círe*.)

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present*.

| | | | |
|------------------------|-----------------------------------|---|-----------|
| 1st p. <i>cúc-i-o,</i> | I sew, do sew, or [am sewing ; | <i>cuc-íamo</i> (<i>cuc-</i> [<i>-ímo</i>), | we sew ; |
| 2d p. <i>cúc-i,</i> | thou sewest ; | <i>cuc-íte,</i> | you sew ; |
| 3d p. <i>cúc-e,</i> | he sews ; | <i>cúc-i-ono,</i> | they sew. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present*.

| | | | |
|----------------------------|------------------------------|-------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío cúc-i-a,</i> | that I sew, or [may sew ; | <i>cuc-íamo,</i> | that we sew ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu cúc-i-a</i> | that thou sew ; | <i>cuc-íate,</i> | that you sew ; |
| [or <i>cúc-i,</i> | | | |
| 3d p. <i>égli cúc-i-a,</i> | that he sew ; | <i>cúc-i-ano,</i> | that they sew. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

| | | | |
|----------------------------|---------------|--------------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>cuc-rámo nói,</i> | let us sew ; |
| 2d p. <i>cúc-i tu,</i> | sew thou ; | <i>cuc-íte vói,</i> | sew ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>cúc-i-a égli,</i> | let him sew ; | <i>cúc-i-ano églino,</i> | let them sew. |

REMARKS ON THE FOREGOING VERBS.

There are some verbs of the *third* conjugation that belong also to the *second* ; having two terminations in the *infinitive*, one in *ire*, the other in *ěre* ; as,

| | | |
|---------------------|---------------------|--------------|
| <i>appetire,</i> | <i>appětere,</i> | to desire ; |
| <i>inghiottire,</i> | <i>inghióttěre,</i> | to swallow : |

some, that belong also to the *first* conjugation ; having the two terminations *ire* and *äre* ; as,

| | | |
|---------------------|---------------------|----------------|
| <i>impazzire,</i> | <i>impazzäre,</i> | to grow mad ; |
| <i>incoraggire,</i> | <i>incoraggäre,</i> | to encourage : |

and some others, that belong to *all three* of the conjugations ; as,

| | | | |
|-----------------|-----------------|------------------|-----------------|
| <i>ruggire,</i> | <i>ruggere,</i> | <i>ruggiäre,</i> | to roar ; |
| <i>olire,</i> | <i>olere,</i> | <i>olezzäre,</i> | to be fragrant. |

These verbs are differently varied, according to the conjugation to which their different terminations respectively belong.

The verbs of the *second* and *third* conjugation, in the *first*, *second*, and *third* persons singular of the *present* of the *indicative* and *conjunctive*, and in the *second* and *third* persons singular of the *imperative*, have constantly the *accent* on the *penultimate syllable* ; as, *témo, témi, téme, — téma ; sěnto, sěnti, sěnte, — sěnta, &c.* Of those of the *first* conjugation, some have the *accent* on the *penultimate syllable* ; as, *ámo, ámi, áma, — ámi* ; and others, on the *antepenultimate* ;

as, *mórmoro* ('I murmur'), *mórmori*, *mórmora*, — *mórmori*, &c.

[For rules for determining when the verbs of the first conjugation, in the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, have the accent on the penultimate or the antepenultimate syllable, see APPENDIX, H.]

Ambire, 'to crave,' in the first person plural of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative; — and in the second person plural of the present of the conjunctive, makes *abbiamo ambizione*, — *abbiate ambizione*, to distinguish these persons from the corresponding ones of the verb *ambiare*, 'to amble.'

Ardire, 'to dare,' in the first person plural of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative; — in the second person plural of the present of the conjunctive, — and in the gerund makes, *abbiamo ardire* or *ardimento*, — *abbiate ardire*, &c., — *avendo ardire*; and not *ardiamo*, — *ardiate*, — *ardendo*, which come from *ardere*, 'to burn.'

Bollire, 'to boil,' in the first person plural of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, — and in the second person plural of the present of the conjunctive, changes *ll* into *gl*, and makes *bogliamo*, — *bogliate*, to distinguish these persons from the corresponding ones of the verb *bollare*, 'to stamp,' 'to set a seal.'

Gioire, 'to rejoice,' in the first person plural of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, — in the second person plural of the present of the conjunctive, — and in the past participle, borrows the corresponding forms of the verb *godere*, and makes *godiamo*, — *godiate*, — *goduto*.

Smaltire, 'to digest,' in the first person plural of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, — and in the second person plural of the present of the conjunctive, makes *procuriamo di smaltire*, — *procuriate di smaltire*; and not *smaltiamo*, — *smaltiate*, which come from *smaltire*, 'to enamel.'

Suggere, 'to suck,' in the *past participle* borrows that of *succhiare*, and makes *succhiato*, 'sucked.'

Many regular verbs, in some tenses, have also an irregular formation, which will be noticed in treating of *Irregular Verbs*.

EXAMPLES.

Egli è il véro, ch' io ho AMÁTO, ed ÁMO Guiscárdo, e, quánto viverò io l' AMERÒ; e se apprésso la mórte s' ÁMA, non mi rimarrò d' AMÁRlo. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

It is true, that I have loved, and do love Guiscard, and I will love him as long as I live; and if we love after death, I will not cease to love him.

Quél che nòi CERCHIÁMO di fuggíre. (Bocc. Introd.)

That which we endeavour to avoid.

Chè nòi non PREGHIÁMO còse sózze, e non le lasciámo PREGÁRE. (Albert. 2. 10.)

For we do not ask for vulgar things, nor let others ask for them.

BACERÉTE il piè a Nòstro Signóre a nòme mío. (Bemb. Lett.)

You will kiss the feet of Our Lord [the Pope] for me.

Bontà non è che súa memòria FRÉGI. (Dant. Inf. 8.)

No virtue lends its lustre to his memory.

Guardáte, che 'l venir su non vi NÓI. (Dant. Purg. 9.)

Take heed that your coming upward does not harm you.

TEMÉTTE di non dovérvi essere ricevúto. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

He feared he should not be received there.

Éssi rápperò le uóva degli áspidi, e TESSÉRONO le téle dé' rágnoli. (Mor. S. Gregor.)

They broke the eggs of the asps, and wove spider's webs.

Le léggi, cosí le divíne còme le umáne, TÁCIONO. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)

The laws, divine as well as human, are silent.

Éssa, che la séra davánti cenáto non avéa, da fame costrettá, a páscere l'érbe si diéde, e PASCIÚTA cóme potè, piangéndo, a várj pensiéri délla súa futura vita si diéde. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

Sostièn persóna tu di capitáno, — E di mìa lontanánza ÉMPI il difétto. (Tass. Ger. 11., 56.)

Ésser non può, che quell' angelic' álma, — Non sÉNTA 'l suon dell' amoróse nóte. (Petr. c. 38.)

Vássi per tánto a Giacóbbe, e si ESIBÍSCONO le soddisfazióni maggióri, che darsi póssano a uómini forestiéri. (Segn. Pred. 25.)

E lo svegliáto ciò che véde **ABBÓRRE.** (Dant. Par. 26.)

Abborrénte, [cioè] che **ABBORÍSCE.** (Crúscá.)

Con tal cúra viéne, — Che la piága da sézzo si RICÚCIA. (Dant. Purg. 25.)

Tu ancóra non séi ben temperáto in quésta virtù di APPETÍRE gli onóri. (Casa, lett. 70.)

La meditazióne le mostráva, che élla dovésse APPÉTERE, e comandáre. (Scal. S. Agost.)

E non par mica vergógna, — Tra i bicchiéri IMPAZZÍR tre vólte l'ánno. (Red. Ditir. 37.)

La dónna sentíva sì fáto dólore, che quási n' éra per IMPAZZÁRE. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

E 'n sul cor quási féro león RÚGGE, — La nótte allór, quand' ío posár dovréi. (Petr. s. 228.)

She, that the evening before had not supped, compelled by hunger, began to feed herself on herbs, and after she had fed herself as well as she could, weeping abandoned herself to the various thoughts of her future life.

Do thou support the office of captain, and supply the want of my absence.

It cannot be possible, that that angelic soul does not hear the sound of the amorous notes.

They go therefore to Jacob, and offer him the greatest satisfaction, which could be given to strangers.

And the upstartled abhors what he sees.

Abhorring, [that is to say] that abhors.

It is with such care, that the wound finally heals.

Thou hast not yet moderated thyself in the virtue of desiring honor.

Meditation taught her what she ought to desire and ask.

And it does not seem to be a shame to get crazy among glasses three times a year.

The woman was so much afflicted, that she came near being crazy.

And in my heart, like a fierce lion, it roars in the night when I ought to repose.

Va còme liòne, che RUGGÍSCE, It goes, like a lion that roars,
cercándo cùì pòssa divoráre. seeking whom he may devour.
 (Cavalc. Med. cuor.)

Posciachè 'l fuóco alquánto ébbe After that the fire had roared
RUGGHIÁTO. (Dant. Inf. 27.) awhile.

EXERCISE XVI.

[Let the learner change the terminations *äre, ére, ìre*, of the infinitive mood of the following Italian verbs, for the particular terminations they respectively take in the person and tense indicated by the English, according to the foregoing Paradigms.]

FIRST CONJUGATION.

I. 1.* — To love. 4. — loving. 7. — loved. — II.
Amáre. am-äre. am-äre.

1. — I love, thou speakest, he sings, we play, you dance,
am-äre, parl-äre, cant-äre, son-äre, ball-äre,

they study. 2. — I walked, thou passedst, he called,
studi-äre. cammin-äre, pass-äre, chiam-äre,

we prattled, you confessed, they ordered. 3. — I
ciarl-äre, confess-äre, ordin-äre.

confirmed, thou didst deliver, he considered, we preserved,
conferm-äre, consegn-äre, consider-äre, conserv-äre,

you advised, they disputed. 4. — I will expect, thou
consigli-äre, contrast-äre. aspett-äre,

wilt imagine, he will assault, we will dedicate, you will
immagin-äre, assalt-äre, dedic-äre,

assure, they will seek. 5. — I have praised.† — III.
assicur-äre, cerc-äre. lod-äre.

1. — I may fast, thou mayest besiege, he may ride, we
digiun-äre, assedi-äre, cavalc-äre,

may punish, you may prove, they may practise. 2. —
castig-äre, prov-äre, pratic-äre.

* To facilitate reference, we use, in this and the following exercises on verbs, the numbers, which we have affixed to the moods and tenses in the Paradigms.

† The learner can form the compound tenses of any of these verbs by joining their past participle to the simple tenses of the auxiliary verb *avere*, 'to have.'

I might refuse, thou mightest invent, he might accept, we
rifiut-âre, *invent-âre,* *accett-âre,*
 might accompany, you might experience, they might ad-
accompagn-âre, *speriment-âre,* *amministr-*
 minister. — IV. 1.—I would prolong, thou wouldst ven-
-âre. *prolung-âre,* *arrisic-*
 ture, he would eat, we would pray, you would envy,
-âre, *mangi-âre,* *preg-âre,* *invidi-âre,*
 they would tire. — V. — ask thou, let him judge, let
annoi-âre. *domand-âre,* *giudic-âre,*
 us change, carry ye back, let them wait.
cambi-âre, *riport-âre,* *aspett-âre.*

SECOND CONJUGATION.

I. 1. — To fear. 4. — fearing. 7. — feared. — II.
Temere. *tem-ère.* *tem-ère.*
 1. — I believe, thou receivest, he sells, we repeat, you
créd-ere, *ricév-ere,* *vénd-ere,* *ripét-ere;*
 enjoy, they depend. 2. — I wove, thou didst beat down,
god-ère, *dipénd-ere.* *téss-ere,* *abbátt-ere,*
 he rivaled, we debated, you exacted, they consented.
compét-ere, *dibátt-ere,* *esig-ere,* *accéd-ere.*
 3. — I mowed, thou didst beat, he groaned, we sheared,
miét-ere, *bátt-ere,* *gém-ere,* *tónd-ere,*
 you reflected, they turned. 4. — I will provide, thou
riflétt-ere, *intéss-ere.* *provvéd-ère,*
 wilt fill, he will rage, we will feed, you will lose, they
émpi-ere, *frém-ere,* *pásc-ere,* *pérd-ere,*
 will press. — III. 1. — I may cleave, thou mayest render,
prém-ere. *fénd-ere,* *rénd-ere,*
 he may resolve, we may re-enjoy, you may unweave,
risólv-ere, *rigod-ère,* *stéss-ere,*
 they may succeed. 2. — I might yield, thou mightest
succéd-ere. *céd-ere,* *assólv-*
 absolve, he might grant, we might dissolve, you might fill
-ere, *concéd-ere,* *dissólv-ere,* *riémpi-*

again, they might suck. — IV. 1. — I would combat,
-ere, *súgg-ere.* *combátt-ere,*

thou wouldst precede, he would hang up, we would sell
preced-ere, *appénd-ere,* *rivénd-*

over again, you would proceed, they would succumb. —
-ere, *proced-ere,* *soccómb-ere.*

V. — desist thou, let him drink, let us accomplish, recede
desíst-ere, *bév-ere,* *cómpi-ere,* *ricéd-ere,*

ye, let them pour out.*
mésc-ere.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

I. 1. — To hear. 4. — hearing. 7. — heard. — II.
Sentíre. *sent-íre.* *sent-íre.*

1. — I sleep, thou consentest, he understands, we rejoice,
dorm-íre, *consent-íre,* *cap-íre,* *gio-íre,*

you transfer, they serve. 2. — I fled, thou embellishedst,
trasfer-íre, *serv-íre.* *fugg-íre,* *abell-íre,*

he animated, we weakened, you attacked, they admonished.
anim-íre, *indebbol-íre,* *assal-íre,* *ammon-íre.*

3. — I constructed, thou conceivedst, he banished, we
costru-íre, *concep-íre,* *band-íre,*

assisted, you supplied, they finished. 4. — I will favor,
accud-íre, *suppl-íre,* *fin-íre.* *favor-íre,*

thou wilt differ, he will cure, we will hinder, you will
differ-íre, *guar-íre,* *imped-íre,*

infer, they will grow proud. — III. 1. — I may assent,
infer-íre, *insuperb-íre.* *assent-íre,*

thou mayest furnish, he may chide, we may boil,
forn-íre, *garr-íre,* *boll-íre,*

you may crave, they may establish. 2. — I might
amb-íre, *stabil-íre.* *un-*

unite, thou mightest betray, he might nourish, we
-íre, *trad-íre,* *nutr-íre,*

* The number of Italian regular verbs in *ére* is so small, that, having already employed them all in this Exercise, we have been obliged to make use of some verbs which, in some of their tenses, are subject to certain irregularities, which will be noticed under *Irregular Verbs*.

might warrant, you might encourage, they might plead.
garant-íre, *incoragg-íre,* *piat-íre.*

— IV. 1. — I would restore, thou wouldst quench, he
restitu-íre, *sop-íre,*

would exhaust, we would define, you would ascertain,
esaur-íre, *defin-íre,* *chiar-íre,*

they would season. — V. — act thou, let him hear, let
cond-íre. *ag-íre,* *sent-íre,*

us dare, obey ye, let them punish.
ard-íre, *obbed-íre,* *pun-íre.*

VARIATION OF PASSIVE VERBS.

Passive verbs are formed by joining the verb *éssere*, 'to be,' to the *past participle* of active verbs.

Passive verbs, therefore, through all their tenses, are varied with the auxiliary verb *éssere*.

Variation of the Verb Éssere Amáto.

(Paradigm of the *passive verbs*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

Éssere $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{amáto, m. s.,} \\ \text{[-i, p.,]} \\ \textit{amáto, f. s.,} \\ \text{[-e, p.,]} \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{to be} \\ \text{loved.} \end{array}$

Compound Tenses.

2. — *Past.*

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{státo amáto, m. s.,} \\ \textit{státi amáti,* p.,} \\ \textit{státa amáta, f. s.,} \\ \textit{state amáte, p.,} \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{to have} \\ \text{been} \\ \text{loved.} \end{array}$

3. — *Future.*

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{avére ad éssere} \\ \textit{éssere per éssere} \\ \textit{dovére éssere} \end{array} \right\} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{amáto, m. s., -i, p.} \\ \textit{amáta, f. s., -e, p.} \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} \text{to have to be loved, or} \\ \text{to be about to be loved.} \end{array}$

* The *past participle* of passive verbs, like that of *éssere*, agrees with the *subject* of the verb in *gender* and *number*.

4. — *Present.*

5. — *Past.*

| | | | | | | | | | | |
|----------------|---|-----------------------|---|--------|--|------------------|---|-----------------------------|---|--------|
| <i>essendo</i> | { | <i>amato</i> , m. s., | } | being | | <i>es-sén-do</i> | { | <i>stato amato</i> , m. s., | } | having |
| | | [-i, p., | | | | | | <i>stati amati</i> , p., | | |
| | { | <i>amata</i> , f. s., | } | loved. | | | { | <i>stata amata</i> , f. s., | } | been |
| | | [-e, p., | | | | | | <i>state amate</i> , p., | | |

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | | |
|------------------------|------------------|--|--------------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io sono</i> | I am loved ; | | <i>siamo amati</i> , m., | we are loved ; |
| [<i>amato</i> , m., | | | [<i>amate</i> , f., | |
| [<i>amata</i> , f., | | | | |
| 2d p. <i>sei amato</i> | thou art loved ; | | <i>siate amati</i> , -e, | you are loved ; |
| [-a, | | | | |
| 3d p. <i>è amato</i> | he is loved, she | | <i>eglino sono amati</i> | they are loved. |
| [-a, | [is loved ; | | [<i>ti, elleno</i> -e, | |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | | |
|----------------------------------|-------------------|--|--------------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io era amato</i> | I was loved ; | | <i>eravamo amati</i> | we were loved ; |
| [<i>to</i> , -a, | | | [-e, | |
| 2d p. <i>eri amato</i> | thou wast loved ; | | <i>eravate amati</i> | you were loved ; |
| [-a, | | | [-e, | |
| 3d p. <i>egli era amato</i> | he was loved, she | | <i>erano amati</i> , -e, | they were loved. |
| [<i>amato</i> , <i>ella</i> -a, | [was loved ; | | | |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | | |
|--------------------------|-------------------|--|---------------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>fui amato</i> | I was loved ; | | <i>fummo amati</i> , -e, | we were loved ; |
| [-a, | | | | |
| 2d p. <i>fosti amato</i> | thou wast loved ; | | <i>foste amati</i> , -e, | you were loved ; |
| [<i>to</i> , -a, | | | | |
| 3d p. <i>fu amato</i> | he was loved, she | | <i>furono amati</i> , -e, | they were loved. |
| [-a, | [was loved ; | | | |

4. — *Future.*

| | | | | |
|--------------------------|--------------------|--|---------------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>sarò amato</i> | I shall or will be | | <i>saremo amati</i> , -e, | we shall or will |
| [<i>to</i> , -a, | [loved ; | | | [be loved ; |
| 2d p. <i>sarai amato</i> | thou wilt be lov- | | <i>sarete amati</i> , -e, | you will be lov- |
| [<i>to</i> , -a, | [ed ; | | | [ed ; |
| 3d p. <i>sarà amato</i> | he will be loved, | | <i>saranno amati</i> | they will be lov- |
| [<i>to</i> , -a, | [she will be | | [-e, | [ed. |
| | [loved ; | | | |

COMPOUND TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------|------------------|--------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io sòno stá-</i> | I have been lov- | <i>siámo státi amá-</i> | we have been |
| <i>[to amáto,</i> | <i>[ed ;</i> | <i>[ti, státe amáte,</i> | <i>[loved.</i> |
| <i>[státa amáta,</i> | | | |

6. — *Pluperfect.*

| | |
|--|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io éra státo amáto, stá-</i> | I had been loved. |
| <i>[ta amáta,</i> | |

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

| | |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>fúi státo amáto, státa</i> | I had been loved. |
| <i>[amáta,</i> | |

8. — *Future Anterior.*

| | |
|---------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>sarò státo amáto, státa</i> | I shall or will have been loved. |
| <i>[amáta,</i> | |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|------------------------|-------------------------|--------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io sía amá-</i> | that I be loved, | <i>siámo amáti, -e,</i> | that we be loved ; |
| <i>[to, -a,</i> | <i>[or may be lov-</i> | | |
| | <i>[ed ;</i> | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu sía amá-</i> | that thou be lov- | <i>siáte amáti, -e,</i> | that you be lov- |
| <i>[to, -a,</i> | <i>[ed ;</i> | | <i>[ed ;</i> |
| 3d p. <i>égli sía</i> | that he be loved ; | <i>síano amáti, -e,</i> | that they be lov- |
| <i>[amáto, élla -a,</i> | <i>[she be loved ;</i> | | <i>[ed.</i> |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|--------------------------|---------------------------|--------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io fòssi</i> | if I were loved, | <i>fòssimo amáti, -e,</i> | if we were loved ; |
| <i>[amáto, -a,</i> | <i>[or should be</i> | | |
| | <i>[loved ;</i> | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu fòssi</i> | if thou wert lov- | <i>fòste amáti, -e,</i> | if you were lov- |
| <i>[amáto, -a,</i> | <i>[ed ;</i> | | <i>[ed ;</i> |
| 3d p. <i>fòsse amá-</i> | if he were loved, | <i>fòssero amáti, -e,</i> | if they were lov- |
| <i>[to, -a,</i> | <i>[she were loved ;</i> | | <i>[ed.</i> |

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | |
|---|--|------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io sia stato amato, stàta</i> | | that I have been loved, or |
| <i>[amàta,</i> | | <i>[may have been loved.</i> |

4. — *Pluperfect.*

| | | |
|---|--|----------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io fossi stato amato, stàta</i> | | if I had been loved. |
| <i>[amàta,</i> | | |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | | | |
|--------------------------|--|--------------------------|---------------------------|--|---------------------|
| 1st p. <i>sarèi amà-</i> | | I should, would, | <i>sarèmmo amàti,</i> | | we should, would, |
| <i>[to, -a,</i> | | <i>[or could be lov-</i> | <i>[-e,</i> | | <i>[or could be</i> |
| | | <i>[ed; or might be</i> | | | <i>[loved;</i> |
| | | <i>[loved;</i> | | | |
| 2d p. <i>sarèsti</i> | | thou wouldst be | <i>sarèste amàti, -e,</i> | | you would be |
| <i>[amàto, -a,</i> | | <i>[loved;</i> | | | <i>[loved;</i> |
| 3d p. <i>sarèbbe</i> | | he would be lov- | <i>sarèbbero amàti,</i> | | they would be |
| <i>[amàto, -a,</i> | | <i>[ed, she would</i> | <i>[-e,</i> | | <i>[loved.</i> |
| | | <i>[be loved;</i> | | | |

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

| | | |
|--|--|--|
| 1st p. <i>sarèi stato amato, stàta</i> | | I should, would, or could have |
| <i>[amàta,</i> | | <i>[been loved; or might have been</i> |
| | | <i>[loved.</i> |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | | | |
|-------------------------|--|-------------------------|--------------------------|------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>siàmo amàti, -e,</i> | | let us be loved; | |
| | | <i>[nò,</i> | | | |
| 2d p. <i>sii amato,</i> | | be thou loved; | <i>siate amàti, -e,</i> | | be ye loved; |
| <i>[-a, tu,</i> | | | <i>[vói,</i> | | |
| 3d p. <i>sia amato,</i> | | let him be loved; | <i>siano amàti egli-</i> | | let them be lov- |
| <i>[ègli, -a ella,</i> | | <i>[her be loved;</i> | <i>[no, -e elleno,</i> | | <i>[ed.</i> |

Many *active* verbs become *passive* by taking the particle *si* : — *domandársi*, ‘to be asked’; but then they are used in the *third person only*, — as, *si domándA*, ‘it is asked’; *si è domandáto*, ‘it has been asked’; &c.

VARIATION OF NEUTER VERBS.

Neuter verbs are generally varied with the auxiliary verb *essere*, ‘to be,’ according to the conjugation to which they belong.

Variation of the Verb Partire.

(Paradigm of the *neuter verbs*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — Present.

2. — Past.

| | | | |
|------------------|------------|---------------------------------------|-------------|
| <i>Partire</i> , | to depart. | <i>essere partíto</i> , m. s. -i, p., | to have de- |
| | | [<i>partíta</i> , f. s. -e, p.,* | [parted. |

3. — Future.

| | | |
|----------------------------|---|---|
| <i>avere a partire,</i> | } | to have to depart, or to be about to depart. |
| <i>essere per partire,</i> | | |
| <i>dovere partire,</i> | | |

GERUND.

4. — Present.

5. — Past.

| | | | |
|-------------------|------------|--------------------------|------------------|
| <i>parténdo</i> , | departing. | <i>esséndo partíto</i> , | having departed. |
|-------------------|------------|--------------------------|------------------|

* The past participle of the *neuter verbs* that are varied with *essere*, agrees with the subject of the verb in gender and number.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

parténte, m. s., } departing.
parténti, p., }

7. — *Past.*

partíto, m. s., }
partíti, p., } departed.
partíta, f. s., }
partíte, p. }

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *parto*, | I depart, or do depart, or
 [am departing.]

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío partíva*, | I departed, or did depart, or
 [was departing.]

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *partíi*, | I departed, or did depart.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *partirò*, | I shall or will depart.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *ío sóno partíto*, -a, | I have departed.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *ío éra partíto*, -a, | I had departed.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. *fúi partíto*, -a, | I had departed.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. *sarò partíto*, -a, | I shall or will have departed.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io pártá,* | that I depart, *or* may depart.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io partíssi,* | if I departed, *or* should depart.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *io síá partíto, -a,* | that I have departed, *or*
[may have departed.]

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *io fóssi partíto, -a,* | if I had departed.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *partiréi,* | I should, would, *or* could depart;
[*or* might depart.]

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. *saréi partíto, -a,* | I should, would, *or* could have de-
[parted; *or* might have departed.]

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. |
2d p. *párti tu,* | depart thou.

There are some neuter verbs which require to be varied with *avére*; as, *vivere*, 'to live'; *dormire*, 'to sleep'; *tacére*, 'to keep silent'; *parláre*, 'to speak'; *gridáre*, 'to cry out'; *ridere*, 'to laugh'; *scherzáre*, 'to sport'; *pranzáre*, 'to dine'; *cenáre*, 'to sup'; *passeggiáre*, 'to walk'; *cavalcáre*, 'to ride'; *navigáre*, 'to sail'; *tardáre*, 'to retard'; *indugiáre*, 'to delay'; &c.:—*ho vivúto*, 'I have lived'; *ho dormúto*, 'I have slept'; *ho taciúto*, 'I have kept silent'; &c.

Others are indifferently varied with the auxiliary *avére*, or *éssere*; as, *duráre*, 'to last'; *succómbere*, 'to sink under'; *ammutíre*, 'to become dumb'; *impallidíre*, 'to grow pale'; &c.:—*è duráto* or *ha duráto*, 'it has lasted'; &c.

Others may be varied with either *avére*, or *éssere*; as, *moríre*, *guaríre*; but the change of the auxiliary alters their signification:—*avére mórtó*, 'to have killed'; *éssere mórtó*, 'to be killed,' or 'to be dead'; *avére gua-ríto*, 'to have cured'; *éssere guaríto*, 'to be cured,' or 'to have recovered.'

Dovére, 'to be obliged'; *potére*, 'to be able'; *volére*, 'to be willing,' 'to will,' 'to wish'; when joined to a pronominal verb; as, *arréndersi*, 'to surrender one's self'; *frenársi*, 'to restrain one's self'; *pérdersi*, 'to lose one's self'; require to be varied with *éssere*:—*si è dovúto arréndere*, 'he has been obliged to surrender himself'; *non mi son potúto frenáre*, 'I have not been able to restrain myself'; *tí sèi volúto pérdere*, 'thou wishedst to lose thyself.'*

* Many of the foregoing verbs are irregular, as will be shown in their proper place.

VARIATION OF PRONOMINAL VERBS.

Pronominal verbs are varied with the auxiliary *éssere*, 'to be,' according to the conjugation to which their termination belongs.

Variation of the Verb Pentirsi.

(Paradigm of the *pronominal verbs*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present*.2. — *Past*.

| | | | | | |
|-------------------|-----------|---------|--|--------------------------|------------------|
| <i>Pentir-si,</i> | to repent | one's | | <i>ésser-si pentito,</i> | to have repented |
| | | [self.] | | | [one's self.] |

3. — *Future*.

| | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>avér-si a pentire,</i> | } to have to repent one's self, or |
| <i>ésser-si per pentire,</i> | |
| <i>dover-si pentire,</i> | |
| | } to be about to repent one's self. |

GERUND.

4. — *Present*.5. — *Past*.

| | | | | | |
|---------------------|-----------|---------|--|--------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>penténdo-si,</i> | repenting | one's | | <i>esséndo-si penti-</i> | having repented |
| | | [self.] | | [to,] | [one's self.] |

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present*.7. — *Past*.

| | | | | | |
|-------------------------|-------------------|--|---------------------------|--------------------|----------------|
| <i>penténte-si, s.,</i> | } repenting one's | | <i>pentito-si, m. s.,</i> | } [having] repent- | |
| <i>penténti-si, p.,</i> | | | <i>[pentiti-si, p.,</i> | | ed one's self. |
| | | | <i>pentíta-si, f. s.,</i> | | |
| | | | <i>[pentite-si, p.,</i> | | |

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|------------------|-------------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io mi pén-</i> | I repent myself; | <i>nói ci pentiámo,</i> | we repent our- |
| [<i>to,</i> | | | [selves; |
| 2d p. <i>ti pénti,</i> | thou repentest | <i>vi pentíte,</i> | you repent your- |
| | [thyself; | | [selves; |
| 3d p. <i>si pénte,</i> | he repents him- | <i>si péntono,</i> | they repent them- |
| | [self; | | [selves. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *mi pentíva,* | I repented myself.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *mi pentíi,* | I repented myself.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *mi pentirò,* | I shall or will repent myself.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *mi sóno pentíto, -a,* | I have repented myself.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *mi éra pentíto, -a,* | I had repented myself.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. *mi fúi pentíto, -a,* | I had repented myself.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. *mi sarò pentíto, -a,* | I shall or will have repented
[myself.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

| | | |
|-------------------------|--|--|
| 1st p. <i>mi penta,</i> | | that I repent myself, <i>or</i> may [repent myself. |
|-------------------------|--|--|

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | |
|----------------------------|--|---|
| 1st p. <i>mi pentíssi,</i> | | if I repented myself, <i>or</i> should [repent myself. |
|----------------------------|--|---|

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | |
|-----------------------------------|--|--|
| 1st p. <i>mi sia pentito, -a,</i> | | that I have repented myself, <i>or</i> [may have repented myself. |
|-----------------------------------|--|--|

4. — *Pluperfect.*

| | | |
|-------------------------------------|--|---------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>mi fossi pentito, -a,</i> | | if I had repented myself. |
|-------------------------------------|--|---------------------------|

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | |
|----------------------------|--|---|
| 1st p. <i>mi pentiréi,</i> | | I should, would, <i>or</i> could repent [myself ; <i>or</i> might repent myself. |
|----------------------------|--|---|

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

| | | |
|-------------------------------------|--|---|
| 1st p. <i>mi sarei pentito, -a,</i> | | I should, would, <i>or</i> could have re- [pented myself ; <i>or</i> might have [repented myself. |
|-------------------------------------|--|---|

V. IMPERATIVE.

| Singular. | Plural. |
|--|--|
| 1st p. | <i>pentiámo-ci nói</i> , let us repent our- [selves ; |
| 2d p. <i>pénti-ti tu</i> , repent thyself ; | <i>pentíte-vi vói</i> , repent your- [selves ; |
| 3d p. <i>si pénta</i> , or let him repent [<i>pénta-si égli</i> , [himself ; | <i>si péntano</i> or let them repent [<i>péntan-si</i> [themselves. [<i>églino</i> , |

A great number of active and neuter verbs may become pronominal by the addition of the conjunctive pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c. either in the *objective* or in the *relation of attribution* ; and then these verbs are varied with the auxiliary *essere*, ‘to be’ ; as, *lodáre*, ‘to praise’ ; *dáre*, ‘to give’ ; *tacére*, ‘to keep silent’ :

| | |
|--------------------------------|---|
| <i>mi sónó dátó un cólpo</i> , | I have given [to] myself a blow ; |
| <i>ti séi dátó per vinto</i> , | thou hast given thyself up as conquered ; |
| <i>si è lodáto</i> , | he has praised himself ; |
| <i>ci siámo taciúti</i> , | we have kept ourselves silent. |

Usage, however, in some instances allows us also to employ the auxiliary *avére*, ‘to have’ ; but then the conjunctive pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c. are always in the *relation of attribution* ; as,

| | |
|--|-------------------------|
| <i>mélo sónó</i> or <i>mél’ ho godúto</i> , | I have enjoyed it ; |
| <i>télo séi</i> or <i>tel’ hai credúto</i> , | thou hast believed it ; |
| <i>sel’ è</i> or <i>sel’ ha bevúto</i> , | he has drunk it. |

VARIATION OF UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

Unipersonal verbs are generally varied with the auxiliary *avére*, 'to have,' according to the conjugation to which they belong.

Variation of the Verb Pióvere.

(Paradigm of the *unipersonal verbs*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.**Pióvere*, |to rain.|| *avére piovéuto*, |to have rained.3. — *Future.*

avére a pióvere, } to have to rain, or
éssere per pióvere, } to be about to rain.

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*5. — *Past.**piovéndo*, |raining.|| *avéndo piovéuto*, |having rained.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*7. — *Past.**piovénte*, |raining.|| *piovéuto*, |rained.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*3d p. *pióve*,| it rains, it does rain, or it is rain-
[ing.

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *piovéva*, or *piovéa*, | it rained, it did rain, or it was
[raining.]

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *piovè*, *piovétte*, or *pióvve* | it rained, or it did rain.
[(pióbbe),

4. — *Future.*

3d p. *pioverà*, | it will rain.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

3d p. *ha piovúto*, | it has rained.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

3d p. *avéva piovúto*, | it had rained.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

3d p. *ebbe piovúto*, | it had rained.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

2d p. *avrà piovúto*, | it will have rained.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *pióva*, | that it rains, or may rain.

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *piovésse*, | if it rained, or should rain.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *abbia piovúto*, | that it has rained, or may have
[rained.]

4. — *Pluperfect.*

3d p. *avésse piovúto*, | if it had rained.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *pioverébbe* (*piovería*), | it would *or* could rain, *or* might
[rain.]

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

3d p. *avrébbe piovúto*, | it would *or* could have rained, *or*
[might have rained.]

V. IMPERATIVE.

3d p. *piova*, | let it rain.

The following are the *unipersonal verbs* most in use :

| | | | |
|----------------------|---------------------|----------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>aggiornàre</i> , | to be day ; | <i>gelàre</i> | } to freeze ; |
| <i>annottàre</i> , | to grow night ; | <i>ghiacciàre</i> , | |
| <i>balenàre</i> | } to lighten ; | <i>dighiacciàre</i> | } to thaw ; |
| <i>lampeggiàre</i> , | | <i>dimoiàre</i> , | |
| <i>tuonàre</i> , | to thunder ; | <i>far frédde</i> , | to be cold ; |
| <i>piovere</i> , | to rain ; | <i>far chiàro</i> , | to be light ; |
| <i>diluviàre</i> , | to rain very hard ; | <i>far bùio</i> , | to be dark ; |
| | } to deluge ; | <i>far càlde</i> , | to be hot ; |
| <i>nevicàre</i> , | to snow ; | <i>far vènto</i> , | to be windy ; |
| <i>grandinàre</i> | } to hail ; | <i>far buon tèmpo</i> , | to be good weather ; |
| <i>tempestàre</i> , | | <i>far cattivo tèmpo</i> , | to be bad weather. |

The following verbs, though not *unipersonal in themselves*, are often *used unipersonally*, and may have the third person plural, as well as singular ; and are varied with the auxiliary *éssere*, ‘ to be ’ :

| | | | | | |
|---------------------|---|-----------------|-------------------------|---|------------------|
| <i>accadére,</i> | { | to happen ; | <i>incrêscere,</i> | { | to displease ; |
| <i>avvenîre,</i> | | | <i>dispiacére,</i> | | |
| <i>occorrere,</i> | | | <i>spiacére,</i> | | |
| <i>aggradâre,</i> | { | to please ; | <i>parére,</i> | { | to seem ; |
| <i>piacére,</i> | | | <i>sembrâre,</i> | | |
| <i>appartenére,</i> | { | to belong ; | <i>spettâre,</i> | { | to belong ; |
| <i>bastâre,</i> | | | <i>toccâre,</i> | | |
| <i>bisognâre</i> | | | <i>far uôpo,</i> | | |
| <i>convenîre,</i> | { | to be needful ; | <i>far d' uôpo,</i> | { | to be necessary. |
| <i>importâre,</i> | | | <i>far mestîeri,</i> | | |
| <i>dipêndere,</i> | | | <i>far di mestîeri,</i> | | |
| | | to depend ; | | | |

To these may be added all verbs which become passive by taking the particle *si*, either before or after them ; which are varied in the third person both singular and plural, and with the auxiliary *éssere* ; as, *vedérsi*, ‘to be seen’ :— *si véde*, ‘it is seen’ ; *si sóno vedúti*, ‘they have been seen’ ; *biasimârsi*, ‘to be blamed’ ; *si sóno biasimâti*, ‘they have been blamed’ ; &c.

E'ssere, ‘to be,’ is also used unipersonally, both in the singular and plural, when it is joined to the particles *ci* or *vi* ; as, *ésserci* or *ésservi*, ‘to be here,’ or ‘to be there.’ It is varied as follows :

Variation of the Verb E'ssere, unipersonally used.

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

1. — Present.

ésser-ci or *ésser-* | to be here or
[*-vi*,] | [to be there.]

Compound Tenses.

2. — Past.

ésser-ci { *stâto*, m. s., }
or *ésser-* { *stâti*, p., } to have
[*-vi*,] { *stâta*, f. s., } been there.
{ *stâte*, p., }

3. — Future.

ésser-ci or *ésser-vi per éssere,* } to have to be there, or
avér-ci or *avér-vi ad éssere,* } to be about to be there.
dovér-ci or *dovér-vi éssere,*

Singular.

Plural.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

3d p. *c' éra* or *v'* | there had been ; || *c' érano* or *v' éra-* | there had been.
[éra státo, -a, | *[no státi, -e,* |

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

3d p. *ci fu* or *vi* | there had been ; || *ci fúrono* or *vi* | there had been.
[fu státo, -a, | *[fúrono státi, -e,* |

8. — *Future Anterior.*

3d p. *ci sarà* or *vi* | there will have | *ci saránno* or *vi* | there will have
[sarà státo, -a, | [been ; || *[saránno státi,* | [been.
[-e, |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *ci sia* or *vi* | that there be, or | *ci siano, vi sia-* | that there be, or
[sia, | [may be ; || *[no, or ci sieno,* | [may be.
[vi sieno, |

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *ci fósse* or | if there were ; or || *ci fóssero* or *vi* | if there were ; or
[vi fósse, | [should be ; || *[fóssero,* | [should be.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *ci sia* or *vi* | that there has | *ci siano* or *vi sia-* | that there have
[sia státo, -a, | been ; || *[no státi, -e,* | [been, or may
[-a, | [have been.

4. — *Pluperfect.*

3d p. *ci fósse* or | if there had been ; || *ci fóssero* or *vi* | if there had been.
[vi fósse státo, | *[fóssero státi,* |
[-a, | *[-e,* |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Plural.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|------------------|---------------------------|------------------|
| 3d p. <i>ci sarébbe</i> | there should, | <i>ci sarébbéro or vi</i> | there should, |
| [or <i>vi sarébbe</i> , | [would, or could | [<i>sarébbéro</i> , | [would, or could |
| | [be ; or might | | [be ; or might |
| | [be ; | | [be. |

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|------------------|---------------------------|------------------|
| 3d p. <i>ci sarébbe</i> | there should, | <i>ci sarébbéro or vi</i> | there should, |
| [or <i>vi sarébbe</i> | [would, or could | [<i>sarébbéro stá-</i> | [would, or could |
| [<i>státo, -a,</i> | [have been ; or | [<i>ti, -e,</i> | [have been ; or |
| | [might have | | [might have |
| | [been ; | | [been. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|----------------|--------------------------|---------------|
| 3d p. <i>ci sia, vi</i> | let there be ; | <i>ci siano, vi sie-</i> | let there be. |
| [<i>sia, or sia-ci,</i> | | [<i>no, or sían-ci,</i> | |
| [<i>sia-vi,</i> | | [<i>sien-vi,</i> | |

The verb *avére*, ‘to have,’ is often substituted for the verb *éssere* when unipersonally used, and then it is varied after the same manner ; as, *avérci* or *avérvi*, ‘to be here’ or ‘to be there’ ; *ci ha* or *vi ha*, ‘here is’ or ‘there is’ ; *ci hánno* or *vi hánno*, ‘there are’ ; &c.

The verb *avére*, not only may be used with propriety for the verb *éssere*, but is also elegantly used in the singular, although the noun to which it is joined is in the plural ; as, *quánte miglia ci HA ?* ‘how many miles is it ?’ *ÉBBEVI mólti uómini*, ‘there were a great many men there’ ; &c.

To express in Italian *here* or *there is some of it, here* or *there are some of them*, we join the particle *ne*, ‘of it, of them,’ to *ci* or *vi*, and say, *éssercene* or *ésservene*,

avércene or *avérvene*; as, *cen' è* or *ven' è*, *cen' ha* or *ven' ha*, 'here is some of it,' or 'there is some of it'; *céne sóno* or *véne sóno*, *cen' hánno* or *ven' hánno*, 'there are some of them'; &c.

EXAMPLES.

*Per certo chi non v' áma, da
vói non desidera d' ÉSSERE AMÁ-
TO.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Surely he who does not love
you, does not desire to be loved
by you.

*Nói ERAVÁM PARTÍTI già da
éllo.* (Dant. Inf. 32.)

We had already departed from
him.

*DORMÍTO HAI, bélla dónna, un
bréve sônno.* (Petr. s. 284.)

Thou hast slept, beautiful wo-
man, a short sleep.

*Fu accusáto falsaménte che
dovéa AVÉR MÓRTO un nómo, cól-
la mógliè, e con tútta la famíglia.*
(Vit. S. Franc.)

He was falsely accused to have
killed a man, with his wife, and
all his family.

*Tarquínio álla fine FU MÓRTO
per gli figliuóli del sopradétto
Márco Márzio.* (Giov. Vill. l. 1.
c. 2.)

Tarquin at length was killed by
the sons of the above mentioned
Marcus Martius.

*Lasciáte costúi dille mie múse
che LO GUARÍSCANO.* (Varch.
Boez. 1. 1.)

Let him be cured by my muses.

*Mío fratéllo per méra grázia di
Dio È GUARÍTO.* (Red. lett. 1.)

My brother has recovered through
the mere mercy of God.

*E 'l PENTÍRSI, e 'l conóscer
chiaraménte, — Che quánto piáce
al móndo è un bréve sônno.*
(Petr. s. 1.)

And to repent and to know
clearly, that what pleases the
world is a short dream.

*Dálle quáli facilménte tu TI
SARÉSTI POTÚTO ASTENÉRE.*
(Mach. Com.)

From which thou wouldst have
easily abstained.

*Se ío dálla verità del fáttö MI
FÓSSI SCOSTÁRE VOLÚTA, avréi
ben sapúto sótto áltri nómi rac-
contárla.* (Bocc.)

If I had wished to depart from
the truth of the fact, I should have
known how to relate it under dif-
ferent names.

Acciocchè mále e scándalo non ne nascésse, ME ne SÓNO TACIÚTA. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.) That no evil or scandal should arise from it, I have kept silent.

Èlla fu sávia cërto, e di grand' ánimò, — Un' áltra SI SARÉ' [sarébbe] DÁTA sul piàngere. (Cecch. Inc. 1. 1.) She was wise surely, and of a great mind; for another would have given herself to weeping.

Ègli è nótte búia, e piovéggina, e par che sia per PIÓVER più fórte. (Sacch. nov. 28.) It is a very dark night, and it drizzles, and seems as if it would rain harder.

CI SÓNO délle áltre dónne assái. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.) Here are many other ladies.

Caválca, e quándo ANNÓTTA e quándo AGGIÓRNA. (Ariost. Fur. 27. 12.) He rides both when it grows night, and when it is day.

Non altraménti a lui AVVÉNNE, che al Dúca AVVENÚTO ÉRA. (Bocc. 9. 2. n. 7.) It happened to him not otherwise than it had happened to the Duke.

E che i vízj débbero da tútti BIASIMÁRSI. (Pass.) And that vices ought to be blamed by all.

QUÁNTE MÍGLIA CI HA? — HÁCCENE più di millánda. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.) How many miles is it? It is an infinite number.

Là dóve CEN' È úna, che è mólto córta. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 4.) Where there is one [way] which is very short.

EXERCISE XVII.

[The learner, in the following exercise, will put the *past participle* of *passive* verbs, and of such *neuter* and *pronominal* verbs as are varied with the verb *essere*, both in the *masculine* and *feminine* gender, by alternating the gender at each tense, as is here done in the English with the *third* person singular.]

PASSIVE VERBS.

I. 1. — To be loved. *Èssere amáto.* 2. — to have been feared. *èssere státo temúto.*

4. — being believed. *èssere credúto.* 5. — having been heard. *èssere státo sentíto.*

II. 1. — I am praised, thou art invited, he is expected,
lodato, invitato, aspettato,

we are called, you are assured, they are punished. 2. —
chiamato, assicurato, castigato.

I was sought, thou wast advised, she was prayed, we
cercato, consigliato, pregato,

were accompanied, you were envied, they were assured.
accompagnato, invidiato, assicurato.

3. — I was assailed, thou wast besieged, he was ordered,
assaltato, assediato, ordinato,

we were confirmed, you were delivered, they were
confirmato, consegnato,

accepted. 4. — I shall be proved, thou wilt be asked,
accettato, provato, domandato,

she will be admired, we shall be paid, you will be
ammirato, pagato,

honored, they will be blamed. 5. — I have been
onorato, biasimato.

robbed.* — III. 1. — I may be believed, thou mayest
rubato, creduto,

be received, he may be beaten, we may be preceded,
ricevuto, battuto, preceduto,

you may be provided, they may be sold. 2. — I
provveduto, venduto.

might be punished, thou mightest be furnished, she
punito, fornito,

might be hindered, we might be attacked, you might
impedito, assalito,

be betrayed, they might be supplied. — IV. 1. —
tradito, supplito.

I should be admonished, thou wouldst be wounded, he
ammonito, ferito,

would be banished, we would be encouraged, you would
bandito, incoraggiato,

* The learner can form the compound tenses of any of these verbs by joining the past participle to the compound tenses of the verb *essere*.

be obeyed, they would be invested. — V. — Be thou
obbedúto, *investúto.*

allured, let her be listened to, let us be employed, be
allettáto, *ascoltáto,* *impiegáto,*

ye trusted, let them be saved.
fidáto, *salváto.*

NEUTER AND PRONOMINAL VERBS.

- I. 2. — To have departed. 5. — having repented
partúto. ¹ *pentúto*³
 one's self. II. 5. — I have delayed, thou hast kept
*si.*² *indugiáto,* ² *taciú-*
 silent (*thyself*), he has gone out, we have cured, you
*to*³ *ti,*¹ *uscúto,* *guarúto,*
 have praised yourselves, they have lived. 6. — I had ²
² *lodáto*³ *vi,*¹ *vivúto.*
 wounded myself, thou hadst become dumb, she had ²
*ferúto*³ *mi,*¹ *ammulúto,*
 corrected herself, you had grown childish, they had ²
*ricredúto*³ *si,*¹ *rimbambúto,*
 seized (*themselves*). 7. — I had dined, thou hadst soiled
*impadronúto*³ *si.*¹ *pranzáto,* ² *imbrattáto*³
 thyself, he had grown mad, we had lost ourselves, you
*ti,*¹ *impazzúto,* ² *smarrúto*³ *ci,*¹
 had spoken, they were dismayed (*themselves*). 8. —
parláto, ² *sbigottúto*³ *si.*¹
 I shall have sailed, thou wilt have complained (*thyself*),
navigáto, ² *lamentáto*³ *ti,*¹
 she will have recovered, we will have taken leave
guarúto, ² *licenziáto*³
 (*ourselves*), you will have walked, they will have married
*ci,*¹ *passeggiáto,* ² *maritáto*³
 (*themselves*). — III. 3. — I may have rejoiced (*myself*),
*si.*¹ ² *rallegráto* *mi,*¹
 thou mayest have sported, he may have colored himself,
scherzáto, ² *incolorúto*³ *si,*¹

we may have gone near, you may have risen (*yourselves*),
avvicinato, ² *alzato*³ *vi*¹,

they may have arrived. 4. — I might have enriched
arrivato. ² *arricchito*³

myself, thou mightest have slept, *she* might have
*mi*¹, *dormito*, ²

instructed herself, we might have sunk under, you
*istruito*³ *si*¹, *succombuto*,

might have assembled yourselves, they might have
² *riunito*³ *vi*¹,

grown pale. — IV. 2. — I should have married myself,
impallidito. ² *ammogliato*³ *mi*¹,

thou shouldst have grown proud, he would have rejoiced
insuperbito, ² *rallegrato*³

himself, we would have cried out, you would have
*si*¹, *gridato*, ²

enamoured yourselves, they would have become cruel.
*innamorato*³ *vi*¹, *inferocito*.

— V. — Defend thyself, let her imagine herself,
difendere *ti*, *immaginare*² *si*¹, or *immaginare*—

let us help ourselves, ennoble yourselves, let them
si, *aiutare*— *ci*, *annobilire*— *vi*, *rispet-*

respect themselves.
*tare*² *si*¹, or *rispettare*— *si*.

UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

I. 1. — To rain. 4. — raining. 7. — rained. To
Piovere. *piovere*. *piovere*.

have rained. — II. 1. — It is day. 2. — it grew
piovuto. *aggiornare*. *annot-*

night. 3. — it lightened. 4. — it will thunder. 5. —
tare. *balenare*. *tuonare*.

it has snowed. 6. — it had happened. 7. — it had
nevicato. *avvenuto*.

frozen. 8. — it will have seemed. — III. 1. — it
gelato. *sembrato*.

- may freeze. *gelâre.* 2. — it might thaw. *dimoidâre.* 3. — it may have been cold. *fatto cálido.* 4. — it might have displeased. — IV. 1. — *dispiaciúto.*
- it would be important. *importâre.* 2. — it would have belonged. *appartenúto.*
- V. — let it be sufficient. *bastâre.*

ÉSSERCI OR ÉSSERVI, AVÉRCI OR AVÉRVI.

- I. 4. — There being. — II. 1. — here is, or there is, *ci² Ésser¹*. *ci éssere, or vi avérc,*
- there are. 2. — there was, there were. 3. — *ci éssere or avére. vi éssere, ci * avére.*
- there was, there were. 4. — there will be, *sing.*, there *vi éssere, ci éssere. vi avére, ci*
- will be, *plur.* 5. — there has been some of it, *sing.*, *avére. vi éssere² ne¹,*
- there has been some of them, *plur.* — III. 1. — that there *ci avére² ne¹ vi*
- may be, *sing.*, that there may be, *plur.* 2. — if there *avére, ci éssere. vi*
- were some of it, *sing.*, if there were some of them, *plur.* *avére² ne¹, ci éssere² ne¹.*
- IV. 1. — there should be, *sing.*, there should be *vi éssere, ci avére²*
- some of them, *plur.* — V. — let there be, *sing.*, *ci avére, or éssere — ci,*
- let there be some of them, *plur.* *vi éssere² ne¹, or avére — vi — ne.*

CHAPTER X.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

THE irregularities of Italian Verbs are chiefly confined to the *perfect* tense of the *indicative* mood, and the *past participle*.

Some verbs, however, are also irregular in the *present* of the *indicative* ; and then they are irregular likewise in the *present* of the *conjunctive* and in the *imperative*.

When verbs are contracted in the *infinitive* mood, they are contracted also in the *future* tense, and in the *conditional* mood.

In those tenses in which verbs are irregular, the irregularity, generally, does not extend to all the persons : thus, with very few exceptions, in the *perfect* of the *indicative*, the *second person singular* and the *first* and *second persons plural* ; — and in the *present* of the *indicative* and *conjunctive*, and in the *imperative*, the *first* and *second persons plural*, — are *regular*.

In the variation of these verbs, we will give only those tenses in which they depart from the paradigms already given, to which we must refer for the formation of the other tenses. The *persons* which are *irregular* are here printed in *small capitals*.

For the assistance of learners, we have added to each verb, the *auxiliary* with which it is varied in its compound tenses.

VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST
CONJUGATION.

There are but *four* simple verbs in the first conjugation, which are not varied like *amâre*, viz.

| | | | | |
|----------------|-----------|--|---------------|---|
| <i>Andâre,</i> | to go ; | | <i>fâre,</i> | to do or to make ; |
| <i>dâre,</i> | to give ; | | <i>stâre,</i> | to be, to dwell, to stand, [or to stay.] |

Andâre.

(Varied with *essere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Andâre, | to go.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

andândo, |going ; || *andâto,* |gone.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | | | |
|-------------------|-----------------|--|-----------------|--|----------|
| 1st p. vo, or vâ- | I go, or am go- | | <i>andiâmo,</i> | | we go ; |
| [DO,* | [ing ; | | | | |
| 2d p. vâi, | thou goest ; | | <i>andâte,</i> | | you go ; |
| 3d p. va, | he goes ; | | vânno, | | they go. |

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *andrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will go.
[*anderò*],

* *Andâre* is also a defective verb, and borrows these forms from the Latin verb *videre*.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------------|-------------------------|------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>io</i> <i>váda</i> , | that I go <i>or</i> may | <i>andíamo</i> , | that we go ; |
| | [go ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu</i> <i>váda</i> | that thou go ; | <i>andíate</i> , | that you go ; |
| [(<i>vádi</i>), | | | |
| 3d p. <i>égli</i> <i>váda</i> , | that he go ; | <i>vádano</i> , | that they go. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1st p. <i>andríi</i> (<i>andría</i>) [hy contrac- | I should, would, <i>or</i> could go ; <i>or</i> |
| [tion for <i>anderíi</i> (<i>andería</i>)], | [might go. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--|--------------|------------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>andíamo nói</i> , | let us go ; |
| 2d p. <i>va</i> (<i>vá'</i>) <i>tu</i> , | go thou ; | <i>andáte vói</i> , | go ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>váda</i> <i>égli</i> , | let him go ; | <i>vádano églino</i> , | let them go. |

Andáre is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, *ci*, *vi*, *si*, and the particle *ne* ; thus, **ME** *ne vo*, ' I go hence ' ; **TE** *ne vái*, ' thou goest hence ' ; &c. *Me*, *te*, &c. are then mere expletives.

The compounds of *andáre*, as *riandáre*, signifying ' to go again ', &c. have the same irregularities.

EXCEPTIONS.

Riandáre, signifying ' to examine ' or ' to go over again ' ; and *trasandáre*, ' to go beyond ' ; are regular and varied like *amáre*.

The verbs *mandáre*, ' to send ' ; *rimandáre*, ' to send back again ' ; *tramandáre*, ' to transmit ' ; *comandáre*, ' to command ' ; *dimandáre*, ' to ask ' ; &c. are not derivatives of *andáre*, and are varied like *amáre*.

Dàre.(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

Dàre, | to give.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

dándo, | giving. || *dáto,* | given.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------|----------------------|---------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>do,</i> | I give, <i>or</i> am | <i>diámo,</i> | we give ; |
| | [giving ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>dái,</i> | thou givest ; | <i>dáte,</i> | you give ; |
| 3d p. <i>dá,</i> | he gives ; | <i>dánno,</i> | they give. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------------|------------------------|---------------------------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>DÉTTI,</i> <i>or</i> | I gave ; <i>or</i> did | <i>DÉMMO,</i> | we gave ; |
| [<i>DIÉDI</i> (<i>diéi</i>), | [give ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>DÉSTI,</i> | thou gavest ; | <i>DÉSTE,</i> | you gave ; |
| 3d p. <i>DÉTTE,</i> <i>or</i> | he gave ; | <i>DÉTTERO,</i> <i>or</i> <i>DIÉ-</i> | they gave. |
| [<i>DIÉDE</i> (<i>diéo,</i> | | [<i>DERO</i> (<i>diérono,</i> | |
| [<i>diè</i>), | | [<i>diéro, diér, dér-</i> | |
| | | [<i>no, diénno, dén-</i> | |
| | | [<i>no</i>), | |

4. — *Future.*1st p. *DARò,* | I shall, *or* will give.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------|---------------------------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io</i> <i>día,</i> | that I give, <i>or</i> | <i>diámo,</i> | that we give ; |
| | [may give ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu</i> <i>día,</i> <i>or</i> | that thou give ; | <i>diáte,</i> | that you give ; |
| [<i>dii,</i> | | | |
| 3d p. <i>egli</i> <i>día,</i> | that he give ; | <i>díano,</i> <i>or</i> <i>díeno,</i> | that they give. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io DÉSSI,* | if I gave *or* should give.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *DARÉI* (*darfa*), | I should, would, *or* could
[give ; *or* might give.

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|--|------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>diámo nói,</i> | let us give ; |
| 2d p. <i>dà (dà')tu,</i> | | <i>dáte vói,</i> | give ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>díá égli,</i> | | <i>DÍANO, or DÍENO</i> | let them give. |
| | | [<i>églino,</i> | |

The compounds of *dáre*, as *ridáre*, ‘to give again’ ; *addársi*, ‘to devote one’s self’ ; &c., have the same irregularities.

The verbs *abbondáre*, ‘to abound’ ; *accommodáre*, ‘to mend’ ; *badáre*, ‘to mind’ ; *accordáre*, ‘to grant’ ; *circondáre*, ‘to surround’ ; *fidáre*, ‘to trust’ ; *freddáre*, ‘to cool’ ; *gridáre*, ‘to cry out’ ; *guardáre*, ‘to look’ ; *guidáre*, ‘to guide’ ; *lodáre*, ‘to praise’ ; *predáre*, ‘to prey’ ; *ricordáre*, ‘to remember’ ; *rimediáre*, ‘to remedy’ ; *scaldáre*, ‘to warm’ ; *secondáre*, ‘to second’ ; &c., are not derivatives of *dáre*, and are varied like *amáre*.

Färe.(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

FÁRE (*facere*),* | to do, or to make.

GERUND. PARTICIPLE.

facéndo, | doing. || FÁTTO, | done.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------------------|----------------|-----------------------|----------|
| 1st p. <i>fo</i> (<i>faccio</i>), | I do or am do- | FACCIÁMO, | we do ; |
| | [ing ; | | |
| 2d p. FÁI (<i>fáci</i>), | thou doest ; | <i>fáte</i> , | you do ; |
| 3d p. <i>fa</i> (<i>face</i>), | he does ; | FÁNNO (<i>fán</i>), | they do. |

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *io facéva* or *facéa* (*féa*), | I did or was doing.3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------------|--------------|----------------------------------|-----------|
| 1st p. FÉCI (<i>fèi</i>), | I did ; | <i>facémmo</i> (<i>fém-</i> | we did ; |
| | | [<i>mo</i>), | |
| 2d p. FACÉSTI | thou didst ; | <i>facéste</i> (<i>féste</i>), | you did ; |
| [<i>(fèsti)</i> , | | | |
| 3d p. FÉCE (<i>fè</i> , | he did ; | FÉCERO (<i>férono</i> , | they did. |
| [<i>féo</i>), | | [<i>férno, féro, fer,</i> | |
| | | [<i>fénno, fen</i>), | |

4. — *Future.*

1st p. FARÒ, | I shall or will do.

* This verb belongs properly to the second conjugation, it being but a contraction of *facere*, now become *obsolete*, of which it retains many of the forms.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------------------|-----------|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>io</i> FÁCCIA, | that I do, <i>or</i> may [do;] | FACCIÁMO, | that we do; |
| 2d p. <i>tu</i> FÁCCIA, | that thou do; | FACCIÁTE, | that you do; |
| 3d p. <i>egli</i> FÁC- [CIA, | that he do; | FÁCCIANO, | that they do. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io* *faceffi* (féssi), | if I did *or* should do.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. FARÉI (faría, faré'), | I should, would, *or* could
[do; *or* might do.

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|-----------------------------------|-------------|-----------|--------------|
| 1st p. | do thou; | FACCIÁMO, | let us do; |
| 2d p. <i>fa</i> (fà') <i>tu</i> , | let him do; | fáte, | do ye; |
| 3d p. FÁCCIA [égli, | | FÁCCIANO, | let them do. |

The compounds of *färe*, as *assuefäre*, 'to accustom'; *confäre*, 'to suit,' 'to agree'; *contraffäre*, 'to mimic,' 'to imitate'; *disfäre*, 'to undo'; *misfäre*, 'to do wrong'; *liquefäre*, 'to melt'; *sopraffäre*, 'to overpower'; *stupéfäre*, 'to stupefy,' 'to astonish'; &c., have the same irregularities.

Sodisfäre or *soddisfäre*, 'to satisfy,' is both *regular* and *irregular*.

The verbs *olfäre*, 'to smell'; *schifäre*, 'to shun'; *trionfäre*, 'to triumph,' are not derivatives of *färe*, and are varied like *amäre*.

Stàre.(Varied with *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|---------------|---|
| <i>Stàre,</i> | to stand, to stay, to dwell, or to be. |
|---------------|---|

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|----------------|-----------|---------------|--------|
| <i>stàndo,</i> | standing. | <i>stàto,</i> | stood. |
|----------------|-----------|---------------|--------|

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------|------------------------------------|----------------|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>sto,</i> | I stand <i>or</i> am [standing; | <i>stiàmo,</i> | we stand ; |
| 2d p. <i>stái,</i> | thou standest ; | <i>stàte,</i> | you stand ; |
| 3d p. <i>sta,</i> | he stands ; | <i>stàno,</i> | they stand. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|---|----------------|---|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>stétti</i> [(<i>stèi</i>), | I stood ; | <i>stémmo,</i> | we stood ; |
| 2d p. <i>stésti,</i> | thou stoodst ; | <i>stéste,</i> | you stood ; |
| 3d p. <i>stétte</i> [(<i>stè</i>), | he stood ; | <i>stéttero</i> (<i>stéro,</i> [<i>stér,</i> <i>stiero,</i> [<i>stier</i>), | they stood. |

4. — *Future.*

| | |
|----------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>starò,</i> | I shall <i>or</i> will stand. |
|----------------------|-------------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---|--|---|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io stía,</i> | that I stand <i>or</i> [may stand ; | <i>stiàmo,</i> | that we stand ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu stía,</i> <i>or</i> [<i>stíi,</i> | that thou stand ; | <i>stíate,</i> | that you stand ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli stía,</i> | that he stand ; | <i>stíano,</i> <i>or</i> <i>stíe-</i> [<i>no,</i> | that they stand. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io stéssi*, | if I stood *or* should stand.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *STARÉI* (*staría*), | I should, would, *or* could
[stand; *or* might stand.

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

| | | | |
|----------------------------------|-----------------|--|-----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>stíamo</i> , | let us stand ; |
| 2d p. <i>sta</i> (<i>stá'</i>) | stand thou ; | <i>státe</i> , | stand ye ; |
| | [<i>tu</i> , | | |
| 3d p. <i>stía égli</i> , | let him stand ; | <i>STÍANO</i> , <i>or</i> <i>STÍE-</i> | let them stand. |
| | | [<i>no églino</i> , | |

Stáre, is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns, *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c., and the particle *ne* : thus, *ME NE sto*, 'I remain here'; *TE NE stái*, 'thou remainest here'; &c. — *Me*, *te*, &c. are then mere expletives.

The compounds of *stáre*, as *contrastáre*, signifying 'to stand against'; *distáre*, 'to be distant'; *instáre*, 'to entreat'; *ristáre*, 'to stop'; *soprastáre* or *sovrastáre*, signifying 'to delay,' 'to differ'; &c. have the same irregularities.

EXCEPTIONS.

Contrastáre, signifying 'to deny,' 'to dispute'; *soprastáre* or *sovrastáre*, signifying 'to stand over,' 'to threaten'; *ostáre*, 'to oppose'; *restáre*, 'to remain'; are *regular*, and are varied like *amáre*.

The verbs *accostáre*, 'to approach'; *acquistáre*, 'to acquire'; *costáre*, 'to cost'; *manifestáre*, 'to manifest'; *pestáre*, 'to pound,' are not derivatives of *stáre*, and are varied like *amáre*.

The foregoing verbs, *andàre*, *dàre*, *fàre*, and *stàre*, in all those forms in which, when they are simple, they form but one syllable, have in their compounds the accent on the last syllable; as, *vo*, *da*, *fe'*, *sta*: — *rivò*, 'I go again'; *ridà*, 'he gives back again'; *disfè'*, 'he destroyed'; *instà*, 'entreat thou'; &c.

EXAMPLES.

VA il cavál per Giò, — Per The horse goes by *Giò*, the ox
Ánda VA il bò, — E l' ásino per by *Ánda*, and the ass by *A'rri*.^{*}
Árri. (Fran. Sacch., rime, 9.)

Or vâ', ch' un sol volére è Now go, for one only will is in
d' amendúe. (Dant. Inf. 2.) both of us.

Quêsto, udito dal sánto vécchio Having heard this he went to
SE NE ANDÒ mólto consoláto. the holy man quite consoled.
(Vit. S. Ant.)

Prima ch' álti dinánzi li RI- Ere any one repassed before
VÁDA. (Dant. Inf. 28.) him.

RIÁnda le cose, che tu gli hái Examine the things, which thou
détte di me. (Salv. Granch. 2., 5.) hast said to him of me.

Sóno mólti di sì liève fantasía, There are many of so light a
che in tutte le lóro ragióni TRA- mind, that in all their reasonings
SÁNDANO.† (Dant. Conv. 178.) they [go beyond the question]
wander from the subject of them.

La senténza la quále San Pié- The sentence which saint Pèter
tro DÉTTE cóntro Ananía. (Ca- gave against Ananias.
valc. Pungill. 97.)

Al cónte piáque mólto quèsta This request pleased the count
dománda, e prestaménte rispóse much, and he immediately replied
di sì, e gliéle DIÉDE. (Bocc. g. that he would, and gave them to
2. n. 8.) him.

^{*} Different interjections used by the Italians in driving those animals.

[†] We are aware that some copies of the *Convivio* have *trasvânno*; *trasándano*, however, is the better reading.

*E il buon maestro del parlar
próprio [Dante] disse: ío mi
FÉCI al mostráto innánzi un póco;
e Ver me si FÉCE, ed ío ver lúi
mi FÉI. (Dep. Decam. 99.)*

And the good master of correct
speaking [*Dante*] said: *I* [made
myself] *drew a little nearer to*
him who had been shown me;
and *He drew near me, and I drew*
near him.

*All' inférno non SODÍSFANO
eziandío le prezíose còse. (Fr.
Giord.)*

In hell even precious things
give no satisfaction.

*E què convién, ch' i' quèsto
pésó pórti — Per léi, tánto ch' a
Díó si SODDISFÁCCIA. (Dant.
Pur. 11.)*

And here *I* must bear for it this
weight, till satisfaction be made to
God.

*Veggéndo che da niún cono-
sciúto v' éra, si STÉTTE. (Bocc.
g. 5. n. 6.)*

Seeing that he was known by
none, he stayed there.

*Pósso favelláre, s' ío vóglío; e
se nò, sì ME NE pósso STÁRE.
(Fr. Giord. S. Pred. 32.)*

I can speak, if *I* wish; if not, *I*
can refrain from it.

*Ma paúra e pietáde CONTRA-
STÉTTE — Al mío crudél ardíre.
(Ovid. Pist.)*

But fear and pity stood against
my fierce desire.

*Ráde vólte addivién, che all' ál-
te imprése — Fortúna ingiuri-
ósa non CONTRÁSTI. (Petr.
c. 11.)*

Seldom it happens that Fortune
does not oppose great undertak-
ings.

*Martúccio, veggéndo la giò-
vane, maravighiándosi, SOPRA-
STÉTTE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)*

Martuccio, seeing the lass, won-
dering at it, tarried.

*Sánza montáre al dósso —
Dell' árcó, óve lo scóglio più so-
VRÁSTA. (Dant. Inf. 18.)*

Without ascending on the top
of the arch where the rock is more
jutting.

EXERCISE XVIII.

[In this and the following exercises on *Irregular Verbs*, have been introduced many of those verbs, which, although they are, or, from the similarity of their terminations, seem to be, derived from the simple irregular verbs here given, are yet *regular*. This has been done with a view of early accustoming the learner to make the necessary discrimination.]

- I. 1.—To go. *Andàre.* 4.—giving. *dàre.* 7.—made. *fàre.* — II. 1.—I stay, *stàre,*
 thou sendest, *mandàre,* he gives again, *ridàre,* we melt, *liquefàre,* you entreat, *instàre,*
 they go over again. *riandàre.* 2.—I gave, *dàre,* thou accustomedst, *assuefàre,*
 he stood against, *contrastàre,* we asked, *dimandàre,* you granted, *accordàre,* they triumphed. *trionfàre.*
 3.—I stayed, *stàre,* thou sendedst back, *rimandàre,* he devoted himself, *addàre*² *si*¹, we
 imitated, *traffàre,* you delayed, *soprastàre,* they transmitted. *tramandàre.* 4.—I will make, *fàre,*
 thou wilt oppose, *ostàre,* he will go again, *riandàre,* we will trust, *fidàre,* you will
 stand over, *vrastàre,* they will praise. *lodàre.* 5.—I have gone, *andàto,*
 hast made over again, *rifatto,* he has remained, *restato,* we have given, *dato,*
 you have commanded, *comandato,* they have manifested. *manifestato.* III. 1.—
 that I deny, *contrastàre,* that thou mayest go beyond, *trasandàre,* that he may
 satisfy, *fàre,* that we may pound, *pestàre,* that you may attend, *badàre,* that
 they may cost. *costàre.* 2.—I might astonish, *stupefàre,* thou mightest *pre-*
 pray, *dàre,* he might approach, *accostàre,* we might disdain, *schifàre,* you might *scal-*
 warm, *dàre,* they might abound. *abbondàre.* — IV. 1.—I would do wrong, *misfàre,*

thou wouldst acquire, he would command, we would scold,
acquistâre, comandâre, gridâre,
 you would smell, they would cost. — V. — go thou, let
olfâre, costâre. andâre,
 him give, let us make, stay ye, let them dispute.
dâre, fâre, stâre, contestâre.

VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND
 CONJUGATION.

Variation of the Irregular Verbs in ěre (long).

The simple irregular verbs in ěre (*long*) are the following; viz.

| | | | |
|--------------------|--------------|------------------|--------------------|
| <i>caděre,</i> | to fall; | <i>rimaněre,</i> | to remain; |
| <i>dissuaděre,</i> | to dissuade; | <i>sapěre,</i> | to know; |
| <i>dolěre,</i> | to grieve; | <i>seděre,</i> | to sit down; |
| <i>dověre,</i> | to owe; | <i>tacěre,</i> | to be or keep si- |
| <i>giacěre,</i> | to lie down; | <i>teněre,</i> | to hold; [lent; |
| <i>parěre,</i> | to seem; | <i>valěre,</i> | to be worth; |
| <i>persuaděre,</i> | to persuade; | <i>veděre,</i> | to see; |
| <i>piacěre,</i> | to please; | <i>volěre,</i> | to wish, to will, |
| <i>potěre,</i> | to be able; | | [or to be willing. |

Caděre.

(Varied with *ěssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Caděre, | to fall. || *cadŭto,* | fallen.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|----------------|--|------------|
| 1st p. <i>cádo</i> (<i>cág-</i> [<i>gio</i>]), | I fall ; | <i>cadiámo</i> (<i>caggiá-</i> [<i>mo</i> , <i>cadémo</i>]), | we fall ; |
| 2d p. <i>cádi</i> , | thou fallest ; | <i>cadéte</i> , | you fall ; |
| 3d p. <i>cade</i> , | he falls ; | <i>cádono</i> (<i>caggio-</i> [<i>no</i>]), | they fall. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|---|----------------|--|------------|
| 1st p. <i>CÁDDI</i> (<i>ca-</i> [<i>déi</i> , <i>cadétti</i>]), | I fell ; | <i>cadémmo</i> , | we fell ; |
| 2d p. <i>cadésti</i> , | thou fellest ; | <i>cadéste</i> , | you fell ; |
| 3d p. <i>CÁDDE</i> (<i>ca-</i> [<i>déo</i> , <i>cadétte</i> , <i>cadè</i>]), | he fell ; | <i>CÁDDERO</i> (<i>cadéro</i> , [<i>cadér</i> ; <i>cadéro</i> , [<i>no</i> , <i>cadéttero</i>]), | they fell. |

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *caderò* (*cadrà*), | I shall or will fall.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|------------------|---------------------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io cáda</i> | that I fall or | <i>cadiámo</i> (<i>caggiá-</i> | that we fall ; |
| [<i>(caggia)</i>], | [may fall ; | [<i>mo</i>]), | |
| 2d p. <i>tu cáda</i> | that thou fall ; | <i>cadiáte</i> (<i>caggiá-</i> | that you fall ; |
| [<i>(caggia)</i>], | | [<i>te</i>]), | |
| 3d p. <i>egli cáda</i> | that he fall ; | <i>cádano</i> (<i>caggiá-</i> | that they fall. |
| [<i>(caggia)</i>], | | [<i>no</i>]), | |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *caderéi* (*cadréi*, *cadería*, | I should, would, or could fall ; or
[*cadría*]), | [might fall.]

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p.
2d p. *cádi tu*,

fall thou.

The compounds of *cadére*, as *accadére*, ‘to happen’; *decadére*, ‘to decline’; *ricadére*, ‘to fall again’; &c., have the same irregularities. The poetical forms, however, *ággio*, *ággia*, *aggiámo*, *ággiono*, *ággiano*, are peculiar to *cadére* and not met with in its compounds.*

Dissuadére.

(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Dissuadére, |to dissuade. || DISSUÁSO, |dissuaded.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------|-------------------|----------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. DISSUÁSI, | I dissuaded ; | <i>dissuadémmo</i> , | we dissuaded ; |
| 2d p. <i>dissuadésti</i> , | thou dissuadest ; | <i>dissuadéste</i> , | you dissuaded ; |
| 3d p. DISSUÁSE, | he dissuaded ; | DISSUÁSERO, | they dissuaded. |

Dissuadére, properly speaking, is a compound of the Latin verb *suadere*, as well as *persuadére*, ‘to persuade,’ which has the same irregularities.

Dolére.

(Varied with *éssere*, and the conjunctive pronouns, *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Dolér-si, to grieve. || *dolúto-si*, |grieved.

* Of *ricadére*, Galileo has used *ricággia*.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|------------------|---|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>mi</i> DÓLGO, | I grieve ; | <i>ci</i> DOGLIÁMO (do- [<i>dóglia</i>), [lémo), | we grieve ; |
| 2d p. <i>ti</i> DUÓLI, | thou grieveest ; | <i>vi</i> <i>doléte</i> , | you grieve ; |
| 3d p. <i>si</i> DUÓLE, | he grieves ; | <i>si</i> DÓLGONO (dó- [(<i>dóle</i>), [gliano), | they grieve. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------------|------------------|-----------------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>mi</i> DÓLSI, | I grieved ; | <i>ci</i> <i>dolémimo</i> , | we grieved ; |
| 2d p. <i>ti</i> <i>dolésti</i> , | thou grievedst ; | <i>vi</i> <i>doléste</i> , | you grieved ; |
| 3d p. <i>si</i> DÓLSE, | he grieved ; | <i>si</i> DÓLSERO, | they grieved. |

4. — *Future.*

| | |
|--|-------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>dorrò</i> [by contraction for [<i>dolerò*</i>], | I shall or will grieve. |
|--|-------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|---|---|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>mi</i> DÓLGA, | that I grieve or [(<i>dóglia</i>), [may grieve ; | <i>ci</i> DOGLIÁMO, | that we grieve ; |
| 2d p. <i>ti</i> DÓLGA, | that thou grieve ; | <i>vi</i> DOGLIÁTE, | that you grieve ; |
| 3d p. <i>si</i> DÓLGA, | that he grieve ; | <i>si</i> DÓLGANO (dó- [(<i>dóglia</i>), [gliano), | that they grieve. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1st p. <i>dorréi</i> (<i>dorría</i>) [by contrac- [tion for <i>doleréi</i> (<i>dolería</i>)†], | I should, would, or could grieve ; [or might grieve. |
|---|---|

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|------------------|---|------------------|
| 1st p. | | DOGLIÁMO- <i>ci</i> , | let us grieve ; |
| 2d p. DUÓLI- <i>ti</i> , | grieve thou ; | <i>doléte-vi</i> , | grieve ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>si</i> DÓLGA, | let him grieve ; | <i>si</i> DÓLGANO (dó- [(<i>dóglia</i>), [gliano), | let them grieve. |

* To distinguish it from *dolerò*, future of the verb *doláre*, 'to defraud.'

† To distinguish them from *doleréi* (*dolería*), forms of the conditional of the verb *doláre*, 'to defraud.'

The compounds of *dolére*, as *condolére*, 'to condole'; &c. have the same irregularities.

Dovére.

(Varied with *avére*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Dovére (devére*), | to owe.

|| *dovúto*,

| owed.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *dévo*, or | I owe ;

[*DÉBBO* (*dég-*
[*gio*),

2d p. *dévi* (*déi*), | thou owest ;

3d p. *déve*, or | he owes ;

[*DÉBBE* (*dée*,
[*dé'*),

DOBBIAMO (*deb-* | we owe ;

[*biámo*, *deggid-*
[*mo*, *devémo*),

dovéte, | you owe ;

dévono, or *DÉB-* | they owe.

[*BONO* (*déggio-*
[*no*, *déono*, *dén-*
[*no*),

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *dovéi* or *dovétti*, | I owed.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *doverò* or *dovrò*, | I shall or will owe.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io DÉBBA* | that I owe, or
[(*déggia*), | [may owe ;

2d p. *tu DÉBBA* | that thou owe ;

[(*déggia*),

3d p. *egli DÉBBA* | that he owe ;

[(*déggia*),

DOBBIAMO (*deg-* | that we owe ;

[(*giámo*),

DOBBIATE (*deg-* | that you owe ;

[*giáte*),

DÉBBANO (*dég-* | that they owe.

[*giano*),

* The Latin *debere*, from which *dovére* derives some of its forms.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *doveréi* or *dovréi* (*dovería* | I should, would, or could owe ; or
[or *dovría*), | [might owe.

V. IMPERATIVE.*

Giacére.

(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Giacére, | to lie down. || *giaciúto*, | lain down.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|-------------------|--------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>GIÁCCIO</i> , | I lie down ; | <i>GIACCIÁMO</i> , | we lie down ; |
| 2d p. <i>giáci</i> , | thou liest down ; | <i>giacéte</i> , | you lie down ; |
| 3d p. <i>giáce</i> , | he lies down ; | <i>GIACCIONO</i> , | they lie down. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|--------------------|--------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>GIÁCQUI</i> , | I lay down ; | <i>giacémmo</i> , | we lay down ; |
| 2d p. <i>giacésti</i> , | thou layest down ; | <i>giacéste</i> , | you lay down ; |
| 3d p. <i>GIÁCQUE</i> , | he lay down ; | <i>GIÁCQUERO</i> , | they lay down. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------|--------------------|--------------------|--------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io GIÁCCIA</i> , | that I lie down or | <i>GIACCIÁMO</i> , | that we lie down ; |
| | [may lie down ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu GIÁCCIA</i> , | that thou lie | <i>giaciáde</i> , | that you lie |
| | [down ; | | [down ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli GIÁC-</i> | that he lie down ; | <i>GIACCIANO</i> , | that they lie |
| <i>CIA</i> , | | | [down. |

* "Strictly is wanting." — Teor. Verb. Ital., Part. II., §. 48.

V. IMPERATIVE.

| Singular. | | Plural. | |
|-------------------------|--------------------|-------------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. | | GIACCIAMO <i>nói</i> , | let us lie down ; |
| 2d p. <i>giáci tu</i> , | lie thou down ; | <i>giacéte vói</i> , | lie ye down ; |
| 3d p. GIACCIA | let him lie down ; | GIACCIANO <i>égli</i> , | let them lie |
| [<i>égli</i> , | | [<i>no</i> , | [down. |

The compounds of *giacére*, as *soggiacére*, ‘to be subject’; &c., as well as *piacére*, and its compounds *compiacére*, ‘to please’; *dispiacére*, ‘to displease’; &c. have the same irregularities.

Piacére and its compounds *compiacére*, &c., in the *second person plural* of the *present* of the *conjunctive*, and in the *second person plural* of the *imperative mood*, make PIACCIÁTE, &c.

Parére.

(Varied with *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|-----------------|----------|---------------------------------|---------|
| <i>Parére</i> , | to seem. | <i>parúto</i> (<i>párso</i>), | seemed. |
|-----------------|----------|---------------------------------|---------|

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------------------|----------------|--------------------------|------------|
| 1st p. PÁIO, | I seem ; | <i>pariámo</i> , | we seem ; |
| 2d p. <i>pári</i> , | thou seemest ; | <i>paréte</i> , | you seem ; |
| 3d p. <i>páre</i> (<i>pár</i>), | he seems ; | <i>párono</i> , or PÁIO- | they seem. |
| | | [<i>no</i> , | |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|-----------------|-------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. PÁRVI | I seemed ; | <i>parémmo</i> , | we seemed ; |
| [<i>(pársi)</i> , | | <i>paréste</i> , | you seemed ; |
| 2d p. <i>parésti</i> , | thou seemedst ; | PÁRVERO (<i>párse-</i> | they seemed. |
| 3d p. PÁRVE | he seemed ; | - | [<i>ro</i>), |
| [<i>(párse)</i> , | | | |

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *parrò* [by contraction for *[parerò*]*, | I shall *or* will seem.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------------|------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío PÁIA</i> , | that I seem <i>or</i> [may seem ; | <i>pariámo</i> , | that we seem ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu PÁIA</i> , | that thou seem ; | <i>PAIÁTE</i> , | that you seem ; |
| 3d p. <i>égli PÁIA</i> , | that he seem ; | <i>PÁIANO</i> , | that they seem. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *parréi* (*parría*) [by contraction for *pareréi* (*parería*)†], | I should, would, *or* could seem ; *or* [might seem.]

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|----------------|------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>pariámo nói</i> , | let us seem ; |
| 2d p. <i>pári tu</i> , | seem thou ; | <i>paréte vói</i> , | seem ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>PÁIA égli</i> , | let him seem ; | <i>PÁIANO églino</i> , | let them seem. |

Persuadére.

(See *dissuadére*, p. 251.)

Piacére.

(See *giacére*, pp. 254 and 255.)

* To distinguish it from *parerò*, future of the verb *paráre*, 'to parry,' 'to adorn.'

† To distinguish them from *pareréi* (*parería*), corresponding forms of the verb *paráre*, 'to parry'; &c.

Potére.

(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Potére, | to be able. || *potúto,* - | been able.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------|-----------------|----------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. PÓSSO, | I am able ; | POSSÍAMO (poté- [mo]), | we are able ; |
| 2d p. PÚOI | thou art able ; | potéte, | you are able ; |
| 3d p. PÚO | he is able ; | PÓSSONO (pónno, [pón]), | they are able. |

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *potrò* [by contraction for
[*poterò**], | I shall or will be able.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. PÓSSA, | that I be able or may
| [be able.

IV. CONDITIONAL,

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *potréi* (potría) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could be able ;
[tion for *poteréi* (potería,†)
[poría), | [or might be able.

* To distinguish it from *poterò*, future of the verb *potére*, 'to prune.'

† To distinguish them from *poteréi* (potería), corresponding forms of the verb *potére*, 'to prune.'

V. IMPERATIVE.*

Singular.

Plural.

| | | | |
|---------------------------|-------------------|-------------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. | | POSSIÁMO <i>nói</i> , | let us be able ; |
| 2d p. PÓSSA <i>tu</i> , | be thou able ; | POSSIÁTE <i>vói</i> , | be ye able ; |
| 3d p. PÓSSA <i>égli</i> , | let him be able ; | PÓSSANO <i>égli</i> no, | let them be able. |

Rimanére.(Varied with *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|-------------------|------------|----------------------------|-----------|
| <i>Rimanére</i> , | to remain. | RIMÁSTO (<i>rimáso</i>), | remained. |
|-------------------|------------|----------------------------|-----------|

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------|------------------|--------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. RIMÁNGO | I remain ; | <i>rimaniámo</i> , | we remain ; |
| [(<i>rimángo</i>), | | | |
| 2d p. <i>rimáni</i> , | thou remainest ; | <i>rimanéte</i> , | you remain ; |
| 3d p. <i>rimáne</i> , | he remains ; | RIMÁNGONO, | they remain. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-------------------|--------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. RIMÁSI, | I remained ; | <i>rimanémmo</i> , | we remained ; |
| 2d p. <i>rimanésti</i> , | thou remainedst ; | <i>rimanéste</i> , | you remained ; |
| 3d p. RIMÁSE, | he remained ; | RIMÁSERO, | they remained. |

4. — *Future.*

| | |
|---|-------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>rimarrò</i> [by contraction for | I shall or will remain. |
| <i>rimanerò</i>], | |

* "Observe that grammarians believe that this verb has *no imperative* ; because, they say, we cannot command any one to have a power which he has not. But they have not reflected that one can give power, when he is able to do so ; as in the case with God in relation to all things ; and as, to a smaller extent, may be the case with man and certain relations of man. Which ideas being susceptible of being expressed also in the imperative mood, *reason requires* that this verb *should not be* so easily *deprived* of it." — Teor. Verb. Ital., Part. II., §. 120.

Besides, the verb *potére* does not mean only "*avér póssa o virtù, ma volontà ancóra, e satisfazióne, e conténto ; ché non è sémpré il vérbo déi portatóri, e dégli usini.*" — Dep. Decam., 104.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-------------------------|-------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io</i> RIMÁNGA | that I remain <i>or</i> | <i>rimaniámo,</i> | that we remain ; |
| [(rimánga), | [may remain ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu</i> RIMÁNGA | that thou remain ; | <i>rimaniáte,</i> | that you remain ; |
| [(rimánga), | | | |
| 3d p. <i>egli</i> RIMÁN- | that he remain ; | RIMÁNGANO, | that they remain. |
| [GA, | | | |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

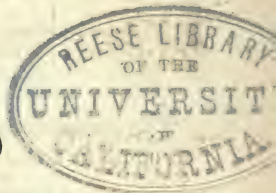
| | | |
|---|----------|---|
| 1st p. <i>rimarréi</i> (rimarría) | [by con- | I should, would, <i>or</i> could remain ; |
| [traction for <i>rimaneréi</i> (rimane- | | [or might remain. |
| [ría)], | | |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|-------------------------|------------------|-----------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>rimaniámo nói,</i> | let us remain ; |
| 2d p. <i>rimáni tu,</i> | remain thou ; | <i>rimanéte vói,</i> | remain ye ; |
| 3d p. RIMÁNGA | let him remain ; | RIMÁNGANO | let them remain. |
| [égli, | | [églino, | |

Sapére.

(Varied with *avére.*)



I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|----------|----------------|--------|
| <i>Sapére</i> (savére*), | to know. | <i>sapúto,</i> | known. |
|--------------------------|----------|----------------|--------|

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------------|----------------|------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>so,</i> | I know ; | <i>sappiámo,</i> | we know ; |
| 2d p. <i>sái,</i> | thou knowest ; | <i>sapéte,</i> | you know ; |
| 3d p. <i>sa</i> (<i>sápe</i>), | he knows ; | <i>sánno,</i> | they know. |

* This form, met with in Dante, Alamanni, and other poets, has become *obsolete*.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|----------------|---------------|----------|------------|
| 1st p. SÉPPI, | I knew; | sapémmo, | we knew; |
| 2d p. sapésti, | thou knewest; | sapéste, | you knew; |
| 3d p. SÉPPE, | he knew; | séppero, | they knew. |

4. — *Future.*

| | |
|---|-----------------------|
| 1st p. <i>sapré</i> [by contraction for [<i>saperò</i>], | I shall or will know. |
|---|-----------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|--------------------------|---------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io sÁPPIA,</i> | that I know, or may know. |
|--------------------------|---------------------------|

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|--|---|
| 1st p. <i>sapréi</i> (<i>sapria</i>) [by contrac- [tion for <i>saperéi</i> (<i>sapería</i>)], | I should, would, or could know; [or might know.] |
|--|---|

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|---------------------------|---------------|-------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. | | SAPPIÁMO <i>nói,</i> | let us know; |
| 2d p. sÁPPI <i>tu,</i> | know thou; | SAPPIÁTE <i>vói,</i> | know ye; |
| 3d p. sÁPPIA <i>égli,</i> | let him know; | SÁPPIANO <i>églino,</i> | let them know. |

The compounds of *sapére*, as *risapére*, ‘to learn,’ or ‘to come to know’; follow the same irregularities.

Sedére.(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

Sedére (*séggere**), | to sit down.

* This verb, now become *obsolete*, is still used in many of the *forms* of the modern verb *sedére*.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

sedéndo (seggéndo), | sitting. || *sedúto*, | seated.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | | |
|--------------------------------------|----------------|--|------------------------|-----------|
| 1st p. SIÉDO, or [SÉGGO (séggio), | I sit ; | | <i>sediámo</i> or SEG- | we sit ; |
| | | | [GIÁMO (sedé- | |
| | | | [mo), | |
| 2d p. SIÉDI, | thou sittest ; | | <i>sedéte</i> , | you sit ; |
| 3d p. SIÉDE (sé- | he sits ; | | SIÉDONO, or SÉG- | they sit. |
| [de), | | | [GONO (séggio- | |
| | | | [no), | |

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *sedéi* or *sedétti*, | I sat.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *sederò** (sedrò), | I shall or will sit.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | | |
|----------------------------|--------------------|--|-------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io</i> SIÉDA, or | that I sit, or may | | <i>sediámo</i> or SEG- | that we sit ; |
| [SÉGGA (séggia), | [may sit ; | | [GIÁMO, | |
| 2d p. <i>tu</i> SIÉDA, or | that thou sit ; | | <i>sediáte</i> (seggia- | that you sit ; |
| [SÉGGA (séggia | | | [te), | |
| [or séggi), | | | | |
| 3d p. <i>egli</i> SIÉDA, | that he sit ; | | SIÉDANO, or SÉG- | that they sit. |
| [or SÉGGA, | | | [GANO (séggia- | |
| | | | [no), | |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *sederéi* (sedréi, *sedería*), | I should, would, or could sit ; or
[might sit.

* Mastrofini proposes *siederò*, and in the conditional *siederéi*; but this, which indeed would present the advantage of distinguishing these forms from the corresponding ones of the verb *sedäre*, 'to appease,' has not been adopted by the generality of Italian writers.

V. IMPERATIVE.

| Singular. | | Plural. | |
|--|---------------|--|---------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>sedíamo</i> (seggiá- [mo) <i>nói</i> , | let us sit ; |
| 2d p. <i>SIÉDI tu</i> , | sit thou ; | <i>sedéte vói</i> , | sit ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>SIÉDA</i> , or [<i>SÉGGA égli</i> , | let him sit ; | <i>SIÉDANO</i> , or <i>SÉG- [GANO églino</i> , | let them sit. |

Sedére is sometimes varied with the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c., and then it requires the auxiliary *éssere* ; as *mi siédo*, ‘ I sit (myself) ’ ; *ti séi sedúto*, ‘ thou hast sat (thyself) ’ ; &c.

The compounds of *sedére*, as *possedére*, ‘ to possess ’ ; *risedére*, ‘ to reside ’ ; *soprassedére*, ‘ to supersede ’ ; have the same irregularities.

Tacére.

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|-----------------|------------------------------|------------------|--------------|
| <i>Tacére</i> , | to be, or keep si- [lent. | <i>taciúto</i> , | been silent. |
|-----------------|------------------------------|------------------|--------------|

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|--|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>tácio</i> (<i>táccio</i>), | I am silent. |
|--|--------------|

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|--------------------|-------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>TÁQUI</i> , | I was silent ; | <i>tacémmo</i> , | we were silent ; |
| 2d p. <i>tacésti</i> , | thou wast silent ; | <i>tacéste</i> , | you were silent ; |
| 3d p. <i>TÁCQUE</i> , | he was silent ; | <i>TÁCQUERO</i> , | they were silent. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io tácia* (táccia), | that I be silent *or* may be silent.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. *táci tu*, | be thou silent.

Tacére is sometimes varied with the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c., and then it requires the auxiliary *essere*; *mi tácio*, 'I keep silent'; *si è taciúto*, 'he has kept silent'; &c.

The compound of *tacére*, — *ritacére*, 'to become once more silent'; follows the same irregularities.

Tenére.

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Tenére, |to hold. || *tenúto*, |holden.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|------------------|----------------|------------------------|------------|
| 1st p. TÉNGO | I hold ; | <i>teniámo</i> (tegná- | we hold ; |
| [(tégnó), | | [mo), | |
| 2d p. TIÉNI (té- | thou holdest ; | <i>tenéte</i> , | you hold ; |
| [gni), | | | |
| 3d p. TIÉNE, | he holds ; | TÉNGONO, | they hold. |

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------|----------------|-----------------|------------|
| 1st p. TÉNNI, | I held ; | <i>tenémmo,</i> | we held ; |
| 2d p. <i>tenésti,</i> | thou heldest ; | <i>tenéste,</i> | you held ; |
| 3d p. TÉNNE, | he held ; | TÉNNERO, | they held. |

4. — *Future.*

| | |
|---|------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>terrò</i> [by contraction for [<i>tenerò</i>], | I shall <i>or</i> will hold. |
|---|------------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|------------------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io TÉNGA</i> [(ténga), | that I hold <i>or</i> [may hold ; | <i>teniámo</i> (tegná- [mo), | that we hold ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu TÉNGA,</i> | that thou hold ; | <i>teniáte</i> (tegnáte), | that you hold ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli TÉNGA</i> [(ténga), | that he hold ; | TÉNGANO (tégná- [no), | that they hold. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|--|---|
| 1st p. <i>terréi</i> (terría) [by contrac- [tion for <i>teneréi</i> (tenería)], | I should, would, <i>or</i> could hold ; <i>or</i> [might hold. |
|--|---|

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--|----------------|---|----------------|
| 1st p. . . . | | <i>teniámo</i> (tegná- [mo) <i>nói,</i> | let us hold ; |
| 2d p. <i>TIÉNI</i> (té') [tu, | hold thou ; | <i>tenéte vói,</i> | hold ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>TÉNGA</i> [(ténga) <i>egli,</i> | let him hold ; | TÉNGANO (tégná- [no) <i>églino,</i> | let them hold. |

Tenére is sometimes varied with the pronouns *mi, ti, si, &c.*, and then it requires the auxiliary *éssere*; as, *mi sono tenuto*, ‘I have holden *or* restrained myself’; &c.

The compounds of *tenère*, as *appartenère*, 'to belong'; *astenère*, 'to abstain'; *attenère*, 'to attain'; *contenère*, 'to contain,' 'to refrain'; *detenère*, 'to detain'; *mantenère*, 'to maintain'; *ottenère*, 'to obtain'; *rattenère*, 'to stop,' 'to restrain'; *sostenère*, 'to support,' 'to sustain'; &c. have the same irregularities.

Valère.

(Varied with either *avère* or *essere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Valère, | to be worth, or | *valûto* (*vâlso*), | been worth.
[to avail.]

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|------------------|---|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>vÂLGO</i> [(<i>vâglio</i>), | I am worth ; | <i>valiâmo</i> , | we are worth ; |
| 2d p. <i>vÂli</i> , | thou art worth ; | <i>valête</i> , | you are worth ; |
| 3d p. <i>vÂle</i> (<i>vâl</i>), | he is worth ; | <i>vÂLGONO</i> , or <i>vÂ-</i> [<i>GLIONO</i> , | they are worth. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|-------------------|------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>vÂLSI</i> , | I was worth ; | <i>valémmo</i> , | we were worth ; |
| 2d p. <i>valésti</i> , | thou wast worth ; | <i>valéste</i> , | you were worth ; |
| 3d p. <i>vÂLSE</i> , | he was worth ; | <i>vÂLSERO</i> , | they were worth. |

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *varrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will be worth.
[*valerò*],

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|-------------------|--------------------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>io VÁLGA</i> , | that I be worth | <i>valiámo</i> , | that we be |
| [or <i>VÁGLIA</i> , | [or may be | | [worth; |
| | [worth; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu VÁLGA</i> , | that thou be | <i>valiáte</i> , | that you be |
| [or <i>VÁGLIA</i> , | [worth; | | [worth; |
| | | | |
| 3d p. <i>egli VÁLGA</i> , | that he be worth; | <i>VÁLGANO</i> , or <i>VÁ-</i> | that they be |
| [or <i>VÁGLIA</i> , | | [<i>GLIANO</i> , | [worth. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1st p. <i>varréi</i> (<i>varría</i>) [by contrac- | I should, would, <i>or</i> could be worth ; |
| [tion for <i>valeréi</i> (<i>valería</i>)], | [<i>or</i> might be worth. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------|--------------------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>valiámo nói</i> , | let us be worth ; |
| 2d p. <i>váli tu</i> , | be thou worth ; | <i>valéte vói</i> , | be ye worth ; |
| 3d p. <i>VÁLGA</i> , | let him be worth ; | <i>VÁLGANO</i> , or <i>VÁ-</i> | let them be |
| [(<i>vágli</i>) <i>égli</i> , | | [<i>GLIANO églino</i> , | [worth. |

The compounds of *valére*, as *disvalére*, ‘to hurt’; *equiválére*, ‘to be equivalent’; *invalére*, ‘to lose worth or strength’; *prevalére*, ‘to prevail’; *rivalére*, ‘to recover worth or strength’; have the same irregularities. Of the two forms of the *present*, however, that in *álgo* is better adapted to them; and *disválgo*, ‘I hurt’; *equiválga*, ‘let it be equivalent’; *inválgano*, ‘that they lose strength’; &c., are oftener met with in books than *disváglio*, &c.

The poetical form *preválso*, ‘prevailed,’ of the *past participle* of *prevalére*, has been used by good writers even in prose. *Invalére*, in the same *participle* has *inválso*, ‘[having] lost strength’; only.

Vedere.

 (Varied with *avere.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

Vedere, | to see.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

vedendo, or *VEG-* | seeing.
 [*GENDO*, |

 || *veduto* (*visto*), | seen.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

 1. — *Present.*

 1st p. *vedo*, *VÉG-* | I see ;

 [*GO*, or *VÉGGIO*,

 2d p. *vedi* (*vé'*), | thou seest ;

 3d p. *vede*, | he sees ;

 || *vediamo*, or *VEG-* | we see ;

 [*GIAMO*,

vedete, | you see ;

vedono, *VÉGGO-* | they see.

 [*NO*, or *VÉG-*
 [*GIONO*,

 3. — *Perfect.*

 1st p. *vidi* (*vid-* | I saw ;

 [*di*),

 2d p. *vedésti*, | thou sawest ;

 3d p. *vide*, | he saw ;

 || *vedemmo*, | we saw ;

vedeste, | you saw ;

viderò (*vider*), | they saw.

 4. — *Future.*

 1st p. *vedrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will see.
 [*vederò*], |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

 1. — *Present.*

 1st p. *io veda*, | that I see or may

 [*VÉGGA*, or

 [*VÉGGIA*,

 2d p. *tu veda*, | that thou see ;

 [*VÉGGA*, or

 [*VÉGGIA*,

 3d p. *egli veda*, | that he see ;

 [*VÉGGA*, or

 [*VÉGGIA*,

 || *vediamo*, or *VEG-* | that we see ;

 [*GIAMO*,

vediate, or *VEG-* | that you see ;

 [*GIATE*,

vedano, *VÉGGA-* | that they see.

 [*NO*, or *VÉG-*

 [*GIANO*,

IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *vedréi* (*vedría*) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could see ; or
[tion for *vederéi* (*vedería*)], | [might see.]

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|---|---------------|---------------------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>vediámo</i> , or <i>veg-</i> | let us see ; |
| | | [<i>GIAMO nói</i> , | |
| 2d p. <i>védi</i> (<i>vé</i>) <i>tu</i> , | see thou ; | <i>vedéte vói</i> , | see ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>véda</i> , <i>vég-</i> | let him see ; | <i>védano</i> , <i>végga-</i> | let them see. |
| [<i>GA</i> , or <i>VÉGGIA</i> | | [<i>NO</i> , or <i>VÉG-</i> | |
| [<i>égli</i> , | | [<i>GIANO églino</i> , | |

The compounds of *vedere*, as *antivedere*, ‘to foresee’; *avvedere*, ‘to perceive’; *divedere*, ‘to be sensible of’; *prevedere*, ‘to foresee’; *provvedere*, ‘to provide’; *ravvedere*, ‘to amend’; *rivedere*, ‘to see again’; *travedere*, ‘to see one thing for another’; &c., have the same irregularities.

Antivedere, *avvedere*, *divedere*, *travedere*, in the *past participle* make only *antivedúto*, ‘foreseen’; *avvedúto*, ‘perceived’; *divedúto*, ‘been sensible of’; *travedúto*, ‘[having] seen one thing for another’: and *divedere*, *prevedere*, *provvedere*, *ravvedere*, *travedere*, in the *future* and *conditional* are never contracted, and make *divederò*, ‘I will be sensible of’; *prevederéi*, ‘I would foresee’; &c.

Volére.(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | |
|-----------------|--------------------------------------|---------------|
| <i>Volére</i> , | to wish, to will, <i>volúto</i> , | been willing. |
| | [or to be willing.] | |

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------|------------------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. VÓGLIO, or [vó', | I am willing ; | VOGLIÁMO (volé- [mo), | we are willing ; |
| 2d p. VUÓI (vuó- [li, vuó'), | thou art willing ; | voléte, | you are willing ; |
| 3d p. VUÓLE (vó- [le), | he is willing ; | VÓGLIONO (vón- [no, von), | they are willing. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------|---------------------------|----------|--------------------------|
| 1st p. VÓLLI [(vólsi*), | I was willing ; | volémmo, | we were willing ; |
| 2d p. volésti, | thou wast wil- [ling ; | voléste, | you were wil- [ling ; |
| 3d p. VÓLLE, | he was willing ; | VÓLLERO, | they were wil- [ling. |

4. — *Future.*

| | |
|--|-----------------------------|
| 1st p. vorrò {by contraction for [volerò†], | I shall or will be willing. |
|--|-----------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|-------------------|--|
| 1st p. io VÓGLIA, | that I be willing or may [be willing. |
|-------------------|--|

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1st p. vorréi (vorría) [by contrac- [tion for voleréi (volería)†], | I should, would, or could be wil- [ling ; or might be willing. |
|---|---|

* *Vólsi*, as well as *vólse* and *vólsero*, has become obsolete ; and the few examples we find in Dante, Ariosto, Berni, and Tasso, ought not to authorize the use of these forms, which properly belong to the perfect of *vólgere*, 'to turn'; and not of *volére*, 'to be willing.'

† To distinguish it from the future of the verb *volare*, 'to fly.'

‡ To distinguish them from the corresponding forms of *voldre*, 'to fly.'

V. IMPERATIVE.*

Singular.

Plural.

| | | | | | | |
|-------------------------|--|-----------------------|--|-----------------------|--|------------------|
| 1st p. | | VOGLIÁMO <i>nói</i> , | | let us be willing ; | | |
| 2d p. VÓGLI <i>tu</i> , | | be thou willing ; | | VOGLIÁTE <i>vói</i> , | | be ye willing ; |
| 3d p. VÓGLIA | | let him be wil- | | VÓGLIANO | | let them be wil- |
| [<i>égli</i> , | | [ling ; | | [<i>églino</i> , | | [ling. |

The compounds of *volére*, as *disvolére*, ‘to desire the contrary of what one has wished’; *rivolére*, ‘to wish again,’ or ‘to be once more willing’; have the same irregularities.

EXAMPLES.

E CÁDDI, còme còrpo mórto
CÁDE. (Dant. Inf. 5.)

And I fell, as a dead body falls.

*Il timóre, mólto più che la fòr-
za dèlle ragióni, lo DISSUASE.*
(Fra. Gior.)

Fear dissuaded him a great deal
more than the power of reason.

*Là dòve più MI DÓLSE [dólsi]
áltri SI DUÓLE, e DOLÉNDÓ addol-
cisce il mío dolóre.* (Petr. c. 22.)

Others grieve for what I most
grieved, and grieving they assuage
my grief.

*Di niúna còsa durár DOBBIÁ-
MO, la quále ábbia fòrza d' offén-
dere.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

We ought to endure nothing
that has the power of offending.

*Quèsti è colúi, che GIÁCQUE
sópra 'l pètto — Del nóstro Pelli-
cáno.* (Dant. Par. 25.)

This one is he, who lay upon
the bosom of our Pelican.

* It has been asserted that *volére* has *no imperative*, but the slightest acquaint-
ance with our classic writers might convince any one to the contrary :

VÓGLitene venír con méco. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 10.) Be thou willing to come with me.
VÓGLI avére carità. (Gr. S. Gir. 12.) Have charity.

Or ti PIACCIA gradir la sua venuta. (Dant. Purg. 1.)

Now may his coming please thee.

Non so, se a voi quello se ne PARRÀ, che a me ne PARRÉBBE. (Bocc. Introd.)

I do not know, whether it will appear to you so as it would appear to me.

Così veloci séguono i suoi vîmi, — Per simigliarsi al Punto quanto PÓNNO, — E PÓSSON, quanto a vedér son sublimi. (Dant. Par. 23.)

Thus swift follow their hoops, approaching in likeness to the Point as near as they can; and they can the more, the loftier their vision is.

Io non morì, e non RIMASI vivo. (Dant. Inf. 34.)

I did not die, neither remained I alive.

O'nde, ben SÉPPE che dirsi Dante, quando, nel Canto Décimo dell' Inferno, indusse Farinata a dirgli quelle parole. (Salviat. Avvert. 1. 2. 12.)

Therefore, Dante knew well what he said, when, in the Tenth Canto of the Inferno, he induced Farinata to say to him those words.

Chè SEGGENDO in piume in fama non si vién, nè sotto còltre. (Dant. Inf. 24.)

For neither by reposing on feathers, nor under a coverlet, is fame won.

E giammai pói la mia lingua non TACQUE, — Mentre potéo. (Petr. c. 4.)

And never afterwards was my tongue silent, whilst it could [speak].

Morto che ebbero Costantino loro fratello, loro due TÉNNERO l' império. (Petr. Uom. ill.)

After they had killed Constantine their brother, both of them held the empire for themselves.

Nè l' un mi VARRÉBBE, nè l' áltro VÓGLIO che mi VÁGLIA. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Neither the one could, nor I wish that the other should, avail me.

Nói eravam partiti già da ello — Ch' i' vídi duo ghiacciati in una búca. (Dant. Inf. 32.)

We had now left him, when I saw two spirits by the ice pent in one hollow.

Iddio VÓLLE, in questa víta, privare noi di questa luce. (Dant. Conv. 114.)

God wished to deprive us, in this life, of this light.

EXERCISE XIX.

- I. 1.—To fall. *Cadére.* 4.—lying down. *giacére.* 7.—remained. *rimanére.*
- II. 1.—I grieve, thou art able, he sits, we seem,
dolére, *potére,* *sedére,* *parére,*
 you owe, they know. 2.—I dissuaded, thou heldest,
dovére, *sapére.* *dissuadére,* *tenére,*
 he wished, we pleased, you saw, they were worth.
volére, *piacére,* *vedére,* *valére.*
- 3.—I fell again, thou pleasedst, he was subject, we
ricadére, *compiacére,* *soggiacére,* *ri-*
 learned, they sustained. — I prevailed, thou maintainedst,
sapére, *sostenére.* *prevalére,* *mantenére,*
 he was silent again, we declined, you foresaw, they
ritacére, *decadére,* *antivedére,* *ri-*
 wished again. — I condoled, thou possessedst, he ab-
volére. *condolére,* *possedére,* *aste-*
 stained, we provided, you hurt, they super-
nére, *provvedére,* *disvalére,* *soprasse-*
 seded. 4.—I will grieve, thou wilt seem, he will be
dére. *dolére,* *parére,* *poté-*
 able, we will remain, you will know, they will hold.
re, *rimanére,* *sapére,* *tenére.*
- III. 1.—I may entertain, thou mayest lose strength, he
trattenére, *invalére,* *rav-*
 may amend, we may displease, you may reside, they
vedére, *dispiacére,* *risedére,* *con-*
 may contain. 2.—I might foresee, thou mightest please
tenére. *antivedére,* *ripiacé-*
 again, he might see again, we might preside, you might
re, *rivedére,* *presedére,* *appar-*
 belong, they might hate. — IV. 1.—I should grieve
tenére, *malvedére.*
 again, thou wouldst come to know, he would attain,
re, *risapére,* *attenére,*

we would be sensible of, you would provide, they would
divedére, *provvedére,* *rav-*

amend. — V. — Know thou, let him seem, let us see,
vedére. *sapére,* *parére,* *vedére,*

please ye, let them be able.
piacére, *potére.*

Variation of the Irregular Verbs in ěre (short).

There are about four hundred verbs in ěre (*short*), that are irregular; but, as their irregularity, generally, depends on the letters which precede that termination, they may be reduced to the following *forty-one*; viz.

Verbs ending in

| | | | |
|---|----------------------|------------------------|-----------------------|
| ěre, preceded by a vowel; as, <i>trĀERE</i> , | | to draw. (Class 4th.*) | |
| běre, | " <i>assóRBERE</i> , | to absorb. (2d.) | |
| ċěre, preceded by | { <i>ó</i> ; | " <i>cuóCERE</i> , | to cook. } |
| | { <i>ú</i> ; | " <i>addúCERE</i> , | to allege. } |
| | { <i>n</i> ; | " <i>víncERE</i> , | to conquer. } |
| | { <i>r</i> ; | " <i>tórcERE</i> , | to twist. } |
| ďěre, preceded by | { <i>á</i> ; | " <i>invÁDERE</i> , | to invade. } |
| | { <i>é</i> ; | " <i>lÉDERE</i> , | to offend. } |
| | { <i>í</i> ; | " <i>rÍDERE</i> , | to laugh. } |
| | { <i>ó</i> ; | " <i>rÓDERE</i> , | to gnaw. } |
| | { <i>ú</i> ; | " <i>allÚDERE</i> , | to allude. } |
| | { <i>r</i> ; | " <i>árDERE</i> , | to burn. } |
| | { <i>én</i> ; | " <i>accÉNDERE</i> , | to kindle. } |
| | { <i>ín</i> ; | " <i>scÍNDERE</i> , | to cut asunder. (3d.) |
| | { <i>ón</i> ; | " <i>rispÓNDERE</i> , | to answer. (5th.) |
| | { <i>iú</i> ; | " <i>chiÚDERE</i> , | to shut. (1st.) |
| | { <i>ié</i> ; | " <i>chiÉDERE</i> , | to ask. (5th.) |
| | { <i>cé</i> ; | " <i>concÉDERE</i> , | to grant. (3d.) |
| gěre, preceded by | { <i>í</i> ; | " <i>dirÍGERE</i> , | to direct. } |
| | { <i>g</i> ; | " <i>léGGERE</i> , | to read. } |
| | { <i>l</i> ; | " <i>vóLGERE</i> , | to turn. } |
| | { <i>n</i> ; | " <i>giúNGERE</i> , | to arrive. } |
| | { <i>ár</i> ; | " <i>spÁRGERE</i> , | to spread. } |
| | { <i>ér</i> ; | " <i>mÉRGERE</i> , | to dive. } |
| | { <i>ór</i> ; | " <i>póRGERE</i> , | to offer. (2d.) |
| | { <i>úg</i> ; | " <i>distrÚGGERE</i> , | to destroy. (4th.) |

* For the convenience of learners, and the purpose of rendering more simple the variation of these verbs, they have been arranged in *classes*. To facilitate reference, we here indicate the *class* in which they will be found.

| | | | | | |
|--------------------------------------|-------------|---------------------|-----------------|---------|--------|
| <i>glière,</i> | as, | <i>cógliERE,</i> | to gather. | } (2d.) | |
| <i>gnère,</i> | " | <i>spégNERE,</i> | to extinguish. | | |
| <i>guère,</i> | " | <i>distínguERE,</i> | to distinguish. | | |
| <i>lère,</i> | " | <i>svéllERE,</i> | to root up. | | |
| <i>mère,</i> preceded by { <i>í;</i> | " | <i>esprímERE,</i> | to express. | (3d.) | |
| | { <i>ú;</i> | <i>assúMERE,</i> | to assume. | (2d.) | |
| <i>nère,</i> | " | <i>pónERE,</i> | to put. | (5th.) | |
| <i>rère,</i> | " | <i>córrERE,</i> | to run. | (1st.) | |
| <i>tère,</i> preceded by { <i>ó;</i> | " | <i>scuóTERE,</i> | to shake. | } (3d.) | |
| | { <i>ú;</i> | <i>discúTERE,</i> | to discuss. | | |
| | { <i>r;</i> | <i>rivérTERE,</i> | to return. | | (1st.) |
| | { <i>t;</i> | <i>connétTERE,</i> | to connect. | | (3d.) |
| <i>vère,</i> preceded by { <i>í;</i> | " | <i>scríVERE,</i> | to write. | (4th.) | |
| | { <i>ó;</i> | <i>muóVERE,</i> | to move. | (3d.) | |
| | { <i>l;</i> | <i>vólVERE,</i> | to turn. | (2d.) | |

These verbs are chiefly irregular in the *perfect* of the *indicative*, which ends in *si* or *ssi*; and in the *past participle*, which ends in *so* or *sso*, in *to* or *tto*, or in *sto*. We shall, therefore, first classify them according to the termination of their *perfect* and *participle*, and then we shall vary one of each class, and such of the same class as may be otherwise irregular, and note, by way of exceptions, those verbs which depart in any respect from their paradigm.

[The letters *a, e, ae*, between parentheses, prefixed to the following verbs, denote the auxiliary with which they are varied: — (*a*), *avére*; (*e*), *éssere*; (*ae*), either *avére* or *éssere*.]

FIRST CLASS.

| Infinitive. | Perfect. | Participle. | Infinitive. | Perfect. | Participle. |
|------------------|---------------------------|-------------|------------------------|------------------|------------------|
| <i>á -dere,</i> | } ...-si, ...-so; ... as, | } | (a) <i>invá-DERE,</i> | <i>invá-SI,</i> | <i>invá-SO.</i> |
| <i>é -dere,</i> | | | (a) <i>lé-DERE,</i> | <i>lé-SI,</i> | <i>lé-SO.</i> |
| <i>í -dere,</i> | | | (a) <i>rí-DERE,</i> | <i>rí-SI,</i> | <i>rí-SO.</i> |
| <i>ó -dere,</i> | | | (a) <i>ró-DERE,</i> | <i>ró-SI,</i> | <i>ró-SO.</i> |
| <i>ú -dere,</i> | | | (a) <i>allú-DERE,</i> | <i>allú-SI,</i> | <i>allú-SO.</i> |
| <i>r -dere,</i> | | | (ae) <i>ár-DERE,</i> | <i>ár-SI,</i> | <i>ár-SO.</i> |
| <i>én -dere,</i> | | | (a) <i>accén-DERE,</i> | <i>accé-SI,</i> | <i>accé-SO.</i> |
| <i>iú -dere,</i> | | | (a) <i>chiú-DERE,</i> | <i>chiú-SI,</i> | <i>chiú-SO.</i> |
| <i>ár -gere,</i> | | | (a) <i>spár-GERE,</i> | <i>spár-SI,</i> | <i>spár-SO.</i> |
| <i>ér -gere,</i> | | | (ae) <i>mér-GERE,</i> | <i>mér-SI,</i> | <i>mér-SO.</i> |
| <i>-rere,</i> | | | (ae) <i>cór-RERE,</i> | <i>cór-SI,</i> | <i>cór-SO.</i> |
| <i>r -tere,</i> | | | (e) <i>rivér-TERE,</i> | <i>rivér-SI,</i> | <i>rivér-SO.</i> |

SECOND CLASS.

| Infinitive. | Perfect. | Participle. | Infinitive. | Perfect. | Participle. |
|-------------|--------------------------|-------------|--------------------------|-------------------|-------------------|
| -bere, | } ...-si, ...-to; ...as, | } | (æ) <i>assór-BERE,</i> | <i>assór-SI,</i> | <i>assór-TO.</i> |
| n -cere, | | | (a) <i>vin-CERE,</i> | <i>vin-SI,</i> | <i>vin-TO.</i> |
| r -cere, | | | (a) <i>tór-CERE,</i> | <i>tór-SI,</i> | <i>tór-TO.</i> |
| l -gere, | | | (a) <i>vól-GERE,</i> | <i>vól-SI,</i> | <i>vól-TO.</i> |
| n -gere, | | | (e) <i>giún-GERE,</i> | <i>giún-SI,</i> | <i>giún-TO,</i> |
| ór-gere, | | | (a) <i>pór-GERE,</i> | <i>pór-SI,</i> | <i>pór-TO.</i> |
| -gliere, | | | (a) <i>có-GLIERE,</i> | <i>cól-SI,</i> | <i>cól-TO.</i> |
| -gnere, | | | (a) <i>spé-GNERE,</i> | <i>spén-SI,</i> | <i>spén-TO.</i> |
| -guere, | | | (æ) <i>distín-GUERE,</i> | <i>distín-SI,</i> | <i>distín-TO.</i> |
| -lere, | | | (a) <i>svél-LERE,</i> | <i>svél-SI,</i> | <i>svél-TO.</i> |
| ú -mere, | | | (a) <i>assú-MERE,</i> | <i>assún-SI,</i> | <i>assún-TO.</i> |
| l -vere, | | | (a) <i>vól-VERE,</i> | <i>vól-SI,</i> | <i>vól-TO.</i> |

THIRD CLASS.

| | | | | | |
|-----------------|----------------------------|---|--------------------------|-------------------|-------------------|
| <i>cé-dere,</i> | } ...-ssi, ...-sso; ...as, | } | (a) <i>concé-DERE,</i> | <i>concé-SSI,</i> | <i>concé-SSO.</i> |
| <i>ín-dere,</i> | | | (a) <i>scín-DERE,</i> | <i>scí-SSI,</i> | <i>scí-SSO.</i> |
| <i>í -mere,</i> | | | (a) <i>esprí-MERE,</i> | <i>espré-SSI,</i> | <i>espré-SSO.</i> |
| <i>ó -tere,</i> | | | (a) <i>scuó-TERE,</i> | <i>scó-SSI,</i> | <i>scó-SSO.</i> |
| <i>ú -tere,</i> | | | (a) <i>discú-TERE,</i> | <i>discú-SSI,</i> | <i>discú-SSO.</i> |
| <i>t -tere,</i> | | | (a) <i>conné-T-TERE,</i> | <i>conné-SSI,</i> | <i>conné-SSO.</i> |
| <i>ó -vere,</i> | | | (a) <i>muó-VERE,</i> | <i>mó-SSI,</i> | <i>mó-SSO.</i> |

FOURTH CLASS.

| | | | | | |
|-----------------|----------------------------|---|---------------------------|--------------------|--------------------|
| <i>ó -cere,</i> | } ...-ssi, ...-tto; ...as, | } | (a) <i>cuó-CERE,</i> | <i>có-SSI,</i> | <i>có-TTO.</i> |
| <i>ú -cere,</i> | | | (a) <i>addú-CERE,</i> | <i>addú-SSI,</i> | <i>addó-TTO.</i> |
| <i>í -gere,</i> | | | (a) <i>dirí-GERE,</i> | <i>diré-SSI,</i> | <i>diré-TTO.</i> |
| <i>g -gere,</i> | | | (a) <i>lé-GERE,</i> | <i>lé-SSI,</i> | <i>lé-TTO.</i> |
| <i>ug-gere,</i> | | | (a) <i>distrú-G-GERE,</i> | <i>distrú-SSI,</i> | <i>distrú-TTO.</i> |
| <i>í -vere,</i> | | | (a) <i>scrí-VERE,</i> | <i>scrí-SSI,</i> | <i>scrí-TTO.</i> |
| <i>-ere,</i> | | | (a) <i>trá-ERE,</i> | <i>trá-SSI,</i> | <i>trá-TTO.</i> |

FIFTH CLASS.

| | | | | | |
|------------------|---------------------------|---|-------------------------|------------------|-------------------|
| <i>ón-dere,</i> | } ...-si, ...-sto; ...as, | } | (a) <i>rispón-DERE,</i> | <i>rispó-SI,</i> | <i>rispó-STO.</i> |
| <i>ié -dere,</i> | | | (a) <i>chié-DERE,</i> | <i>chié-SI,</i> | <i>chié-STO.</i> |
| <i>-nere,</i> | | | (a) <i>pó-NERE,</i> | <i>pó-SI,</i> | <i>pó-STO.</i> |

Variation of the Verb Invádere.

(Paradigm of the *First Class* of the verbs in
ěre (*short*).)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Invá-DVRĚ, | to invade. || *invá-so*, | invaded.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect*.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-----------------|--------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>invá-si</i> , | I invaded ; | <i>invaděmmo</i> , | [we invaded ; |
| 2d p. <i>invaděsti</i> , | thou invadest ; | <i>invaděste</i> , | [you invaded ; |
| 3d p. <i>invá-se</i> , | he invaded ; | <i>invá-sero</i> , | [they invaded. |

The verbs *evádere*, ‘to evade’; — *lédere*, ‘to offend’; — *řídere*, ‘to laugh’; *divídere*, ‘to divide’; *conquídere*, ‘to conquer’; *intriđere*, ‘to temper’; *uccídere*, ‘to kill’; — *ródere*, ‘to gnaw’; — *allúđere*, ‘to allude’; *delúđere*, ‘to delude’; *illúđere*, ‘to illude’; — *árdere*, ‘to burn’; *mórdere*, ‘to bite’; — *accéndere*, ‘to kindle’; *incéndere*, ‘to set on fire’; *offěđere*, ‘to offend’; *scéndere*, ‘to descend’; *spěđere*, ‘to spend’; *těđere*, ‘to stretch’; *vilipěđere*, ‘to vilify’; — *chiúđere*, ‘to shut’; — *spárgere*, ‘to spread’; — *měrgere*, ‘to sink’; *těrgere*, ‘to wipe’; *aspěrgere*, ‘to sprinkle’; — *córrere*, ‘to run’; — *řivěrtere*, ‘to turn’; and their compounds, have the same irregularities.

The compounds of *córrere*, — *occórrere*, ‘to occur’; *soccórrere*, ‘to succour’; in the *future* and the *conditional* are often contracted; and make *accorrá*, ‘it will occur’; *soccorrěbbe*, ‘he would succour.’

Difěđere, ‘to defend’; *pěđere*, ‘to lose’; and *řěđere*, ‘to render,’ are both *regular* and *irregular*; and make in the *perfect*, *difěđěsi* or *difěsi*, ‘I defended’; and in the *participle*, *difěđěto* or *difěso*, ‘defended’; &c.

Féndere, 'to cleave'; is both *regular* and *irregular*; and makes, in the *perfect*, *fendéi* or *féssi*, 'I cleaved'; and in the *participle*, *fendúto* and *féssó*, 'cleaved.'

Préndere, 'to take'; and *rádere*, 'to shave'; are both *regular* and *irregular* in the *perfect*; but in the *participle* are *irregular* only, and make *présó*, 'taken'; and *rásó*, 'shaven.'

The verbs *péndere*, 'to hang'; *spléndere*, 'to glitter'; *véndere*, 'to sell'; *strídere*,* 'to shriek'; and their compounds, are *regular*, and are varied like *téssere*.

Variation of the Verb Assórbere.

(Paradigm of the *Second Class* of the verbs in *ěre* (*short*).)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Assór-BERE, |to absorb. || *assór-ro*, |absorbed.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect*.

| | | | |
|---------------------------|------------------|---------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>assór-si</i> , | I absorbed; | <i>assorbémmo</i> , | we absorbed; |
| 2d p. <i>assorbésti</i> , | thou absorbedst; | <i>assorbéste</i> , | you absorbed; |
| 3d p. <i>assór-se</i> , | he absorbed; | <i>assór-sero</i> , | they absorbed. |

Verbs ending in *gliěre*, *gněre*, and *lěre*, besides the above, have also other irregularities, as will be seen by the following Paradigms:

* Alfonso Varano has written *stríse*, 'he shrieked'; and *strísero*, 'they shrieked.'

Cogliere.(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *glière.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|---|------------|----------------|-----------|
| <i>CÓGLIERE</i> , or [<i>CÓRRE</i> (<i>cor</i>)], | to gather. | <i>CÓLTO</i> , | gathered. |
|---|------------|----------------|-----------|

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---|--------------------------------|---|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>cóglio</i> , or [<i>CÓLGO</i> , | I gather or am [gathering ; | <i>cogliámo</i> , | we gather ; |
| 2d p. <i>cógli</i> , | thou gatherest ; | <i>cogliéte</i> , | you gather ; |
| 3d p. <i>cóglie</i> , | he gathers ; | <i>cógliono</i> , or <i>CÓL-</i> [<i>GONO</i> , | they gather. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|---|-------------------|---|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>CÓLSI</i> (co- [<i>gliéi</i>]), | I gathered ; | <i>cogliémmo</i> , | we gathered ; |
| 2d p. <i>cogliésti</i> , | thou gatheredst ; | <i>cogliésté</i> , | you gathered ; |
| 3d p. <i>CÓLSE</i> (co- [<i>gliè</i> , <i>cogliétte</i>]), | he gathered ; | <i>CÓLSERO</i> (<i>coglié-</i> [<i>rono</i> , <i>cogliétte-</i> [<i>ro</i>]), | they gathered. |

4. — *Future.*1st p. *COGLIERÒ*, or *CORRÒ*, | I shall or will gather.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---|-----------------------------------|---|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io cógli</i> , [or <i>CÓLGA</i> , | that I gather or [may gather ; | <i>cogliámo</i> , | that we gather ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu cógli</i> , [or <i>CÓLGA</i> (<i>cógli</i> [or <i>cólghi</i>]), | that thou gather ; | <i>cogliáte</i> , | that you gather ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli cógli</i> , [or <i>CÓLGA</i> , | that he gather ; | <i>cógliono</i> , or <i>CÓL-</i> [<i>GANO</i> , | that they gather. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|--|--|
| 1st p. <i>COGLIERÉI</i> , or <i>CORRÉI</i> (co- [gliería, or corría), | I should, would, or could gather; [or might gather. |
|--|--|

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

| | | |
|--|--|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>cogli</i> (<i>có'</i>) | <i>cogliámo nói</i> , | let us gather; |
| 2d p. <i>cogli</i> (<i>có'</i>) [<i>tu</i> , | <i>cogliéte vói</i> , | gather ye; |
| 3d p. <i>cógli</i> , or [<i>cólga égli</i> , | <i>cógliano</i> , or <i>cól-</i> [<i>gano églino</i> , | let them gather. |

Spégnere.

(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *gnère*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|---|----------------|-----------------|---------------|
| <i>Spégnere</i> , or [<i>spéngere</i> , | to extinguish. | <i>spénto</i> , | extinguished. |
|---|----------------|-----------------|---------------|

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|--|---|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>spéгно</i> , or [<i>spéngo</i> , | I extinguish or [am extinguish- ing; | <i>spegnámo</i> , | we extinguish; |
| 2d p. <i>spégni</i> , | thou extinguish- [est; | <i>spegnéte</i> , | you extinguish; |
| 3d p. <i>spégne</i> , | he extinguishes; | <i>spégnono</i> , or [<i>spéngono</i> , | they extinguish. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | |
|------------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>spénsi</i> , | I extinguished. |
|------------------------|-----------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|---|---|----------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io spégna</i> , [or <i>spéNGA</i> , | that I extinguish, [or may extin- guish ; | <i>spegnriámo</i> , | that we extin- guish ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu spégna</i> , [or <i>spéNGA</i> [(<i>spégni</i>), | that thou extin- guish ; | <i>spegnriáte</i> , | that you extin- guish ; |
| 3d p. <i>égli spégna</i> , [or <i>spéNGA</i> , | that he extin- guish ; | <i>spégnano</i> or [<i>spéNGANO</i> , | that they extin- guish. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--|---------------------------|--|---------------------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>spegnriámo nói</i> , | let us extinguish ; |
| 2d p. <i>spégni tu</i> , | extinguish thou ; | <i>spegnéte vói</i> , | extinguish ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>spégna</i> , or [<i>spéNGA égli</i> , | let him extin- guish ; | <i>spégnano</i> , or [<i>spéNGANO</i> [<i>églino</i> , | let them extin- guish. |

Svellere.(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *lère.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Svellere, | to root up. || *svélto*, | rooted up.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--|-------------------|--|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>svéllo</i> , or [<i>svélgo</i> , | I root up ; | <i>svelliámo</i> , | we root up ; |
| 2d p. <i>svélli</i> , | thou rootest up ; | <i>svelléte</i> , | you root up ; |
| 3d p. <i>svélle</i> , | he roots up ; | <i>svéllono</i> , or <i>svél-</i> [<i>GONO</i> , | they root up. |

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *svélsi*, | I rooted up.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---|--------------------------------------|--|--------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io svélla</i> , [or <i>svélGA</i> , | that I root up, or [may root up ; | <i>svellidmo</i> , | that we root up ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu svélla</i> , or [<i>svélGA</i> (<i>svélli</i> , [or <i>svélghi</i>), | that thou root up ; | <i>svellidte</i> , | that you root up ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli svélla</i> , [or <i>svélGA</i> , | that he root up ; | <i>svéllano</i> , or <i>svél-</i> [<i>GANO</i> , | that they root up. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--|-------------------|---|-------------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>svellidmo nói</i> , | let us root up ; |
| 2d p. <i>svélli tu</i> , | root up thou ; | <i>svelléte vói</i> , | root ye up ; |
| 3d p. <i>svélla</i> , or [<i>svélGA égli</i> , | let him root up ; | <i>svéllano</i> , or <i>svél-</i> [<i>GANO églino</i> , | let them root up. |

The compounds of *assórbere*, ‘to absorb’; *cógliere*, ‘to gather’; and the verbs *vincere*, ‘to conquer’; — *tórcere*, ‘to twist’; — *vólgere*, ‘to turn’; *rifúlgere*, ‘to shine’; — *giúngere*, ‘to arrive’; *múngere*, ‘to milk’; *púngere*, ‘to prick’; *úngere*, ‘to anoint’; — *piángere*, ‘to weep’; *frángere*, ‘to break’; — *cíngere*, ‘to gird’; *fíngere*, ‘to fain’; *píngere*, ‘to paint’; *spíngere*, ‘to push’; *tíngere*, ‘to tinge’; — *pórgere*, ‘to offer’; *accórgere*, ‘to perceive’; *sórgere*, ‘to rise’; — *scégliere*, ‘to choose’; *sciógliere*, ‘to untie’; *tógliere*, ‘to take away’; — *distínguere*, ‘to distinguish’; *estínguere*, ‘to extinguish’; — *avéllere*, ‘to pull by force’; *divéllere*, ‘to pluck up’; — *assúmere*, ‘to assume’; — *vólvare*, ‘to turn’; and their compounds, have the same irregularities.

Rifúlgere has no participle.

Sórgere has been by poets changed into *súrgere*, and so throughout its inflexions: — *súrsi*, ‘I rose’; *súrto*, ‘risen’; &c.

Stríngere, ‘to bind’; and its compounds, as *astríngere*, ‘to constrain’; &c., in the participle makes *strétto*, ‘bound’; *astrétto*, ‘constrained’; &c.

Espéllere, 'to expel'; *impéllere*, 'to impel'; *repéllere*, 'to repel'; in the *perfect* make *espúlsi*, 'I expelled'; *impúlsi*, 'I impelled'; *repúlsi*, 'I repelled'; and in the *participle*, *espúlso*, 'expelled'; *impúlso*, 'impelled'; *repúlso*, 'repelled.'

Invólvere, 'to involve'; and *devólvere*, 'to devolve'; in the *participle* make *involúto*, 'involved'; *devolúto*, 'devolved.'

Presúmere, 'to presume'; and *riassúmere*, 'to re-assume'; *assólvere*, 'to absolve'; *dissólvere*, 'to dissolve'; and *risólvere*, 'to resolve'; in the *perfect* are both *regular* and *irregular*; and make *presuméi* or *presúnsi*, 'I presumed'; *assolvéi* or *assólsi*, 'I absolved'; &c.

Assólvere, *dissólvere*, and *risólvere* in the *participle* make, *assolúto*, 'absolved'; *dissolúto*,* 'dissolved'; *risolúto*, 'resolved.'

The verb *sólvere*, 'to untie,' 'to solve,' is *regular*, and is varied like *téssere*.

Variation of the Verb Concédere.

(Paradigm of the *Third Class* of the verbs in *ěre* (*short*).)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Concé-DERE, |to grant. || *concé-ssó*, |granted.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — Perfect.

| | | | |
|---------------------------|-----------------|----------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>concé-ssi</i> , | I granted; | <i>concedémmo</i> , | we granted; |
| 2d p. <i>concedésti</i> , | thou grantedst; | <i>concedéste</i> , | you granted; |
| 3d p. <i>concé-sse</i> , | he granted; | <i>concé-ssero</i> , | they granted. |

The verbs *scíndere*, 'to cut asunder'; — *esprímere*, 'to express'; — *scuótere*, 'to shake'; *percuótere*, 'to

* For this *participle* we, generally, substitute *disciólto*, a corresponding form of the verb *disciógliere*, 'to dissolve'; to distinguish it from the word *dissolúto*, 'dissolute.'

strike'; — *discútere*, 'to discuss'; *concútere*, 'to shake'; — *connéttere*, 'to connect'; — *muóvere*, 'to move'; and their compounds have the same irregularities.

Redímere, 'to redeem'; in the *perfect* makes *redénsi*, 'I redeemed'; and in the *participle*, *redénto*, 'redeemed.'

Méttere, 'to put'; and its compounds *amméttere*, 'to admit'; *comméttere*, 'to commit'; &c., in the *perfect* make *mísi*, 'I put'; *ammi-si*, 'I admitted'; &c.

Concédere, 'to grant'; *intercédere*, 'to intercede'; *precédere*, 'to precede'; and *succédere*, 'to succeed,' are both *regular* and *irregular*, and make, in the *perfect*, *concéssi* or *concedéi*, 'I granted'; and in the *participle*, *concéssó* or *concedúto*, 'granted'; &c.

Connéttere, signifying 'to reason,' is *regular*, and makes, in the *perfect*, *connettéi*, 'I reasoned'; and in the *participle*, *connettúto*, 'reasoned.'

The verbs *cédere*, 'to yield'; *accédere*, 'to accede'; *eccédere*, 'to exceed'; *procédere*,* 'to proceed'; — *prescindere*, 'to prescind'; — *prémere*, 'to press'; *sprémere*, 'to squeeze'; — *rifléttere*, 'to reflect'; and *báttere*, 'to beat'; and its compounds, are *regular*, and are varied like *téssere*.

Rifléttere, when applied to 'light,' 'sound,' &c., in the *participle* makes *rifléssó*, 'reflected.'

Variation of the Verb Cuócere.

(Paradigm of the *Fourth Class* of the verbs ending in *ère* (*short*).)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|-------------------|----------|-----------------|---------|
| <i>Cuó-CERE</i> , | to cook. | <i>có-TTO</i> , | cooked. |
|-------------------|----------|-----------------|---------|

* Of this verb, Castiglione has used *procésse*, 'he proceeded.'

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|-----------------|-------------------|--------------|
| 1stp. <i>có-ssì</i> , | I cooked ; | <i>cocémmo</i> , | we cooked ; |
| 2d p. <i>cocésti</i> , | thou cookedst ; | <i>cocéste</i> , | you cooked ; |
| 3d p. <i>có-ssè</i> , | he cooked ; | <i>có-ssero</i> , | they cooked. |

Addúcere.(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *úcere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|----------------------|------------|------------------|----------|
| <i>Addúcere</i> , or | to allege. | <i>addótto</i> , | alleged. |
| [<i>addúrre</i>], | | | |

II. INDICATIVE.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | |
|-------------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>addússì</i> , | I alleged. |
|-------------------------|------------|

4. — *Future.*

| | | |
|-----------------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>addurrò</i> | [by contraction | I shall or will allege. |
| | [for <i>adducerò</i>], | |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | | |
|--|-----|---------------------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>addurréi</i> (<i>addurría</i>) | [by | I should, would, or could allege ; or |
| [contraction for <i>adduceréi</i> (<i>ad-</i> | | [might allege. |
| <i>ducería</i>)], | | |

Rilúcere, 'to shine'; and *tralúcere*, 'to shine through'; are never contracted in the *infinitive*, and make, in the *future*, *rilucerà*, 'it will shine'; *tralucerà*, 'it will shine through'; and in the *conditional*, *rilucérébbe*, 'it would shine'; &c.

Distruggere.

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Distrúggere, or *to destroy*. || *distrútto*, | *destroyed*.
[*distrúrre*, |

II. INDICATIVE.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *distrússi*, | I *destroyed*.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *distruggerò*, or *distrurrò*, | I *shall or will destroy*.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *distruggeréi*, or *distrur-* | I *should, would, or could destroy*;
[*réi* (*distruggería or distrurría*), | *[or might destroy.*

Struggere, 'to melt'; is never contracted in the *infinitive*, and makes, in the *future*, only *struggerò*, 'I will melt'; and in the *conditional*, *struggeréi*, 'I should melt.'

*Tráere.**

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Tráere, or *trár-* | *to draw*. || *trátto*, | *drawn*.
[*ré*, |

* From the Latin *trahere*, converted also by the Italians into *trággere*, now become *obsolete*, but of which it retains many of the forms.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------------|----------------|----------------------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>trággō</i> , | I draw ; | <i>tráíamo</i> , or <i>trag-</i> | we draw ; |
| | | [GIÁMO, | |
| 2d p. <i>trái</i> , | thou drawest ; | <i>traéte</i> , | you draw ; |
| 3d p. <i>tráe</i> (<i>trág-</i> | he draws ; | <i>trággono</i> (<i>trán-</i> | they draw. |
| [<i>ge</i>), | | [<i>no</i>), | |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | |
|------------------------|---------|
| 1st p. <i>trássi</i> , | I drew. |
|------------------------|---------|

4. — *Future.*

| | |
|--|-----------------------|
| 1st p. <i>trarrò</i> [by contraction for [<i>traerò</i>], | I shall or will draw. |
|--|-----------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|-------------------------------|----------------------------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío trággā</i> , | that I draw or [may draw ; | <i>tráidmo</i> , or <i>trag-</i> | that we draw ; |
| | | [GIÁMO, | |
| 2d p. <i>tu trággā</i> , | that thou draw ; | <i>tráide</i> or <i>trag-</i> | that you draw ; |
| | | [GIÁTE, | |
| 3d p. <i>égli trággā</i> | that he draw ; | <i>trággano</i> , | that they draw. |
| [<i>GA</i> , | | | |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1st p. <i>trarréi</i> (<i>trarría</i>) [by contrac- [ion for <i>traeréi</i> (<i>traería</i>)], | I should, would, or could draw ; or [might draw. |
|---|---|

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|------------------------|----------------|--------------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>tráidmo</i> or <i>trag-</i> | let us draw ; |
| | | [GIÁMO, | |
| 2d p. <i>trái tu</i> , | draw thou ; | <i>traéte</i> , | draw ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>trággā</i> | let him draw ; | <i>trággano</i> , | let them draw. |
| [<i>égli</i> , | | | |

The compounds of *cuocere*, 'to cook'; *tràere*, 'to draw'; and the verbs *indúcere*, 'to induce'; *condúcere*, 'to conduct'; *dedúcere*, 'to deduct'; *prodúcere*, 'to produce'; *ridúcere*, 'to reduce'; *sedúcere*, 'to seduce'; *tradúcere*, 'to translate'; — *dirigere*, 'to direct'; *erigere*,* 'to erect'; *negligere*, 'to neglect'; *prediligere*, 'to have a predilection for'; — *leggere*, 'to read'; *reggere*, 'to support'; *protèggere*, 'to protect'; — *struggere*, 'to melt'; — *scrivere*, 'to write'; and their compounds, have the same irregularities.

Figgere,† 'to fix'; *infiggere*, 'to infix'; *trafiggere*, 'to transfix'; in the *participle* end both in *ssò* and *tto*; and make *fisso* or *fitto*, 'fixed'; *infitto* or *infisso*, 'infix'; &c. — *Affiggere*, 'to affix'; *crocifiggere*, 'to crucify'; *prefiggere*, 'to prefix'; end in *ssò*; and make *affisso*, 'affixed'; *crocifisso*, 'crucified'; &c. — *Configgere*, 'to thrust into'; *sconfiggere*, 'to defeat'; *friggere*, 'to fry'; *soffiggere*, 'to fry'; *affliggere*, 'to afflict'; *infliggere*, 'to inflict'; end in *tto*; and make *confitto*, 'thrust into'; *fitto*, 'fried'; *infitto*, 'inflicted'; &c.

Rilúcere, 'to shine'; *tralúcere*, 'to shine through'; are both *regular* and *irregular*, and make *rilucéi* or *rilússi*, 'I shone'; *tralucé* or *tralússe*, 'it shone through'; but they have *no participle*.

Esígere, 'to exact'; in the *perfect* is both *regular* and *irregular*, and makes *esigéi* or *csàssi*, 'I exacted'; and in the *participle* makes *esàtto*, 'exacted.'

Vivere, 'to live'; in the *participle* makes *vivúto* or *vissúto*, 'lived'; and in the *future* and *conditional*, is often contracted into *vivrò*, 'I will live'; and *vivréi* (*vivría*), 'I would live.'

* *Erigere* is often by poets contracted into *érgere*, but then has *no participle*. The *érto* mentioned by Mastrofini, notwithstanding its derivation from *erétto*, *participle* of *erigere*, is used in Italian as an adjective, but not as a *participle*.

† *Figgere*, and some of its compounds, as *affiggere*, &c., are sometimes spelt with one *g* only: — *figere*, *affigere*; and then make, in the *perfect*, *físi*, *affísi*; and in the *participle*, *físo*, *affíso*; &c.

Variation of the Verb Rispondere.

(Paradigm of the *Fifth Class* of the verbs in
ěre (short).)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Risp-óNDERE, |to answer. || *rispó-STO*, |answered.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------|-------------------|----------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>risp-óSI</i> , | I answered ; | <i>rispondémmo</i> , | we answered ; |
| 2d p. <i>rispondésti</i> , | thou answeredst ; | <i>rispondéste</i> , | you answered ; |
| 3d p. <i>risp-óSE</i> , | he answered ; | <i>risp-óSERO</i> , | they answered. |

Chiedere.

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

ChiéDERE, |to ask. || *chiéSTO*, |asked.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------------------|----------------------------|---|-----------|
| 1st p. <i>chiédo</i> [(chiéggio), | I ask or am ask- [ing ; | <i>chiediámo</i> (<i>chieg-</i> [<i>giámo</i> , <i>chiedé-</i> [<i>mo</i>), | we ask ; |
| 2d p. <i>chiédi</i> , | thou askest ; | <i>chiedéte</i> , | you ask ; |
| 3d p. <i>chiéde</i> , | he asks ; | <i>chiedono</i> (<i>chiég-</i> [<i>giono</i> , <i>chiég-</i> [<i>gono</i>), | they ask. |

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *chiéSI*, | I asked.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | | |
|--------------------------|---|-----------|---|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io chiedo</i> | that I ask, or [(<i>chiedgia</i> , <i>chiedga</i>), [<i>chiedghi</i>), | [may ask; | <i>chiediamo</i> (<i>chied-</i> [<i>giamo</i>), | that we ask; |
| 2d p. <i>tu chiedi</i> | that thou ask; | | <i>chiediate</i> (<i>chied-</i> [<i>giate</i>), | that you ask; |
| 3d p. <i>egli chiede</i> | that he ask; | | <i>chiedano</i> (<i>chied-</i> [<i>giano</i> , <i>chied-</i> [<i>gano</i>), | that they ask. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|--------------|--|---------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>chiediamo noi</i> , | let us ask; |
| 2d p. <i>chiedi tu</i> , | ask thou; | <i>chiedete voi</i> , | ask ye; |
| 3d p. <i>chieda</i> | let him ask; | <i>chiedano</i> (<i>chied-</i> [<i>gano</i>) <i>eglino</i> , | let them ask. |

Ponere.

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|-----------------------------------|---------|----------------|------|
| <i>PONERE</i> , or <i>porre</i> , | to put. | <i>pósto</i> , | put. |
|-----------------------------------|---------|----------------|------|

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------|---------------|------------------|-----------|
| 1st p. <i>pongo</i> | I put; | <i>poniamo</i> , | we put; |
| [(<i>póno</i>), | | | |
| 2d p. <i>poni</i> , | thou puttest; | <i>ponete</i> , | you put; |
| 3d p. <i>pone</i> , | he puts; | <i>pongono</i> , | they put. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | |
|----------------------|--------|
| 1st p. <i>pósi</i> , | I put. |
|----------------------|--------|

4. — *Future.*

| | |
|---|----------------------|
| 1st p. <i>porrò</i> [by contraction for [<i>ponerò</i>], | I shall or will put. |
|---|----------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|-----------------|-----------------|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io pónGA</i> | that I put ; | <i>poniámo,</i> | that we put ; |
| [(pógna), | | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu pónGA</i> | that thou put ; | <i>poniáde,</i> | that you put ; |
| [(pógni), | | | |
| 3d p. <i>égli pónGA</i> | that he put ; | <i>pónGANO,</i> | that they put. |
| [(pógna), | | | |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | | |
|--|---|---|
| 1st p. <i>porréi</i> (<i>porría</i>) | [by contrac- tion for <i>poneréi</i> (<i>ponería</i>), | I should, would, or could put ; or [might put. |
|--|---|---|

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|---------------|------------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. | put thou ; | <i>poniámo nói,</i> | let us put ; |
| 2d p. <i>póni tu,</i> | | <i>ponéte vói,</i> | put ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>pónGA égli,</i> | let him put ; | <i>pónGANO églino,</i> | let them put. |

The verbs *corrispóndere*, ‘to correspond’; *ascóndere*, ‘to conceal’; *nascóndere*, ‘to hide’; — *richiédere*, ‘to request’; — and all the compounds of *pónere*, ‘to put’; have the same irregularities.

Ascóndere and *nascóndere*, in the *participle*, end also in *so*, making *ascóso*, ‘concealed’; and *nascóso*, ‘hidden.’

Fóndere, ‘to melt,’ and its compounds *confóndere*, ‘to confound’; &c. in the *perfect* make *fúsi*, ‘I melted’; *confúsi*, ‘I confounded’; &c.; and in the *participle*, *fúso*, ‘melted’; *confúso*, ‘confounded’; &c.

Fóndere is also *regular*, making also, in the *perfect*, *fondéi*, and in *participle*, *fondúto*.

Tóndere,* ‘to shear’; and *scérnere*, ‘to distinguish’;† *discérnere*, ‘to discern’; *concernere*, ‘to concern’; are *regular*, and varied like *téssere*.

* The participle *tóso*, erroneously attributed to *tóndere*, is a contraction of *tosáto*, participle of the verb *tosáre*, ‘to shear.’

† Manzoni has written *scérse*, ‘she distinguished’; and *scérsero*, ‘they distinguished.’

Variation of other Irregular Verbs in ěre (short), not included in any of the preceding classes.

To the above five classes of verbs in ěre (*short*) must be added the verbs,

| | | | | |
|-------------------|-----------|--|-----------------|--------------|
| <i>conóscere,</i> | to know ; | | <i>náscere,</i> | to be born ; |
| <i>créscere,</i> | to grow ; | | <i>rómpere,</i> | to break ; |
| <i>nuócere,</i> | to hurt ; | | | |

which, in the *perfect*, end in *bbi*, *cqui*, *ppi*; and in the *participle*, in *úto*, *to*, *tto* : thus,

| Infinitive. | Perfect. | Participle. |
|-------------------|------------------|----------------------|
| <i>conóSCERE,</i> | <i>conó-BBI,</i> | <i>conosci-ÚTO ;</i> |
| <i>créSCERE,</i> | <i>cré-BBI,</i> | <i>cresci-ÚTO ;</i> |
| <i>nuóCERE,</i> | <i>nó-CQUI,</i> | <i>nocí-ÚTO ;</i> |
| <i>náSCERE,</i> | <i>ná-CQUI,</i> | <i>ná-TO ;</i> |
| <i>róMPERE,</i> | <i>rú-PPI,</i> | <i>ró-TTO.</i> |

Conóscere.

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | | |
|-------------------|----------|--|---------------------|--------|
| <i>Conóscere,</i> | to know. | | <i>conosci-ÚTO,</i> | known. |
|-------------------|----------|--|---------------------|--------|

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | | |
|--------------------------|----------------|--|--------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>conó-BBI</i> | I knew ; | | <i>conoscémmo,</i> | we knew ; |
| [(conoscéi), | | | <i>conoscéste,</i> | you knew ; |
| 2d p. <i>conoscésti,</i> | thou knewest ; | | <i>conó-BBERO,</i> | they knew. |
| 3d p. <i>conó-BBE</i> | he knew ; | | | |
| [(conoscè), | | | | |

The compounds of *conóscere*, — and the verb *créscere*, ‘to grow,’ and its compounds, — have the same irregularities.

Nuócere.

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Nuócere, |to hurt. || *noci-úto*, |hurt.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|---------------|--------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>nó-cqui</i> , | I hurt; | <i>nocémmo</i> , | we hurt; |
| 2d p. <i>nocésti</i> , | thou hurtest; | <i>nocéste</i> , | you hurt; |
| 3d p. <i>nó-cque</i> , | he hurt; | <i>nó-cquero</i> , | they hurt. |

Rinuócere, ‘to hurt again,’ — and the verb *náscere*, ‘to be born’; and its compound *rináscere*, ‘to be born again,’ — in the *perfect*, have the same irregularities.

Náscere, and its compound *rináscere*, in the *participle* make *ná-to*, ‘been born’; *riná-to*, ‘been born again.’

The verb *páscere*, ‘to feed,’ although it has the same termination as *conóscere*, *créscere*, *náscere*, is *regular*. The verb *méscere*, signifying ‘to pour,’ is *regular*, but signifying ‘to mix,’ in the *participle*, is *irregular*, and makes *místo*, ‘mixed.’

Rómpere.

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Rómpere, |to break. || *ró-tto*, |broken.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|---|----------------|------------------|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>rú-PPI</i> [(róppi, rompéi), | I broke ; | <i>rompémmo,</i> | we broke ; |
| 2d p. <i>rompésti,</i> | thou brokest ; | <i>rompéste,</i> | you broke ; |
| 3d p. <i>rú-PPE</i> [(róppe, rompè), | he broke ; | <i>rú-PPERO,</i> | they broke. |

The compounds of *rómpere*, as *corrómpere*, ‘to corrupt’; *dirómpere*, ‘to break’; &c., have the same irregularities.

Variation of the Verb Bévere.

Bévere, ‘to drink,’ is a *regular* verb; but, as it has been by poets so contracted as to give it the appearance of an irregular one, we will here give its variation.

Bévere.

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Bévere*) *bére*, | to drink.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

bevéndo (beéndo), | drinking. || *bevúto,* | drunk.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|-----------------|------------------------|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>bévo</i> (béo), | I drink ; | <i>beviámo,</i> | we drink ; |
| 2d p. <i>bévi</i> (béi), | thou drinkest ; | <i>bevéte</i> (beéte), | you drink ; |
| 3d p. <i>béve</i> (bée), | he drinks ; | <i>bévono</i> (béono), | they drink. |

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *io bevéva* or *bevéa*, | I drank.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | | |
|---|--|--|---|--|
| 1st p. <i>bevéi</i> or [<i>bevétti</i> , <i>BÉVVI</i> [<i>(bébbi)</i> , 2d p. <i>bevésti</i> , 3d p. <i>bevè</i> or <i>be-</i> [<i>vétte</i> , <i>BÉVVE</i> [<i>(bébbe)</i> , | I drank ; thou drankest ; he drank ; | | <i>bevémmo</i> , <i>bevéste</i> , <i>bevérono</i> or <i>be-</i> [<i>véttero</i> , <i>BÉV-</i> [<i>VERO</i> (<i>bébbe-</i> [<i>ro</i> , <i>bévvono</i>), | we drank ; you drank ; they drank. |
|---|--|--|---|--|

4. — *Future.*

| | | | | |
|---|---|--|--|---|
| 1st p. (<i>beverò</i> , [<i>bevrò</i>) <i>berò</i> , 2d p. (<i>beverái</i>) [<i>berái</i> , 3d p. (<i>beverà</i> , [<i>bevrà</i>) <i>berà</i> , | I shall or will [drink ; thou wilt drink ; he will drink ; | | (<i>beverémo</i> , <i>be-</i> [<i>vrémo</i>) <i>berémo</i> , (<i>beveréte</i>) <i>beréte</i> , (<i>beveránno</i>) <i>be-</i> [<i>ránno</i> , | we will drink ; you will drink ; they will drink. |
|---|---|--|--|---|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | | |
|--|---|--|---|---|
| 1st p. <i>io béva</i> [<i>(béa)</i> , 2d p. <i>tu béva</i> [<i>(bévi</i> ; <i>béa</i> , <i>béi</i>), 3d p. <i>egli béva</i> [<i>(béa)</i> , | that I drink or [may drink ; that thou drink ; that he drink ; | | <i>beviámo</i> , <i>beviáte</i> , <i>bévano</i> (<i>béano</i>), | that we drink ; that you drink ; that they drink. |
|--|---|--|---|---|

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | | |
|--|--|--|---|---|
| 1st p. <i>io bevéssi</i> [<i>(beéssi)</i> , 2d p. <i>tu bevéssi</i> [<i>(beéssi)</i> , 3d p. <i>bevésse</i> [<i>(beésse)</i> , | if I drink ; if thou drinkest ; if he drinks ; | | <i>bevéssimo</i> (<i>beés-</i> [<i>simo</i>), <i>bevéste</i> (<i>beéste</i>), <i>bevéssero</i> (<i>beés-</i> [<i>sero</i> , <i>beéssono</i>), | if we drink ; if you drink ; if they drink. |
|--|--|--|---|---|

IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------|-----------------------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. (<i>beveréi</i>) | I should, would, | (<i>beverémmo</i>) <i>be-</i> | we would drink ; |
| [(<i>bevería</i>)] <i>beréi</i> | [or could drink ; | [<i>rémmo</i> , | |
| [(<i>bería</i>), | [or might drink ; | | |
| 2d p. (<i>beverésti</i>) | thou wouldst | (<i>beveréste</i>) <i>beré-</i> | you would drink ; |
| [<i>berésti</i> , | [drink ; | [<i>ste</i> , | |
| 3d p. (<i>beverébbe</i>) | he would drink ; | (<i>beverébbero</i> (<i>be-</i> | they would drink. |
| [(<i>bevería</i>)] <i>be-</i> | | [<i>veriano</i> , <i>beverí-</i> | |
| [<i>rébbe</i> (<i>bería</i>), | | [<i>eno</i>)] <i>berébbero</i> | |
| | | [(<i>beriano</i> , <i>berí-</i> | |
| | | [<i>eno</i>), | |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|----------------------------------|-----------------|---|-----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>beviámo nói</i> , | let us drink ; |
| 2d p. <i>bévi</i> (<i>béi</i>) | drink thou ; | <i>bevéte</i> (<i>beéte</i>) <i>vói</i> , | drink ye ; |
| [<i>tu</i> , | | | |
| 3d p. <i>béva</i> (<i>béa</i>) | let him drink ; | <i>bévano</i> (<i>béano</i>) | let them drink. |
| [<i>égli</i> , | | [<i>églino</i> , | |

The compounds of *bévere*, as *imbévere*, ‘to imbibe’; *ribévere*, ‘to drink again’; have the same irregularities.

REMARKS ON THE FOREGOING VERBS.

All verbs ending in *úcere*, as *addúcere*, ‘to allege’; *indúcere*, ‘to induce’; &c. in the *participle*, besides changing *cére* into *tto*, change also the *u* into *o*; and make *addótto*, ‘alleged’; *indótto*, ‘induced’; &c.

Rilúcere, ‘to shine’; and *tralúcere*, ‘to shine through’; have *no participle*.

Verbs ending in *glière*, as *cógliere*, ‘to gather’; *tógliere*, ‘to take away’; &c., in the *perfect* and *participle* retain the *l* of their termination; and make *cólsi*,

‘I gathered’; *cólto*, ‘gathered’; *tólso*, ‘I took away’; &c.

All verbs ending in *ndere*, as *accéndere*, ‘to kindle’; *scíndere*, ‘to cut asunder’; *rispóndere*, ‘to answer’; &c., in the *perfect* and the *participle* lose the *n*; and make *accési*, ‘I kindle’; *accéso*, ‘kindled’; *scíssi*, ‘I cut asunder’; &c.

Verbs ending in *ngère* may end also in *gnère*, and *vice versá*; thus, *giúngere* or *giúgnere*, ‘to arrive’; *spégnere* or *spéngere*, ‘to extinguish’; &c. When they end in *gnère*, in the *perfect* and *participle* they retain the *n* of their termination; and make *spénsi*, ‘I extinguished’; *spénto*, ‘extinguished’; &c.

The transposition of the *n* in verbs in *ngère* ought not to be made except in those inflexions in which *ng* is followed by *e* or *i*; as, *giúngo*, ‘I arrive,’ *giúgni*, ‘thou arrivest’; *giúgne*, ‘he arrives’; *giúgníamo*, ‘we arrive’; *giúgnéte*, ‘you arrive’; *giúngono*, ‘they arrive’; and *vice versá* in verbs in *gnère*, it ought not to be made but in those inflexions in which *gn* is followed by *o* or *a*; as, *spéngo*, ‘I extinguish’; *spégni*, ‘thou extinguishest’; &c., *spénga*, ‘that I extinguish’; &c.

Verbs ending in *igere* and *ímere*, as *dirígere*, ‘to direct’; *esprímere*, ‘to express’; &c., in the *perfect* and *participle* change the *i* into *e*; and make *diréssi*, ‘I directed’; *dirétto*, ‘directed’; *espréssi*, ‘I expelled’; *expréssso*, ‘expressed’; &c.

The verb *redímere*, ‘to redeem’; and verbs ending in *úmere*, as *assúmere*, ‘to assume’; &c., in the *perfect* and *participle*, change the *m* of their termination into *n*, and make *redénsi*, ‘I redeemed’; *assúnsi*, ‘I assumed’; *assúnto*, ‘assumed’; &c.

The verbs *tráere*, ‘to draw’; *pónere*, ‘to put,’ and their compounds; and all verbs ending in *glière*, *úcere*, *úggere*; as *cógliere*, ‘to gather’; *addúcere*, ‘to allege’; *distrúggere*, ‘to destroy’; are, in the *infinitive* contracted into *trárre*, *pórre*, *córre*, *addúrre*, *distrúrre*;

and make, in the *future*, — *trarrò*, ‘I will draw’; *porrò*, ‘I will put’; &c., and in the *conditional*, — *trarrèi*, ‘I would draw’; &c.

Rilúcere, ‘to shine’; *tralúcere*, ‘to shine through’; and *strúggere*, ‘to melt’; are never contracted in any of the above inflexions.

All verbs ending in *ère* (*short*), preceded by the diphthong *uó* (*accented*), as *cuócere*, ‘to cook’; *scuótere*, ‘to shake’; *muóvere*, ‘to move’; *nuócere*, ‘to hurt’; &c., in the *perfect* and *participle*, — and in *all the inflexions* in which the *diphthong loses the accent*, drop the *u*; and make, *cóssi*, ‘I cooked’; *cótto*, ‘cooked’; *scóssi*, ‘I shook’; &c. — *cociámo*, ‘we cook’; *scotéte*, ‘you shake’; *moverò*, ‘I will move’; *nocerébbe*, ‘it would hurt’; &c.

EXAMPLES.

Ad ambidúe quèsti fíni ha quí ALLÚSO pariménte il Signóre con un tal détto. (Segn. Mann. Nov. 16.)

To both these objects has the Lord here equally alluded with such words.

Non istétte guári, che égli PERDÈ la vísta, e la paróla. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 7.)

It was not long before he lost both his sight and speech.

Quèsta vólta ío dirò, cóme si díce, — D’ éssermi PÉRSA anch’ ío la lisciátúra. (Buon. Fier. 2. 4.)

This time I will say, as we are wont to say, that I have missed the object in view.

Tagliándo il FENDÈ quási infino á dénti. (Bocc. Filoc. 1.)

With a cut he clove him as far as the chin.

Colúí FÉSSE in grémbo a Dío — Lo cuór che in sul Tamígi ancor si cóla. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

That one smote in the bosom of God the heart which is yet honored on the Thames.

Che, per l’ effétto dé’ suói má’ pensiéri, — Fidándomi di lui, ío

That, through the effect of his evil thoughts, I, trusting in him,

fóssi PRÉSO, — E póscia mórtó, dir non è mestieri. (Dant. Inf. 33.)

Présa la piástra, la RADÉI da tutte e due le bände. (Beniv. Cell. Oref. 85.)

E séco avére úna procélla ASSÓRTO — Tánti principi illustri. (Ariost. Fur. 14. 6.)

Vói troveréte lo speziále per la vía, che andrà a CÓRRE la misúra dé' confétti. (Fir. Trin. 1. 2.)

Nè poéta ne CÓLGA mái, nè Gióve — La privilégi. (Petr. s. 46.)

Se égli [il víno] sáppia di séc-co o ábbia odór cattivo, cáccinvisi déntro fiáccole accése, e vi si SPÉNGANO. (Sod. Colt. 99.)

Sémpre la prossimána érba dattórno si SVÉLGA. (Cresc. 5. 1.)

Che Crísto appárve á' due ch' é-rano in vía, — Già sÚRTO fuór délla sepulcrál búca. (Dant. Purg. 21.)

In onoráre altrúi tenéva la bór-sa STRÉTTA. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

Del bél nído di Lèda mi divélse, — E nel ciél velocíssimo m' IM-PÚLSE. (Dant. Par. 27.)

Ch' è di tórbidi nívoli INVO-LÚTO. (Dant. Inf. 24.)

Clódio diéde monéta á' giúdice, e fu ASSOLÚTO. (Sen. Pist. 97.)

Qúesto possénte mío nóbile ar-dóre — Mi solléna da térra, e pórt-a il córe — Dov' ír per súa virtù non gli è CONCÉSSO. (Buon. Rim. 50.)

was taken and afterward put to death, there is no need that I should tell.

Having taken the metal, I shaved it on both sides.

And that along with him one storm had swallowed up so many illustrious princes.

You will find the apothecary on the way, going to take the measure of the confections.

Never may a poet gather of it, nor Jupiter give it any privilege.

If it [the wine] tastes too dry or has a bad odor, let lighted torches be thrown into it, and be extinguished in it.

Let the grass always be pulled up around it.

That Christ appeared unto the two upon their way, new-risen from his vaulted grave.

He kept his purse close in honoring others.

From the fair nest of Leda rapt me forth, and wafted me on into swiftest heaven.

Which is wrapt in turbid mists.

Clodius gave money to the judges and was acquitted.

This powerful ardor of mine elevates me from the earth, and carries my heart, where by its own power it is not permitted to ascend,

A che, e còme CONCEDÉTTE
Amóre — Che conoscéste i dub-
biósi desiri? (Dant. Inf. 5.)

REDÉNTO, da Redímere. (Cru-
sca.)

M MISE déntro álle segréte
cóse (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Nè ánche ben capísco l' illa-
zione che fa Apélle, del dovérsi
concédere quálche lume RIFLÉSSO
alla térra. (Gal. Macch. sol. 168.)

Quándo Fetónte abbandonò li
fréni, — Perchè 'l ciél, còme páre
ancór, si cósse. (Dant. Inf. 17.)

Dáto che quèsta ragióne si
potésse ADDÚCERE. (Borg. Rip.
30.)

Nói, sèmpre che verrà propósi-
to, ADDURRÉMO símili antíchi e-
sémpj. (Dav. Stor. 3.)

E' suóno, che si fa nèlle sélve
dái cacciatóri, perchè li cáni
TRÁGGANO al suóno. (But. Inf.
31.)

Via córta e spedita — TRAR-
RÉBBE a fin quest' áspira péna, e
dúra. (Petr. c. 18.)

Sóno físo in un límo, che non
tróva fòndo. (Vit. SS. Pad.)

Lo TRAFÍTTO il mirò, ma núlla
dísse. (Dant. Inf. 25.)

Líbera spírto od á' suóí mém-
bri AFFÍSSO. (Petr. s. 113.)

Tentò di trár dálla profónda
piága la CONFÍTTA saétta. (Guar.
Past. Fid. 5, 7.)

E tánta grázia sóvra me RILÚS-
SE. (Dant. Par. 22.)

La lúce nèlle ténebre RILU-
CÉTTE. (Arr. Vang.)

By what and how did Love grant
that you should know your uncer-
tain wishes?

Redeemed, from to redeem.

He led me on into those seclud-
ed regions.

Neither can I understand the
inference which Apelles makes,
that some reflected light must be
granted to the earth.

When Phaëton abandoned the
reins, whence heaven, as it yet
appears, was wrapt in flames.

Even could this reason be al-
leged.

Whenever it shall be conven-
ient, we will always allege similar
ancient examples.

It is a sound, which is made by
hunters in the woods, that the dogs
may come to that sound.

A short and expeditious way
would bring to an end this severe
and hard pain.

I am fixed in a marshy soil
which has no bottom.

The pierced spirit looked on
him, but did not speak.

Free spirit or still confined to
its limbs.

He tried to draw from the deep
wound the fixed arrow.

And so much grace shone over
me.

Light shone in the darkness.

ESÁTTO, da Esígere. (Crusca.)

Exacted, from to exact.

*Che gli fússe oscuráta la fama
de' principj délla sua milizia da
un pópolo vivúto in lunga páce.*
(Guicc. Stor. 5.)

That the fame of the beginning
of his military life should be ob-
scured by a people who had lived
in long peace.

*Ma il ben vissúto vécchio s' in-
ggnáva di mostráre la verità dél-
la cósá.* (Firenz. Asin.)

But the well-lived old man en-
deavoured to show the truth of
the thing.

*Vivrò, com' io son visso.**
(Petr. s. 113.)

I shall live as I have lived.

*Allóra dimandò còme si chia-
máva quell' isola; fu rispósto per
li marinári, che per antico si chia-
máva Jerusaiém.* (Giov. Vill. l.
4. c. 18.)

Then he asked how that island
was called; he was answered by
the sailors, that anciently it was
called Jerusalem.

*Nè può grázia negár che tu gli
CHIÉGGIA.* (Alam. Colt. l. 10.)

Nor can he deny any favor that
you may ask.

*E se ne venne a PÓNERE óste a
Fiésolé.* (Pecor. g. 11. n. 1.)

And came to encamp at Fiesole.

*Per dúo fiammétte, che vedém-
mo PÓRRE.* (Dant. Inf. 8.)

By two small flames, which we
saw kindle.

*Chi PORRÀ ben la mènte e
l' intellétto.* (Franc. Barb. 158.)

He who will reflect well.

*Lo dúca ed io, per quel cammí-
no ASCÓSO,— Entrámmo a ritor-
nár nel chiáro móndo.* (Dant.
Inf. 34.)

My guide and I entered by that
hidden way to return to the bright
world.

*La pietà dé' dúo cognáti,— Che
di tristizia tútto mi CONFÚSE.*
(Dant. Inf. 6.)

Pity for the kindred shades,
whence grief wholly overcame
me.

*Tútte le campáne che érano in
quéllo trováronsi quási tútte FON-
DÚTE, còme fóssero coláte nélla
fornáce.* (Matt. Vill. 3. 42.)

All the bells which were there,
were found almost all melted as if
they had been put in a furnace.

*Il Saladíno CONÓBBE costúi ot-
timaménte éssere sapúto uscír del
láccio, il quále davánti á' piédi
téso gli avéa.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

Saladin saw that he had known
how to get out of the snare, which
he had spread before his feet.

*Ben ti dée ricordár, che non ti
NÓCQUE.* (Dant. Inf. 20.)

Thou oughtest to remember well,
for it did thee good service.

* By contraction for *vissuto*.

Andónne a Pavia per úna discórdia NÁTA tra quélli di Becchería. (Din. Comp. 3.)

He went to Pavia on account of a dissension sprung up among the people of Beccheria.

La cittadinánza, che è or MÍSTA — Di Cámpe, e di Certáldo, e di Figghíne, — Púra vedéasi nell' último artista. (Dant. Par. 16.)

The citizens' blood, that now is mixed from Campi, and Certaldo, and Figghine, ran pure through the last mechanic's veins.

L' un délli quáli, ancór non è molt' ánni — RUPP' ío per un, che déntro v' annegáva. (Dant. Inf. 13.)

One of which I broke some few years past, to save an infant who was drowning in it.

E mángia, e BÉE, e dórme, e véste pánni. (Dant. Inf. 33.)

And eats, and drinks, and sleeps, and puts raiment on.

EXERCISE XX.

I. 1. — To gather. to allege. to destroy. to draw.
Cógliere. addúcere. distrúggere. tráere.

to put. to take away. 7. — cloven. taken. shaven.
pónere. tógliere. fendere. prendere. rádere.

kindled. devolved. bound. redeemed. extinguished.
accéndere. devólvere. stríngere. redímere. spégnere.

cooked. answered. born. directed. lived. broken.
cuócere. rispóndere. nascere. dirígere. vivere. rómpere.

alleged. — II. 1. — I gather, thou extinguishest, he
addúcere. cógliere, spégnere, ri-

reduces, we ask, you draw, they take away. —
dúcere, chiédere, tráere, tógliere.

I absorb, thou chooseth, he rises, we assume, you
assórbere, scégliere, sórgere, assúmere, a-

compel, they root up. 3. — I offended, thou vilifiedst,
stríngere, svèllere. lédere, vilipéndere,

he ran, we bite, you sprinkled, they kindled. —
córrere, mórdere, aspérgere, accéndere.

I expelled, thou invadedst, he knew, we wiped,
espéllere, invádere, conóscere, térgere,

you shut, they descended. — I cut asunder, thou
chiùdere, *scèndere.* *scìndere,* *con-*

grantedst, he redeemed, we sheared, you chose, they
cédere, *redimere,* *tóndere,* *scégliere,* *mét-*

put. 4. — I will succour, thou wilt drink, it will occur,
tere. *soccórrere,* *bévere,* *occórrere,*

we will shake, you will draw, they will destroy. —
scuótere, *tráere,* *distrúggere.*

I will put, thou wilt move, he will turn, we will untie,
pónere, *muóvere,* *vólvere,* *sciógliere,*

you will reflect, they will melt. — III. 1. — I may
rifléttere, *strúggere.* *dis-*

distinguish, thou mayest milk, he may know, we may
tìnguere, *múngere,* *náscere,* *protég-*

protect, you may cook, they may conquer. — I may
gere, *cuócere,* *víncere.* *scié-*

choose, thou mayest fry, he may request, we may
gliere, *fríggere,* *richiédere,* *contrap-*

oppose, you may hurt, they may drink. — IV. 1. —
pónere, *nuócere,* *bévere.*

I should drink again, thou wouldst break, he would
ribévere, *frángere,* *rilú-*

shine, we would live, you would produce, they would
cere, *vívère,* *prodúcere,* *cré-*

grow. — V. — write thou, let him feign, let us answer,
scere. *scrívere,* *fíngere,* *rispóndere,*

pour ye, let them feed.
méscere, *páscere.*

VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

The following are the simple irregular verbs of the third conjugation ; viz.

| | | | | |
|----------------|--------------|--|-----------------|-------------|
| <i>dire,</i> | { to say, or | | <i>seguire,</i> | to follow ; |
| | { to tell ; | | <i>udire,</i> | to hear ; |
| <i>morire,</i> | to die ; | | <i>uscire,</i> | to go out ; |
| <i>salire,</i> | to ascend ; | | <i>venire,</i> | to come. |

—

Dire.

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

DIRE (*dicere*),* | to say.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

dicéndo, | saying. || DÉTTO (*dítto*), | said.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------------|---------------|-----------------|-----------|
| 1st p. <i>dico,</i> | I say ; | <i>dicíámo,</i> | we say ; |
| 2d p. <i>dici</i> or <i>dí,</i> | thou sayest ; | <i>díte,</i> | you say ; |
| 3d p. <i>dice,</i> | he says ; | <i>dícono,</i> | they say. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío dicéva* or *dicéa,* | I said.

* This verb belongs, properly, to the second conjugation, it being but a contraction of *dicere*, now become *obsolete*, of which it retains many of the forms.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|----------------|-------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>díssi</i> , | I said ; | <i>dicémmo</i> , | we said ; |
| 2d p. <i>dicésti</i> , | thou saidest ; | <i>dicéste</i> , | you said ; |
| 3d p. <i>dísse</i> , | he said ; | <i>dísseero</i> , | they said. |

4. — *Future.*

| | |
|--|-----------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>dirò</i> [by contraction for <i>dicerò</i>], | I shall <i>or</i> will say. |
|--|-----------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *io dica*, | that I say *or* may say.2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *io dicéssi*, | if I said *or* should say.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *diréi* (*diría*) [by contraction
[for *diceréi* (*dicería*)], | I should, would, *or* could say ; *or*
[might say.]

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|---------------|------------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>dicámo nói</i> , | let us say ; |
| 2d p. <i>dí' tu</i> , | say thou ; | <i>díte vói</i> , | say ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>dica égli</i> , | let him say ; | <i>dicano églino</i> , | let them say. |

The compounds of *dire*, as *ridire*, 'to say again'; *contradire* or *contraddire*, 'to contradict'; *interdire*, 'to forbid'; *bendire*, 'to speak well of'; *maldire*, 'to speak ill of'; have the same irregularities.

Benedire, 'to bless,' and *maladire* or *maledire*, 'to curse,' in the *perfect*, are both *regular* and *irregular*, and make *benedii* or *benedíssi*, 'I blessed'; *maledii* or *maledíssi*, 'I cursed.'

Morìre.

(Varied with *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Morìre, | to die. || *MÓRTO*, | dead.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|------------------------------------|--------------|---|-----------|
| 1st p. MUÓRO, or [MUÓIO (móio), | I die ; | <i>moriámo</i> , | we die ; |
| 2d p. MUÓRI, | thou diest ; | <i>moríte</i> , | you die ; |
| 3d p. MUÓRE [(<i>muór</i>)] | he dies ; | MUÓRONO, or MUÓ- [<i>iono</i> (móio- [no), | they die. |

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *morirò* or *morrà*, | I shall or will die.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---|------------------------------|---|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io</i> MUÓRA, [or MUÓIA (móia), | that I die, or [may die ; | <i>moriámo</i> , | that we die ; |
| 2d p. <i>tu</i> MUÓRA, [or MUÓIA (móra [or móia, móri), | that thou die ; | <i>moriáte</i> , | that you die ; |
| 3d p. <i>egli</i> MUÓ- [RA, or MUÓIA [(<i>móra</i> or <i>móia</i>), | that he die ; | MUÓRANO, or [MUÓIANO (mó- [<i>rano</i> or <i>móiano</i>), | that they die. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *moriréi* or *morréi* (*moriría* | I should, would, or could die ; or
[or *morría*), | [might die.

* *Morìre* may be varied also with *avére* ; but then, as we have already observed (p. 219), it takes the nature of an *active* verb, and signifies ' to kill,' and not ' to die.'

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

| | | | |
|------------------------|---------------|---------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>moriámo nói,</i> | let us die ; |
| 2d p. MUÓRI <i>tu,</i> | die thou ; | <i>moríte vói,</i> | die ye ; |
| 3d p. MUÓRA, or | let him die ; | MUÓRANO, or | let them die. |
| [MUÓIA (móra | | [MUÓIANO (mó- | |
| [or móia) <i>égli,</i> | | [rano or móia- | |
| | | [no) <i>églino,</i> | |

The compounds of *morire*, as *premorire*, ‘to die before’; &c., have the same irregularities.

Salire.

(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Salire (saglire*), | to ascend. || *salíto,* | ascended.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------|------------------|------------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. SÁLGO, or | I ascend ; | <i>saliámo,</i> or SA- | we ascend ; |
| [<i>salisco</i> (ságlío), | | [GLIÁMO, | |
| 2d p. <i>sáli</i> or sa- | thou ascendest ; | <i>salíte,</i> | you ascend ; |
| [<i>liscit</i> (ságli), | | | |
| 3d p. <i>sále</i> or sa- | he ascends ; | SÁLGONO, or sa- | they ascend. |
| [<i>lisce</i> (ságlie), | | [<i>liscono</i> (sá- | |
| | | [<i>gliono</i>), | |

* From this verb, now become *obsoleto*, are derived many of the forms of the modern verb *salire*.

† The forms *salisci* and *sagliámo*, of the *present* of the *indicative* and of the *imperative*; and *sagliámo* and *sagliáte*, of the *present* of the *conjunctive mood*, are to be preferred when *sáli*, *saliámo*, *saliáte*, might be confounded with *sáli*, *saliámo*, and *saliáte*, corresponding tenses of the verb *saláre*, ‘to salt.’

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|---|-------------------|---|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>salii</i> (<i>sálsi</i>), | I ascended ; | <i>salimmo</i> , | we ascended ; |
| 2d p. <i>salisti</i> , | thou ascendedst ; | <i>salíste</i> , | you ascended ; |
| 3d p. <i>salí</i> (<i>sálse</i> , [<i>salfo</i>], | he ascended ; | <i>salirono</i> (<i>sálsero</i> , [<i>salíro</i> , <i>salír</i>], | they ascended. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------|---|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io</i> <i>sálga</i> , or | that I ascend, or | <i>salíamo</i> , or <i>sa-</i> | that we ascend ; |
| [<i>salisca</i> (<i>ságlia</i>), | [may ascend ; | [<i>gliámo</i> , | |
| 2d p. <i>tu</i> <i>sálga</i> , or | that thou ascend ; | <i>salíate</i> , or <i>sa-</i> | that you ascend ; |
| [<i>salisca</i> (<i>sálghi</i>), | | [<i>gliáte</i> , | |
| 3d p. <i>egli</i> <i>sálga</i> , | that he ascend ; | <i>sálgano</i> , or <i>sa-</i> | that they ascend. |
| [or <i>salisca</i> , | | [<i>liscano</i> (<i>sá-</i> [<i>gliano</i>), | |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------|----------------------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. . . . | | <i>salíamo</i> , or <i>sa-</i> | let us ascend ; |
| | | [<i>gliámo</i> <i>nói</i> , | |
| 2d p. <i>sáli</i> , or <i>sa-</i> | ascend thou ; | <i>salíte</i> <i>vói</i> , | ascend ye ; |
| [<i>lisci</i> <i>tu</i> , | | | |
| 3d p. <i>sálga</i> , or | let him ascend ; | <i>sálgano</i> , or <i>sa-</i> | let them ascend. |
| [<i>salisca</i> <i>égli</i> , | | [<i>liscano</i> <i>églino</i> , | |

The compounds of *salire*, as *risalire*, ‘to reascend’ ;
assalire, ‘to assail’ ; &c., have the same irregularities.

Seguire.(Varied with either *avère* or *essere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|-----------------|------------|-----------------|-----------|
| <i>Seguire,</i> | to follow. | <i>seguito,</i> | followed. |
|-----------------|------------|-----------------|-----------|

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|------------------|---------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>ségua,</i> or | I follow ; | <i>seguiamo,</i> | we follow ; |
| [<i>SIÉGUO,</i> | | | |
| 2d p. <i>ségui,</i> or | thou followest ; | <i>seguite,</i> | you follow ; |
| [<i>SIÉGUI,</i> | | | |
| 3d p. <i>ségue,</i> or | he follows ; | <i>séguaono,</i> or | they follow. |
| [<i>SIÉGUE,</i> | | [<i>SIÉGUONO,</i> | |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|--------------------|---------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io ségua,</i> | that I follow ; or | <i>seguiamo,</i> | that we follow ; |
| [or <i>SIÉGUA.</i> | [may follow ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu ségua,</i> or | that thou follow ; | <i>seguite,</i> | that you follow ; |
| [<i>SIÉGUA (ségi,</i> | | | |
| [<i>siégui),</i> | | | |
| 3d p. <i>egli ségua,</i> | that he follow ; | <i>séguaono,</i> or | that they follow. |
| [or <i>SIÉGUA,</i> | | [<i>SIÉGUANO,</i> | |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|-----------------------|------------------|---------------------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>seguiamo noi,</i> | let us follow ; |
| 2d p. <i>ségi,</i> or | follow thou ; | <i>seguite voi,</i> | follow ye ; |
| [<i>SIÉGUI tu,</i> | | | |
| 3d p. <i>ségua,</i> o | let him follow ; | <i>séguaono,</i> or <i>SIÉ-</i> | let them follow. |
| [<i>SIÉGUA égli,</i> | | [<i>GUANO églino,</i> | |

The compounds of *seguire*, as *conseguire*, 'to obtain'; *inseguire*, 'to pursue'; *proseguire*, 'to prosecute'; *sussequire*, 'to follow immediately after'; have the same irregularities.

Udire.

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Udire (odíre*), |to hear; || *udíto*, |heard.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------|---------------|-----------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>ódo</i> , | I hear; | <i>udíamo</i> , | we hear; |
| 2d p. <i>ódi</i> , | thou hearest; | <i>udíte</i> , | you hear; |
| 3d p. <i>óde</i> , | he hears; | <i>ódono</i> , | they hear. |

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *udirò* or *udrò*, | I shall or will hear.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|-----------------|-----------------|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío óda</i> , | that I hear or | <i>udíamo</i> , | that we hear; |
| | [may hear; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu óda</i> | that thou hear; | <i>udíate</i> , | that you hear; |
| [<i>(ódi)</i> , | | | |
| 3d p. <i>égli óda</i> , | that he hear; | <i>ódano</i> , | that they hear. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *udiréi* or *údréi* (*udiría* or | I should, would, or could hear;
 (udiría), | | or might hear.

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|-------------------------|---------------|-----------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>udíamo nói</i> , | let us hear; |
| 2d p. <i>ódi tu</i> , | hear thou; | <i>udíte vói</i> , | hear ye; |
| 3d p. <i>óda égli</i> , | let him hear; | <i>ódano églino</i> , | let them hear. |

* From this form, now *obsolete*, are derived *ódo*, *ódi*, &c., of *udire*.

The compounds of *uñire*, as *riudire*, ‘to hear again’; &c. have the same irregularities.

Esaudire, ‘to grant’; is *regular*, and varied like *esibire*.

Uscire.

(Varied with *essere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Uscire (*escire**), | to go out; || *uscito*, | gone out.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present*.

| | | | |
|----------------------|-----------------|------------------|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>ESCO</i> , | I go out; | <i>usciamo</i> , | we go out; |
| 2d p. <i>ESCI</i> , | thou goest out; | <i>uscite</i> , | you go out; |
| 3d p. <i>ESCE</i> , | he goes out; | <i>escano</i> , | they go out. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present*.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-------------------|------------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io ESCA</i> , | that I go out, or | <i>usciamo</i> , | that we go out; |
| | [may go out; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu ESCA</i> , | that thou go out; | <i>usciate</i> , | that you go out; |
| 3d p. <i>egli ESCA</i> , | that he go out; | <i>escano</i> , | that they go out. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-----------------|----------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>usciamo noi</i> , | let us go out; |
| 2d p. <i>ESCI tu</i> , | go thou out; | <i>uscite voi</i> , | go ye out; |
| 3d p. <i>ESCA egli</i> , | let him go out; | <i>escano egli</i> , | let them go out. |

The compound of *uscire*, — *riuscire*, ‘to succeed,’ has the same irregularities.

* From this verb, now become *obsolete*, are derived the forms *esco*, *esca*, &c., of the verb *uscire*.

Venire.

(Varied with *essere.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

Venire, |to come. || *VENÚTO*, |come.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------------|--------------|--|------------|
| 1st p. <i>VÉNGO</i> [(végno), | I come; | <i>veníamo</i> (<i>vegná-</i> [mo], | we come; |
| 2d p. <i>VIÉNI</i> , | thou comest; | <i>veníte</i> , | you come; |
| 3d p. <i>VIÉNE</i> , | he comes; | <i>VÉNGONO</i> (<i>végno-</i> [no]), | they come. |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|--------------|---|------------|
| 1st p. <i>VÉNNI</i> , | I came; | <i>venímmo</i> , | we came; |
| 2d p. <i>venísti</i> , | thou camest; | <i>veníste</i> , | you came; |
| 3d p. <i>VÉNNE</i> , | he came; | <i>VÉNNERO</i> (<i>vení-</i> [ro]), | they came. |

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *verrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will come.
[*venirò*], |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------------|--|-----------------|
| 1st p. <i>io VÉNGA</i> [(végna), | that I come or [may come; | <i>veníamo</i> (<i>vegná-</i> [mo], | that we come; |
| 2d p. <i>tu VÉNGA</i> [(végni), | that thou come; | <i>veniáte</i> (<i>vegná-</i> [te]), | that you come; |
| 3d p. <i>egli VÉNGA</i> [(végna), | that he come; | <i>VÉNGANO</i> (<i>vé-</i> [gnano]), | they they come. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *verréi* (*verría*) [by contraction | I should, would, or could come;
[for *veniréi* (*veniría*)], | [or might come.

V. IMPERATIVE.

| Singular. | | Plural. | |
|------------------------|----------------|-----------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>veniámo nói,</i> | let us come ; |
| 2d p. <i>viéni tu,</i> | come thou ; | <i>veníte vói,</i> | come ye ; |
| 3d p. <i>vénga</i> | let him come ; | <i>véngano(végna-</i> | let them come. |
| [(végna) <i>égli,</i> | | [no) <i>églino,</i> | |

Venire is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si, &c.* and the particle *ne* ; thus, *ME NE véngo*, ‘I am coming thence’ ; *TE NE viéni*, ‘thou art coming thence’ ; &c. — *Me, te, &c.*, are then mere expletives.

The compounds of *venire*, as *convenire*, ‘to agree’ ; *divenire*, ‘to become’ ; *invenire*, ‘to find’ ; *prevenire*, ‘to anticipate’ ; *sovvenire*, ‘to assist’ ; &c. have the same irregularities.

Variation of the Verb Offerire.

Offerire, ‘to offer,’ is both *regular* and *irregular* ; and it has, besides, been so contracted by poets, as to render it important to give here its variation.

Offerire.

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

Offerire or *offrìre*, | to offer.

GERUND.

offeréndo or offering.
[*offréndo,*

PARTICIPLE.

|(offeríto) *OFFÉR-* | offered.
[to, |

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *offerisco* or *óffro*, | I offer.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío offeríva* or *offríva*, or *offería* | I offered.
[or *offría*, |

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | |
|---|--|---|
| 1st p. <i>offerúi</i> , of- I offered ; | | <i>offerímmo</i> or of- we offered ; |
| [<i>frúi</i> , or OFFÉRSI, | | [<i>frímmo</i> , |
| 2d p. <i>offeristi</i> or thou offeredst ; | | <i>offeríste</i> or <i>offrí-</i> you offered ; |
| [<i>offristi</i> , | | [<i>ste</i> , |
| 3d p. <i>offerì</i> , <i>offrì</i> , he offered ; | | <i>offerírono</i> or of- they offered. |
| [or OFFÉRSE, | | [<i>frírono</i> (offerí- |
| | | [ro or <i>offríro</i> , |
| | | [offerir or <i>offrír</i>), |
| | | [or OFFÉRSERO, |

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *offerirò* or *offrìrò*, | I shall or will offer.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *ío offerísca*, *offrísca*, or *óffra*, | that I offer, or may offer.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío offeríssi* or *offrissi*, | if I offered, or should offer.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *offeriréi* or *offriréi* (offeriría | I should, would, or could offer ;
[or *offriría*), | [or might offer.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. |
2d p. *offerisci* or *óffri tu*, | offer thou.

The verb *sofferire*, 'to suffer,' has the same irregularities.

Conferire, 'to confer'; *differire*, 'to differ'; *inferire*, 'to infer'; *proferire*, 'to proffer'; *referire*, 'to refer'; *trasferire*, 'to transfer'; are never contracted; and in the *perfect* and *participle* have the terminations in *û* and *ito* only; and make, *conferû*, 'I conferred'; *differû*, 'I differed'; *conferûto*, 'conferred'; &c.*

REMARKS ON OTHER VERBS IN *ire*.

The verbs *convertire*, 'to convert'; *sovvertire*, 'to subvert'; are both *regular* and *irregular*, and in the *perfect* make *convertû* or CONVE'RSI, 'I converted'; *sovvertû* or SOVVE'RSI, 'I subverted'; and in the *participle*, *convertito* or CONVE'RSO, 'converted'; *sovvertito* or SOVVE'RSO, 'subverted.'

Divertire, 'to divert'; *pervertire*, 'to pervert'; have the terminations in *û* and *ito* only; and make *divertû*, 'I diverted'; *pervertû*, 'I perverted'; *divertito*, 'diverted'; *pervertito*, 'perverted.'

Apparire and *comparire*, 'to appear'; and their compounds, are both *regular* and *irregular*, and in the *perfect* make *apparû* or APPA'RVI (*apparsi*); *comparû* or COMPA'RVI (*comparsi*), 'I appeared'; &c., and in the *participle*, *apparito* or APPA'RSO; (*comparito*) COMPA'RSO, 'appeared'; &c.

Aprire, 'to open'; *coprire*, 'to cover'; and their compounds, in the *perfect* are both *regular* and *irregular*, and make *apriû* or APE'RSI, 'I opened,' *coprû* or COPE'RSI, 'I covered'; &c., but in the *participle* are *irregular* only; and make APE'ERTO, 'opened'; COPE'ERTO, 'covered'; &c.

* A few instances may be found among the classics in which *risersi*, 'I referred,' and *profersi*, 'I proffered'; *proferto*, 'proffered'; have been used.

EXAMPLES.

A cù il fráte dísse: "Dílo sicuraménte." (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

To whom the friar said: "Say it frankly."

E muóiono in quèsta fólle speránza. (Gr. S. Gir. 2.)

And die with this foolish expectation.

Déesi inténdere, per lo pádre e per lo figliuolo, tútti colóro, che sálgono, e iscéndono per rétta línea. (Maestruzz. 2. 28.)

For father and son, must be understood, all those who ascend or descend in a direct line.

Ond' io per lo túo mé' pénso, e discérno, — Che tu mi ségui, ed io sarò túa guída. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

Wherefore I, pondering for thy profit, devise, that thou mayest follow me, and I will be thy guide.

Fiorentíno — Mi sémbri veraménte quand' io t' ódo. (Dant. Inf. 33.)

Florentine thou seemest to me, in truth, when I hear thee.

Quál ésce alcúna vólta di galóppo — Lo cavalíer di schiéra, che caválchi. (Dant. Purg. 24.)

As sometimes one knight pricks forth at a gallop from a troop of ranked chivalry.

Avéndo fáto fáre un grandísimo fuóco in úna súa cammináta, in quèlla se ne vénne. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

Having caused a large fire to be made in one of her halls, there she came.

Dinánzi ágli ócchi mi si fu offérto — Chi per língo silénzio paréa fióco. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

There presented itself to my sight, the form of one, whose voice seemed faint through long disuse of speech.

Táli cóse, proferíte cosí in astrátto, háanno quálche difficoltà all' ésser comprése. (Gall. 228.)

Such things, spoken so in abstract, are difficult to be comprehended.

Per lo quál è chi créda — Più vólte 'l móndo in Caós convérso. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

Whereby, there are some who deem that the world has often been turned into chaos.

Apparì úna gran mortalità, ec. . . . Stándo costúi nel princípío del súo capitanáto, apárve un cáso, ec. . . . (Franc. Sacch. n. 158.)

There came a great mortality, &c. . . . He being yet in the beginning of his captaincy, an accident there happened, &c.

Gli accorgiménti e le copérte vie — l'ó séppi tútte. (Dant. Inf. 27.)

I knew all subtleties, and covered ways.

EXERCISE XXI.

I. 1.—To say. *Dire.* 4.—contradict. *contradire.* 7.—blessed. *benedire.* come. *venir.*
died. *mourir.* advised. *avertir.* offered. *offrir.* transferred.—II. 1.—I die, *mourir.*
thou ascendest, *salir.* he follows, *suivre.* we hear, *ouïr.* you go out, *uscir.*
they come. *venir.* 2.—I languished, *languir.* thou saidst again, *redire.* he
anticipated, *anticiper.* we contradicted, *contradire.* you re-opened, *riouvrir.* they re-
covered their senses. 3.—I cursed, *maledire.* thou reascendedst, *risalir.*
he became, *devenir.* we suffered, *souffrir.* you diverted, *divertir.* they referred.—
I appeared, *apparaître.* thou finishedst, *finir.* he opened, *ouvrir.* we heard, *entendre.* you
agreed, *convenir.* they covered. 4.—I will say, *dire.* thou wilt arrive, *parvenir.*
he will die, *mourir.* we will differ, *différer.* you will discover, *scouvrir.* they will
assail.—III. 1.—I may die before, *premourir.* thou mayest obtain, *consequir.*
he may hear again, *redire.* we may convert, *convertir.* you may find, *inventir.*
they may succeed. 2.—I might say, *dire.* thou mightest contra-
dict, *tradire.* he might bless, *benedire.* we might forbid, *interdire.* you might say again, *redire.*
they might curse.—IV. 1.—I would assist, *souvénir.* thou wouldst
suffer, *souffrir.* he would forbid, *interdire.* we would re-assail, *riassalir.* you would come
again, *revenir.* they would hear one thing for another.—V.—con-
traire, *contraire.* pro-

tinue thou, let him grant, let us prevent, proffer ye, let
seguire, *esaudire*, *prevenire*, *proferire*, sov-
 them subvert.
vertire.

[For a Table of Irregular Verbs, see APPENDIX.]

CHAPTER XI.

DEFECTIVE VERBS.

Defective verbs ending in *ēre* (*long*) :

| | | | |
|----------------------------------|------------------|------------------|-------------------|
| <i>Calere</i> , | to care for ; | <i>pavere</i> , | to fear ; |
| <i>colere</i> or <i>colere</i> , | to adore ; | <i>silere</i> , | to be, or keep, |
| <i>lecere</i> & <i>licere</i> | } to be lawful ; | | [silent ; |
| <i>re</i> , or <i>lecere</i> | | <i>solere</i> , | to be wont ; |
| & <i>licere</i> , | | <i>stupere</i> , | to be astonished. |

Defective verbs ending in *ēre* (*short*) :

| | | | |
|---------------------|---------------|----------------------|------------------|
| <i>Algere</i> , | to be chill ; | <i>riedere</i> , | to return ; |
| <i>angere</i> , | to afflict ; | <i>serpere</i> , | to creep ; |
| <i>arrigere</i> , | to add ; | <i>soffolcere</i> or | } to support ; |
| <i>capere</i> , | to contain ; | <i>soffolgere</i> , | |
| <i>cherere</i> , | to ask ; | <i>tangere</i> , | to touch ; |
| <i>convellere</i> , | to convulse ; | <i>tollere</i> , | to take away ; |
| <i>federe</i> , | to wound ; | <i>torpere</i> , | to be benumbed ; |
| <i>lucere</i> , | to shine ; | <i>urgere</i> , | to urge ; |
| <i>molcere</i> , | to assuage ; | <i>vigere</i> , | to be vigorous. |

Defective verbs ending in *ire* :

| | | | |
|---------------|-----------|----------------|-----------|
| <i>Ire</i> , | } to go ; | <i>olire</i> , | to smell. |
| <i>gire</i> , | | | |

VARIATION OF DEFECTIVE VERBS.

[These verbs are *used only* in the *tenses* and *persons*, which are *here given*.]

Calère.

I. INFINITIVE.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.*

Calère, |to care for. || *éssere calúto*, |to have cared for.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

caléndo, |caring for. || *calúto*, |cared for.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *cále* or *cál*, |he cares for. || : : : : | : : : :

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *caléva* or |he cared for. || : : : : | : : : :
[*caléa*,

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *cálse*, |he cared for. || : : : : | : : : :

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *cágliá*, |that he care for, || : : : : | : : : :
[or may care for.]

4. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *calésse*, |if he cared for, or || : : : : | : : : :
[should care for.]

Singular.

Plural.

V. IMPERATIVE.

3d p. *CA'GLIA égh,** | let him care for. || |

Calére is generally used with the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, gli*; thus, *mi càle*, 'I care for'; *ci caléva*, 'we cared for'; &c.

Colére or *cólere*.

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Colére* or *cólere*), | to adore.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present*.

| | | | |
|-------------------------|------------|-----------|-----------|
| 1st p. (<i>cólo</i>), | I adore; | | |
| 3d p. (<i>cóle</i>), | he adores. | | |

Lecére & *licére*, or *lécere* & *licere*.

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Lecére* & *licére*, or | to be lawful. || *éssere lécito* or | to be lawful.
[*lécere* & *licere*), | [*lécito*,† |

* As it has been questioned whether *calére* is used in the *imperative*, we cite from the classics the following examples to prove that it is so used:

Non ve ne CA'GLIA no, io so ben io ciò Do not trouble yourselves about it, I
che mi fo. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.) know very well what I am doing.

Del cóme non ti CA'GLIA, il perchè ti Do not trouble thyself about the how,
dirò. (Bocc. Filoc. 6.) I will tell thee the why.

Or se frattánte — Son le nóstre castélla Now if, in the mean time, our castles
oppréssé, e sérve — Non ce ne CA'GLIA. are oppressed and conquered, let us not
(Tass. Ger. 6. 11.) care about it.

† From this form are derived *è lécito*, 'it is lawful'; *éra* or *fu lécito*, 'it was lawful'; *sarà lécito*, 'it will be lawful'; &c., which are used to supply the tenses in which *lecére* is defective.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*3d p. *léce* or *lice*, | it is lawful.

|| : : : :

| : : : :

Pavére.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Pavére), | to fear.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*3d p. (*páve*), | he fears.

|| : : : :

| : : : :

Silére.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Silére), | to be, or keep, silent.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*2d p. (*síli*),| thou art, or keep-
[est, silent ;

|| : : : :

| : : : :

3d p. (*síle*),| he is, or keeps,
[silent ;

|| : : : :

| : : : :

Solére.

I. INFINITIVE.

Solére, | to be wont. || *éssere sólito,** | to be wont.

GERUND.

soléndo, | being wont. ||

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------------|-----------------|--------------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>SÓGLIO,</i> | I am wont ; | <i>SOGLIÁMO</i> (<i>solé-</i> | we are wont ; |
| | | [<i>mo</i>), | |
| 2d p. <i>SUÓLI,</i> | thou art wont ; | <i>soléte,</i> | you are wont ; |
| 3d p. <i>SUÓLE</i> (<i>só-</i> | he is wont ; | <i>SÓGLIONO,</i> | they are wont. |
| [<i>le</i>), | | | |

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io soléva* or *soléa,* | I was wont.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io sóglia,* | that I am wont, or may be wont.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io soléssi,* | if I were wont, or should be wont.

Stupére.

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Stupére*), | to be astonished.

* From this form are derived *sóno sólito*, 'I am wont'; *éri sólito*, 'thou wast wont'; &c., which are often used instead of *soglio*; *solevi*; &c.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. (stúpe), | he is astonished. || : : : : | : : : :

Algere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Álgere), | to be chill.

II. INDICATIVE.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. (álsi), | I was chill ; | (algémmo), | we were chill ;
 2d p. (algésti), | thou wast chill ; | (algéste), | you were chill ;
 3d p. (álse), | he was chill ; | (álsero), | they were chill.

Ángere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Ángere), | to afflict.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. (áñge), | it afflicts. || : : : : | : : : :

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. (angéva), | it afflicted. || : : : : | : : : :

Arrógere.

I. INFINITIVE.

Arrógere, | to add.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

arrogéndo, | adding. || *ARRÓTO, OR ARRÓSO,* | added.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------|-----------|-------------------|-----------|
| 1st p. | | <i>arrogíamo,</i> | we add ; |
| 3d p. <i>arróge,</i> | he adds ; | <i>arrógono,</i> | they add. |

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *ío arrogéva* or *arrogéa,* | I added.3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|----------------|-------------------|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>ARRÓSI,</i> | I added ; | <i>arrogémmo,</i> | we added ; |
| 2d p. <i>arrogésti,</i> | thou addedst ; | <i>arrogéste,</i> | you added ; |
| 3d p. <i>ARRÓSE,</i> | he added ; | <i>ARRÓSERO,</i> | they added. |

Cápere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Cápere), | to contain.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|--------------|-----------|-----------|
| 3d p. (<i>cápe</i>), | it contains. | | |
|------------------------|--------------|-----------|-----------|

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|---------------|-----------|-----------|
| 3d p. (<i>capéva</i>), | it contained. | | |
|--------------------------|---------------|-----------|-----------|

Chérere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Chérere), | to ask.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-----------------|----------|-----------|-----------|
| 1st p. (chéro), | I ask ; | | |
| 3d p. (chére), | he asks. | | |

Convèllere.

I. INFINITIVE.

Convèllere, | to convulse.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|----------------------|-------------|-----------|------------|
| <i>convelléndo</i> , | convulsing. | CONVÚLSO, | convulsed. |
|----------------------|-------------|-----------|------------|

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|----------------|---------------------|----------------|
| 3d p. <i>convèlle</i> , | he convulses ; | <i>convèllono</i> , | they convulse. |
|-------------------------|----------------|---------------------|----------------|

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|---|----------------|--|-----------------|
| 3d p. <i>convelléva</i> [or <i>convelléa</i> , | he convulsed ; | <i>convellévano</i> or [<i>convelléano</i> , | they convulsed. |
|---|----------------|--|-----------------|

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------|---------------------------------|------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 3d p. <i>convellerà</i> , | he shall or will [convulse ; | <i>convelleránno</i> , | they shall or will [convulse |
|---------------------------|---------------------------------|------------------------|---------------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------|---|------------------------|--------------------------|
| 3d p. <i>convellésse</i> , | if he convulsed, [or should convulse ; | <i>convelléssero</i> , | if they convuls- [ed. |
|----------------------------|---|------------------------|--------------------------|

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|------------------------------------|---|--------------------------|--|
| 3d p. <i>convelle- [rébbe,</i> | he should, would, [or could convulse ; or might [convulse ; | <i>convellerébbero</i> , | they should, [would, or could [convulse. |
|------------------------------------|---|--------------------------|--|

Fiédere.

I. INFINITIVE.

GERUND.

| | | | |
|--------------------|-----------|-------------------|-----------|
| <i>Fiédere</i> , * | to wound. | <i>fiedéndo</i> , | wounding. |
|--------------------|-----------|-------------------|-----------|

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------|-----------------|------------------|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>fiédo</i> , | I wound ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>fiédi</i> , | thou woundest ; | | |
| 3d p. <i>fiéde</i> , | he wounds ; | <i>fiedono</i> , | they wound. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | |
|---|------------|
| 1st p. <i>io fiedéva</i> or <i>fiedéa</i> , | I wounded. |
|---|------------|

3. — *Perfect.*

| | |
|------------------------|------------|
| 1st p. <i>fiedéi</i> , | I wounded. |
|------------------------|------------|

* Ancient writers said also *féggere*, 'to wound, to strike'; from which are derived the forms *féggono*, 'they strike'; which we meet in the *Ammaestraménti*; and *féggia*, 'it strikes,' in the *Inférno* of Dante.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------|-----------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>io fiéda</i> [fiéggia), | that I wound ; | | |
| 3d p. <i>egli fiéda</i> [fiéggia), | that he wound ; | <i>fiédano,</i> | that they wound. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | |
|----------------------------|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>io fiédéssi,</i> | if I wounded. |
|----------------------------|---------------|

Lúcere.

I. INFINITIVE.

GERUND.

| | | | |
|----------------|-----------|-----------------|----------|
| <i>Lúcere,</i> | to shine. | <i>lucéndo,</i> | shining. |
|----------------|-----------|-----------------|----------|

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------|----------------|-----------------|------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>luciámo,</i> | we shine ; |
| 2d p. <i>lúci,</i> | thou shinest ; | <i>lucéte,</i> | you shine. |
| 3d p. <i>lúce,</i> | he shines ; | | |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | |
|--------------------------|----------|
| 1st p. <i>io lucéva,</i> | I shone. |
|--------------------------|----------|

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|-----------------------|----------------|-----------------|------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>lucémmo,</i> | we shone ; |
| 2d p. <i>lucésti,</i> | thou shonest ; | <i>lucéste,</i> | you shone. |
| 3d p. | | | |

4. — *Future.*

| | |
|-----------------------|------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>lucero,</i> | I shall or will shine. |
|-----------------------|------------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|------------------------------------|-----------------|--------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>luciamo,</i> | that we shine ; |
| 2d p. | | <i>luciate,</i> | that you shine ; |
| 3d p. <i>égli</i> (<i>lúca</i>), | that he shine ; | (<i>lúcano</i>), | that they shine. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío lucéssi,</i> | if I shone or should shine. |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------|

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

| | |
|---|--|
| 1st p. <i>lucerei</i> (<i>luceria</i>), | if I should, would, or could [shine ; or might shine. |
|---|--|

Mólcere.

I. INFINITIVE.

| | |
|---------------------|-------------|
| (<i>Mólcere</i>), | to assuage. |
|---------------------|-------------|

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------|------------------|-----------|-----------|
| 2d p. (<i>mólci</i>), | thou assuagest ; | | |
| 3d p. (<i>mólce</i>), | he assuages. | | |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|--|------------------|-----------|-----------|
| 1st p. <i>ío</i> (<i>molcé-</i> [<i>va</i>]), | I assuaged ; | | |
| 2d p. (<i>molcevi</i>), | thou assuagest ; | | |
| 3d p. <i>égli</i> (<i>mol-</i> [<i>céva</i>]), | he assuaged. | | |

Riédere.

I. INFINITIVE.

Riédere, | to return.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------|------------------|-----------------|--------------|
| 1st p. <i>riédo,</i> | I return ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>riédi,</i> | thou returnest ; | | |
| 3d p. <i>riéde,</i> | he returns ; | <i>riédono,</i> | they return. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|---|-------------------|---------------------------------|----------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío riédéva</i> [or <i>riedéa,</i> | I returned ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>riedévi,</i> | thou returnedst ; | <i>riedévano</i> or <i>rie-</i> | they returned. |
| 3d p. <i>égli riedéva</i> [or <i>riedéa,</i> | he returned ; | [<i>déano,</i> | |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|--------------------|-----------------|-------------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío riéda,</i> | that I return ; or | | |
| | [may return ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu riéda,</i> | that thou return ; | | |
| 3d p. <i>égli riéda,</i> | that he return ; | <i>riédano,</i> | that they return. |

Sérpere.

I. INFINITIVE.

GERUND.

(Sérpere), | to creep. | | (sérpendo), | creeping.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|-----------------|---------------------|-------------|
| 1st p. (<i>sérpo</i>), | I creep ; | | |
| 2d p. (<i>sérpi</i>), | thou creepest ; | | |
| 3d p. (<i>sérpe</i>), | he creeps ; | (<i>sérpono</i>), | they creep. |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|--|-----------------|-----------------------|-------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío</i> (<i>serpé-</i> [<i>va</i>]), | I crept ; | | |
| 2d p. (<i>serpévi</i>), | thou creptest ; | | |
| 3d p. <i>égli</i> (<i>serpé-</i> [<i>va</i>]), | he crept ; | (<i>serpévano</i>), | they crept. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------|---------------------|------------------|
| 1st p. <i>ío</i> (<i>sérpa</i>), | that I creep ; or | | |
| | [may creep ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>tu</i> (<i>sérpa</i>), | that thou creep ; | | |
| 3d p. <i>égli</i> (<i>sérpa</i>), | that he creep ; | (<i>sérpano</i>), | that they creep. |

Soffółcere or Soffółgere.

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|--|-------------|----------------------|------------|
| (<i>Soffółcere</i> or [<i>soffółgere</i>], | to support. | (<i>soffółto</i>), | supported. |
|--|-------------|----------------------|------------|

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---|--------------|-----------|-----------|
| 3d p. (<i>soffółce</i> or [<i>soffółge</i>]), | he supports. | | |
|---|--------------|-----------|-----------|

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------|---------------|-----------|-----------|
| 3d p. (<i>soffółse</i>), | he supported. | | |
|----------------------------|---------------|-----------|-----------|

Tángere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Tángere), | to touch.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------|-------------|---------|-------|
| 3d p. (tánga), | he touches. | : : : : | : : : |
|----------------|-------------|---------|-------|

Tóllere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Tóllere), | to take away.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------|-------------------|---------|---------|
| 1st p. | | : : : : | : : : . |
| 2d p. (tólli), | thou takest away; | : : : : | : : : . |
| 3d p. (tólle), | he takes away. | : : : : | : : : . |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------------------|--------------------|---------|---------|
| 2d p. <i>tu</i> (tólla), | that thou take | : : : . | : : : . |
| | [away; | | |
| 3d p. <i>égli</i> (tólla), | that he take away. | : : : . | : : : . |

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

| | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
|-----------------------------|-----|-----|--------|--|---|---|---|---|---|--|---|---|---|---|---|
| 3d p. (tólla) <i>égli</i> , | let | him | take | | . | . | . | . | . | | . | . | . | . | . |
| | | | [away. | | . | . | . | . | . | | . | . | . | . | . |

Estóllere, 'to lift'; compound of *tóllere*, is not *defective* but in the *participle*, and in all the persons of the *perfect* of the *indicative*.

Tórpere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Tórpere*), | to become numb.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present*.

| | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
|-----------------|------------------|--|---|---|---|---|---|--|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1st p. (tórho), | I become numb; | | . | . | . | . | . | | . | . | . | . | . |
| 3d p. (tórho), | he becomes numb. | | . | . | . | . | . | | . | . | . | . | . |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present*.

| | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
|----------------------------|------------------|--|---|---|---|---|---|--|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1st p. <i>ío</i> (tórho), | that I become | | . | . | . | . | . | | . | . | . | . | . |
| | [numb; | | . | . | . | . | . | | . | . | . | . | . |
| 2d p. <i>tu</i> (tórho), | that thou become | | . | . | . | . | . | | . | . | . | . | . |
| | [numb; | | . | . | . | . | . | | . | . | . | . | . |
| 3d p. <i>égli</i> (tórho), | that he become | | . | . | . | . | . | | . | . | . | . | . |
| | [numb. | | . | . | . | . | . | | . | . | . | . | . |

Urgere.

I. INFINITIVE.

Urgere, | to urge.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------------|-----------|-------|-------|
| 3d p. <i>úrge</i> , | he urges. | ::::: | ::::: |
|---------------------|-----------|-------|-------|

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|------------|-------------------------------|-------------|
| 3d p. <i>égli urgéva</i> | he urged ; | <i>urgévano</i> or <i>ur-</i> | they urged. |
| [or <i>urgéa</i> , | | [<i>géano</i> , | |

Vigere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Vigere), | to be vigorous.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|------------------|-------|-------|
| 3d p. (<i>víge</i>), | he is vigorous ; | ::::: | ::::: |
|------------------------|------------------|-------|-------|

4. — *Future.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|-------------------|-------|-------|
| 3d p. <i>vigerà</i>), | it will be vigor- | ::::: | ::::: |
| | [ous. | | |

Gíre.

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|--------------|--------|--------------|-------|
| <i>Gíre,</i> | to go. | <i>gíto,</i> | gone. |
|--------------|--------|--------------|-------|

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------|-----------|---------------|-----------|
| 1st p. | | <i>gíamo,</i> | we go; |
| 2d p. | | <i>gíte,</i> | you go. |
| | | | |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | |
|-----------------------------------|---------|
| 1st p. <i>gíva</i> or <i>gía,</i> | I went. |
|-----------------------------------|---------|

3. — *Perfect.*

| | |
|------------------------|---------|
| 1st p. <i>íto gúi,</i> | I went. |
|------------------------|---------|

4. — *Future.*

| | |
|---------------------|---------------------|
| 1st p. <i>gírò,</i> | I shall or will go. |
|---------------------|---------------------|

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|----------------|-----------|---------------|----------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>gíamo,</i> | that we go, or |
| 2d p. | | <i>gíate,</i> | [may go; |
| | | | that you go. |
| | | | |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1st p. <i>íto gíssi,</i> | if I went, or should go. |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|

V. CONDITIONAL.

1st p. *giréi* (*giría*),| I should, would, *or* could go; *or*
[might go.

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|----------------|-----------|---------------|------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>gíamo,</i> | let us go; |
| 2d p. | | <i>gíte,</i> | go ye. |
| | | | |

Íre.

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

| | | | |
|-------------|--------|-------------|-------|
| <i>Ire,</i> | to go. | <i>íto,</i> | gone. |
|-------------|--------|-------------|-------|

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

| | | | |
|---------------|-----------|-----------------------|-----------|
| 2d p. | | <i>íte,</i> | |
| | | | you go. |
| | | | |

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|------------------------|-----------|---------------|-----------|
| 1st p. <i>íó íva,</i> | I went; | | |
| | | | |
| 3d p. <i>égli íva,</i> | he went. | <i>ívano,</i> | we went. |
| | | | |

3. — *Perfect.*

| | | | |
|--------------------|---------------|---------------------|------------|
| 2d p. <i>ísti,</i> | thou wentest; | | |
| 3d p. | | (<i>íro, ír</i>), | they went. |

4. — *Future.*

Singular.

Plural.

| | | | |
|----------------|-----------|---------------|-------------------------|
| 1st p. | | <i>irémo,</i> | we shall <i>or</i> will |
| 2d p. | | <i>iréte,</i> | [go ; |
| 3d p. | | <i>iráno,</i> | you will go ; |
| | | | they will go. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

| | | | |
|---------------|-----------|--------------------|-------------------------|
| 3d p. | | (<i>iríano</i>), | |
| | | | they should, |
| | | | [would, <i>or</i> could |
| | | | [go ; <i>or</i> might |
| | | | [go. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | | | |
|---------------|-----------|-------------|-----------|
| 2d p. | | <i>íte,</i> | |
| | | | go ye. |

Olire.

I. INFINITIVE.

Olire, | to smell.

II. INDICATIVE.

2. — *Imperfect.*

| | | | |
|--------------------------|------------------|-----------------|---------------|
| 1st p. <i>io olíva,</i> | I smelled ; | | |
| 2d p. <i>olívi,</i> | thou smelledst ; | | |
| 3d p. <i>egli olíva,</i> | he smelled. | <i>olivano,</i> | they smelled. |

EXAMPLES.

*CALÉNDUGLI vie più la salute
própria che gl' interéssi dé' Semi-
fontési.* (Stor. Semif. 36.)

*Lo cuór che 'n sul Tamígi an-
cór si CÓLA.* Dant. Inf. 12. —
CÓLA, cioè CÓLE. (Buti. Com.
Dant.)

*Quantúnque álla nátura umá-
na LÉCE — Avér di lume.* (Dant.
Par. 13.)

*E dé' nemíci PÁVE e dé' sog-
gétti.* (Tass. Ger. 1. 83.)

*Préso dal nuóvo cánto, STÚPE e
sÍLE.* (Boez. Varch. 3. 12.)

*Io dúbito che Vossignoría non
abbia occupáto il primo luógo
nélla grázia di Sua Beatitúdine,
il quále SOLÉVA éssere il mío.*
(Cas. lett. 19.)

ÁLSI ed ársi gran témpo.
(Varch. Rim. 3.)

*Tánta paúra e duól l' álma
trísta ÁNGE.* (Petr. s. 236.)

*ARRÓSERO gènte nuóva per séi
Prioráti.* (Giov. Vill. 9. 2.)

*Se di sapér ch' ío sía ti CAL
cotánto.* (Dant. Inf. 19.)

*Chi sa cóme difènde e cóme
fère, — Soccórso á' suói perigli
áltro non CHÉRE.* (Tass. Ger. 2.
85.)

*Dópo alcúni stráni avvolgimén-
ti cascò mórtá, CONVÚLSA e in-
tirizzúta.* (Red. Vip. 1. 83.)

*"O figliuól," disse, "quál di
quéstá gréggia — S' arrésta pin-
to, giáce pói cent' ánni — Sán-
za arrostarsi quándo 'l fòco il
FÉGGIA."* (Dant. Inf. 15.)

Caring more for his own safety
than for the interests of the Semi-
phontians.

That heart which is yet honored
on the [bank of the] Thames.

Whatever of light is allowed to
human nature.

And fears both his enemies and
his subjects.

Transported by the new song,
he is astonished and keeps silent.

I doubt whether your Lordship
has not occupied the first place in
the favor of His Holiness, which
was wont to be mine.

I was chill and burned for a great
while.

So much fear and grief afflicts
my sad soul.

They added new people for six
successive Priorates.

If it imports thee so much to
know who I am.

He who knows how it [the hand
of God] defends, and how it of-
fends, asks no other assistance in
his perils.

After some strange whirlings, she
fell down dead, convulsed and stiff
with cold.

"O son," said he, "whoever of
this throng stops one instant, lies
then a hundred years, without any
ventilation, when the fire smites
him."

LUCÉVAN gli ócchi suói più
che la stélla. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

Her eyes were brighter than the
star [of day].

E già il sóle a mézza térsa
RIÉDE. (Dant. Inf. 34.)

And now the sun returns within
one hour and a half of noon.

Chi può dir cóme SÉRPA, o
cóme crésca, — Già da più láti il
fóco? (Tass. Ger. 12. 45.)

Who can say how the fire
creeps, and already increases on
every side.

Perchè la vísta túa pur si sof-
FÓLGE — Laggiù tra l' ómbre trís-
te smozzicáte? (Dant. Inf. 29.)

Why dost thou fasten thy sight
below among the maimed and
miserable shades?

Io son fatta da Dio, sua mercè,
tále — Che la vóstra miséria non
mi TÀNGE. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

I am so made by God, thanks
to his grace, that no sufferance of
your misery touches me.

Che dóna e TÓLLE ógni áltro
ben fortuna. (Arios. Fur. 27. 84.)

For fortune gives and takes
away every other good.

Sì la gran frónte e le gran cór-
na ESTÓLLE. (Tass. Ger. 4. 7.)

So high he raises his great brow
and horns.

Á' Gréci — Il favellár non TÓR-
PE ínfra' le lábbra. (Buon. Fier.
2. 5. 5.)

To the Greeks the speech does
not languish in their lips.

Che l' úna pàrte e l' áltra tira
ed ÚRGE — Tin tin sonádo con
sì dólce nóta. (Dant. Par. 10.)

In which the one part draws and
the other pushes, sending out a
tinkling sound of note so sweet.

Per mostráre che la carità sém-
pre VIGERÀ in lóro. (But. Par.
7.)

To show that charity will al-
ways be in vigor among them.

E la ingegnósa pécchia al prí-
mo albóre — GÍVA predádo or
úno or áltro fióre. (Poliz. St. 1.
25.)

And the industrious bee, at the
first dawn, was rifling now this
and now the other flower.

ÍTE, caldi sospíri, al fréddo córe.
(Petr. s. 120.)

Go, warm sighs, to the cold
heart.

Mescoláto insiême con quéllo
di mólte áltre cóse, che per lo
giardíno OLÍVANO. (Bocc. g. 3.)

Mingled with the scent of many
other things, which through the
garden spread their fragrance.

As most of the foregoing *defective verbs* are of rare occurrence, and
can be used with propriety only in verse, an *Exercise* upon them has
been here thought needless.

GENERAL REMARKS ON ITALIAN VERBS.

Verbs, which in the *infinitive* end in *äre*, *ëre* or *ëre*, *ire*; as *fa'RE*, 'to make'; *téssERE*, 'to weave'; *udi'RE*, 'to hear'; followed by a word beginning with a consonant, except *z* or *s* followed by another consonant, often drop the last vowel; as,

| | |
|------------------|-------------------|
| FAR Difesa, | to make defence; |
| TÉSSER fiscëlle, | to weave baskets; |
| UDIR novëlla, | to hear news. |

Those verbs, which, by contraction, end in *ärre*, *örre*, *ürre*; as, *tra'RRE* from *träere*, 'to draw'; *impórRE* from *impónere*, 'to impose'; *introdu'RRE* from *introducere*, 'to introduce'; drop the last syllable; as,

| | |
|--------------------|------------------------|
| TRAR non puòte, | he cannot draw; |
| IMPÓR Léggi, | to impose laws; |
| INTRODU'R costume, | to introduce a custom. |

The *first* and *third* persons *plural* of tenses of verbs ending in *mo*, and *no*, *ro*; as, *eravámo*, 'we were'; *parlávano*, 'they spoke'; *cáddero* 'they fell'; often drop the last vowel; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------------|
| ERAVÁM partiti, | we had departed; |
| PARLÁVAN rádo, | they spoke seldom; |
| CÁDDER nel bollënte stágno, | they fell into the boiling lake. |

Those persons which end in *nno*; as, *saránno*, 'they will be'; *hánno*, 'they have'; drop the last syllable; as,

| | |
|------------------------|---------------------------|
| tutti SARÁN serráti, | they shall all be closed; |
| l' HAN PRÓprio a nóia, | they really hate him. |

Infinitives of verbs, and the *first* and *third* persons *plural* of their tenses, drop constantly the last vowel

or *syllable*, when they are *followed* by a *conjunctive pronoun*; as,

| | |
|-------------|--------------------|
| PARLÁrne, | to speak of it; |
| ANDIÁmvi, | let us go thither; |
| AIUTÁRONmi, | they assisted me; |
| DIÉDERgli, | they gave him. |

The *third person singular* of the *present* of the *indicative* of the verbs *calére*, 'to care for'; *dolére*, 'to grieve'; *rimanére*, 'to remain'; *solére*, 'to be wont'; *tenére*, 'to hold'; *valére*, 'to be worth'; *volére*, 'to be willing'; *veníre* 'to come'; and the *second person singular* of the *imperative* of the verbs *rimanére*, *tenére*, *veníre*; drop the *last vowel*, especially when they are followed by a *conjunctive pronoun*; as,

| | |
|-------------------------|--|
| se vi CAL Dì me, | if you care for me; |
| DUÓLti ch' to ti vinco? | does it grieve thee that I conquer thee? |
| SUÓLmi abbagliáre, | it is wont to dazzle me; |
| TIÉN dal Cielo, | she holds from Heaven; |
| RIMÁnti con nói, | remain with us; |
| non si VUÓL díre, | it must not be said; |
| VIÉNne qua, | come [thence] hither. |

The *first person singular* of the *present* of the *indicative* of the verb *essere*, 'to be'; and the *second person singular* of the *imperative* of the verb *pónere*, 'to put'; drop the *last vowel*, and when *followed* by the *conjunctive pronoun* *mi*, they change *n* into *m*; as,

| | |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| I' SON coléi, | I am she; |
| PÓmmi óve 'l Sol uccide i fíori, | put me where the sun kills the flowers. |

All forms of verbs followed by a *conjunctive pronoun* (as we have already observed, p. 110, and the foregoing examples clearly show,) are joined to them so as to form one single word. Now, if the form of the verb consists

of one syllable ; as, *è*, 'it is' ; *ha* or *à*, 'it has' ; *dì*, 'tell thou' ; *fa*, 'make thou' ; *sa*, 'he or it knows' ; *io*, 'I go' ; &c. ; or if it bears the accent on the *last syllable* ; as, *dirò*, 'I will tell' ; *mostrò*, 'he showed' ; &c. ; in being joined to a conjunctive pronoun, the *consonant* of the pronoun is *doubled*, and the *accent* when marked is *suppressed* ; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| <i>evvi caduto dalla memoria?</i> | has it escaped from your mind? |
| <i>hammi a tal condutto,</i> | she has reduced me to such a condition ; |
| <i>avvi letti,</i> | there are beds ; |
| <i>dimmi, maestro mio,</i> | tell me, my master ; |
| <i>fatti ben sentire,</i> | make thyself to be heard well ; |
| <i>sallo Iddio,</i> | God knows it ; |
| <i>vommene a guisa d'orbo,</i> | I go on like a blind man ; |
| <i>dirotti perch' i' venni,</i> | I will tell thee why I came ; |
| <i>mostrocci un' ombra,</i> | he showed us a spirit. |

EXCEPTION.

The *g* of the pronoun *gli*, is never doubled, although the accent of the verb is always suppressed ; as,

| | |
|--------------------------|----------------|
| <i>MANDOGLI dicendo,</i> | sent him word. |
|--------------------------|----------------|

The forms *trài*, 'thou drawest' or 'draw thou' ; *tràe*, 'he or it draws' ; of the verb *tràere* or *tràrre*, 'to draw' ; when joined to a conjunctive pronoun, drop the last vowel, and require that the consonant of the pronoun be doubled ; as,

| | |
|----------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>tranne lo Scricca,</i> | except Scricca ; |
| <i>trammi di mortál letargo,</i> | it draws me from a mortal lethargy. |

Finally, *infinitives* of verbs, like *present participles* in English, are often *used* in Italian as *substantives* ; as, *il parlàre*, 'the speaking' ; *l'abbracciàre*, 'the embracing' ; *il favellàre*, 'the manner of speaking' ; and then

have a plural, which they form like substantives, by changing *e* into *i*; as,

li sózzi parlári,

immodest [speakings or] conversations;

gli abbracciári,

the [embracings or] embraces;

i próprj favellári,

one's own manners of speaking.

EXAMPLES.

Dindnzi a lui non vâle — Before him it does not avail to
NASCÓNDER, nè FUGGÍR, nè FÀR conceal, to fly, or to make defence.
DIFÉSA. (Petr. s. 203.)

E véde un uom canúto all' ómbre amène — And she sees a hoary old man in
TÉSSER FISCÉLLE the pleasant shade, weaving baskets by the side of his flock.
alla sua gréggia accanto. (Tass. Ger. 7. 6.)

Ed élla — Di quèsta còsa udír And she does not wish to hear
non vuól novélla. (Bern. Orl. l. 9.) speaking about this thing.

Trar mólto il débil fianco óltra He cannot draw his feeble frame
non puóte. (Tass. Ger. 19. 28.) much further.

E léggi impórre, ed introdúr And to impose laws, and to introduce
costúme, — Ed árti e cúlto di customs, and arts, and the
veráce Núme. (Tass. Ger. 1. 9.) worship of the true God.

Nói ERAVÁM PARTÍTI già da We had already departed from
éllo. (Dant. Inf. 32.) him.

PARLÁVAN RÁDO con vóci soávi. They spoke seldom, but with melodious voices.
(Dant. Inf. 4.)

E amendúe — CÁDDEr NEL And both fell into the middle of
mézzo del BOLLÉNTÉ STÁGNO. the boiling lake.
(Dant. Inf. 22.)

TÚTTI SARÁN SERRÁTI—Quán- They [the sepulchres] shall all
do di Josaffà què torneránno. be closed, when they [the spirits]
(Dant. Inf. 10.) shall have once more come here, returning from Jehosaphat.

Tánto L' HAN PRÓPRIO i suói So much his own children hate
figliuóli a nóia. (Bern. Rim.) him.

Égli mi piàce di PARLÀRNE.
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

It pleases me to speak of it.

ANDIÀMVI, ben mi piàce [di vedérlo]. (Nov. Ant.)

Let us go [thither], I should be glad to see it.

AIUTÀRONMI èlle béne. (Bocc. g. 4. Proem.)

They assisted me well.

DIÉDERGLI (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)

They gave him.

SE VI CAL DI ME, veníte méco sino a palágio. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 5.)

If you care for me, come with me as far as the palace.

Chè avésti, Anichíno? DUÓLTI cosí CH' ÍO TI VÍNCO? (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)

What ails thee, Anichíno? Does it grieve thee thus that I conquer thee?

Mórtè ha spénto quel sol, che ABBAGLIÀR SUÓLMI. (Petr. s. 311.)

Death has extinguished that sun, which is wont to dazzle me.

E 'l nóbile ingégno che DAL CIÉLO — Per grázia TIÉN dell' immortále Apóllò. (Petr. c. 5.)

And the noble mind which he holds from Heaven, through the favor of the immortal Apollo.

Státti e RIMÁNTI CON NÓI, se tí piàce. (Vit. SS. PP. 2. 317.)

Stay and remain with us, if thou likest.

Comàre, égli NON SI VUÓL DÍRE. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

Gossip, it must not be said.

Adriàno disse: "Sì, VIÉNNE QUÀ." (Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)

Adrian said: "Yes, come [thence] hither."

I' SON COLÉI, che tí diè tánta guérra. (Petr. s. 261.)

I am she, who caused you so much grief.

PÓMMI ÓVE 'L SOL UCCÍDE I FIÓRI e 'l érba. (Petr. s. 113.)

Put me where the sun kills the flowers and the herbage.

Óra EVVI cosí tósto DÁLLA MEMÓRIA CADÚTO? (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)

Now has it so soon escaped from your mind?

E' gíta al Cielo; ed HAMMI A TAL CONDÚTTO. (Petr. s. 247.)

She is gone to Heaven; and has reduced me to such a condition.

Ed AVVI LÉTTI, che vi parrébber più bélli che quèlli del Dóge di Vinégia. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

And there are beds, which would appear to you better than those of the Doge of Venice.

DIMMI, MAÉSTRO MÍO! DIMMI, SIGNÓRE! (Dant. Inf. 4.)

Tell me, my master! tell me, my sire!

Grida fôrte, FATTI BEN SENTIRE. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 6.)

Cry out loud, make thyself to be heard well.

SALLO IDDIÓ. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

God knows it.

VOMMENE A GUISA D' ÓRBO sênza lúce. (Petr.)

I go on like a blind man without light.

DIROTTI PERCH' Í' VÈNNI, e quél ch' ío 'ntési. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

I will tell thee why I came, and what I heard.

MOSTROCCI UN' ÓMBRA dall' ún canto sóla. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

He showed us a spirit by itself retired apart.

E per lèttera MANDOGLI DICENDO, che da Brandizio si dovésse leváre. (Gio. Vill.)

And send him word by letter, that he should depart from Brundisium.

TRANNE LO SCRÍCCA, — Che sêppe far le moderáte spése. (Dant. Inf. 29.)

Except Scricca, who knew how to lay out his fortune temperately.

O'do ío la vóce — Di Dávid ? ... TRAMMI DI MORTÁL LETÁRGO. (Alf. Saul. 3. 4.)

Do I hear the voice of David ?
..... It draws me from a mortal lethargy.

E 'l s'uo PARLÁRE, e 'l bel viso, e le chióme — Mi piácquer sì
..... (Petr. c. 7.)

And her conversation, and her beautiful countenance, and her hair pleased me so

Non hánno paróle nè FAVELLÁRI PRÓPRI. (Varch. Ercol. 329.)

They have neither words nor manners of speaking of their own.

LI SÓZZI PARLÁRI CORRÓMPONO lí buóni costúmi. (Albert. c. 10.)

Immodest conversations corrupt good morals.

Le ténere lágrime, GLI ABBRACCIÁRI, e gli onésti báci. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

The affectionate tears, the embraces, and the chaste kisses.

O elétti di Dío ! gli cúi SOFFRÍRI — E giustízia e speránza fán mén dúri, — Drizzáte nói vérsó GLI ÁLTÍ SALÍRI. (Dant. Pur. 19.)

O ye elect of God ! whose sufferings both justice and hope mitigate, direct our way towards the steep ascents.

CHAPTER XII.

PARTICIPLES.

ITALIAN participles may be considered either as *forms of the verbs* from which they are derived, or as *adjectives*.

Considered as adjectives, they follow the same rules as adjectives with regard to *gender* and *number*.

Present participles end in *e*, are of the common gender, and form the plural by changing *e* into *i*; as,

| | | |
|--|---|-----------------------------------|
| trionfante, m. & f. s., triumphing; | { | imperatore trionfante, m. s., |
| | | [triumphing emperor; |
| tempestanti, m. & f. p., tempest-tost; | { | turba trionfante, f. s., triumph- |
| | | [ing militia; |
| | { | uomini tempestanti, m. p., |
| | | [tempest-tost men; |
| | { | navi tempestanti, f. p., tempest- |
| | | [tost ships. |

Present participles are sometimes used substantively, as, *amante*, 'lover'; *ascoltanti*, 'listeners'; they follow however invariably the same rule.

Past participles end in *o*, are masculine, and become feminine by changing *o* into *a*; they form the plural by changing *o* into *i*, and *a* into *e*; as,

| | | |
|--------------------|---|---------------------------------------|
| forato, } pierced; | { | membro forato, m. s., pierced limb; |
| | | gola forata, f. s., pierced throat; |
| accesi, } kindled; | { | cuori accesi, m. p., kindled hearts; |
| | | fiamme accese, f. p., kindled flames. |

Some verbs have a *future participle*; as, *duraturo*, 'to last'; *fatturo*, 'about to do'; *futuro*, 'future', or 'to be'; *perituro*, 'about to perish'; *venturo*, 'about to come'; which follow the same rules as past participles.

Many past participles of verbs of the *first conjugation* are frequently contracted; as, *cérco* for *cercato*, 'search-

ed'; *désto* for *destáto*, 'awakened'; *mózzo* for *mozzáto*, 'cut off'; &c.; these, when contracted, are alike the *first person* of the *present tense* of the *indicative mood*, and are subject to the same inflections as the other participles which are not so; as,

| | |
|--------------------------------|--|
| [io] <i>cérco</i> , I search; | <i>cérco</i> , searched; |
| [io] <i>désto</i> , I awake; | <i>désto</i> , awaken; |
| [io] <i>mózzo</i> , I cut off; | <i>mózzo</i> , cut off: |
| <i>désto</i> , awaken; | <i>uómo désto</i> , m. s., man awakened; |
| <i>mózza</i> , cut off; | <i>máno mózza</i> , f. s., hand cut off; |
| <i>cérche</i> , searched; | <i>province cérche</i> , f. p., provinces [searched.] |

Italian participles *agree* with substantives in *gender* and *number*; as,

| | |
|------------------------|------------------|
| <i>ménte avvézza</i> , | mind accustomed; |
| <i>rággi perdúti</i> , | rays lost; |
| <i>cóse sapúte</i> , | things known; |
| <i>cóse dette</i> , | things said. |

[For a List of Contracted Participles, see APPENDIX I.]

Italian participles when used as adjectives form their *comparatives* and *superlatives*, according to the rules already given; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------|---|
| <i>lucénte</i> , bright; | PIÙ LUCÉNTE, more bright; |
| <i>nocénte</i> , guilty; | MÉNO NOCÉNTE, less guilty; |
| <i>amáto</i> , loved; | MÓLTO AMÁTO, very much loved; |
| <i>riveríto</i> , revered; | IL PIÙ RIVERÍTO, the most revered; |
| <i>intendénte</i> , versed; | INTENDENTÍSSIMO, very well [versed.] |

EXAMPLES.

*Sicchè 'l tuo cuôr, quantunque
può, giocòndo — S' appresènti
àlla TÙRBA TRIONFANTE, — Che
lièta vièn per quèsto étera tóndo.*
(Dant. Par. 22.)

So that thy heart should present
itself as joyful as it can to the tri-
umphant militia [church], which
joyfully proceeds through this
round space.

*Una nàve portànte UÓMINI TEM-
PESTÁNTI, PERICOLÁNTI, SOGGIA-
CÉNTI a tánti marósi.* (Giov. Vill.
l. 11. c. 3.)

A ship carrying men, wrecked,
endangered and subject to so many
storms.

*Quándo leggémmo il disiáto
ríso — Ésser baciáto da cotánto
AMÁNTE.* (Dant. Inf. 5.)

When we read of those dear lips
so rapturously kissed by one so
deep in love.

*Ciò, che avvenúto éra, distinta-
ménte narrò, con gran maraviglia
degli ASCOLTÁNTI.* (Bocc. g. 10.
n. 4.)

He related distinctly what had
happened, to the great wonder of
the listeners.

*... E quál FORÁTO sÚO MÉM-
BRO, e quál MÓZZO — Mostrásse,
d'agguagliár sarébbe nÚlla — Il
módo délla nÓna bólgia sózzo.*
(Dant. Inf. 28.)

... And if some should have a
limb pierced, and some cut off, they
could badly equal the vile mode of
punishment of the ninth bolge.

*Un áltro che FORÁTA avéa la
GÓLA.* (Dant. Inf. 28.)

Another who had his throat
pierced.

*Supérbia, invidia, e avarízia
sÓno — Le tre faville c' hánno i
CUÓRI ACCÉSI.* (Dant. Inf. 6.)

Pride, envy, and avarice are the
three sparks which have kindled
their hearts.

*E véde présso a sè le FIÁMME
ACCÉSE.* (Dant. Inf. 23.)

And sees near her the flames
kindled.

*E che il príncipe ne nominásse
dódicì, DURATÚRI cinque ánni.*
(Dav. Tac. Ann. 2. 40.)

And that the prince should ap-
point twelve of them, who were to
last [or remain in office] five years.

*Fátto avéa prÍma e pói éra
FATTÚRO.* (Dant. Par. 6.)

He had done [that sign], and
afterward he was to do again.

*Témpo FUTÚRO m' è già nel
cospétto.* (Dant. Pur. 23.)

Future time is already in my
presence.

*Più ardenteménte cèrcano i se-
colári le cÓse PERITÚRE, che nÓi
le útili.* (Cavalc. Espos. Simb. 1.)

Men in the world seek with more
eagerness perishable things, than
we do useful ones.

*Vigilate d' ógni témpo, sicchè
siáte dégni di fuggire l' ira VEN-
TÚRA.* (Cavalc. Frutt. Ling.)

Be always diligent that you
may deserve to avoid approaching
wrath.

*Perchè, essendo DESTO, gli par-
ve sentire scendere nella casa per-
sone.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

*Un, ch' avèa l' una e l' altra
MAN MÓZZA.* (Dant. Inf. 28.)

*Avendo CÉRCHÉ molte PROVINCE
Cristiane.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

*Lassai quel, ch' i' più bramo ;
ed ho sì AVVÉZZA — La MENTE a
contemplar sola costei.* (Petr. s.
93.)

*Avèa la luna PERDÚTI i RÁGGI
suoi.* (Petr. c. 38.)

*Io non ho queste cose SAPÚTE
dà' vicini, ella medesima mèle ha
DÉTTE.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

*Ond' ella fèssi — LUCÉNTÉ PIÙ
assai di quel ch' ell' era.* (Dant.
Par. 5.)

*E'ssa tanto più impaziènte
sostenèva questa noia, quanto
MÉNO si sentiva NOCÉNTÉ.* (Bocc.
g. 7. n. 5.)

*O MOLTO AMÁTO cuore, ogni
mio ufficio verso te è fornito.*
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

*Tra i quali il maggiore e IL PIÙ
RIVERÍTO da tutti, a quelle stagió-
ni, era Jacopo di Carino.* (Matt.
Vill. 1. 72.)

*Aristófane è persona INTEN-
DENTÍSSIMA — Della scrittúra.*
(Cecch. Spir. 5. 5.)

Because, being awake, he seem-
ed to hear people descend into the
house.

One who had the one and the
other hand cut off.

Having searched through many
Christian provinces.

I left what I desire most, and
I have my mind so accustomed to
contemplate her alone.

The moon had lost her rays.

I have not heard these things
from the neighbours, she herself
has told them to me.

Whence she became far more
bright than she had been.

She bore this vexation so much
the more patiently, the less she felt
guilty.

O very much loved heart, I have
done towards thee all that I could.

Amongst whom the greatest and
the most revered by all, at that
time, was Jacopo di Carino.

Aristophanes is a person very
well versed in writing.

EXERCISE XXII.

Before (to the) his eyes they slew her crying
Presénte *súo² ócchio¹* *svenáre⁸* *élla³ gridáre⁴*
 for mercy and assistance. To him, residing in Flan-
 — *mercè⁵* *aiúto⁷*. *égli, dimoráre* *Fián-*
 ders, came a desire | to | hear. Apollo holding that
dra, veníre — *vóglia* | *di* | *sentire.* *tenére* *quéllo³*
 part of the Heaven, which he now traverses, was embel-
párte⁴ *Ciélo²*, — *óra trascórrere,* *abbel-*
 lishing more (the) their works. In a book which I intend
lire⁴ *più¹* *lavoro³*. *libro* *inténdere*
 | to | make, God granting it, on vulgar eloquence.
di | *fáre,* *Dío concédere* —, *di volgáre* *eloquénza.*
 It happened that during the war the queen of France
 — *Arveníre* *duráre* *guérria* *reina* *Francia*
 | fell very sick. |
ammalò graveménte.
 After that the lady had made herself to be
Poicchè *dónna avére² fáre⁴* *si¹* *pre-*
 besought very much. They | had | all their heads
gáre⁵ *assái³*. *Ésso* | *essere* | *tutto* — —
 surrounded | with | oak leaves — leaves of oak.
inghirlandáre⁵ | *di¹* | — — *fón²da³* *quér⁴cia⁴*.
 (The) my skin is bronzed (on me), and (the)
mío pèlle essere abbruníre sópra di ío,
 my bones are dried up | on account of | the heat.
ósso essere⁴ disecáre⁵ | *per¹* of | *cál²do³*.
 Nor were the faults of the Vitellians punished, but
Né essere *fálta* *Vitelliano* *puníre,* *ma*
 well paid | on | the other side. The jealous man
ben pagáre | *da* | *áltro párt²e.* *gelóso³* *Messér¹*
 had put some little stones in | his | mouth. There
avére⁵ métt⁶tere⁶ alcúna⁷ *piét⁸ra⁸* *s⁴* | *bócca.* —
 is a tree more above, | whose fruit | was bitten
essere³ — *Légno¹* *più* *sù,* | *che* | *essere mór³dere*

by Eve. How many verses I have already spread
Éva. Quánto verso — avère già spár-
 about. All were beaten with (the) rods in the middle
gere. Tutto essere battersi vèrga mezzo
 of the square, and had (the) their head cut off. They
piázza, avère² — testa³ tagliàre¹. —
 have promised, and sold me to a merchant, who
avère² promettere³,⁴ vèndere⁵ M¹ mercànte,
 | is to carry me | to the Sultan in the Levant.
dé⁵ portàr³ mi⁴ |¹ Soldàno² — Levànte.
 Let the ages to come judge from this who
—³ età⁴ venìre⁵ estimàre² Quinci¹⁶
 Otho was. The present (age shall hear) and the
Ottóne⁸ essere⁷.⁵ presénte⁷ móndo⁶ udìre⁴ —⁹
 future ages shall hear (the) my protestations.
essere¹⁰ — udìre⁸¹² protésto³.

CHAPTER XIII.

ADVERBS.

SIMPLE ADVERBS IN COMMON USE.

Adverbs of Time.

| | | | |
|-----------------|-------------|------------------|----------------|
| <i>Oggi,</i> | to-day ; | <i>diánzi,†</i> | } before ; |
| <i>ieri,</i> | yesterday ; | <i>innánzi,†</i> | |
| <i>dománi,*</i> | to-morrow ; | <i>prima,</i> | } just now ; |
| <i>óra,</i> | } now ; | <i>lestè,</i> | |
| <i>adésso,</i> | | <i>póí,§</i> | } afterwards ; |
| <i>mò,†</i> | | <i>dópo, </i> | |
| | | <i>póscia,</i> | |

* From the Latin *de* and *mane*.† From the Latin *modo*.‡ From *di*, *in*, and the Latin *ante* : — the Celtic *ant*, ‘opposite.’§ From the Latin *pone* : — the Celtic *bwo* or *bon*, changed into *pon*, ‘the last.’|| From the Celtic *do*, ‘after,’ and *pon*, ‘the last.’

| | | | |
|-------------------|---------------|-------------------|---------------|
| <i>sémpre,*</i> | always ; | <i>tósto,</i> | soon ; |
| <i>mái,</i> | never ; | <i>préstó,</i> | quick ; |
| <i>spéssó,</i> | } often ; | <i>adágio,</i> | } slow ; |
| <i>sovén-te,†</i> | | <i>pássó,</i> | |
| <i>talvólla,</i> | } sometimes ; | <i>perlémpo,</i> | early ; |
| <i>talóra,</i> | | <i>tárdi,</i> | late ; |
| <i>ancóra,‡</i> | } still ; | <i>già,</i> | already ; |
| <i>tuttóra,</i> | | <i>intánto,</i> | } in the mean |
| <i>ognóra,</i> | always ; | <i>frattánto,</i> | |
| <i>allóra,</i> | then ; | <i>méntre,</i> | time ; |
| <i>subito,</i> | immediately ; | | whilst. |

Adverbs of Place.

| | | | |
|------------------|--------------------|--------------------|----------------|
| <i>Qui,</i> | } here, hither ; | <i>altróve,</i> | } elsewhere ; |
| <i>quà,</i> | | <i>altrón-de,</i> | |
| <i>là,§</i> | } there, thither ; | <i>ovúnque,</i> | } wherever ; |
| <i>là,§</i> | | <i>dovúnque,</i> | |
| <i>colà,</i> | } there, thither ; | <i>sù,</i> | up ; |
| <i>colà,</i> | | <i>giù,</i> | down ; |
| <i>costì, </i> | } there near you ; | <i>sópra,**</i> | upon, above ; |
| <i>costà, </i> | | <i>sólto,††</i> | under, below ; |
| <i>ivi,</i> | } there ; | <i>éntro,‡‡</i> | } within ; |
| <i>quívi,</i> | | <i>déntro,</i> | |
| <i>índi,</i> | thence ; | <i>fuóri,§§</i> | } without ; |
| <i>quíndi,</i> | from thence ; | <i>fuóra,§§</i> | |
| <i>quínci,¶¶</i> | from hence ; | <i>avánti, </i> | before ; |
| <i>costínci,</i> | from thence, | <i>diétro,¶¶¶</i> | behind ; |
| | where you are ; | <i>accánto,</i> | aside ; |
| <i>óve,</i> | } where ; | <i>attórno,***</i> | around ; |
| <i>dóve,</i> | | <i>rimpétto,</i> | opposite ; |
| <i>ónde,</i> | } whence ; | <i>vicíno,</i> | near ; |
| <i>dónde,</i> | | <i>lúngi,</i> | far ; |
| | | <i>óltre,</i> | beyond. |

* From the Latin *semper* : the Celtic *chemp* or *semp*, 'without,' and *ar* or *er*, 'end.'

† From the Latin *subinde*.

‡ From the Latin *hanc horam*.

§ From the Latin *illie*, *illac*.

|| From the Latin *quo* and *istic*, *istac*.

¶ From the Latin *qui* and *hinc*.

** The Latin *super* : — the Celtic *sop*, 'upon.'

†† The Latin *sub*, *subtus* : — the Celtic *sub*, 'under.'

‡‡ From the Celtic particles *en* and *tre*.

§§ The Latin *foris*, *foras* : — the Celtic *for*, 'out.'

||| From the Celtic *ab*, 'far,' and *ant*, 'opposite.'

¶¶ From the Celtic *dre*, 'back.'

*** From the Celtic *tor*, 'circle.'

Adverbs of Order.

| | | | |
|---------------|----------|-------------------|---------------|
| <i>Prìà,</i> | } first; | <i>ìndi,</i> | } afterwards; |
| <i>prìma,</i> | | <i>quìndi,</i> | |
| <i>pòì,</i> | } then; | <i>apprèssò,*</i> | |
| <i>dòpo,</i> | | <i>infìne,</i> | |
| | | | finally. |

Adverbs of Quantity and Quality.

| | | | |
|---------------|---------|-----------------|-------------|
| <i>Più,</i> | more; | <i>tróppo,†</i> | too much; |
| <i>méno,</i> | } less; | <i>guári,†</i> | not much; |
| <i>máncò,</i> | | <i>lántò,</i> | so much; |
| <i>mólto,</i> | } much; | <i>póco,</i> | little; |
| <i>assái,</i> | | <i>affátto,</i> | any at all. |

| | | | |
|--------------|-------|--------------|--------|
| <i>Béne,</i> | well; | <i>mále,</i> | badly. |
|--------------|-------|--------------|--------|

Adverbs of Affirmation, Negation, and Doubt.

| | | | |
|---------------|--|-----------------|--|
| <i>Sì,</i> | } yes, indeed; certainly; well; | <i>davvéro,</i> | } indeed, truly, in truth; exactly so. |
| <i>già,</i> | | <i>difátli,</i> | |
| <i>cérto,</i> | | <i>appúntò,</i> | |
| <i>béne,</i> | | | |

| | | | |
|-----------------|-------------------------|-----------------|---------------|
| <i>Nò,</i> | } no, not; never; | <i>míca,</i> | } not at all. |
| <i>non,</i> | | <i>púntò,</i> | |
| <i>mái,</i> | | <i>affátto,</i> | |
| <i>giammái,</i> | | | |

| | | | |
|---------------|----------|----------------|---------|
| <i>Fórse,</i> | perhaps; | <i>préssò,</i> | about; |
| <i>círca,</i> | about; | <i>quási,</i> | almost. |

Adverbs of Comparison and Interrogation.

| | | | |
|-----------------|--|-----------------|--------------|
| <i>Sì,</i> | } so, thus; as; so, as; more; | <i>méno,</i> | less; |
| <i>così,</i> | | <i>tántò,</i> | so much, as; |
| <i>cóme,</i> | | <i>quántò,</i> | as; |
| <i>siccóme,</i> | | <i>a-guísà,</i> | } like. |
| <i>più,</i> | | <i>a-módo,</i> | |

* From the Celtic *prem*, 'near.'† From the Celtic *tropa*, 'troop,' 'multitude.'‡ From the Latin *geræ*: — the Celtic *ger*,

| | | | |
|-----------------|---|-----------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>Ove</i> ? | } where, whither ? whence ? when ? | <i>chè</i> ? | } how ? why ? how much ? |
| <i>dóve</i> ? | | <i>cóme</i> ? | |
| <i>dónde</i> ? | | <i>perchè</i> ? | |
| <i>quándo</i> ? | | <i>quánte</i> ? | |

Adverbs of Choice and Demonstration.

| | | | |
|--|------------|---|-----------|
| <i>Anzi,</i> <i>prima,</i> | } rather ; | <i>piuttósto,</i> <i>piuprésto,</i> | } sooner. |
| <i>Ecco,</i> <i>eccoquí,</i> <i>eccoquà,</i> | | <i>eccolì,</i> <i>eccolà,</i> <i>quand' ecco,</i> | |

The adverbs *óggi*, 'to-day'; *iéri*, 'yesterday'; and *dománi*, 'to-morrow'; are often used as substantives; as,

| | |
|---------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>quésto dì d' óGGI,</i> | this day ; |
| <i>il giòrno di IÉRI,</i> | yesterday ; |
| <i>DOMÁNI è Venerdì,</i> | to-morrow is Friday. |

Mái, 'never,' is sometimes used in the signification of 'ever'; as,

| | |
|--------------------------------|--|
| <i>quái bárbare fur MÁI ?</i> | what savage women were there ever ? |
| <i>così bello cóme fu MÁI,</i> | as beautiful as ever was. |

Quì, quà, 'here'; and *quínci*, 'from hence'; indicate a place near the person speaking: *costì, costà*, 'there near you'; and *costínci*, 'from thence where you are'; indicate a place near the person spoken to: and *lì, là*; *colì, colà*; *ívi, quívi*, 'there'; *índi*, 'thence', and *quíndi*, 'from thence'; indicate a place at a distance from both the person speaking and the person spoken to; as,

| | |
|---------------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>così quì mi disse,</i> | so he said to me here ; |
|---------------------------|-------------------------|

| | |
|---|--|
| QUINCI non pássa mái ánima buóna, | no good spirit ever passes hence ; |
| tánte belle giòvani ché costà sóno, | so many beautiful girls as there are there near you ; |
| dítel costÍNCI, | tell it from where you are ; |
| nè LÌ guári lontáno, | not far from thence ; |
| vuólsì così COLÀ dóve sì puóte ciò che sì vuóle, | so it is willed there, where will is power ; |
| QUÍVI sì piá ngon lí spietáti dánni, | here they wail their merci- less wrongs ; |
| comandólle che ÍNDI non u- scisse, | he ordered her not to go out from thence. |

Sì, 'yes' ; and no, 'no' or 'not' ; are sometimes used as substantives ; as,

| | |
|------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| il mío NO, | my negative ; |
| il súo sì, | his affirmative ; |
| sì e NO nel cápo mi tenzóna, | yes and no struggle in my head. |

Sì is used sometimes instead of the conjunction *e*, 'and,' and may be rendered in English by the word *both* ; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| sì per la súa fórma, e sì per la nobiltà del pádre, | both for his personal beauty and for the nobility of his father. |
|--|---|

No sometimes takes the place of a whole sentence ; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| o voléssero, o NO [o non voles- sero], | whether they wished, or not [or they <i>did not wish</i>] ; |
| quéllo che io avrò fátto, e quel che NO [e quel che non avrò fátto], | what I shall have done, and what not [and <i>what I shall not have done</i>]. |

No is used only in answering a question, or when used absolutely : *non*, in all other instances, and particularly when the negative is *followed* by a *verb* or another *adverb* ; as,

| | |
|-------------|-----------|
| signór, NO, | no, sir ; |
|-------------|-----------|

NON *farnético*, NO,

I do not rave, no;

NO, *per quéllo NON rimarrà il mercáto*,

no, the bargain will not be broken off on this account.

O've, 'where,' in poetry, is often changed into *u'*; as,

U' sòno i vèrsi?

where are the verses?

U' son giúnte le rime?

where are the rhymes gone?

The adverbs *béne*, *già*, *mái*, *míca*, *púnto*, *non*, *écco*, are often used as mere *expletives*; as,

SÌ BÉNE,

yes indeed;

GIÀ Dio non vòglia,

may God forbid;

SI GIÁCE MÀI sèmpre in ghiaccio,

lies always frozen;

NON MÍCA di póco affàre,

not at all of little consequence;

NON È PÚNTO mórtó,

he is not at all dead;

APPÉNA ancóra NON ha,

he has hardly yet;

ÉCCO, non so dir di no,

I cannot say no.

EXAMPLES.

QUÉSTO DÌ D' ÓGGI È *státo dáto a re, e a soldáni, e a sì fátta gente*. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.)

This day has been given to kings, and to sultans, and to similar people.

QUÁnto *mi fu* IL GIÓRNO DI *IÉRI impósto álla sua parténza*. (Red. Lett.)

What was ordered to me yesterday at your departure.

DOMÁNI È VENERDÌ, *e il se-guénte di Sábato*. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

To-morrow is Friday, and the following day Saturday.

QUÁI BÁRBARE FUR MÀI, *quái Saracíne?* (Dant. Purg. 23.)

What savage women, what Saracens were there ever?

Così È ÓGGI BÉLLO *il ciélo* *cóme fu MÀI*. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

The sky is as beautiful to-day as it ever was.

QUì *fui con Pamfílo. e così* *QUì MI DÍSSE, e così quì facémmo*. (Bocc. Fiamm. 4.)

Here was I with Pamphilus, and so he said to me here, and so we did here.

QUÍNCI NON PÁSSA MÁI ÁNIMA
BUÓNA. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Hence no good spirit ever passes.

Veggéndo TÁNTE BÉLLE GIÓ-
VANI CHE COSTÀ SÓNO. (Bocc.
Filoc. 2.)

Seeing so many beautiful girls
as are there near you.

DÍTEL COSTÍNCI, *se non, l' arco*
tíro. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

Tell it from where you are, or
else I draw my bow.

NÈ LÌ GUÀRI LONTÁNO *fuór di*
via — *Un suo bel vélo lasciáva*
fuggéndo. (Bocc. Vis. Am. 20.)

Not far from thence flying out of
the way, she left a beautiful veil.

VUÓLSI COSÌ COLÀ DÓVE SI
PUÓTE — CÌÒ CHE SI VUÓLE, *e più*
non dimandáre. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

So it is willed, there where will
is power, and ask no more.

QUÍVI SI PIÁNGON LI SPIETÁTI
DÁNNI : — QUÍVI è *Alessandro, e*
Dionísio féro — *Che fè Sicilia*
avér dolorósi ánni. (Dant. Inf.
12.)

Here they wail their merciless
wrongs : here dwells Alexander
and the fierce Dionysius, who
wrought for Sicily many years of
woe.

COMANDÓLLE CHE ÍNDI NON
USCÍSSE *infino a tanto, che égli*
che l' avéa rinchiúsa, non l' a-
prísse. (Passav. 78.)

He ordered her not to go out
from thence until he, who had
shut her up there, should come to
open for her.

TáNTO VÁLE IL MÍO NO QUÁNTO
IL SÚO SÌ. (Cecch. Esalt. cr. 2.
3.)

My negative is as good as his
affirmative.

Chè SÌ E NO NEL CÁPÒ MI TEN-
ZÓNA.* (Dant. Inf. 8.)

For yes and no struggle in my
head.

Era Címóne, SÌ PER LA SÚA
FÓRMA, e SÌ PER LA NOBILTÀ e
ricchézza del pádre, quási nóto a
ciascúno. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Cimon was, both for his person-
al beauty, and for the nobility and
wealth of his father, known to al-
most every one.

Fo vi dirò QUÉLLO CHE ÍO AVRÒ
FÁTTO, E QUÉL CHE NO. (Bocc.
g. 2. n. 1.)

I will tell you what I shall have
done, and what not.

Il famigliáre rispóse : ' SIGNÓR,
no.' (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

The domestic replied : ' No, sir.'

Disse allóra Pírro : ' NON FAR-
NÉTICO, NO, Signóra.' (Bocc.)

Then Pyrrhus said : ' I do not
rave, Madam, no.'

NO, PER QUÉLLO NON RIMAR-
RÀ IL MERCÁTO. (Bocc. g. 7. n.
2.)

No, the bargain will not be brok-
en off on this account.

* ' At war 'twixt will and will not.' — SHAKESPEARE, *Measure for Measure*.

U' SÓNO I VÉRSI, U' SON GIÚN-
TE LE RÍME? (Petr. c. 46.)

Where are the verses, where
are the rhymes gone?

Disse Calandrino: 'Sì BÉNE.'
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

Calandrino replied: 'Yes in-
deed.'

Il negrománte disse: 'GIÀ DÍO
NON VÓGLIA.' (Bocc. g. 10. n. 5.)

The necromancer replied: 'May
God forbid.'

*Una páрте del móndo è, che si
GIÁCE — MÁI SÉMPRE IN GHIÁC-
CIO.* (Petr. c. 5.)

There is a part of the world
which lies always frozen.

*Una ne dirò, NON MÍCA d' uó-
mo DI PÓCO AFFÁRE.* (Bocc. g.
10. n. 6.)

I will tell you one, not at all of
a man of little consequence.

Teddáldo NON È PÚNTO MÓRTO.
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Tedaldo is not at all dead.

*Quésto nóstro fanciúlló, il quále
APPÉNA ANCÓRA NON HA quattór-
dici ánni.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 8)

This boy of ours, who is hardly
fourteen years old yet.

ÉCCO, íO NON SO ÓRA DIR DI NO.
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

I cannot now say no.

COMPOUND ADVERBS.

Compound adverbs are formed of an *adjective*, and the substantive *mén-te*,* 'manner.' *Mén-te* being of the *feminine* gender requires that the adjective be of the *same* gender; as,

sávia, wise;

SAVIA-MÉNTE, in a wise manner, *or* wise-
[ly;

onésta, honest;

ONESTA-MÉNTE, in an honest manner, *or*
[honestly;

cortése, courteous;

CORTESE-MÉNTE, in a courteous manner,
[or courteously;

prudén-te, prudent;

PRUDENTE-MÉNTE, in a prudent manner,
[or prudently;

* From the Celtic *ment*, 'manner.' It is from this language that the Latins borrowed their *mens*, and formed such expressions as *forti mente*, *clará mente*, *devotá mente*, &c., which afterwards passed to the Italians, as *sána mén-te* in Boccaccio (g. 9. n. 9.); *affettuósa mén-te* in Ariosto (Orl. Fur.); *etérna mén-te* in Monti (Bassv.) may prove; although they are now generally written in one word; as, *fortemén-te*, 'strongly'; *chiaramén-te*, 'clearly'; *devotamén-te*, 'devoutly'; *sanamén-te*, 'wisely'; *affettuosamén-te*, 'affectionately'; *eternamén-te*, 'eternally'; &c.

If the adjective ends in *le*,* or *re*, for the sake of euphony the *final e* is dropped in the formation of the adverb ; as,

festévole, merry ; FESTEVL-MÉNTE, merrily ;
particoláre, particular ; PARTICULAR-MÉNTE, particularly.

Sometimes the adverb is an *adjective only*, without the addition of the word *mén-te* ; as,

CHIÁRO [for *chiaramén-te*], clearly ;
 DÓLCE [for *dolcemén-te*,] sweetly.

The following are the

Adjectives commonly used as Adverbs.†

| | | | |
|-------------------|---------------|-------------------|--------------|
| <i>Fórte</i> , | very strong ; | <i>tánte</i> , | so much ; |
| <i>sódo</i> , | fast, hard ; | <i>ráre</i> , | rarely ; |
| <i>álto</i> , | softly ; | <i>sólo</i> , | only ; |
| <i>básso</i> , | low ; | <i>tútto</i> , | all ; |
| <i>cérto</i> , | certainly ; | <i>póco</i> , | little ; |
| <i>triste</i> , | sadly ; | <i>mólto</i> , | much ; |
| <i>liétto</i> , | merrily ; | <i>tróppo</i> , | too much ; |
| <i>dólce</i> , | sweetly ; | <i>béllo</i> , | handsomely ; |
| <i>chiáro</i> , | clearly ; | <i>buóno</i> , | very well ; |
| <i>scúro</i> , | darkly ; | <i>apérto</i> , | openly ; |
| <i>schietto</i> , | candidly ; | <i>sicúro</i> , | surely ; |
| <i>piáno</i> , | low, softly ; | <i>diméssó</i> , | lowly ; |
| <i>lén-to</i> , | slowly ; | <i>somméssó</i> , | humbly ; |
| <i>prónto</i> , | readily ; | <i>virino</i> , | near ; |
| <i>rátto</i> , | speedily ; | <i>lontáno</i> , | far. |

* This rule with regard to adjectives ending in *le* is not without exceptions, as may be seen in the following passages :

Similemén-te il mal séme d' Adámo. In like manner Adam's evil brood.
 (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Io la rivéggio stársi umilémén-te. I see her remaining humbly.
 (Petr. s. 211.)

Umilémén-te vi priégo. (Bocc.) I humbly entreat you.

Cósa ráde vólte usáta per lo comúne, ma A thing seldom used by the community,
utilémén-te fáta. (Matt. Vill. 9. 28.) but usefully done.

† In order to know when these words are *adjectives*, and when *adverbs*, it is sufficient to observe whether, in the discourse, they are added to, or used for, a sub-

Adverbs formed of an *adjective*, and the adverbs *prêsto*, *sovênte*, *pertêmpo*, *adâgio*, *volentiêri*, *affâtto*, may be used in a *comparative* and *superlative* degree, which is formed thus :

| | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>tranquillamênte</i> , | tranquilly ; |
| <i>PIÙ tranquillamênte</i> , | more tranquilly ; |
| <i>tranquill-ISSIMA-mênte</i> , | very tranquilly : |
| <i>felicemênte</i> , | happily ; |
| <i>MÉNO felicemênte</i> , | less happily ; |
| <i>felic-ISSIMA-mênte</i> , | very happily : |
| <i>schîétto</i> , | candidly ; |
| <i>PIÙ OR MÉNO schîétto</i> , | more or less candidly ; |
| <i>schiett-ISSIMA-mênte</i> , | very candidly : |
| <i>liêto</i> , | merrily ; |
| <i>PIÙ OR MEN liêto</i> , | more or less merrily ; |
| <i>liet-ISSIMA-mênte</i> , | very merrily : |
| <i>volentiêri</i> , | willingly ; |
| <i>PIÙ OR MÉNO volentiêri</i> , | more or less willingly ; |
| <i>volentier-ISSIMA-mênte</i> , | very willingly. |

The adverbs *béne*, ‘well’; and *mâle*, ‘badly’; in their comparative and superlative, make,

| | |
|---|-------------|
| <i>MÉGLIO</i> , | better ; |
| <i>OTTIMAMênte</i> or <i>benÍSSIMO</i> , | very well : |
| <i>PÉGGIO</i> , | worse ; |
| <i>PESSIMAMênte</i> or <i>malÍSSIMO</i> , | very badly. |

Assái, in the superlative makes *assaÍSSIMO*, ‘very much.’

stantive, or not ; for, if so, they are adjectives ; otherwise they are adverbs. Thus, in these examples,

S' i' meritái di vói assái o pòco.
(Dant. Inf. 26.)

If I deserved of you either much or little.

Ségno manifestó di pòco sénno. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

A manifest sign of little wisdom.

E per pòco, se tu mi dicéssi, che io andássi di quí a Perétola, io crédo ch' io vi andréi. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

However little you should ask me to go to Peretola, I believe that I should go there.

the word *pòco* is an *adverb* in the first instance, where it modifies the verb *meritái* ; but it is an *adjective* in the other two, where, in the first, it is added to the substantive *sénno*, and, in the second, stands for a substantive ; being equivalent to *póca còsa*, ‘little thing.’

Béne, poco, adágio, piáno, tánto, as we have already observed at p. 86, have also a *diminutive*,

| | | | |
|--------------------|-----------------|--------------------|----------------|
| <i>beníno,</i> | pretty well ; | <i>adagíno,</i> | } very slow ; |
| <i>pochíno,</i> | } very little ; | <i>pianíno,</i> | |
| <i>pocolíno,</i> | | <i>tantíno,</i> | } very little. |
| <i>pochettíno,</i> | | <i>tantínetto,</i> | |

Béne, has also an *augmentative* : *benóne*, ‘very well.’

ADVERBIAL PHRASES IN COMMON USE.

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>Di súbito</i> , suddenly ; | <i>a bello stúdio</i> , } designedly ; |
| <i>di bóto</i> , presently ; | <i>a bella pósta</i> , } |
| <i>in un baléno</i> , in an instant ; | <i>a méno che</i> , unless ; |
| <i>in un bátter d’ ócchio</i> , in the | <i>se non che</i> ,† except ; |
| [twinkling of an eye ; | <i>da per tútto</i> , } everywhere ; |
| <i>póco fa</i> , a little while ago ; | <i>per ógni dóve</i> , } |
| <i>fra póco</i> , in a short time ; | <i>ad un trátto</i> , at once ; |
| <i>un pézzo fa</i> , some time ago ; | <i>di rádo</i> , } seldom, rarely ; |
| <i>délle vólte</i> , at times ; | <i>di ráro</i> , } |
| <i>all’ improvviso</i> , unexpectedly ; | <i>infálti</i> , } in fact ; |
| <i>alla ventúra</i> , at random ; | <i>difálto</i> , } |
| <i>all’ avvenire</i> , in future ; | <i>di gran lúnga</i> , by far ; |
| <i>a minúto</i> , in detail ; | <i>a lúngo andáre</i> , in the long |
| <i>a vicénda</i> , by turns ; | [run, in time ; |
| <i>a gára</i> , emulously ; | <i>a più potére</i> , with all one’s |
| <i>a cáso</i> , by chance ; | [might ; |
| <i>a tórto</i> , wrongly ; | <i>di mála vógliá</i> , unwillingly ; |
| <i>per accidénte</i> , } | <i>a un di préssó</i> , almost ; |
| <i>per sórte</i> , } by chance ; | <i>d’ allóra in quà</i> , since that time ; |
| <i>per avventúra</i> , } | <i>d’ óra innánzi</i> , henceforth ; |
| <i>pur tróppo</i> ,* too truly, too well ; | <i>in quél méntre</i> , in or at that time ; |
| <i>di frésco</i> , newly ; | <i>di púnto in púnto</i> , exactly ; |
| <i>di buón grádo</i> , willingly ; | <i>di púnto in biáncó</i> , point blank ; |
| <i>súo malgrádo</i> , against one’s will ; | <i>di quándo in quándo</i> , } now |
| <i>sénza méno</i> , positively ; | <i>di trátto in trátto</i> , } and |
| <i>quánto prima</i> , very soon ; | <i>di tánto in tánto</i> , } then ; |
| <i>a súa pósta</i> , } at one’s | <i>il più per lo più</i> , on the whole, |
| <i>a súo sénno</i> , } pleasure ; | [at the utmost. |
| <i>da sénno</i> , seriously ; | |

* An elliptical expression for the phrases *è PUR TRÓPPO véro*, ‘it is too true’ ; *è PUR TRÓPPO béne*, ‘it is too well.’

† An elliptical expression for the phrase *se non fósse*, or *fósse státo*, *CHE*, ‘were it not,’ or ‘had it not been.’

EXAMPLES.

SAVIAMÉNTÉ sè spubòsono lóro
ambasciata. (Giò. Vill. l. 8. c. 1.)

Thus wisely they delivered their
message.

Mángiano có' forestiéri FESTE-
VOLMÉNTÉ. (Dav. Gerip.)

They eat merrily with strangers.

L'altre dónne, udíta Pampinéa,
avien già PIÙ PARTICOLARMÉNTÉ
tra sè cominciáto a trattár del
módo. (Bocc. Introd.)

The other ladies, having heard
Pampinea, had already begun more
particularly to devise the means.

Assái la vóce lór CHIÁRO l'ab-
báia. (Dant. Inf. 7.)

Their words reveal their fault too
clearly.

Cóme DÓLCE párla, e DÓLCE
ríde. (Petr. s. 126.)

How sweetly she speaks, and
how sweetly she smiles.

Quándo púre mánca dèlle cose
nel luógo, d'íve nói siámo, ce
n' andiámo in un áltero FELICIS-
SIMAMÉNTÉ. (Gell. Circ. l. 31.)

Whenever things are wanting
in the place where we are, we
go to another very happily.

Nessún vísse giammái piú di
me LIÉRO. (Petr. s. 7.)

None ever lived more happy
than I.

Quèsta grassézza non impedi-
sce il ricevíménto del metálo,
ánzi l' accéttá PIÙ VOLENTIÉRI
dell' áltra térra. (Ben. Cell.
Oref.)

This richness [of this earth]
does not prevent the metal being
received in it; on the contrary it
receives it better than the other
earth.

Io m' asterréi VOLENTIERISSI-
MAMÉNTÉ da cosí fáta prepara-
zióne. (Red. Cons.)

I would abstain very willingly
from such preparation.

Il quále già OTTIMAMÉNTÉ la
língua sapéa. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

Who knew already the language
very well.

Tu ti pñti MALÍSSIMO con co-
lúti al quále tu desidéri che gli
Déi nócciano. (Varch. Sen. Ben.
6.)

Thou conductest thyself very
badly with him whom thou wishest
that the gods should injure.

Oh, mi rallégro ASSAÍSSIMO —
Vedérví vivo e prosperóso. (Ambr.
Cof. 5. 6.)

Oh, I rejoice pretty much to see
you alive and prosperous.

Égli stan pur BENÍN con quélle
bórse — Di ráso al cóllo. (Buon.
Fier. Introd.)

They look pretty well with those
bags of satin hung to their necks.

behoves (to) me | to go soon to Florence. Ah! yes,
conviene^a (to) me^a | andare Firenze. Deh!

for the love of God | let it be done | quick. I
per amor Dio | facciano |

received, a little while ago, letters from Messina.
ricevere, , lettera

| Go, | and | see | who cries above. How (much)
| va, | and | vedi | piangere

far are we from (the) our quarters? | See | who
lascere¹ ^a | contrada? | Vedete

knooks below, He hoped | to | be able to have
picchiare , — Sperare | di | poter avere

the city of Lucca easily. He | goes | running here
città ^a Lucca ^a agevole¹, | va | correre

and there as if he were crazy. The good woman
se — essere pazzo. buona femmina

returned | after | (the) her chest, and carried it back
ritornare | per | (the) ^a cassa¹, ^a riportare^a ^a —

there from-whence she had taken it. Tell me, whence
^a ^a — avere^a levare¹⁰ ^a. Di' ,

art thou, and of what condition art thou?
essere — , condizione — — ?

And he | replied | : "I am | from | Syria, and I am
And he | rispose | : " essere | di | Siria, — essere

a king." He acts carelessly. And | having been
— re.¹¹ operare trascurato. And | — —

put | in prison, he | was | cruelly treated by them.
mezzo | prigione, — | fu | crudele^a trattare^a by ^a.

Observe it more particularly. And having departed
Osservare — particolare. — — partito

(himself) from thence, he | went | (thence) to Naples,
si , — | andò^a | ne¹ Napoli,

where he | lived | most tranquilly.
visse | tranquillo.

CHAPTER XIV.

PREPOSITIONS.

PREPOSITIONS IN COMMON USE.

| | | | |
|------------------|--|--------------------|--------------------------------------|
| <i>Di,*</i> | of ; | <i>accánto,</i> | } aside, about, |
| <i>a,†</i> | to, in, at ; | <i>alláto,</i> | } near, by ; |
| <i>da,‡</i> | from, by, on, at ; | <i>attórno,</i> | } about, around ; |
| <i>in,§</i> | in, on, upon ; | <i>dattórno,</i> | } on, upon, about ; |
| <i>con,</i> | with ; | <i>addóssó,</i> | |
| <i>per,</i> | through, by, on ac- [count of, in order [to, for ; | <i>préssó,</i> | |
| | | <i>appréssó,</i> | } near, almost ; |
| <i>su,</i> | | <i>vicíno,</i> | |
| <i>sópra,</i> | } on, upon ; | <i>lúngi,</i> | } far, from ; |
| <i>sóttó,</i> | under ; | <i>lontáno,</i> | |
| <i>fra,</i> | | <i>áppo, </i> | at, with, in com- [parison with ; |
| <i>tra,</i> | } amongst, within ; | <i>vérso,¶</i> | towards ; |
| <i>infra,</i> | | <i>óltra,</i> | |
| <i>intra,</i> | } in, in about ; | <i>óltre,</i> | } beyond, besides ; |
| <i>príma,</i> | before ; | <i>lúngo,</i> | along ; |
| <i>dópo,</i> | after ; | <i>fíno,</i> | |
| <i>ánzi,</i> | | <i>síno,</i> | } till, until, |
| <i>innánzi,</i> | | <i>infíno,</i> | } as far as ; |
| <i>dinánzi,</i> | } before, in the | <i>insíno,</i> | |
| <i>avánti,</i> | presence of ; | <i>cóntra,**</i> | } against ; |
| <i>davánti,</i> | | <i>cóntro,</i> | |
| <i>díttro,</i> | | <i>a-frónte,††</i> | |
| <i>didíttro,</i> | } behind ; | <i>rimpétto,</i> | } opposite ; |
| <i>éntro,</i> | | <i>dirimpétto,</i> | |
| <i>déntro,</i> | } in, within ; | <i>sénza,‡‡</i> | without ; |
| <i>fuóra,</i> | } out of, without, | <i>sálvo,</i> | |
| <i>fuóri,</i> | besides ; | <i>eccéttó,</i> | } except, excepted ; |
| <i>infuóri,</i> | except, excepted ; | <i>tránne,</i> | |

* From the Celtic *de*, a sign of qualification.† From the Celtic *da*, 'at.'‡ From the Celtic *a*, 'near,' 'joining with.'§ From the Celtic *en*, 'in.'|| From the Latin *apud* : — Celtic *ap*, 'joint,' 'attached.'¶ From the Latin *versus* : — Celtic *gwero*, 'to turn.'** From the Celtic *con*, a sign of opposition ; and *trach*, 'side.'†† From the Latin *frons* : — Celtic *fron*, 'before.'‡‡ (And *sánza* and *san*, used by old writers,) from the Latin *sine* : — Celtic *sy*, 'want,' 'privation.'

| | | | |
|---|------------------|--|---------------|
| <i>circa,</i> <i>incirca,</i> <i>intórno,</i> | } about, almost; | <i>secóndo,</i> <i>giústa,*</i> <i>giústo,</i> <i>confórme,</i> | } according.† |
|---|------------------|--|---------------|

The nature of most of the foregoing prepositions is such as to admit of no other significations than those which have been given above ; there are however some which are made, in Italian, to express so many different relations, that it has been thought indispensable to add the following remarks :

The preposition *di* may express a relation of *possession*, of *extraction*, or of *qualification* ; as,

| | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>il denáro DI LÚI,</i> | his own money ; |
| <i>figlio DEL FIGLIUÓLO,</i> | son of the son ; |
| <i>la státua DI MÁRMO,</i> | the statue of marble ; |
| <i>uómini di GRÓSSO INGÉGNO,</i> | men of dull understanding. |

A may express a relation of *attribution*, of *end* or *tendency of action*, or of *proximity* to a *place*, *person*, or *thing* ; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| AL TÉMPO <i>dell'</i> IMPERADÓRE FEDERÍGO PRÍMO, | in the timé of the emperor Frederic the First ; |
|---|--|

* From the Latin *justa* : — Celtic *ajusta*, ‘to adjust.’

† Some of the foregoing prepositions are the same as the adverbs ; as, *sópra*, *sóto*, *príma*, *appréso*, *dópo*, *déntro*, *difuóri*, &c., which, when they are followed or preceded by a noun, a pronoun, or a verb which they govern, are always prepositions, but otherwise are adverbs. Thus in the following examples,

| | |
|--|--|
| Or <i>vía méttiti avánti, io TI verrò AP-</i> <i>PRE'sso.</i> (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.) | Now go before, I will follow after thee. |
|--|--|

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>Dalla madre della giovane prima, e</i> <i>APPRE'sso da Currádo soprapprési fúro-</i> <i>no.</i> (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.) | They were first surprised by the mother of the girl, and afterwards by Currádo. |
|--|---|

the word *appréso*, in the first instance is a *preposition* because it governs the pronoun *ti* ; but in the second is an *adverb* because it governs no other word.

| | |
|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| VÉNGA A VEDÉRLA, | let him come to see her ; |
| chè il vóstro lignággio AN- | that your lineage should be- |
| DASSE A POVERTÀDE, | come poor ; |
| TROVÁNDOSI A PARÍGI, | finding himself in Paris ; |
| ALLÀTO ÁLLA DÓNNA, | by the side of the lady ; |
| S' AVVICINÁVA ÁLLE TÉRRE | he approached the land of the |
| del Dúca, | Duke. |

Da may express a relation of *derivation*, of *departure*, of *separation*, of *dependence*, of *difference*, of *designation*, of *destination*, of *similitude*, of *fitness*, *aptitude*, or *capability*, of *presence*, of *passage through or by*, of *uncertainty of number*, of *time*, of *place*, of *loneliness*, or of *instrumentality* ; as,

| | |
|---------------------------------|--|
| Cino DA PISTÓIA, | Cino of Pistoia ; |
| le grázie VÉNGONO DA DÍO, | favours come from God ; |
| TORNÁNDÓ DA PARÍGI, | returning from Paris ; |
| PÀRTITI DA COTÉSTI, | go away from those spirits ; |
| m' ALLONTÁNA DAL VÓLGO, | she separates me from the common people ; |
| DIPÉNDE DA QUÉL PÚNTO, | it hangs upon that point ; |
| ALTR' UÓMO DA QUÉLLO <i>che</i> | a different man from what I |
| <i>io sòno,</i> | am now ; |
| Gugliélmo DAL Córno, | William [surnamed] from the Horn ; |
| cóse DA MANGIÁRE, | eatable things ; |
| uómo DA PÓCO, | a foolish man ; |
| avánti DA sè, | before himself ; |
| DÁLLA CÀSA délla dónna, | before the house of the lady ; |
| DA NOVÁNTA MÍLA bócce, | above ninety thousand mouths ; |
| DA GRÁN TÉMPO, | a long time since ; |
| DA QUÉSTA PÁRTE, | to this side ; |
| DA me, DA per vái, | of me ; by yourself ; |
| edificáto DA TARQUÍNIO, | built by Tarquin. |

Besides the above relations, the preposition *da* is often used to express with brevity *the habitation of a person* ; and is equivalent to the words *a casa, a casa di*, 'to one's house' ; * as,

| | |
|--|--------------------------|
| DA [or <i>a casa di</i>] <i>me</i> , | to me [or to my house] ; |
| DA [or <i>a casa di</i>] <i>lui</i> , | to his house ; |
| DA [or <i>a casa di</i>] <i>lei</i> , | to her house ; |
| DAL [or <i>a casa del</i>] <i>Cardinale</i> , | to the Cardinal's. |

In expresses a relation of *interiority*, or a relation between two objects of which the one *contains*, and the other *is contained* ; as,

| | |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| <i>dormiva</i> IN UN LETTICCIUÓ- LO, | he slept in a little bed ; |
| <i>córsi</i> IN MERCÁTO, | I ran to the market ; |
| <i>éra</i> IN PARÍGI, IN UN ALBÉR- GO, | there were in Paris, in a ho- tel. |

The Italians consider as *containing-objects*, the *divisions of time*, the *parts of one's body*, the *apparel we wear*, and sometimes even the *surface of bodies* ; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>cénto novélle raccontáte</i> IN DIÉCI GIÓRNI, | one hundred stories related in ten days ; |
| <i>púdica</i> IN FÁCCIA, | chaste in her countenance ; |
| <i>la coróná</i> IN FRÓNTE, | the crown on the forehead ; |
| IN ÁBITO <i>di peregrini</i> , | in pilgrim's dress ; |
| <i>gli fúrono stracciáti i pánni</i> IN DÓSSO, | all the clothes he had on were torn ; |
| IN MÁRE, e IN TÉRRA, | on the sea, and on the land. |

Con expresses a relation of *company* ; and the Italians

* The Italian has derived this usage from the Celtic language, in which the word *da* was a synonyme of, and often used for, the word *cae* or *chae*, 'habitation' ; — the *casa* of the Italian.

generally consider as *companions* the *instruments*, the *means*, or the *manner* in which an action is performed, —

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>véngo a desinare</i> CON VÓI, | I come to dine with you ; |
| <i>che</i> CON lo STÍLE, CON la PÉN- NA, O COL PENNÉLLO <i>non</i> <i>dipignésse</i> , | which with his style, with his pen, or with his pencil, he could not paint ; |
| <i>facéndogli cénno</i> CÓLLA MÁ- NO, | making him a sign with her hand ; |
| <i>incominciò a dire</i> CON ÚMIL VÓCE, | began to say with a humble voice ; |
| CON FATÍCA <i>gli rispóse</i> , | with difficulty he replied to him. |

Per expresses the *way through*, or the *means by*, which a thing is done ; the *reason why*, or the *object for* which, it is done ; it expresses also a relation of *space* with regard to *time* or *place* ; and a relation of *instrumentality*, of *qualification*, of *destination*, or of *distribution* ; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| PER ME <i>si va</i> <i>nélla città do-</i> <i>lente</i> , | through me you go into the city of woe ; |
| PER LI CÚI PRIÉGHI <i>costúi</i> <i>sovvénni</i> , | at whose entreaties I have aided this one ; |
| <i>non</i> PER CRUDELTÀ <i>délla</i> <i>dónna amáta</i> , <i>ma</i> PER SO- VÉRCHIO FUÓCO, | not on account of the cruelty of the beloved lady, but on account of an excessive flame ; |
| VO PÉ' DÓLCI PÓMI, | I go for the sweet fruit ; |
| PER PIÙ DÌ <i>dimorándo</i> , | remaining for several days ; |
| PER li CÁMPI, PER le VÍE, e PER le CÁSE <i>morieno</i> , | through the fields, through the streets, and in the hous- es they died ; |
| <i>proméssi a me</i> PER lo VERÁ- CE DÚCA, | promised to me by my sure guide ; |
| <i>è riputáto</i> PER SÁNTO, | he is reputed a holy man ; |
| <i>farèi</i> PER Currádo <i>ógni còsa</i> , | I would do for Currado every thing ; |
| <i>diéci ducáti</i> . PER <i>úno</i> , | ten ducats each. |

Per is also used to *entreat* or to *swear by*; as,

| | |
|---------------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| PER <i>quella páce che per vói</i> | by that peace which is pre- |
| <i>s' aspétti, ditene ,</i> | pared for you, tell us ; |
| TI GIÚRO, PER <i>quello amóre</i> | I swear to thee, by that love, |
| <i>che io ti pórtó, che ,</i> | which I bear thee, that |

The preposition *a*, as it was mentioned p. 37, followed by a word beginning with *a vowel* takes a *d* after it, and *su* followed by another *u* takes an *r*; *fuora*, *fuori*, and *fino*, *sino*, *infino*, *insino*, followed by a word beginning with *a consonant* often *lose the last vowel*; and *verso*, *loses the last syllable*; as,

| | |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| ad uómo d' <i>intellétto</i> , | to a man of sound judgment; |
| sur un' <i>ásse</i> , | upon a board; |
| infín da <i>óra</i> , | henceforth; |
| vólta ver <i>me</i> , | turned towards me. |

EXAMPLES.

| | |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>E con IL DENÁRO DI LÚI il</i> | And paid him with his own |
| <i>pagò. (Bocc.)</i> | money. |

| | |
|---|------------------------------|
| <i>Fu FÍGLIO DEL FIGLIUÓLO del</i> | He was son of the son of the |
| <i>Conte d' Artése. (Gio. Vill. 11.</i> | Count of Artois. |
| <i>54.)</i> | |

| | |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| LA STÁTUA DI MÁRMO, <i>o di</i> | The statue of marble, or of |
| <i>légno, o di metálo, rimása per</i> | wood, or of metal, remaining there |
| <i>memória d' alcún valénte uómo.</i> | in memory of some great man. |
| <i>(Dant. Conviv.)</i> | |

| | |
|--------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>Érano UÓMINI e fémmine DI</i> | They were men and women of |
| <i>GRÓSSO INGÉGNO. (Bocc. Intr.)</i> | dull understanding. |

| | |
|-------------------------------|----------------------------|
| AL TÉMPO DELL' IMPERADÓRE | In the time of the emperor |
| FEDERÍGO PRÍMO. (Bocc. g. 10. | Frederic the First. |
| n. 9.) | |

| | |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| <i>Chi nol créde, VÉNGA égli A</i> | He who does not believe it, let |
| <i>VEDÉRLA. (Petr. s. 210.)</i> | him come to see her. |

A vói non vi sarébbē onóre
CHE 'L VÓSTRO LIGNÁGGIO ANDÁS-
SE A POVERTÁDE. (Nov. Ant. 46.)

TROVÁNDOSI *égli úna vólta* A
PARÍGI *in póvero státo*. (Bocc.)

ALLÁTO ÁLLA DÓNNA *la póse*.
(Bocc.)

ÁLLE TÉRRE DEL DÚCA S' AV-
VICINÁVA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Écco CÍN DA PISTÓIA. (Petr.
Fr. Am. 4.)

DA DÍO VÉNGONO LE GRÁZIE.
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 3.)

DA PARÍGI *a Génova* TORNÁN-
DO. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

E tu che sé' costì, dnima vva,
—PÁRTITI DA COTÉSTI *che son*
mórti. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Quèsta sÓLA DAL VÓLGO M' AL-
LONTÁNA. (Petr. c. 19.)

DA QUÉL PÚNTO — DIPÉNDE
il Ciélo e tútta la natúra. (Dant.
Par. 28.)

Quand' éra *in párte* ALTR' UÓM
DA QUÉL CH' Í' SÓNO. (Petr. s.
1.)

Il quále avéa nóme GUGLIÉLMO
DAL CÓRNO. (Gio. Vill. 9.)

Le CÓSE DA MANGIÁRE *non si*
stimano dall' úso o dall' affétto,
ma dálla consuetúdine. (Varch.)

Tu sè' più DA PÓCO *che Máso,*
che s' lasciáva fuggíre i pésci
cótti. (Lasc. Spir. 5. 7.)

PÓCO AVÁNTI DA SÈ, *vide le*
céneri rimáse d' A'ttila, flagéllo
dí Dío. (Bocc. Floc. 4.)

Dal fráte *partútosí,* DÁLLA CÁSA
n' andò DÉLLA DÓNNA. (Bocc.
g. 3. n. 3.)

It would not be honorable to
you, that your lineage should be-
come poor.

Finding himself once in Paris in
poor circumstances.

By the side of the lady he put it.

He approached the lands of the
Duke.

Behold Cino of Pistoia.

Favors come from God.

Returning from Paris to Genoa.

And thou who standest there,
living spirit, go away from those
spirits who are dead.

She alone separates me from the
common people.

Heaven and nature hangs upon
that point.

When I was in part a different
man from what I am now.

Who was named William [sur-
named] from the Horn.

Eatable things are not valued
from their use or their taste, but
from habit.

Thou art more foolish than Ma-
so, who let the cooked fish escape
from him.

At a little distance before him-
self, he saw the ashes left by
Attila, the scourge of God.

Leaving the friar, he passed be-
fore the house of the lady.

Stimávasi avére in Firénze DA NOVÁNTA MÍLA BÓCCHÉ, tra uómini, fèmmine, e fanciulli. (Gio. Vill. 11. 93.)

Già DA GRAN TÉMPO nullo più ne conósci. (Alf. Fil. 4. 2.)

Si dura póca fatica a fárlu inchinare DA QUÉSTA O DA QUÉLLA PÁRTE. (Mach.)

Póscia rispóse lúi: “DA ME non vénni.” (Dant. Pur. 1.)

Vói ve ne avvedréte DA PER VÓI nel léggere quésto framménto. (Red. lett.)

Il campidóglio fu EDIFICÁTO DA TARQUÍNIO, assediáto DA Brenno, e liberáto DA Camillo. (Vanz.)

Tórna quí DA ME. (Mach.)

Adúnque, andátevene DA LÚI. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

Esséndo Salabaétto DA LÉI andáto úna séra. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.)

DAL CARDINÁL di Moróne, op-péna arrivóto, andárono tútti gli ambasciadóri. (Pall.)

IN UN LETTICCIUÓLO assái pic-colo si DÓRMIVA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

I'o córsi in mércato per dírtelo. (Mach. Corn.)

ÉRA IN PARÍGI, IN UN ALBÉR-go, alquánti mercatánti Italiáni. (Bocc.)

Inténdo di raccontáre CÉNTO NOVÉLLE, RACCONTÁTE IN DIÉCI GIÓRNI. (Bocc. Intr.)

PUDÍCA IN FÁCCIA, e nell' andáre onésta. (Dant. Pur. 3.)

It was thought that there were in Florence about ninety thousand mouths, among men, women, and children.

It is already a long time since thou forgottest them all [thy pangs of remorse].

One meets with very little difficulty in making him lean to this or to that side.

Then he replied to him: “I did not come of myself.”

You will perceive it by yourself in reading this fragment.

The capitol was built by Tarquin, besieged by Brennus, and delivered by Camillus.

Return-here to me [or to this my house].

Go, then, to his house.

Salabaetto having gone one evening to her house.

All the ambassadors went to the Cardinal of Morone's, as soon as he arrived.

He slept in a very small bed.

I ran to the market to tell it to you.

There were in Paris, in a hotel, a number of Italian merchants.

I intend to relate one hundred stories, to be related in ten days.

Chaste in her countenance, and modest in her carriage.

Fulgévamì già IN FRÓNTE LA
CORÓNA. (Dant. Pur. 8.)

The crown shone already on my forehead.

IN ÁBITO DI PEREGRÍNI. (Bocc.)

In pilgrim's dress.

Tutti i PÁNNI GLI FÚRONO IN
DÓSSO STRACCIÁTI. (Bocc. g. 1.
n. 1.)

All the clothes he had on were torn.

Comandaménto ebbero dal lor
comúne d' abbáttere la fôrza dé'
Viniziani IN MÁRE, E IN TÉRRA.
(Gio. Vill.)

They were ordered by their community to destroy all the forces, which the Venetians had on the sea, and on the land.

Signóre, io VÉNGO A DESINÁRE
CON VÓI, e CON LA VÓSTRA BRIGÁTA. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

Sir, I come to dine with you, and with your company.

Niúna còsa fu, che égli CON
LO STÍLE, CON LA PÉNNA, O COL
PENNÉLLO NON DIPIGNÉSSE *simile*
a quélla. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 6.)

There was nothing, that he could not with his style, with his pen, or with his pencil, paint like it.

E l' invitò ad avvicinársi, FA-
CÉNDUGLI CÉNNO CÓLLA MÁNO. (Bocc.)

And she invited him to approach, making him a sign with her hand.

Incominciò CON ÚMIL VÓCE A
DÍRE — *Quél ch' io vó' all' áltro*
cánto differire. (Arios. Fur.)

He began to tell with an humble voice what I choose to leave for the next canto.

Tito, non restándo di piángere,
CON FATÍCA COSÌ GLI RISPÓSE. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Titus, without ceasing from weeping, with difficulty replied to him thus.

PER ME SI VA NÉLLA CITTÀ
DOLÉNTE, — PER ME SI VA *nell'*
etérno dolóre, — PER ME SI VA
tra la perdúta gènte. (Dant.
Inf. 3.)

Through me you go into the city of woe, through me you go into eternal pain, through me you go amongst the damned spirits.

Dónna scése dal ciélo, PER LI
CÚI PRIÉGHI — *Délla mia com-*
pagnia COSTÚI SOVVÉNNI. (Dant.
Purg. 1.)

A dame descended from heaven, at whose entreaties I have aided this one with my guidance.

NON PER CRUDELTA' DÉLLA
DÓNNA AMÁTA, MA PER SOVÉR-
CHIO FUÓCO *nélla mente* CONCÉT-
TO *da pòco regoláto appetito.*
(Bocc. Proem.)

Not on account of the cruelty of the beloved lady, but on account of the excessive flame kindled in his mind by an unruled passion.

Láscio lo fêle, e VO PÉ' DÓLCI
PÓMI — PROMÉSSI A ME PER LO
VERÁCE DÚCA. (Dant. Inf. 16.)

I leave the gall, and go for the sweet fruit promised to me by my sure guide.

Quívi PER PIÙ DÌ DIMORÁNDÓ.
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

There remaining for several days.

*PER le VÍLLE, e PER LI CÁMPI ;
PER LE VÍE, e PER LE CÁSE, dÌ
dÌ e dÌ nótte, morieno.* (Bocc.
Introd.)

Through the villages, and through the fields ; through the streets, and in the houses, both by day and by night, they died.

*Esséndo státo un pèssimo úb-
mo in víta, in mórtè È RIPUTÁTO
PER SÁNTÓ.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

Having been a very bad man in his life, he is in death reputed a holy man.

*Io FARÉI PER CURRÁDO ÓGNI
CÓSA, che ío potéssi.* (Bocc. g. 2.
n. 7.)

I would do for Currado every thing that I could.

*E diè lóro DIÉCI DUCÁTI PER
ÚNO.* (Bocc.)

And gave them ten ducats each.

*O spíriti elétti, — PER QUÉLLA
PÁCE — Ch' ío crédo CHE PER VÓI
tútti s' ASPÉTTI, — DÍTENE dóve
la montágnà giáce.* (Dant. Pur.
3.)

O chosen spirits, for that peace, which, as I deem, is for all of you prepared, tell us where the mountain low declines.

*I'ò TI GIÚRO PER QUÉLLO in-
dissolúbile AMÓRE CHE ÍO TI
PÓRTO, CHE il quártò mèse non
uscirà, che tu mi rivedrái.* (Bocc.
Fiam. 2.)

I swear to thee by that indissoluble love, which I bear thee, that the fourth month will not pass, ere thou wilt see me again.

*Non páre indégno AD UÓMO
D' INTELLÉTTO.* (Dant. Inf. 2.)

It does not seem undeserved to a man of sound judgment.

*Battúti in SUR UN' ÁSSE col
colléllò.* (Dav. Colt.)

Beaten upon a board with a knife.

*O'gni áltra cósa, sía vóstra li-
beraménte INFÍN DA ÓRA.* (Bocc.
g. 4. n. 4.)

Let every other thing be freely yours henceforth.

VÓLTA VER ME, mi dísse. (Fi-
renz. Asin. 325.)

Turned towards me, she said.

EXERCISE XXIV.

He gave us the key of his house. This gentle
 — *dàre*² ¹ ³ *chiàve*⁴ ⁵ ⁷ *càsa*.⁶ ² *gentil*³
 lady being very often urged by the messages and
*dónna*³ *Èssere*¹ *stimolàre* *ambasciàta*
 by the entreaties of each one of them. Both in-
priègo *in*-
 flamed by a fierce vengeance, turned towards (to) these
fiammàre — *feròce*² *vendétta*¹, *rivólgerè*
 walls (the) their sword still warm | with | civil blood.
mùro — *fèrro* *càlido* | *dì* | *civile*² *sàngue*¹.
 | It is believed that he is | the richest prelate that
 | *Si* *crède* *che* *sia* | *riccò* *prelato*
 there is in — | has | the church of God (from)
 — — — | *abbia* | *chièsa* *Dio*
 the Pope excepted. They were all garlanded | with |
Pàpa *èssere* *tutto* *inghirlandàre*⁵ | *dì*¹ |
 leaves of oak. We will give thee so many blows
*fóglià*² ³ *quercia*⁴. *dàre*² ¹ —
 | with | one of these iron bars — bars of iron
 | *d'* | — — — *pàlo* *fèrro*
 upon (the) your head, that we will make thee fall
 — — — *fàre*² ¹ *cadé*-
 down dead. I have a farm very near to the bank
re *mórto*. *avère* *podère* *riva*
 of the river. Then came the time of going out
fiume. *venire* *tèmpo* *uscire*
 against the prince, who was approaching (himself)
prénce, *avvicinàre*³ ²
 already to the lands of the Duke. They made him
¹ *tèrra* *Dúca*. — — —
 — he was put to sit down just opposite to the
 — *Èssere* *mèttère* *sedère*
 door of the room, whence the abbot was obliged
úscio *càmera*, *abàte* *dovère*

to come out into the | dining room |. Here thou
 — *uscire* | *sála a mangiare* |.

seest a temple by-the-side | of | the sea. The em-
vedére *témpio* | *a* | *máre.* ² *im*

peror being one day between these two sages, the
*peratóre*³ *Èssere*¹ *giórno* *sávio,*

one stood on the right | of him |, and the other
*stáre*² *a*³ — *déstra*⁴ | *gli*¹ |,

on the left. Having gone out from the city they
a — *sinístra.* — *Uscíre* *città* —

put themselves on the way. He put a ring on
*méttere*² *si*¹ — *vía.* — *Méttere* ⁵ *anéllo*⁶ ¹

the finger | of | Torello. Looking fixedly in his
 — *díto*² | *a*³ | ⁴ *Guardáre* — — —

face — at him fixedly in the face, in order to
 — — *fiso* *víso,*

see whether he was speaking seriously. Having
vedére *se* *díre* —

put (himself) on a great black pelisse, he arranged
Méttere — *néro*² ¹, — *acconciáre*⁴

himself in that in such a manner, that he looked like
³ ¹ ² *guísa,* — *parére*

a bear. With the best harmony in the world all
órso. *migliór* *páce* *móndo tútto*

(and) four dined together. He began with the
quáttro desinare insiéme. — *incominciáre*² ³ ⁴

piece of wood to give him the greatest blows in
*stécca*⁵ ⁶ *dáre*⁷ *Gl*¹ *maggióre cólpo*

the world, now on (the) his head, and then on
móndo, — *tésta,* *e*

(the) his sides. I wish first to go to Rome, and
 — *fiáncó.* *volére* — *andáre* *Róma,*

there to see him (the) whom thou sayest to be —
 — *vedére* *díre* — —

that he is — vicar of God on earth. There sounded
èssere vicário *Dío* *térra.* — *Suondre*

through the city a wonderful report, that the tombs
città mirabile² voce¹, ³ ⁵ tomba⁶

of the Scipios | were discovered | . By that steep
⁷ ⁸ *Scipione⁹ | si fossero scoperte⁴ | . scoscésa*

way I arrived at the tombs of the valorous race.
via — giungere avélla valoroso² stirpe¹.

Neither by letter did she dare | to | let him hear it.
Nè lettera — ardere | di | fare — ² sentire³ ¹.

Not seeing through the wood any path. You will
vedere selva sentiero. ri-

receive a hundred (of them) for every-one. He went to
cévere² — cento⁵ ¹ ³ ciascuno⁴. andare

Ravenna in-order-to speak to the army. No, I never
parlare armata. , — —

will mention it — will not mention it ever. With
— — — ¹ dire³ ² ⁴.

a low voice he replied thus. This ferocious man,
— basso voce — rispondere² ¹. feroco² uomo¹,

having usurped with (the) frauds and with (the) | acts of
— usurpare frode | . vio-

violence | a throne not his own, sought | to | pre-
lenza | trono —, cercare⁸ | di⁹ | man-

serve it with (the) terror and with (the) cruelty.
tenere¹⁰ — ¹¹ ¹ ² terrore³ ⁴ ⁵ ⁶ crudeltà⁷.

Without any fail I promise to thee, upon (the) my
alcún fallo promettere² ¹, mio

faith, that within — among a few days thou wilt
fè, — — poco di tro-

find thyself with me. I wish that we should de-
vare² ¹ ⁴ ³. volere — scén-

scend (until) there below.
dere giù.

CHAPTER XV.

CONJUNCTIONS.

CONJUNCTIONS IN COMMON USE.

| | | | |
|--------------------|-------------------|---------------------|--------------------|
| <i>E,</i> | and ; | <i>non già,</i> | { not at all, not |
| <i>o,</i> | or, either ; | <i>non sólo,</i> | { indeed ; |
| <i>nè,</i> | nor, neither ; | <i>non che,</i> | { not only, |
| <i>se,</i> | if, whether ; | <i>purchè,</i> | { not merely ; |
| <i>ma,</i> | { but ; | <i>a méno chè,</i> | { provided ; |
| <i>però,</i> | { that ; | <i>ánzi che,</i> | { unless ; |
| <i>che,</i> | { yet, neverthe- | <i>ánzi che no,</i> | { rather, sooner ; |
| <i>püre,</i> | { less ; | | { rather than not, |
| <i>già,</i> | { yet, already ; | <i>sì,</i> | { rather so than |
| <i>ánzi,</i> | { nay, rather, on | <i>così,</i> | { otherwise ; |
| <i>ánche,</i> | { the contrary ; | <i>cóme,</i> | { so, thus ; |
| <i>ánco,</i> | { also, even ; | <i>siccome,</i> | { as, like ; |
| <i>eziandio,</i> | { also, even, a- | <i>sicchè,</i> | { so, thus, |
| <i>altresì,</i> | { gain ; | <i>così che,</i> | { wherefore ; |
| <i>ancóra,</i> | { yet, neverthe- | <i>talchè,</i> | { so, so that ; |
| <i>eppüre,</i> | { less ; | <i>giacchè,</i> | { since ; |
| <i>ossia,</i> | { or, either ; | <i>cioè,</i> | { that is ; |
| <i>ovvéro,</i> | { neither, | <i>cioè a dire,</i> | { that is to say ; |
| <i>oppüre,</i> | { not even ; | <i>vále a dire,</i> | { at least ; |
| <i>nemméno,</i> | { if ever, | <i>alméno,</i> | { moreover ; |
| <i>nemmáncó,</i> | { if indeed ; | <i>di più,</i> | { besides, |
| <i>neppure,</i> | { if however ; | <i>inóltre,</i> | { besides this ; |
| <i>neánche,</i> | { unless, except, | <i>oltrecchè,</i> | { then, |
| <i>tampóco,</i> | { but ; | <i>oltracciò,</i> | { therefore ; |
| <i>nettampóco,</i> | | <i>d' altrónde,</i> | { wherefore, |
| <i>se mái,</i> | | <i>dúnque,</i> | { whereupon ; |
| <i>se püre,</i> | | <i>adúnque,</i> | { therefore, for |
| <i>se però,</i> | | <i>ónde,</i> | { which reason ; |
| <i>se non,</i> | | <i>laónde,</i> | |
| <i>se non che,</i> | | <i>quíndi,</i> | |
| | | <i>perciò,</i> | |

| | | | | | |
|-------------------------|---|---------------------|------------------------|---|------------------|
| <i>acciò,</i> | { | in order that, | <i>in sòmma,</i> | { | in short, |
| <i>acciocchè,</i> | | | <i>in fine,</i> | | |
| <i>affine,</i> | { | to the end that; | <i>sia che,</i> | { | in conclusion; |
| <i>affinchè,</i> | | | <i>vuóì,</i> | | |
| <i>chè,</i> | { | for, why? | <i>del résto,</i> | { | whether, |
| <i>perchè,</i> | | | <i>per áltro,</i> | | |
| <i>poichè,</i> | { | because ; | <i>tánto,</i> | { | or, either ; |
| <i>posciachè,</i> | | | <i>quánto,</i> | | |
| <i>perocchè,</i> | { | because, since, | <i>quándo,</i> | { | otherwise, |
| <i>imperocchè,</i> | | | <i>quand' ánche,</i> | | |
| <i>perciocchè,</i> | { | as, after ; | <i>in guisa che,</i> | { | besides ; |
| <i>imperciocchè,</i> | | | <i>in módo che,</i> | | |
| <i>conciosiacchè,</i> | { | because, | <i>in maniera che,</i> | { | as ; |
| <i>quantúnque,</i> | | | <i>di módo che,</i> | | |
| <i>sebbéne,</i> | { | whereas, | <i>di maniera che,</i> | { | as ; |
| <i>benchè,</i> | | | | | |
| <i>comechè,</i> | { | as, since ; | | { | when ; |
| <i>arvegnachè,</i> | | | | | |
| <i>ancorchè,</i> | { | although ; | <i>intánto,</i> | { | even when ; |
| <i>contuttochè,</i> | | | <i>frattánto,</i> | | |
| <i>nonostánte,</i> | { | even that ; | <i>méntre,</i> | { | so that, in such |
| <i>nondiméno,</i> | | | <i>mentrecchè,</i> | | |
| <i>nientediméno,</i> | { | still, | <i>sálvo,</i> | { | a manner ; |
| <i>con tutto ciò,</i> | | | <i>eccétto,</i> | | |
| <i>non per tánto,</i> | { | nevertheless, | <i>tránne,</i> | { | in the mean |
| <i>non per quéstó,</i> | | | <i>fuorchè,</i> | | |
| <i>ciò non ostánte,</i> | { | notwithstand- | <i>fórse,</i> | { | time, mean- |
| <i>ciò non di ménó,</i> | | | <i>óra,</i> | | |
| <i>tuttavía,</i> | { | ing, for all that ; | | { | while, whilst ; |
| | | | | | |
| | { | | | { | whilst, |
| | | | | | |
| | { | | | { | whilst that ; |
| | | | | | |
| | { | | | { | save, saving, |
| | | | | | |
| | { | | | { | except ; |
| | | | | | |
| | { | | | { | perhaps ; |
| | | | | | |
| | { | | | { | now.* |
| | | | | | |

Many of these conjunctions, as *nondiméno*, *ciò non ostánte*, &c. contain in themselves a *pronoun*, a *preposition*, an *adverb*, &c.; but, from their office of *joining* sentences together, they are commonly reckoned amongst conjunctions, though in fact they are but *conjunctive phrases*.

* Some of these conjunctions might be mistaken for *prepositions* or *adverbs*, and the conjunction *CHE*, for the *relative pronoun* *CHE*, 'who,' 'which,' 'that'; their character however will soon be ascertained by considering the office which they perform in a sentence. Thus in the following examples:

Iddò mi ha fatto tanta grázia, che 'io
A'NZI la mia mórté ho vedúto alcúni dé'
miéi fratélli. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

God has granted me such a favor as to enable me to see some of my brothers before my death.

Attempatèlla éra, e A'NZI supérba che
no. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)

She was a little advanced in years and rather proud.

Fo éra ben così, ma non per natúra,
A'NZI per úna infermità. (Bocc. g. 3.
n. 1.)

I was indeed not naturally so, but by a disease.

the word *anzi* is a *preposition* in the first instance because it *governs* *la mia mórté*:

The conjunction *ne* is sometimes used in the signification of *e*, 'and'; as,

| | |
|---------------------------|--------------------|
| <i>dólcì NÈ càri,</i> | sweet and dear; |
| <i>parláì NÈ scrìssi,</i> | I spoke and wrote. |

Ma is often used in the signification of *più*, 'more'; as,*

| | |
|-------------------------------|---------------------|
| <i>MA che úno,</i> | more than one; |
| <i>non MA che di sospìri,</i> | no more than sighs. |

Che is sometimes used in the signification of *fra* or *tra*, 'between'; as,

| | |
|------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>méglìo di diecimìla dóbbre,</i> | more than ten thousand pis- |
| <i>CHE in giòie, e CHE in</i> | toles between jewels and |
| <i>denàri,</i> | money. |

Pùre is often used in the signification of *ancóra*, 'also,' 'even'; *sólo*, *solaménte*, 'only'; as,

| | |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>è PÚRE peccáto,</i> | it is also a sin; |
| <i>s' ío avéssi avúto PÚRE un</i> | had I had even the slightest |
| <i>pensierúzzo,</i> | thought; |
| <i>nátúra non avéa ívi PUR di-</i> | nature had not only painted |
| <i>pínto,</i> | there. |

The conjunctions *quantúnque*, *sebbéne*, *benchè*, *comechè*, *avvegnachè*, *ancorchè*, *contuttochè*, are generally followed by one of the following conjunctions, *pùre*,

it is an *adverb* in the second because it *modifies* the verb *éra*: and it is a *conjunction* in the last because it *connects* the clause (*éra*) *per natura* with (*éra*) *per úna infermità*.

And in the following:

| | |
|--|------------------------------------|
| <i>Cominciàrono a díre, CHE quéllo, CHE</i> | They began to say that what he had |
| <i>égli avéva rispósto, non veníva a díre nùl-</i> | replied was without meaning. |
| <i>lá. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 9.)</i> | |

the first *che* is a *conjunction*, because it *connects* *díre*, with what follows; and the second is a *relative pronoun*, because it refers to *quéllo*, its *antecedent*.

* From these and similar examples it seems as if the Italian *ma* were derived from the Latin *magis*: — the Celtic *mai*, 'great.'

nonostante, nondiméno, nientediméno, con tutto ciò, ciò non ostante, ciò non di méno, non pertanto, non per questo tuttavia ; as their correlatives ; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| COMECHÈ varie cose gli andasse per lo pensiero di fare, PÙRE deliberò . . . , | although it passed through his mind to do various things, yet he determined |
|---|---|

Often the *correlative* conjunction is suppressed ; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| Arriguccio, CONTUTTOCHÈ fosse mercatante, era [nondiméno] un fiéro uomo, | Arrighuccio, although a merchant, was a proud man. |
|--|--|

Non solo, non che, are followed by *ma, ma ancora ; as,*

| | |
|--|---|
| sta bene di così fatte cose NON CHE gli amici, MA gli stranieri di ripigliare, | it is well to reprimand for such things, not only friends, but even strangers ; |
|--|---|

| | |
|--|--|
| il vino NON SÓLO conforta il natural calore, MA ANCÓRA chiarifica il sangue, | wine not only assists the natural heat, but it clears the blood. |
|--|--|

Non che is often an *elliptical expression* for the phrase *NON solaménte dico CHE, ma, 'I say not only that, but ' ; as,*

| | |
|---|--|
| spéro trovar pietà NON CHE perdóno [NON SOLAMÉNTE DICO CHE spéro trovar perdóno, MA pietà], | I hope to find not only pardon, but pity ; |
|---|--|

| | |
|--|---|
| avrebbero potuto muóver la guerra, NON CHE difendersi [DICO NON SOLAMÉNTE CHE avrebbero potuto difendersi, MA muóver la guerra], | they could have not only defended themselves, but even waged war. |
|--|---|

Tanto is followed by *quánto*, and sometimes by *che ;* corresponding to the English words *both . . . and ; as,*

| | |
|----------------------------|-----------------------|
| TÁNTO crúdi QUÁNTO cotti, | both raw and cooked ; |
| TÁNTO maschi, CHE femmine, | both men and women. |

The conjunctions *e, o*, followed by a word beginning with a *vowel* often take a *d* after them; and *pûre, ep-pûre, oppûre, alméno, nemméno, óra, ancóra*, followed by a *consonant* drop the *last vowel*; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>dûre, ed áspre battáglie,</i> | hard and severe battles; |
| <i>od ómbra, od uómo cêrto,</i> | whether a spirit or a living man; |
| <i>che il cuór mi préme giù PUR pensádo,</i> | which to think of oppresses my heart; |
| <i>ch' ANCÓR lassù vedére spéra,</i> | which he hopes to see also there in heaven. |

Pûre, già, óra, are sometimes mere *expletives*; as,
la cósà andò PUR cosí, the thing passed just so;
fóssero éssi pur GIÀ dispósti, would that they were disposed;
óra le paróle fúrono assái, now the words were many.

EXAMPLES.

Se gli ócchi suói ti fur DÓLCI, If her eyes were sweet and dear
NÈ CÀRI. (Petr. c. 40.) to thee.

Quánto di léi PARLÁI, NÈ SCRÍS- How much I spoke and wrote
SI. (Petr. s. 296.) of her.

Or cúi chiámi tu Iddio? Égli Now whom callest thou God?
non è MA CHE ÚNO. (Nov. Ant. 78.) There is no more than one.

Quiúvi, secóndo che per ascol- There, as well as my ear could
táre, — Non avéa piánto, MA CHE note, no other complaints were heard
DI SOSPIRI — Che l' áura etérna than sighs, which caused the eter-
facévan tremáre. (Dant. Inf. 4.) nal air to tremble.

Donólle CHE IN GIÓIE, e CHE He gave her between jewels,
in vasellaménti d' óro e d' arién- and gold and silver vases, and
to, E CHE IN DENÁRI, quéllo che money, what would be worth
válse mégljo d' áltre DIECIMÍLA more than ten thousand pistoles.
DÓBERE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

E pognámo, che non lo facciá- And let us suppose, that we do
mo a malizia, pûre nientedimé- not do it through malice, yet
no È PÚRE PECCÁTO. (Cavalc. Pungil. 195.) nevertheless it is also a sin.

O, s' ío avéssi avúto púre
UN PENSIERÚZZO di fáre l' una
di quélle còse, che vói díte, credéte
vói, che Iddíio m' avésse tánto so-
stenúta? (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

NON AVÉA PUR NATÚRA ívi
DIPÍNTO, — *Ma di soavità di múl-
le odóri — Vî facéa un incógnito
indistínto.* (Dant. Pur. 7.)

COMECHÈ VÁRIE CÓSE GLI AN-
DÁSSE PER LO PENSÍERO DI FÁ-
RE, PÚRE, *vedéndo il re*, DELIBE-
RÒ (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

ÉRA ARRIGÚCCIO, CONTUTTO-
CHÈ FÓSSE MERCATÁNTE, UN FIÉ-
RO UÓMO. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.)

A vói STA BÉNE DI COSÌ FÁTTE
CÓSE, NON CHE GLI AMÍCI, MA
GLI STRANIÉRI DI RIPIGLIÁRE.
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

IL VÍNO NON SÓLO CONFÓRTA
IL NATURÁL CALÓRE, MA ANCÓRA
CHIARÍFICA IL SÁNGUE *tórbido*.
(Cresc. 4; 48; 2.)

SPÉRO TROVÁR PIETÀ, NON CHE
PERDÓNO. (Petr. s. 1.)

Tánte miglídia armáti, a piè e
a cavállo, AVRÉBBERO, *con áltro*
cápo, POTÚTO MUÓVER LA GUÉR-
RA, NON CHE DIFÉNDERSI. (Dav.
Stor.)

I frútti sòno saníssimi TÁNTO
CRÚDI, QUÁNTO CÓTTI. (Red.
lett. 2.)

Dimórano salubreménte in
quell' ária di collína, TÁNTO MÁ-
CHI, CHE FÉMMINE. (Lib. Cur.
Malatt.)

Le détte nazióni ébbero DÚRE,
ED ÁSPRE BATTÁGLIE. (Gio. Vill.
b. 6. c. 29.)

"Miserére di me," gridái a lui,
— *"Quál che tu sù, OD ÓMBRA,*
OD UÓMO CÉRTO." (Dant Inf. 1.)

Oh! had I had even the slight-
est thought of doing one of those
things which you say, do you be-
lieve that God would have assisted
me?

Nature not only had painted there,
but of the sweetness of a thousand
smells had made an unknown, un-
distinguishable fragrance.

Although it passed through his
mind to do various things, yet,
seeing the king, he determined
.....

Arriguccio, although a mer-
chant, was a proud man.

It is well for you to reprimand
for such things, not only your
friends, but even strangers.

Wine not only assists the natu-
ral heat, but it clears also the
turbid blood.

I hope to find not only pardon,
but pity.

So many thousand armed men,
on foot and on horseback, would
have, under another captain, not
only defended themselves, but
waged war.

Fruits are very wholesome, both
raw and cooked.

In that mountain air both men
and women live in very good
health.

Said nations had hard and se-
vere battles,

"Take pity upon me," cried I to
him, "whatever thou be, whether
a spirit or a living man."

*Tu vuóì ch' ío rinuovélli —
Disperáto dolór che il cuór mi
préme — GIÀ PUR PENSÁNDÓ, pría
ch' ío ne favélli. (Dant. Inf. 33.)*

Thou wishest that I should re-
call the desperate grief, which to
think of oppresses my heart, before
I tell it.

*Per mirár la sembiánza di Co-
lúì, — CH' ANCÓR LASSÙ nel ciél
VEDÉRE SPÉRA. (Petr. s. 14.)*

In order to see the image of
Him whom he hopes to see also
there in heaven.

*LA CÓSA ANDÒ PUR COSÌ. (Bocc.
g. 2. n. 5.)*

The thing happened just so.

*O'ra FÓSSERO ÉSSI PUR GIÀ
DISPÓSTI a veníre. (Bocc. Int.)*

Now would that were disposed
to come.

*ÓRA LE PARÓLE FÚRONO AS-
sÁI, ed il rammarichio délla dón-
na gránde. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)*

Now the words were many, and
the sorrow of the lady great.

EXERCISE XXV.

The waters, and the air, and the branches, and
 acqua, áura, rámo,
the little birds, and the fishes; and the flowers, and
 uccélló, pésce, fióre,
the grass speak of love. | I do not go away |
 erba parláre amóre. | . non¹⁰ mi¹¹ allontáno¹² |
neither from (the) Mount Parnassus, nor from the
 1 2 3 *Mónte⁴ Parnáso,⁵ 6 7 8*
Muses. And it appears to me to see with-her la-
Músa⁹. 1 parére⁴ — 5 vedér² 3 dón-
dies and damsels, and they are savins and beech-trees.
na donzélla, — éssere abéte fággió.
Neither by message, nor by letter did she dare | to |
 ambasciáta, léttera — ardíre | di |
| let him know it. | Nimrod was the first king, or
 fárglielo sapére. | Nembrótte éssere re,
ruler, or collector (of assemblage) of people.* I will
rettóre, ragunatóre congregazione génte. dí-

* People, in the plural — peoples.

tell perhaps a thing not credible, but true. He was
re *cósa* *credibile*, but *véro*. — *Éssere*

not only killed, but devoured even to the bones.
uccidére, ¹ *divorare*⁵ ² even ³ to the ⁴ bones.

He lost every hope, not only of ever having her
 — *pérdere*³ *Ogni*¹ *speranza*², | *dovér*^{la} *mái*

again, | but even | of seeing | her. “And for what rea-
riavére, | *vedére* | —. “ *ca-*

son?” said Ferondo: “Because thou wast jealous.”
gióne?” *díre* : “ *éssere* *gelóso*.”

Alexander although | he had | great fear, yet he
Alessandro | — *avésse*³ *gránde*¹ *paúra*², —

| remained | quiet. Surely, although thou affirmest
stétte | *chéto*. *Cérto*, *affermáre*²

it, I do not believe, that thou | believest | it. “Go
¹, — , | *créda*² | ¹. “*Andáre*

then,” said the lady, “and call him.” Since you
 ,” *díre* *dónna*, “ *chiamáre* — .”

promise me | to | pardon me, I will tell it to you.
*prométtere*² ¹ | *di*³ *perdonáre*⁴ — ⁵, ⁶ *díre*⁹ ⁸ ⁷.

Therefore I stop (myself); but why goest thou?
 — *arrestáre*² ¹; ² *andáre*?³ ¹

Although we are in the month of July — be of July,
 — — — — — *éssere*³ ¹ *Lúglio*²,

| I thought | this morning I should freeze — to
mi son credúta | *mattina* — — — *as-*

freeze. I wish, that she | should send | me a small
sideráre. — *Volére*, | *mándi*² | ¹

lock of the beard of Nicostratus. Now it happened,
ciócca *bárba* *Nicóstrato*. — *avveníre*,

that the king of France..... He | was guarding | the
re *Francia*..... — | *Éra a guardáre* |

passes with more than three thousand horsemen, between
pásso *tremíla* *cavaliére*,

German and (between) Lombards. Provided | you have
Tedésco *Lombárdo*. *Provided* | *a vói díá*

the mind | | to | keep secret what — that which I
il cuóre | | *di* | *tenér* *secréto* —

will say to you. The cranes | have | only one
*ragiondre*² | ¹ | *grù* | *non hánno* |
 leg and one foot. I see, that he wishes, that I
gámba | *piè.* | *vedére,* | *volére,*
 | should do | what — that which, I never — not ever,
 | *fáccia* | — , — ¹ ³,
 wished to do, that is, that I | should relate | (the)
*volére*² | *fáre,* | , | *raccónti* | ¹
 his wickedness.
³ *cattività*².

CHAPTER XVI.

INTERJECTIONS.

INTERJECTIONS IN COMMON USE.

| | | | |
|-----------------|-------------------|---------------------|--|
| <i>Ah!</i> | ah! ha! alas! | <i>ahimè! aimè!</i> | } alas (me)! |
| <i>eh! e!</i> | eh! | <i>ehimè! eimè!</i> | |
| <i>ih!</i> | ih! | <i>ohimè! oimè!</i> | |
| <i>oh! o!</i> | oh! ho! | [<i>omè!</i> | } alas (thee)! |
| <i>uh!</i> | uh! | <i>oità!</i> | |
| <i>áhi!</i> | ah! alas! | <i>oisè!</i> | alas (him or her)! |
| <i>éhi!</i> | { here! ho hey! | <i>guái!</i> | woe! |
| <i>óhi! ói!</i> | { ho there! | <i>aiúto!</i> | help! |
| <i>úhi!</i> | ah! oh! | <i>o Dio!</i> | oh Heavens! |
| | ah! alas! | <i>lássó!</i> | } alas! |
| <i>deh!</i> | { ah! alas! pray! | <i>lássó me!</i> | |
| | { prithee! | <i>áhi lássó!</i> | |
| <i>doh!</i> | oh! pshaw! | <i>póvero me!</i> | } wretched that I am! unfortun- ate that I am! wretched me! poor me! |
| <i>ah, ah!</i> | ah, ah! | <i>mísero me!</i> | |
| <i>eh, eh!</i> | eh, eh! | <i>meschino me!</i> | |
| <i>oh, oh!</i> | oh, oh! | <i>dolénte me!</i> | |
| <i>poh!</i> | poh! | <i>o me beáto!</i> | } happy that I am! happy me! |
| <i>puh! pu!</i> | pu! pooh! | <i>o me felice!</i> | |
| <i>éia!</i> | halloo! | <i>beáto me!</i> | |
| <i>olà!</i> | holla! ho there! | <i>felice me!</i> | |

| | | | |
|---------------------------|--------------------|------------------------------|-----------------------|
| <i>così !</i> | so ! thus ! | <i>álto !</i> | halt ! |
| <i>sì !</i> | { yes, certainly ! | <i>sta !</i> | stop ! |
| <i>già !</i> | | <i>ohè !</i> | { take care ! |
| <i>püre !</i> | yet ! | <i>guárda !</i> | { have care ! |
| <i>cóme !</i> | { how ! how then ! | <i>lárgo !</i> | { beware ! |
| <i>su !</i> | { why ? why so ! | <i>piáno,</i> | { softly ! gently ! |
| <i>orsù !</i> | { up, up ! come ! | <i>adágio,</i> | { slowly ! |
| <i>su, su !</i> | | <i>zì ! zítto !</i> | { st ! whist ! hush ! |
| <i>vía !</i> | { come then ! | <i>chétto !</i> | { quiet ! still ! |
| <i>vía, vía !</i> | away ! | <i>non più !</i> | { enough ! |
| <i>eh vía !</i> | fie ! fie upon ! | <i>bástta !</i> | |
| <i>vergógna !</i> | for shame ! | <i>silénzio !</i> | { silence ! |
| <i>oibò !</i> | o fie ! o fough ! | <i>tacéte !</i> | { away ! |
| <i>ánimo !</i> | { courage ! | <i>andáte !</i> | |
| <i>corággio !</i> | | <i>badáte !</i> | { mind ! |
| <i>fáte-cuóre !</i> | { cheer up ! | <i>all' értta !</i> | { have care ! |
| <i>béne !</i> | well ! | <i>státe all' értta !</i> | { beware ! |
| <i>brávo !</i> | { bravo ! | <i>dì grázia !</i> | { pray ! |
| <i>buóno !</i> | { very well ! | <i>per carità !</i> | { for charity's |
| <i>viva !</i> | good ! | | { [sake ! |
| <i>eh viva ! evvíva !</i> | long live ! | <i>per amór del cié-lo !</i> | { for heaven's |
| <i>cápperi !</i> | { ay ! heyday ! | <i>lo !</i> | { [sake ! |
| <i>cáppita !</i> | | <i>mercè !</i> | { mercy ! |
| <i>poffáre !</i> | { marry ! | <i>misericórdia !</i> | { mercy upon us ! |
| <i>oh bélla !</i> | fine ! | <i>possibile !</i> | { is it possible ! |
| <i>écco !</i> | lo ! behold ! | <i>appúnto !</i> | { exactly ! just ! |
| | | <i>pénsáte !</i> | { just think ! * |

The interjections *lássso*, *póvero*, *mísero*, *meschíno*, *beáto* (*me !*), are mere *adjectives*, and when used by a *female*, take the *feminine* termination : — *lásssa*, *póvera*, *mísera* (*me !*), &c. ; and in the plural make, *lásssi*, *póveri* (*nói !*), &c., for the *masculine* ; and *lássse*, *póvere* (*nói !*), &c. for the *feminine* ; as,

LÁSSA ME ! *in che mal' óra* alas ! in what evil hour was I
nacqui, born ;

MÍSERI NÓI ! *che siám, se Id-* miserable that we are ! what
dio ci láschia ? becomes of us, if God for-
sakes us ?

* It is important to observe, that, as some of these interjections are used to express *different*, and even *contrary*, emotions or affections of the mind, their exact signification can only be determined by the *sense* of the words which accompany them, or give rise to the exclamation.

Brávo ! zítto ! chéto ! are also *adjectives*, and, when used in speaking to a *female*, or to *more than one male or female*, follow the same rule ; as,

BRÁVA ! *cóme quándo ?* bravo ! as when ?

ZÍTTI, *un pó' !* hush, a little !

Brávo ! is also used in its superlative, and makes *bravíssimo ! bravíssima ! bravíssimi ! bravíssime*, ‘bravissimo !’

EXAMPLES.

Oimè ! LÁSSA ME ! *dolénte me !* Alas ! unfortunate that I am !
IN CHE MAL' ÓRA NÁCQUI. (Bocc. in what evil hour was I born.
g. 7. n. 2.)

MÍSERI NÓI ! CHE SIÁM, SE ID- Miserable that we are ! what be-
DÍO CI LÁSCIA ? (Alf. Saul. 1. 1.) comes of us, if God forsakes us.

BRÁVA ! CÓME QUÁNDO ? (Manz. Bravo ! as when ?
Prom. Spos. c. 1.)

ZÍTTI, UN PÓ' ! *ch' elle dórmoo.* Hush a little ! for they are sleep-
(Buon. Fier.) ing.

Many of the foregoing interjections are *elliptical expressions* of, and *equivalent* to, *perfect sentences* ; as, *olà*, for instance, which stands for O [*tu, che séi*] LÀ, ‘O thou, who art there’ ; *orsù*, for ÓRA [*lévati or levátevi*] SU, ‘now rise up’ ; *vía*, for [*vá' or andáte*] VÍA ; *chéto*, for [*sta or státe*] CHE'TO, ‘be still’ ; *corággio*, for [*abbii or abbiate*] CORÁ'GGIO, ‘have courage’ ; *viva*, for VIVA [*égli or élla lungaménte,*] ‘may he or she live long’ ; *béne*, for [*sta or va*] BE'NE, ‘it is well’ ; *brávo, bráva*, for [*séi or siéte*] BRA'VO, BRA'VA ; *oh bélla*, for OH [*quésta è*] BE'LLA, ‘oh this is fine’ ; &c. ; to which may be added *máncó mále*, or *méno mále*, ‘less evil,’ ‘not so bad,’ ‘better so’ ; which is often used as an *interjection*, and is equivalent to the phrase [*il*] MA'LE [*è*] MA'NCO, or ME'NO, [*che non*

sarèbbe stàto, se la còsa fòsse andàta altrimènti,] ‘the evil is less than if the thing had happened otherwise,’ ‘it is not so bad as if it had happened otherwise,’ ‘better so than otherwise.’

EXERCISE XXVI.

Ah! how many steps thou lovest through the for-
pàsso — pèrdere⁴ 1 2 sél-
 est! “Ah!” | said he, | “valiant men, ah! com-
va³! dicéa —, “valènte uómo, com-
 panions, ah! brothers, keep (the) your place.” Alas!
págno, fratèllo, tenére luógo.”
 mercy; for heaven’s sake! Alas! blind ungrateful world!
órbo ingràto² móndo¹!
 O! happy souls! Wretched that I am! I have
felíce² ànima¹! avére²
 loved thee more than (the) my own life. Fie! go
amàre³ 1 — víta. andàre
 on. Is it possible, that thou | art | alive? Marry!
óltre. sù vívo?
 I recant (myself.) How many tears, alas! have I
ridíre² 1. lágrima, avére —
 already shed! Woe to you, perverse souls! | never
spàrgere! pràva² ànima¹! non is-
 hope | to see the heaven again. Hush! hush! other-
peràte mái | vedér ciélo —
 wise we begin again. Holla! where art thou? Come!
— éssere da-cápo. éssere ?
 let us see. Up, up! citizens, let every-one arm himself
vedére. cittadino, — 3 armàre² 1
 speedily to the defence. Oh! thou art in great haste
velóce difèsa. avére — gran frétta.
 Alas! how miserable is (the) our fortune! “The cava-
quánto mísero² éssere¹ fortúna! 2 cava-

lier said: "I wish to leave thee, and serve God."
liere³ Dire¹: " volére — lasciár — servir Dío."

The demon replied: "Pshaw! why wishest thou to
² *demónio³ Rispondere¹: " volére² ³ —*

leave me?" O poor me! (*that*) I | shall never be good
lasciáre ¹ ? " | non sarò mái più buò-

again | | for | any thing. Pray! my friend, why wishest
no | | a | ² amíco¹, volére

thou | to give thyself | this trouble? "Alas!" said the
entráre in | fática? " " díre

other, "what is that which thou sayest?" Come!
" éssere díre? "

go, I will wait for thee in the house. Away! do
andáre, aspettáre² — ¹ — cása. —

not have any fear, I will carry thee to the house
avér — páura, pónere² ¹ — cása

safe and sound. Silence, son, do | not make noise |;
sálvo³ ² sáno¹. , figliuólo, — | non far romóre |;

let (*the*) thy father sleep. Oh! you make me laugh.
lasciáre ² — genitóre³ dormire¹. fáre² ¹ ridere.

He cried out: "Oh, oh!" | at | (*the*) which cry the
— Gridáre: " | per | (the) which grído

cranes began to fly. Oh, blind! oh, wretched! oh,
grù cominciáre fuggíre. ciéca! !

foolish man! oh, how infirm thou art! Alas (*him*)!
mátto — ! quánto inférmo² — éssere¹ !

wretched (*him*)! that the hog had been stolen from
! pórcó éssere² imboláre³ —

him — to him. Heyday! how well in tune she is!
— ¹. — ³ tuóno⁴ ¹ stáre² !

Courage, young men, let us assault manly, and with
, giòvane, assaltáre viríle,

cheerful front, these drowsy people. Away, stay there
allégro frónte dormiglióne. , —

with the other dogs.
cáne.

PART III.

ITALIAN SYNTAX.



CHAPTER I.

ORDER AND POSITION OF WORDS.

WORDS may be arranged in Italian either in the *natural order* of the ideas which they are used to convey; as, *io son ricco, e spendo il mio in metter tavola*, 'I am rich, and spend my money in keeping a good table'; or in a somewhat *different order*, in which *euphony* or *emphasis* is consulted; as, *in quella dimorando, poco o niente potrebbe del suo valor dimostrare* [for *potrebbe dimostrare poco o niente del suo valor, dimorando in quella*], 'He could show little or nothing of his valor, remaining there.' Hence there are *two different constructions*, the one called *simple* or *direct*, the other *inverse* or *indirect*.

SIMPLE CONSTRUCTION.

In the *simple construction*, the *subjective* is always put *before the verb*. It is generally a *pronoun*, a *noun*, an *adjective* or a *verb used as a noun*, or a *phrase*; as,

IO amo,

PIÉTRO fugge,

IL BÉLLO piáce,

I love;

Peter flies;

the beautiful pleases;

IL SÚO PARLÁRE *mi piáque* [her speaking] her conversation
 sì, pleased me so;
 CHE TU CON NÓI TI RIMÁN- we should be very glad, if thou
 GA, n' è cáro, wouldst remain with us.

The *objective* is put *after the verb*. It is generally a *pronoun*, a *noun*, an *adjective*, a *verb*, or a *phrase*; as,

guardáte ME, look at me;
ámo GUISCÁRDO, I love Guiscard;
pérdono IL BÉLLO, they lose [the beautiful] the
 beauty;
avéndo compiúto IL SÚO CAN- having finished her singing;
 TÁRE,
significò IL FÁTTO CÓME STÁ- declared the fact as it was.
 VA,

If the *subjective* or *objective* have an *article*, this article is put *before them*; as,

GLI uómini sÓno cápo d'elle [the] men are the head of wo-
 fémmine, men;
 IL capitáno cádde, e sconiós- the captain fell, and sprained
 sì IL piéde, [the foot] his foot.

The *adjectives* belonging to the *subjective* and *objective* are put immediately *after them*; as,

gli scolári MORIGERÁTI e DI- the well-behaved and diligent
 LIGÉNTI stúdiáno, scholars study;
 il maéstro prémia gli scolári the master rewards the atten-
 ATTÉNTI e STUDIÓSI, tive and studious scholars.

Any other word which is *dependent* on the *subjective* or *objective* is also put immediately *after them*; as,

la virtù DI PÁOLO fu rico- the virtue of Paul was ac-
 nosciúta, knowledged;
 riconoscéva néi descendéti it acknowledged in the de-
 la virtù DEL PÁDRE, scendants the virtue [of the
 father] of their father.

The *relative pronoun* is put *after its antecedent*; as,

Lo scolàre, il QUÁLE nascóso the scholar, *who* had concealed
éra, himself.

The *adverb* is put immediately *after the verb*, which it modifies ; as,

àma ARDENTEMENTE la gló- he loves glory *ardently.*
ria,

The *preposition* is put *before the word*, which it governs ; as,

DI sélva IN sélva DAL crudél she flies *from* wood to wood to
s' invóla, avoid the pursuit of the fero-
 cious animal.

The *conjunction* is put *between those parts of a sentence*, which it connects ; as,

gli augellétti, E i pésci, E i the little birds, *and* the fishes,
fióri, E l' érba, *and* the flowers, *and* the
 grass.

The *interjection* has no fixed place, it having no intrinsic relation to the other words ; it is, however, generally put at the beginning of the phrase ; as,

OIMÈ! che è quéllo, che tu alas! what is that you say?
dí'?

EXAMPLES.

Ío SÓNO RÍCCO, E SPÉNDÓ IL I am rich, and spend my money
MÍO IN MÉTTER TÁVOLA, ed onó- in keeping a good table to enter-
ro i miéi concittadini. (Bocc. g. tain my fellow-citizens.
9. n. 9.)

IN QUÉLLA DIMORÁNDÓ, POCO He could show little or nothing
O NIÉNTÉ POTRÉBBE DEL SÚO of his valor, remaining there.
VALÓR DIMOSTRÁRE. (Bocc. g.
10. n. 1.)

Ío ho amáto, e ÀMO GUISCÁR- I have loved, and love Guis-
DO. (Bocc. g. n. 1.) card.

PIÉTRO Boccamázza FÚGGE con Peter Boccamazza flies away
l' Agnolélla, e truóva ladróni. with Agnolella, and meets with
(Bocc. 5. n. 3.) thieves.

IL BÉLLO PIÁCE ágli ócchi, e si ammíra. (Vas.)

The beautiful pleases the eyes, and is admired.

E' L SÚO PARLÁRE, e' l bél víso, e le chióme MI PIÁCQUER sì, ch' io l' ho dinánzi ágli ócchi. (Petr. c. 7.)

And her conversation, and her beautiful face, and her hair pleased me so, that I have her before my eyes.

CHE TU CON NOI TI RIMÁN-GA per quèsta sèra, n' È CÁRO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

We should be very glad, if thou wouldst remain to-night with us.

GUARDÁTE ME, che son di vísta príva. (Pign. Fav.)

Look at me, that am deprived of sight.

Le dónne, quándo arrívano a quaránta ánni, PÉRDONO IL BÉLLO délla gioventúdi-ne, e acquí-stano il béllo matronále. (Lib. Adorn. Donn.)

Women, when they arrive to the age of forty, lose the beauty of youth, and acquire that of matrons.

AVÉNDÓ già COMPIÚTO la bÉlla nínfa IL SÚO CANTÁRE. (Bocc. Am.)

The beautiful nymph having finished her singing.

A lui si raccomandò, e SIGNIFICÒ IL FÁTTO CÓME STÁVA. (Ser. Giov. Fior. Pecor.)

He recommended himself to him, and declared the fact as it was.

GLI UÓMINI SÓNO DÉLLE FÉM-MINE CÁPO, e sènza l' órdine lóro ráde vólte riésce alcúna nóstra ópera a laudévol fine. (Bocc. Intr.)

Men are the head of women, and without their management it seldom happens that any undertaking of ours succeeds well.

IL CAPITÁNO CÁDDE, E SCON-CÍÓSSI IL PIÉDE in fórma, che non potè stáre in piédi. (Matt. Vill. 9. 11.)

The captain fell, and sprained his foot in such a manner, that he could stand no more.

GLI SCOLÁRI MORIGERÁTI E DILIGÉNTI STÚDIANO. (Cort. Osserv.)

The well-behaved and diligent scholars study.

IL MAÉSTRO PRÉMIA GLI SCOLÁ-RI ATTÉNTI E STUDIÓSI. (Buom. Ling. Tosc.)

The master rewards the attentive and studious scholars.

LA VIRTÙ DI PÁOLO FU debita-mén-te RICONOSCIÚTA. (Cavalc.)

The virtue of Paul was duly acknowledged.

Ma la ricordévol pátria RICO-NOSCÉVA NÉ' DISCENDÉNTI LA VIRTÙ DEL PÁDRE. (Bott. Stor. Am. l. 9.)

But the grateful country acknowledged in the descendants the virtues of their father.

LO SCOLÁRE, IL QUÁLE, *in sul*
fáre délla nótte, col súo fánte,
préssó délla torrétta, NASCÓSO
ÉRA. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

The scholar, who, when it grew
night, had concealed himself, with
his servant, near the small tower.

PIÉTRO ÁMA ARDENTEMENTE LA
GLÓRIA. (Cort. Osserv.)

Peter loves glory ardently.

DI SÉLVA IN SÉLVA DAL CRU-
DÉL S' INVÓLA. (Ariost. Fur. 1.
34.)

She flies from wood to wood to
avoid the pursuit of the ferocious
animal.

L' acque parlan d' amóre, e
l' áura, e i rámi, — E GLI AUGEL-
LÉTTI, E I PÉSCI, E I FIÓRI, E
L' ÉRBA; — *Tútti insiême pre-*
gándo ch' ò sempr' ámi. (Petr.
s. 239.)

The waters speak of love, and
the air, and the boughs, and the
little birds, and the fishes, and the
flowers, and the grass; entreating
all together that I should always
love.

OIMÈ! CHE È QUELLO, CHE
TU DÍ? (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Alas! what is it you say?

INVERSE CONSTRUCTION.

With regard to *inverse construction* no certain rules
can be established, it *varying* according to the *taste* and
ear of the speaker or writer. It can only be said, that
in this construction the *subjective* may be put *after the*
verb; as,

chiése L' IMPERATÓRE álla
Diéta tremila caválli,
présemi allóra LA MÍA SCÓR-
TA per máno,

the Emperor asked of the Diet
three thousand horses;
then *my* guide took me by the
hand.

The *objective* may be put *before the verb*; as,

s'ingégnano IL LÓRO TÉMPO
di consumáre,
GRÁNDI BÉSTIE hánno né' ló-
ro bóschi,

they endeavour to pass away
their time;
they have *large* beasts in their
woods.

The *adjectives* belonging to the *subjective* or the
objective, may be put *before them*; as,

quantúnque fósse TÓNDO e although he was a foolish man.
GRÓSSO uómo,

The other words dependent on the subjective or objective, may also be put before them ; as,

il [DI] cúi nóme éra Efige- whose name was Ephigenia.
nia,

The adverb may be put before the verb, which it modifies ; as,

PIETOSAMÉNTE *il chiamáva,* she did call him with a lamentable voice.

The preposition may be put after the word, which it governs ; as,

io TI verrò APPRÉSSO, I will come after thee.

EXAMPLES.

CHIÉSE L' IMPERATÓRE ÁLLA
DIÉTA, *per tále imprésa, tremí-*
LA CAVÁLLI, e sedicimila fánti.
(Mach. lett.)

The Emperor asked of the Diet,
for such an undertaking, three
thousand horses, and sixteen thou-
sand foot-soldiers.

PRÉSEMI ALLÓRA LA MÍA SCÓR-
TA PER MÁNO. (Dant. Inf. 13.)

Then my guide took me by the
hand.

S' INGÉGNANO IL LÓRO TÉMPO
DI CONSUMÁRE. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

They endeavour to pass away
their time.

GRÁNDI BÉSTIE HÁNNO NÉ' LÓ-
RO BÓSCI. (Dav. Germ.)

They have large beasts in their
woods.

QUANTÚNQUE FÓSSE TÓNDO E
GRÓSSO UÓMO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

Although he was a foolish man.

IL CÚI NÓME ÉRA EFIGENÍA.
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Whose name was Ephigenia.

Assái vólte, la nótte, PIETOSA-
MÉNTE IL CHIAMÁVA. (Bocc. g.
4. n. 5.)

A great many times, during the
night, did she call him with a la-
mentable voice.

Or vía ! méttiti avánti, io TI
VERRÒ APPRÉSSO. (Bocc. g. 2.
n. 5.)

Come ! walk before, I will come
after thee.

These inversions are very common in Italian, and add great expression and beauty to the phrase ; but in using them we must always consult euphony. A learner ought never to avail himself of such liberties, until, by a competent knowledge of the language, and a long perusal of the classics, he be able to appreciate their value and to make use of them with propriety.

EXERCISE XXVII.

Rome was full of funerals, the capitol of victims.
Róma piéno mortório; campidóglio vútima.

I routed three legions, and three lieutenants. This house
atterráre legióne, legáto. cása

is built | on | a high situation ; it has gar-
fabbricare in | eminente² síto¹ ; — avére giar-

dens, it has groves, it has plains and hills. The
díno, — bósko, — pianúra collína.

conversation of Montanus pleased so-much the sen-
parláre Montáno piacére sená-

ate, that Elvidius Priscus hoped | to | be able to
to, Elvidio Prisco speráre | di | potére ab-

conquer even Marcellus. Many wives have spoiled
báttère Marcélio. ² móglie³ ¹ guastáre

(the) their husbands. He made him dress nobly.
— maríto. — fáre² ¹ vestíre⁴ nóbile³.

Fulvius, who had been consul, and had already | tri-
Fúlvio, — — éssere cónsole, — — tri-

umphed over the | Gauls, the most illustrious of (the)
onfatóre dé' | Gállo, illústre

thy followers, was killed by the Patricians in a bath
segúace, uccídere Pádre bágno

together with a son | of his | as beautiful as innocent.
figliuólo² | — ¹ | — leggiádرو innocénte.

There came a merchant | of Cyprus, | much beloved
 — *Venire mercatante* | *Cipriano*, | ³ *amare*⁴
 by him. Thou seest, that it is useless to pray
¹ ² *vedere*, — *inutile* — —
 and to weep — (the praying and the weeping.)
 — — — *pregare* *piangere*.
 Nothing else has been left to me of the inherit-
⁸ — *essere*¹¹ — *rimanere*⁹ ¹⁰ ¹ ² *eredi-*
 ance of (the) my ancestors, except (the) my honor;
³ ⁴ ⁵ ⁶ *tà*³ *avolo*⁷, ¹² ¹³ — *onestà*;
 and that I intend | to | guard, and | to | preserve
² *intendere*¹ | *di* | *guardare*, | *di* | *servare*
 as long as I live — (the life will last to me).
 — — — *durare*² ¹
 To be contented — (the being contented) | with | (the)
 — — — *essere contento* | *di* |
 his own condition, to moderate (the) excessive desires,
proprio stato, *moderare* *sovérchio*² *desiderio*¹,
 not to allow himself neither to be transported | by |
lasciare — *trasportare* | *ad* |
 excessive joy in (the) prosperities, nor to be overcome
eccessivo gioia *prosperità*, — *abbattere*
 | by | (the) misfortunes, form the character of a wise
 | in | *disgrazia*, *formare* *carattere* *saggio*²
 man. He could not appease the angry mother with
*uomo*¹. — *potere*⁵ ⁴ *allutare*⁶ ¹ *irato*² *madre*³
 any act of generosity. Plato asserts, that in
niuno — — *larghezza*. *Platone*² *Affermare*¹, —
 literary disputes — (in (the) disputes of (the) letters)
 — — — *disputazione* *lettera*
 it is more useful to be conquered — (the being
 — — — *utile* — — — *essere*
 conquered) than to conquer.
vincere *vincere*.

CHAPTER II.

CONCORDANCE OR AGREEMENT OF WORDS.

CONCORDANCE OF ARTICLES.

ARTICLES agree with nouns, in gender and number ;
as,

| | |
|--|----------------------------|
| IL <i>fratéllo</i> , LA <i>sorélla</i> , | the brother, the sister ; |
| LI <i>pádri</i> , LE <i>mádri</i> , | the fathers, the mothers ; |
| LA <i>dónna</i> , IL <i>maríto</i> , | the wife, the husband ; |
| I <i>figliuóli</i> , | the children. |

EXAMPLES.

L' un fratéllo l' áltro abbandonáva, e LA SORÉLLA IL FRATÉLLO, e spésse vólte LA DÓNNA IL SÚO MARÍTO. (Bocc. Intr.) One brother abandoned the other, and the sister the brother, and oftentimes the wife her husband.

E che maggiór cósà è, LI PÁDRI e LE MÁDRI, I FIGLIUÓLI di visitàre e di servíre schivávano. (Bocc. Intr.) And what is more, the fathers and the mothers shunned to visit and serve their children.

CONCORDANCE OF ADJECTIVES.

Adjectives, as we have already observed at p. 63, are to agree with their *substantives*, in gender and number ; as,

| | |
|---|------------------------------|
| uómo <i>dótto</i> , <i>buón</i> a <i>gén</i> te, | a learned man, good people ; |
| <i>Bél</i> le <i>dón</i> ne, <i>legg</i> iá <i>dri</i> <i>fanciú</i> lli, | fair women, pretty youths. |

Adjectives are also to agree with *personal, conjunctive, and relative pronouns*, in *gender and number* ; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| IO (fem.) <i>son VIVA,</i> | I am alive ; |
| VÓI (masc.) <i>siéte LONTÁNI,</i> | you are far ; |
| VI (fem.) <i>lascio LIBERA di Nicoluccio,</i> | I leave you at the disposal of Nicoluccio ; |
| <i>per renderci (masc.) FÓRTI ed INVINCÍBILI,</i> | to make us strong and invincible ; |
| <i>quándo LA videro SÓLA,</i> | when they saw her alone ; |
| <i>li QUÁLI érano móltto LÚNGHI,</i> | which were very long. |

When *two or more substantives singular* of the *same gender* come together, the *adjectives* belonging to them are put in the *plural*, agreeing with a noun of the *same gender* understood ; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| LÍCIA e CALLÍMACO [quésti due indivídui] <i>sóno RÍCCHI,</i> | Lycias and Callimachus [<i>these two individuals</i>] are rich ; |
| MARÍA e LUCÍA [quéste due fanciúlle] <i>sóno PÓVERE,</i> | Mary and Lucy [<i>these two girls</i>] are poor. |

If the substantives are of *different genders* or *different numbers*, the adjectives are put in the *plural*, agreeing with a *masculine noun* understood ; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| IL PÁDRE e LA MÁDRE <i>délla LÍSA, CONTÉNTI, févero grandíssima fésta,</i> | the father and the mother of Lisa, both glad, expressed very great joy ; |
| LA CÓRTE TÚTTA, I SOVRÁNI <i>sóno sommaménte CONTÉNTI,</i> | the whole court, the sovereigns are well satisfied. |

EXCEPTION.

If, however, one of the substantives is *preceded* by the preposition *con*, 'with,' 'in company with' ; then the *adjective* or *participle* used as an *adjective*, may agree either with the *other substantive*, or with a *noun* in the *plural* understood ; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>essendosi DIONÉO con gli álti giovani MÉSSO a giucàre,</i> | Dioneo and the other youths having set themselves to play ; |
| <i>essendosi LA DÓNNA COL GIÓVANE PÓSTI a távola,</i> | the lady and the young man having sat down to table. |

When there are in a phrase *several substantives* of different gender and different number, separated from their adjective by a *verb* either *expressed* or *understood*; the adjective is put in the *plural*, agreeing with a *masculine* noun understood; as,

LE mie CÁSE ed I LUÓGHI my houses and the public pla-
púbblci di Róma, SON PIÉ- ces of Rome are filled with
NI d' antiche immáginì, ancient images;

IL PÁDRE di léi e LA MÁDRE, both her father and her mother,
[esséndo] DOLORÓSI di [being] grieved at this acci-
quésto accidénte, l' alávano, dent, relieved her.

If several *names of inanimate beings* occur in the same phrase, and they are *not separated* from their adjective by a *verb*; this *adjective* agrees with the *nearest* noun;* as,

onóri e GLÓRIA NUÓVA, new honors and glory;
con bárba e CRÍNI BAGNÁTI, with a dripping beard and hair;
l' úna e l' ÁLTRA MAN MÓZZA, both hands cut off.

The adjective agrees also with the *nearest* noun, when there are in the same phrase several substantives, and the *quality* expressed by that adjective is *affirmed* or *denied* to belong, *successively* or *alternatively*, to either of them; as,

Piétro o MARÍA è MÓRTA, either Peter or Mary is dead;
nè Francésca, nè GIOVÁNNI neither Frances nor John has
non è PARTÍTO, gone;
un tizzo, un carbóne, ÚNA a brand, a coal, a spark might
FAVÍLLA è ÁTTA ad appic- set fire.
cár fuóco,

* Contrary to this rule is the following example in Boccaccio:

Se cosí gridáto avéste, élla avrébbe cosí
L' A'LTRA CO'SCIA, e l' áltro pié fuór
MANDA'TA. (G. 6. n. 4.)

If you had cried out so, it (the crane)
would have likewise put out the other
leg and the other foot.

EXCEPTIONS.

An adjective accompanied with a substantive *feminine* applicable to a man, is put in the *masculine* gender ; as,

LA PERSÓNA *quándo é* TRIBOLÁ-TO, when a person is afflicted ;

QUÉLLA BÉSTIA [di Tófano] *éra* pur DISPÓSTO, that stupid ass [Tofano] was disposed.

The adjective *mézzo*, 'half,' when it *precedes* a substantive, *agrees* with it in *gender* ; but when it *follows*, it remains *invariable* ; as,

in súlla MÉZZA NÓTTE, about midnight ;

úna líbbra e MÉZZO di castróne, one pound and a half of mutton ;

ventitrè e MÉZZO caráti, twenty-three carats and a half.

The adjective *sálvo*, signifying 'except' ; remains *invariable* ; as,

sÁLVO la Márca Trivigiána, except the Trevisan March ;

sÁLVO quélle délle cásè eccettu-áte per Ghibellini, except those of the families excluded as Ghibellines.

EXAMPLES.

UÓMO DÓTTO *délle Scrittúre*. A man learned in Holy Writ.
(Cavalc. Att. Apost. 113.)

NÁta di BUÓNA e virtúosa GÉNTE. (Ariost. Fur. 18. 82.) Born of good and virtuous people.

Quánte BÉLLE DÓNNE, *quánti LEGGIÁDRI FANCIÚLLI*, *la séra vegnénte*, *nell' áltro móndo cenárono con li lóro passáti* ! (Bocc. Intr.) How many fair women, how many pretty youths, the coming evening, supped in the other world with their departed friends !

Ío SON VÍVA, *la Dío mercè*. I am alive, thank God.
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 9.)

Considerándo, che vÓI SIÉTE dálle vóstre dónne LONTÁNI. Considering, that you are far from your wives.
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Madónna, omái da ógni proméssa fáttami ío vi assólvo, e LÍBERA VI LÁSCIO DI NICOLÚCCIO. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 4.) Madam, I free you from all your promises to me, and I leave you at the disposal of Nicoluccio.

*Egli viène ad unire la sua pos-
sanza còlla nostra debolezza, PER
RÉNDERCI FÓRTI ED INVINCÍBILI.*
(Gang.)

He comes to unite his strength
with our weakness, to make us
strong and invincible.

*Li quáli, QUÁNDÒ LA VÍDERO
SÓLA, díssero.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

Who, when they saw her alone,
said.

*Alessándro, levátosi presta-
mente, con tutto che i panni del
mórto avésse indósso, LI QUÁLI
ÉRANO MÓLTÒ LÚNGHI, pure andò
via altresì.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

Alexander, getting up quickly,
although he was dressed in the
clothes of the deceased, which
were very long, went away like-
wise.

*Messér LÍCIA E CALLÍMACO
SON RÍCCHI.* (Mach. Com.)

Messer Lycias and Messer Cal-
limachus are rich.

*Ma MARÍA E LUCÍA SÓNO PÓ-
VERE.* (Mach. Com.)

But Mary and Lucy are poor.

*Perdicóne, e 'L PÁDRE E LA
MÁDRE DÉLLA LÍSA, ed élla al-
tresì CONTÉNTI, GRANDÍSSIMA
FÉSTA FÉCERO.* (Bocc. g. 10.
n. 7.)

Perdicone, and the father and
the mother of Lisa, and herself, all
glad, expressed great joy.

*Doveváte díirmi, che LA CÓRTE
TÚTTA, che I SOVRÁNI SÓNO SOM-
MAMÉNTÈ CONTÉNTI.* (Metast.
lett.)

You ought to have told me, that
the whole court, and the sove-
reigns are well satisfied.

*ESSÉNDOSI DIONÉO CON GLI ÀL-
TRI GIÓVANI MÉSSO A GIUCÁRE.*
(Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

Dioneo and the other youths
having set themselves to play.

*ESSÉNDOSI LA DÓNNA COL GIÓ-
VANE PÓSTI A TÁVOLA per cenàre.*
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

The lady and the young man
having sat down to supper.

*LE MÍE CÁSE ED I LUÓGHI PÚB-
BLICI DI RÓMA SON PIÉNI D' AN-
TÍCHE IMMÁGINI dé' miéi mag-
gióri.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

My houses and the public places
of Rome are filled with ancient im-
ages of my ancestors.

*IL PÁDRE DI LÉI E LA MÁDRE,
DOLORÓSI DI QUÉSTO ACCIDÉNTÈ,
in ciò che si potéva, L' ATÁVANO.*
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 7.)

Both her father and her mother,
grieved at that accident, did all in
their power to relieve her.

*E còsa manifestíssima, che óg-
gi non viène in consùlta se ha
a rifiutàre l' occasione d' acqui-
stàre ONÓRI E GLÓRIA NUÓVA.*
(Guicc.)

It is a manifest thing, that none
comes now to a consultation
whether he is to refuse the oppor-
tunity of gaining new honors and
glory.

L' Océano si farà dálla destra,
un omaccióne CON BÁRBA E CRÍ-
NI BAGNÁTI. (Ann. Car. lett.)

As for the Ocean, it is to be represented on the right, as a large man with a dripping beard and hair.

Ed un, che avéa l' úNA E
L' ÁLTRA MAN MÓZZA, — Disse.
(Dant. Inf. 28.)

And one, who had both hands cut off, said.

PIÉTRO O MARÍA È MÓRTA.
(Mach. Com.)

Either Peter or Mary is dead.

NÈ FRANCÉSICA NÈ GIOVÁNNI
NON È PARTÍTO. (Buon. Tanc.)

Neither Frances nor John has gone.

UN TÍZZO, UN CARBÓNE, ÚNA
FAVÍLLA È ÁTTA AD APPICCÁR
FUÓCO. (Cavalc.)

A brand, a coal, a spark might set fire.

LA PERSÓNA QUÁNDÒ È TRIBO-
LÁTO si dice e pènsa, che Iddío
P' ábbia in ódio. (Fra. Giord.
Pred.)

When a person is afflicted, people say and believe God hates him.

Li prièghi non giovávano al-
cúna còsa, perchè QUÉLLA BÉS-
TIA ÉRA PUR DISPÓSTO a volére
..... (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)

Entreaties were of no use, because that stupid ass [Tofano] was disposed to wish

Viéntene IN SÚLLA MÉZZA
NÓTTE. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Come about midnight.

Tógli ÚNA LÍBBRA E MÉZZO DI
CASTRÓNE. (Burch. p. 2. s. 1.)

Take a pound and a half of mutton.

LA monéta di VENTITRÈ E MÉZ-
ZO CARÁTI. (Giov. Vill. l. 8.
c. 58.)

The coins of twenty-three carats and a half.

Rendégli la Signoría di Lom-
bardia, SALVO LA MÁRCA TRIVI-
GIÁNA. (Giov. Vill. l. 3. c. 5.)

He restored to him the Signory of Lombardy, except the Trevisan March.

Fécero órdine e decretó, che
 ciascúno potésse uscire dal bándo,
SÁLVO QUÉLLI DÉLLE CÁSE EC-
CETTUÁTE PER GHIBELLÍNI.
(Giov. Vill. l. 6.)

They ordained and decreed, that every one could return from banishment, except those of the families excluded as Ghibellines.

CONCORDANCE OF NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

Numeral adjectives agree with their *substantives*, in gender and number ; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>Platóné vivétte OTTANTÚNO</i> ÁNNO, | Plato lived eighty-one years ; |
| <i>páre descéndere áltre NOVAN-</i> TÚNA RUÓTA, | he seems to descend ninety-one more circles ; |
| <i>il TÉRZO GIÓRNO dall' appa-</i> <i>rizióne déi sopradétti sé-</i> <i>gni,</i> | the third day after the appearance of the abovementioned symptoms ; |
| <i>in quéi PRÍMI GIÓRNI, vi vo-</i> <i>lò sópra la tésta un' áqui-</i> <i>la,</i> | in those first days, an eagle flew over your head. |

EXAMPLES.

Abbiámo di PLATÓNE, che és-
so VIVÉTTE OTTANTÚNO ANNO.
(Dant. Conv.) They say that Plato lived eighty-one years.

Pói per la medésima vía PÁRE
DESCÉNDERE ÁLTRE NOVANTÚNA
RUÓTA. (Dant. Conv.) Then he seems to descend ninety-one more circles by the same way.

A'nzi quási tútti, infra IL TÉR-
ZO GIÓRNO DALL' APPARIZIÓNE
DÉI SOPRADÉTTI SÉGNI, morivano.
(Bocc. Intr.) Nay almost all died the third day after the appearance of the abovementioned symptoms.

E che IN QUÉI PRÍMI GIÓRNI,
di sul mónte délla Trinità, VI
VOLO SÓPRA LA TÉSTA UN' ÁQUI-
LA. (Bemb.) And that in those first days, on the mountain of the Trinity, an eagle flew over your head.

CONCORDANCE OF PRONOUNS.

Adjective pronouns agree with their *substantives*, in gender and number ; as,

tenéte QUÉSTO DENÁRO, take this money ;

non rimarrèbbe a sostenér there would not remain any
 NESSÚNA PÉNA, punishment to suffer.

EXCEPTION.

The pronoun *tutto*, preceded by the preposition *per*, 'through'; remains *invariable*; as,

per TUTTO Róma,

[through all *or*] all over Rome ;

per TUTTO la càsu,

all over the house.

Possessive pronouns agree with the thing possessed, and not with the possessor ; as,

*Mónna Giovánna sen' andá-
 va con quèsto sÚO FI-
 GLIUÓLO,*

Monna Giovanna used to go
 with this son of hers ;

*Frescò avéva úna SÚA NEPÓ-
 TE,*

Frescò had a niece.

The relative pronoun *quále*, 'which'; agrees with its antecedent, in gender and number ; as,

*quél CUÓRE, IL QUÁLE la lié-
 ta fortúna non avéa potúto
 apríre,*

that heart, which propitious
 fortune had not been able to
 move.

If the antecedent consists of *two or more nouns* of different gender or number, the relative *quále* agrees with the nearest noun ; as,

*la virtù è l' ONÓRE DEL QUÁ-
 LE è dotáta,*

the virtue and honor with
 which she is endowed ;

*I QUÁLI TÉMPJ e cappélle ri-
 empíe di paraménti,*

which temples and chapels he
 filled with ornaments.

EXAMPLES.

*Signóra, TENÉTE QUÉSTO DE-
 NÁRO. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 1.)*

Madam, take this money.

*Che NON RIMARRÉBBE A SOS-
 TENÉR PÉNA NESSÚNA nel purga-
 tório per gli peccáti. (Pass.)*

That there would not remain
 in purgatory any punishment to
 suffer for sins.

SÓNO státo PER TÚTTO RÓMA.
— L' ho cercáto PER TÚTTO LA
CÁSA. (Salv. Avvert. vol. 1. l. 3.)

I have been all over Rome. —
I have looked for it all over the
house.

MÓNNA GIOVÁNNA CON QUÉSTO
SÚO. FIGLIUÓLO SEN' ANDÁVA. *in*
contádo. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

Monna Giovanna used to go
into the country with this son of
hers.

Úno, che si chiamò FRESCÒ,
AVÉVA ÚNA SÚA NEPÓTE. (Bocc.
g. 6. n. 8.)

A certain man, called Frescò,
had a niece.

QUÉL CUÓRE, IL QUÁLE LA LIÉ-
TA FORTÚNA DI GIRÓLAMO NON
AVÉA POTÚTO APRÍRE, *la miséria*
p' apérse. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 8.)

That heart, which the propitious
fortune of Jerome had not been
able to open, was opened by his
misery.

LA VIRTÙ E L' ONÓRE DEL
QUÁLE È DOTÁTA. (Bocc. g. 5.
n. 6.)

The virtue and honor with which
she is endowed.

Óltre di quέsto, fέce fáre altári
e cappélle splendidissime, I QUÁLI
TÉMPJ E CAPPÉLLE RIEMPIÉ DI
PARAMÉNTI. (Mach. Stor. Fior.
l. 7.)

Besides that, he caused very
splendid altars and chapels to be
built, which temples and chapels
he filled with ornaments.

CONCORDANCE OF VERBS.

Verbs are to agree with their *subjectives*, either *expressed* or *understood*, in *number* and *person*; as,

ÍO TÌ CONSOLERÒ,

I will gratify thee;

VÓI NON UDÍSTE,

you did not hear;

[ÍO] BRÁMO *la mórte*,

I desire death.

When the subjective *consists* of *several* nouns, which *all concur* simultaneously to *perform* the *action* of the verb, the verb *agrees* with a *noun* in the *plural* understood; as,

CONSÍGLIO *e* RAGIÓNÉ [qué-
ste dúc cóse] CONDÚCONO
la vittória,

advice and reason [*these two*
things] lead to victory;

CALANDRÍNO, BRÚNO, e BUF-
FALMÁCCO [quèsti tre sog-
gètti] VÁNNO cercándo di
trovár l' elitrópia,

nè LA SÚA PARTÍTA, nè LA
SÚA LÚNGA DIMÓRA, nè LA
SVENTURÁTA SÚA MÓRTE,
me l' HÁNNO POTÚTO trár-
re dal cuóre,

Calandrino, Bruno, and Buffal-
macco [*these three persons*]
go in search of the helio-
trope;*

neither his departure, nor his
long absence, nor his la-
mentable death, has been
able to take him out of my
heart.

When there are in a phrase *several subjectives*, and these are of two or more *different persons*; as, *io e tu*, 'I and thou'; *tu ed egli*, 'thou and he'; &c., the verb *agrees* with a *personal pronoun* in the *plural* understood.

Thus, if one of the subjectives is *io*, 'I'; the pronoun understood with which the verb will agree, is *nói*, 'we'; if one of the subjectives is *tu*, and *io* is not one of the others, the pronoun understood is *vói*, 'you'; and if the subjectives are all of the *third* person, the pronoun understood is *églino*, *élleno*, or *éssi*, 'they'; as,†

TU dall' ún láto e STÉCCHI
dall' áltro [vói].mì VERRÉTE
SOSTENÉNDÓ,

cóme sài tu, chi MÍO MARÍTO o
ío [nói] cì SIÁMO?

ÉGLI e ÉLLA [éssi] CENÁRONO
un póco di cárne saláta,

TU, ÉGLI, SÍRO, e ÍO [nói] PI-
GLIERÁMO úno per

vorréi che VÓI o ÉGLINO mì DI-
CÉSTE,

thou on one side and Stecchi on
the other [*you*] will support
me;

how dost thou know who my hus-
band and I [*we*] are?

he and she [*they*] supped on a lit-
tle salt beef;

thou, he, Cyrus, and I [*we*] will
take a man for

I wish that either you or they
would tell me.

If the subjective consists of *several* nouns, and the *action of the verb* can be performed, either successively or

* A kind of precious stone, which was believed to possess the virtue of rendering invisible the persons who carried it about them. — See Dant. Inf. 24; Bocc. g. 8. n. 3; Franc. Sacch. Op. Div. 93.

† There are two examples in Dante in which this rule appears to have been disregarded for the sake of rhyme:

Tósto che IL DU'CA ed ío nel légno
FU'Í. (Dant. Inf. 8.)

Dé' quái nè ío, nè IL DU'CA M'íO
s' ACCO'RSÈ. (Dant. Inf.)

but such licenses are not to be followed.

As soon as my leader and I entered in
the boat;

Of whom neither I nor my leader was
aware:

alternatively, by *either of them*, the *verb agrees* with the *nearest noun* ; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| MUÓVASI LA CAPRÁIA e la Gorgóna, | may Capraia and Gorgona rise from their foundations ; |
| quál fortuna o DESTÍNO quag- giù ti MÉNA ? | what fortune or destiny brings thee here below ? |
| non Cinna, non SÍLLA SI- GNOREGGIÒ lungaménte, | neither Cinna nor Sylla ruled long. |

Sometimes one of the nouns, which form the subjective of the verb, is a *word* which in itself *includes* the *signification* of all the *others*, and then the verb *agrees* directly with *this word* ; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| nè voi, nè ÁLTRI mi POTRÀ più dire ch' io non l' ábbia vedúta, | neither you nor any other one will be able to tell me any longer that I have not seen it ; |
| nè pióggia cadúta, nè ácqua gittáta, nè ÁLTRO UMIDÓRE gli SPEGNÉVA, | neither the rain which had fal- len, nor the water which they threw on it, nor any other wet thing extinguished them. |

If the subjective consists of two nouns, the one of which is, as it were, a *part* of the other which expresses the *whole*, the verb *agrees* with the *whole*, and not with the part ; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| la maggiór pártte dé' SUÓI SÓ- NO mórti, | the greater part of his friends are dead ; |
| una infinità di STROMÉNTI FÚRONO preparáti, | a great number of instruments were prepared. |

Sometimes the noun expressing the *whole* is *understood* ; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| la maggiór partita [di indi- vidui] FÚRONO mórti, | the greater part [of the indi- viduals] were killed. |
|--|---|

When the subjective is a *collective* noun, the *verb* is put in the *singular*; * as,

| | |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| <i>perchè</i> QUÉL PÓPOLO È sì <i>émpio</i> ? | why is that people so fell? |
| m' APPARÌ ÚNA GÉNTÉ d' <i>ánime</i> , | a troop of spirits appeared to me; |
| VENÌA MAGGIÓR FRÓTTA <i>di Románi</i> , | there came a greater crowd of Romans. |

If the subjective is a *verb* used as a *noun*, or a *phrase*, the *verb* is put in the *singular*; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| IL VOLÉRE SOTTOMÉTTERE LE MIE FÓRZE A GROSSÍSSIMI PÉSÌ, m' È <i>agíone di quésta infermità</i> , | the wish to oppose my strength to very heavy burdens is the occasion of this weakness. |
|--|--|

Sometimes the subjective of the verb is *represented* by the *relative* pronoun *che*, 'who,' 'which'; and then the verb *agrees* with the *noun* or *pronoun*, *represented* by *che*; either *expressed* or *understood*; † as,

| | |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| i' son Beatrice <i>che</i> ti FÁCCIO <i>andàre</i> , | I am Beatrice, who bids thee to go; |
|--|-------------------------------------|

* Instances may be quoted from the classics, however, in which the *verb* is put in the *plural*; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| L'anno <i>che</i> QUE'LLA GE'NTE allór CANTÀ'RO. (Dant. Purg. 32.) | The hymn, which those people then sung. |
|--|---|

| | |
|---|--|
| Potéte vedére còme IL COMU'NE PO'POLO E'RANO <i>ignorànti del véro Iddio</i> . (Giov. Vill. l. i. c. 26.) | You may see how ignorant of the true God the common people were. |
|---|--|

| | |
|--|--|
| LA SU'A FAMIGLIA AVE'VANO <i>un dì preso un pentoláio per malleveria</i> . (Nov. Ant. 83.) | One day his family took a potter for bail: |
|--|--|

but this usage is carefully avoided by modern writers.

† Examples may be found, nevertheless, in which the verb *agrees* directly with the *relative* pronoun *che*, without any reference to the noun or pronoun, which it represents; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>Io son colei, CHE</i> ti DIÈ <i>tánta guérra</i> , — <i>E</i> COMPIÈ <i>sua giornàta innánzi séra</i> . (Petr. s. 361.) | I am she, who caused thee so much trouble, and who closed her day before its evening. |
|--|---|

| | |
|---|--|
| Or s'è <i>tu</i> <i>quella</i> <i>Corisca, CHE</i> <i>tradito</i> m' HA <i>in tanti módi</i> ? — <i>Corisca son ben io, — CH'</i> <i>agli ócchi tuói</i> — <i>Un témpo</i> FU <i>sì cara</i> . (Guar. Past. Fid. 2. 6.) | Now art thou that Corisca, who has betrayed me in so many different ways? — I am indeed that Corisca, who was once so dear in your eyes. |
|---|--|

io son colui, che TÉNNI ámbò
le chiávi,

poëta, [tu] che mi GUÍDI,
O fráti, [vói] che SIÉTE
giúnti all' occidènte,

uno dé' sètte RÉGI, che ASSÍ-
SERO Tèbe,

úno di QUÉGLI, che il PÓSERO
in croce,

I am he, who held both the
keys;

poet! [thou] who art my guide;
O brothers! [you] who have
now reached the west;

one of the seven kings, who be-
sieged Thebes;

one of those, who put him on
the cross.

EXAMPLES.

ÍO TI CONSOLERÒ di cosí lúngo
desto. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)

Grazióse dónne, VÓI NON UDÍ-
STE fórse mái díre. (Bocc. g. 3.
n. 10.)

Che per minór martír LA MÓR-
TE BRÁMO. (Bocc. g. 4. Canz.)

CONSÍGLIO E RAGIÓNÉ CONDÚ-
CONO LA VITTÓRIA. (Dav. St.)

CALANDRÍNO, BRÚNO, E BUF-
FALMÁCCO VÁNNO CERCÁNDO DI
TROVÁR L' ELITRÓPIA, e Calan-
dríno se la créde avér trováta.
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

NÈ LA SÚA PARTÍTA, NÈ LA
SÚA LÚNGA DIMÓRA, NÈ LA SVEN-
TURÁTA SÚA MÓRTE, ME L' HÁN-
NO POTÚTO TRÁRRE DAL CUÓRE.
(Bocc.)

TU DALL' ÚN LÁTO, E STÉCCHI
DALL' ÁLTRO, MI VERRÉTE SOS-
TENÉNDO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

"COME," dísse la dónna, "SÁI
TU CHI MÍO MARÍTO O ÍO CI SIÁ-
MO?"

ÉGLI E ÉLLA CENÁRONO UN
PÓCO DI CÁRNE SALÁTA. (Bocc.
g. 7. n. 1.)

I will gratify thee in so long a
desire.

Charming ladies, perhaps you
never heard say.

I desire death to lessen my suf-
ferings.

Advice and reason lead to vic-
tory.

Calandrino, Bruno, and Buffal-
macco go in search of the *helio-
trope*, and Calandrino believes he
has found it.

Neither his departure, nor his
long absence, nor his lamentable
death, have been able to take him
out of my heart.

Thou on one side, and Stecchi
on the other, will support me.

"How dost thou know," said
the lady, "who my husband and
I are?"

He and she supped on a little
salt beef.

TU, ÉGLI, SÍRO, E ÍO FIGLIE-
RÉMO ÚNO PER (Mach.
Mandrag.)

VORRÉI CHE VÓI O ÉGLINO MI
DICÉSTE. (Ben. Varch.)

MUÓVASI LA CAPRÁIA E LA
GORGÓNA, — *E fáccian siépe ad
A'rno in su la fôce.* (Dant. Inf.
c. 33.)

QUÁL FORTÚNA O DESTÍNO, —
*A'nzi l' último dì, QUAGGIÙ TI
MÉNA?* (Dant. Inf. 15.)

NON CÍNNA, NON SÍLLA, SI-
GNOREGGIÒ LUNGAMÉNTE. (Dav.
Stor.)

“Fáteci dipíngere la Cortesía.”
— *“Io cèla farò dipíngere di
maniera, che mái NÈ VÓI, NÈ
ÁLTRI, con ragióne, MI POTRÀ
PIÙ DÍRE, CH' ÍO NON L' ÁBBIA
VEDÚTA, nè conosciúta.”* (Bocc.
g. 1. n. 8.)

NÈ PIÓGGIA CADÚTA, NÈ ÁC-
QUA GITTÁTA, NÈ ÁLTRO UMIDÓ-
RE GLI SPEGNÉVA. (Dav. Ann.)

Ciascúna di nòi sa che DÉ'
SUÓI SÓNO LA MAGGIÓR PÁRTE
MÓRTI. (Bocc. Intr.)

ÚNA INFINITÀ DI STROMÉNTI
da dar martório FÚRONO PRE-
PARÁTI. (Fir. As. 71.)

LA MAGGIÓR PARTÍTA FÚRONO
MÓRTI *e tagliáti, e páрте presi.*
(Giov. Vill. l. 7: c. 19.)

Dímmi, PERCHÈ QUÉL PÓPOLO
È SÌ ÉMPIO — *Incóntr' á' miéi in
ciascúna súa lègge?* (Dant. Inf.
10.)

Da man sinístra M' APPARÌ
ÚNA GÉNTE — D' ÁNIME, *che mo-
viéno i piè ver nòi.* (Dant. Purg.
3.)

Thou, he, Syrus, and I, will
take a man for

I wish that either you or they
would tell me.

May Capraia and Gorgona rise
from their foundations, and dam up
the mouth of Arno.

What fortune or destiny brings
thee here below, before thy last
day?

Neither Cinna, nor Sylla ruled
long.

“Cause Liberality to be paint-
ed there.” — “I will cause it to
be painted there in such a manner,
that neither you nor any other
one, will be able to tell me any
longer, that I have never seen it,
or known it.”

Neither the rain which had fal-
len, nor the water which they
threw on it, nor any other wet
thing extinguished them.

Every one of us knows, that
the greater part of our friends are
dead.

A great number of instruments
of torture were prepared.

The greater part were killed
and cut to pieces, and some taken.

Tell me, why is that people so
fell against my kin in all their
laws?

On the left hand appeared to
me a troop of spirits, that moved
their steps towards us.

Póì, VENÌA MAGGIÓR FRÓTTA
DI ROMÁNI. (Franc. Sacch. Rim.)

Then, there came a greater crowd
of Romans.

Signór mío, IL VOLÉRE ío LE
MÍE FÓRZE SOTTOMÉTTERE A
GROSSÍSSIMI PÉSI M' È CAGIÓNÉ
DI QUÉSTA INFERMITÀ. (Bocc. g.
10. n. 7.)

My lord, the wish to oppose my
strength to very heavy burdens is
the occasion of this weakness.

I' SON BEATRÍCE, CHE TI FÁC-
CIO ANDÁRE. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

I am Beatrice, who bids thee
to go.

ÍO SON COLÚI, CHE TÉNNI ÁM-
BO LE CHIÁVI — *Del cuór di Fe-*
derígo. (Dant. Inf. 13.)

I am he, who held both the keys
of the heart of Frederick.

I'ò cominciái : "POÉTA, CHE
MI GUÍDI, — *Guárda la mía vir-*
tù s' ell' è possénte." (Dant. Inf.
2.)

I began : "Poet ! thou who art
my guide, consider well if there is
sufficient virtue in me."

"O FRÁTI," díssi, "CHE *per*
cénto mília — *Perígli* SIÉTE
GIÚNTI ALL' OCCIDÉNTE." (Dant.
Inf. 26.)

"O brothers !" said I, "who
through perils without number
have now reached the west."

Dicéndo : "Quél fu l' UN DÉ'
SÉTTE RÉGI, — CH' ASSÍSER TÉ-
BE." (Dant. Inf. 14.)

Saying : "That was one of
the seven kings, who besieged
Thebes."

Se tu fóssi státo ÚNO DI QUÉ-
GLI, CHE IL PÓSERO IN CRÓCE.
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

If thou had been one of those,
who put him on the cross.

CONCORDANCE OF PARTICIPLES.

Participles, as it has been already mentioned p. 345,
when used as adjectives, agree with *substantives* in *gen-*
der and *number*, and follow in this respect the *rules*
already given with regard to the *concordance* of that *part*
of speech ; as,

LÉI, in váno mercè ADDO-
MANDÁNTE, *uccise*,

he killed her, while begging
in vain for mercy ;

álle DÓNNE ASPETTÁNTI *si*
rivólse,

he addressed himself to the la-
dies [who were] waiting ;

*il cavalière, UDÍTA LA DO-
MÁNDA e LA PROFÉRTA,
propóse,*

*poichè il giardino, e LA
CÁSA di Messér Néri ebbe
VEDÚTA,*

*le DÓNNE e i CAVALIÉRI nel
palágio RADUNÁTI,*

*L' ANÉLLA e LA CORÓNA
AVÚTE dal nuóvo spóso,*

*IL RE có' SUÓI COMPÁGNI
RIMONTÁTI a cavállo,*

the gentleman, having heard
the request and the proposal,
resolved ;

after having viewed the gar-
den and the house of Messer
Neri ;

the ladies and gentlemen [that
had] collected in the palace ;

the rings and the garland,
[which she had] received
from her new husband ;

the king with his attendants
having mounted their horses.

[For Rules how to determine when Participles are used as adjectives and when not, see
CHAPTER ON PARTICIPLES.]

EXAMPLES.

*Fólco, da dolor vinto, tiráta
fuóri una spáda, LÉI, IN VÁNO
MERCÉ ADDOMANDÁNTE, UCCÍSE.
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)*

Folco, overcome by grief, hav-
ing drawn a sword, killed her while
begging in vain for mercy.

*ÁLLE DÓNNE ASPETTÁNTI SI
RIVÓLSE, e disse. (Bocc. g. 9.
n. 10.)*

He addressed himself to the
ladies who were waiting, and said.

*IL CAVALIÉRE, UDÍTA LA DO-
MÁNDA E LA PROFÉRTA délla
dónna, séco PROPÓSE. (Bocc. g.
10. n. 5.)*

The gentleman, having heard
the request and the proposal of
the lady, resolved.

*Il quále, POICHÈ IL GIARDÍN
tutto, E LA CÁSA DI MESSÉR NÉ-
RI ÉBBE VEDÚTA. (Bocc. g. 10.
n. 6.)*

Who, after having viewed the
garden and the house of Messer
Neri.

*E senténdo LE DÓNNE E' CAVA-
LIÉRI NEL PALÁGIO del cónte RA-
DUNÁTI. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)*

And hearing that the ladies and
gentlemen had collected in the
palace of the count.

*La dónna e L' ANÉLLA E LA
CORÓNA AVÚTE DAL NUÓVO SPÓSO
quívì lasciò. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)*

The lady left there the rings
and the garland which she had
received from her new husband.

*IL RE có' SUÓI COMPÁGNI, RI-
MONTÁTI A CAVÁLLO, al reále
ostiére se ne tornárono. Bocc.
g. 10. n. 6.)*

The king with his attendants,
having mounted their horses, re-
turned to the royal palace.

EXERCISE XXVIII.

Then that magnanimous Pompey, who — (the which)
magnánimo Pompéo, —

boasted (himself) continually, that where he | struck |
vantáre² 1 continuo, percuotésse

the earth with (the) his foot (the) entire legions
térra — piè 4 intiéro⁵ legióne⁶

| would come out | from it |, fled not only from
sarébbero² uscíte³ ne¹ ,fuggíre

Rome, but from (the) Italy also. He is of a won-
Róma, — Itália — mara-

derful agreeableness and (of a wonderful) vivacity.
viglióso⁶ piacevolézza¹ 2 3 4 — brío⁵.

And the preparation, and the joy, and the other
apparcchio, allegrézza, áltro

things were described to-him beyond (of) the truth.
cósa 2 dipingere³ 1 maggióre véro.

(The) my guide and I descended the mountain.
— dúca scéndere mónte.

The greatest part of (the) men are ambitious. He
maggiór páрте uómo ambizióso. —

commanded that all (the) his family should appear
Comandáre tútto famágliа veníre²

before him. Know, that I am Bertrand de Born,
3 1. Sapére, Bertrám dal Bórnio,

he who gave (to the) King John the mischievous
dáre re Giovánni málo

counsels. The filial respect and (the filial) love.
confórto. 1 filíale⁶ riverénza² 3 4 — amór⁵.

Great,* small,* rich,* and poor,* no one can escape
Gránde, piccolo,² ricco,¹ póvero, nessúno potére sottrárrе

(himself to the) death. Many were accused this year.
mórte. Móltо 3 accusáre⁴ 1 áнно².

* Great, small, rich, poor, are here used in the plural number.

And she embracing (the) her infant. I have looked
abbracciare figliuolo. cercare

all over the street. Callimachus and Ligurius have
tutto² per¹ strada. Callimaco Ligurio²

told me, that the doctor and the ladies are coming
dire³ ¹, dottore donna venire

to (the) church. Neither thou nor I am rich. I
chiesa. ricco.

am the ghost of Capocchio, who falsified (the) metals
ombra, falsare metallo

| by the power of | alchemy. He | fell in love |
con alchimia. — s' innamorò⁴

| with | a noble-lady, held in (the) his time * for
D¹ ² gentildonna,³ tenere⁸ ⁵ ⁶ tempo⁷ —

one of the most beautiful, and of the most amiable
— bella, leggiadra

that were in Florence. Pride, envy, and avarice
³ ¹ Firenze². Supèrbia, invidia, avarizia

are the three sparks, which have inflamed all
favilla, accendere³ —

(the) hearts. I saw a man, who had both (the)
¹ cuore². — Vedere uomo, ambo

his hands cut-off, and another who had (the) his
— mano mózzo, ² ³ —

throat pierced. For (the) which reasons, (the) our
gola⁴ forato¹. cosa,

supper having been disturbed, I not only have not
cena — — sturbare, ³ ¹

eat it, but not even (have) tasted it. Nor
trangugiare⁴ ², ³ ² assaggiare⁴ ¹.

the excessive maternal pity and joy permitted it.
soprabbondante materna⁴ pietà¹ ² allegrezza³ permettere⁶ ⁵.

* Time, in the plural.

CHAPTER III.

REGIMEN OR GOVERNMENT OF WORDS.

REGIMEN OF SUBSTANTIVES.

A *substantive* may be *dependent on*, or *in relation with*, another substantive ; and this dependence or relation, which may be expressed in different manners, forms what is called the *regimen* or the *complement* of the signification of *substantives*.

When of *two substantive* nouns the *second*, which is dependent on the first, conveys an idea of *possession*, *extraction*, or *qualification*, (as when it expresses *property* ; *paternity*, or *filiation* ; the *material*, the *place*, or the *quantity* of a thing ; a *family* name ; or similar circumstances ;) it requires to be *preceded* by the preposition *di* ; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>l' occhio</i> DEL CUÓRE, | the eye of the heart ; |
| <i>gli ánni</i> délla Incarnazióne del Figliuólo DI DÍO, | the years of the Incarnation of the Son of God ; |
| <i>vergógna</i> è mádre DI ONESTÀ, | shame is the mother of modesty ; |
| <i>úna fontána</i> DI MÁRMO bian- chissimo, | a fountain of very white marble ; |
| <i>Certáldo</i> è un castélló DI VALDÉLSA, | Certaldo is a castle of Valdelsa ; |
| <i>torchiétti</i> DI LÍBBRA, e <i>tor-</i> <i>chiétti</i> DI MÉZZA LÍBBRA, | wax-tapers of a pound, and wax-tapers of half a pound each ; |
| <i>fu salváto</i> da cérti <i>di casa</i> DÉ' BÁRDI, | he was saved by some people belonging to the house of the Bardi. |

EXAMPLES.

L' amóre priváto chiúde L' ócchio del cuóre. (Amm. Ant. d. 5. r. 3.) Selfishness shuts the eye of the heart.

Già érano GLI ÁNNI DÉLLA fruttífera INCARNAZIONE DEL FIGLIUÓLO DI DÍO al número pervenúti di 1348. (Bocc. Intr.) The years of the fruitful Incarnation of the Son of God had reached the number of 1348.

VERGÓGNA È MÁDRE DI ONESTÀ, e maëstra d' innocénza. (Amm. Ant. d. 5. r. 7.) Shame is the mother of modesty, and the mistress of innocence.

Nel mézzo del quál práto éra ÚNA FONTÁNA DI MÁRMO BIANCHÍSSIMO. (Bocc. g. 3. Intr.) In the middle of which field there was a fountain of very white marble.

CERTÁLDO È UN CASTÉLLO DI VALDÉLSA, il quále quantúnque pícciol sía, già di mólti uómini ed agiáti fu abitató. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 10.) Certaldo is a castle of Valdelsa, which, although small, was formerly inhabited by many and wealthy people.

Una grand' árca tútta forníta di TORCHIÉTTI DI LÍBBRA, E la chiésa e le cappélle d' intórno piéne di TORCHIÉTTI DI MÉZZA LÍBBRA, e spésso di qué' DI LÍBBRA. (Borgh. Arm. Fam. 23.) A great coffin surrounded with wax tapers of a pound, and the church and the chapels full of wax-tapers of half a pound, and often of some of a pound each.

FU scampáto e salváto DA CERTI DI CÁSA DÉ' BÁRDI. (Gio. Vill. l. 12. c. 17.) He was rescued and saved by certain people belonging to the house of the Bardi.

Vi éra un cértó Ludovico, il quále avéa di mólti danári, e FACÉVA UN PÓCO DI BÁNCO. (Firenz. As. d' Or.) There was a certain Ludovico, who had a great deal of money, and kept a little bank.

E SPALANCÁNDO pói TÁNTO DI GÓLA. (Lip. Malm. 7. 85.) And opening his mouth wide.

Stéttero più ánni i dúe giòvani IN CÁSA MESSÉR GUASPARRÍNO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.) The two youths remained for several years in the house of Messer Guasparino.

Con gránde paúra e perícólo si fuggì IN CÁSA GLI ALBÍZZI. (Gio. Vill. l. 12. c. 17.) In great fear and danger he took refuge in the house of the Albizzi.

*Con quei suoi DENTI A BIS-
CHERI.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 2.)

With those teeth of his like
pegs.

*Con quella BERETTACCIA A
GRONDA, e con quella BARBA A
LUCIGNOLI.* (Buon. Fier. 2. 3.)

With that cap of his like the
eaves of a house, and that beard
like two wicks of a candle.

*Essendo ella già di ETÀ DA
MARITO.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 4.)

She being already of an age
suitable for marriage.

*La donna a cui più TEMPO DA
CONFORTO, che DA riprensione
parèa.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

The lady to whom this appeared
more a time of consolation, than of
reprehension.

*GUIDOTTO DA CREMONA lascia
a GIACOMIN DA PAVIA una sua
fanciulla.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

Guidotto of Cremona leaves a
daughter of his to James of Pavia.

REGIMEN OF ADJECTIVES.

The *regimen* or *complement* of adjectives is generally a *substantive*, a *pronoun*, a *verb*, or a *phrase* preceded by a *preposition*.

Adjectives signifying *knowledge* or *ignorance*, *praise* or *blame*, *possession* or *privation*, *abundance* or *scarcity*, require that their *complement* be *preceded* by the *preposition di*; as,

dólto DÈlle SCRITTÙRE,
ignorantissimi DÈlla MEDICÍ-
NA,

learned in the Scriptures;
very ignorant of medicine;

giovine DI ETÀ, bellissima
DI FÓRMA, chiara DI SÁN-
GUE e DI COSTÚMI,

of youthful age, of very beau-
tiful form, and of distinguish-
ed birth and manners;

próde DÈlle ÁRMI, ma DÉ'
COSTÚMI vizióso,

brave in arms, but of vicious
habits;

abbondante DI GRÁNO, DI ÓR-
ZO, DI BESTIÁME, e DI
PÉSCI,

abundant in grain, barley, cat-
tle, and fish.

Adjectives signifying *similitude*, *inclination*, *suitableness*, *advantage*, *tendency*, or the *contrary*, require their *complement* to be *preceded* by the *preposition a*; as,

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| <i>la bárba á' suói capégli</i> | the beard like his locks ; |
| <i>simigliánte,</i> | |
| <i>cóse più átte á' bevitóri,</i> | things more becoming to |
| <i>che álle sóbrie dónne,</i> | drunkards, than to sober la- |
| | dies ; |
| <i>provincia dedite álle ármí,</i> | provinces addicted to arms ; |
| <i>niúna cósá è cosí contrária</i> | nothing is so unfavorable to a |
| <i>al dicitóre,</i> | speaker ; |
| <i>gráve ágli uómini di pèrvér-</i> | odious to men of wicked habits. |
| <i>si costúmi,</i> | |

Adjectives signifying *departure, distance, separation,* require that their *complement* should be *preceded* by the preposition *da* ; as,

| | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>ésuli d'álle lóro pátrie,</i> | exiles from their countries ; |
| <i>fé' disgiúnto dall' ánimo il</i> | made the soul disjoined from |
| <i>passibile intellétto,</i> | his passive intellect ; |
| <i>una navicélla di pescatóri</i> | a small fishing boat distant |
| <i>separáta d'álle ná-</i> | from the other vessels. |
| <i>vi,</i> | |

Some *adjectives*, as *conténto*, 'contented,' 'satisfied' ; *présto*, 'prompt,' 'ready' ; *accóncio*, 'disposed,' 'inclined' ; may have a *complement* preceded by either the preposition *di* or *a* ; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>conténto di quéllo, che</i> | content with what was given |
| <i>gli éra dáto,</i> | to him ; |
| <i>státe conténti álla volon-</i> | be satisfied with the will of |
| <i>tà di Dio,</i> | God ; |
| <i>présta di fáre fésta al</i> | prompt to greet his fellow- |
| <i>suo cittadino,</i> | citizen ; |
| <i>présti a mórdere ógni</i> | ready to slander every praise- |
| <i>laudévol cósá,</i> | worthy thing ; |
| <i>sóno accóncia d' impegnáre</i> | I am disposed to pawn these |
| <i>queste róbe,</i> | garments ; |
| <i>più accóncia a crédere il</i> | more inclined to believe the |
| <i>mále,</i> | evil. |

EXAMPLES.

*Essendo molto dótto delle
Scrittúre, ed ammaestrato della
féde di Crísto.* (Cav. At. ap. 113.)

Being very learned in the Scrip-
tures, and well instructed in the
Christian faith.

*Molti vi sòno della medicína
ignorantíssimi.* (Lib. Cur. mal.)

There are many very ignorant
of medicine.

*Una di loro di età giovine,
di fórma bellíssima, chiara
di sángue e di costúmi.* (Bocc.
Fiam. l. 1.)

One of them of youthful age, of
most beautiful form, and of distin-
guished birth and manners.

*Cavalière próde delle ármí,
ma dé' costúmi vizióso.* (Pass.
Spec. Ver. Penit.)

A cavalier brave in arms, but of
vicious habits.

*Il paése è grandíssimo, e molto
abbondánte di gráno, di ór-
zo, di bestiáme, e di pésci.*
(Giamb. l. 5.)

The country is very vast, and
very abundant in grain, barley,
cattle, and fish.

*Lunga la bárba, e di pel
bianco místa, — Portáva, á' suói
capégli simigliánte.* (Dant.
Pur. l.)

His beard, mixed with hoary
white, like his locks, descended
low down.

*Cóse più átte á' bevitóri
che álle sóbrie ed onéste dón-
ne.* (Bocc. Intr.)

Things more becoming to drunk-
ards, than to sober and modest la-
dies.

*Provínce naturalménte dé-
dite álle ármí.* (Giamb. l. 3.)

Provinces naturally addicted to
arms.

*Niúna cosa è cosí contrária
al dicítóre, cóme il manifésto
acconciamentó.* (Amm. Ant. d.
11. r. 3.)

Nothing is so unfavorable to a
speaker as the evident dressing up
of language.

*La vita dé' buóni è sémpre
gráve ágli uómini di pervérsi
costúmi.* (Amm. Ant. d. 14.
r. 1.)

The life of the good is always
odious to men of wicked habits.

*Colóro, che sòno ésuli dalle
lóro pátrie, desíderano di tor-
nárví.* (Fra Giord. Pred.)

Those, who are exiles from their
countries, are desirous to return
there.

*Sicchè, per sua dottrína, fé'
disgiúnto — Dall' ánimo il
passíbile intellétto.* (Dant.
Pur. 25.)

So that, by his wisdom, he made
the soul disjoined from his passive
intellect.

Trovò per avventúra, alquánto
SEPARÁTA DÁLLE ÁLTRE NÁVI,
ÚNA NAVICÉLLA DI PESCATÓRI.
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

He found by chance, a small
fishing boat somewhat distant from
the other vessels.

CONTÉNTO DI QUÉLLO, CHE DÁ-
TO GLI ÉRA, *più non chiedéa.*
(Vit. S. Ant.)

Content with what was given
to him, he asked no more.

E però, pádre e mádre mía,
STÁTE CONTÉNTI ÁLLA VOLONTÀ
DI DÍO. (Vit. S. Gio. Batt.)

Therefore, my parents, be satis-
fied with the will of God.

Quell' ánima gentíl fu cosí
PRÉSTA — DI FÁRE AL CITTADÍN
SÚO *quívi fésta.* (Dant. Pur. 6.)

That gentle spirit was so prompt
to greet there his fellow-citizen.

Dar matéria ágl' invidíosi,
PRÉSTI A MÓRDERE ÓGNI LAU-
DÉVOL CÓSA. (Bocc. Intr.)

To give occasion to envious per-
sons, ready to slander every praise-
worthy thing.

*Per me SÓNO ACCÓNCIA D' IM-
PEGNÁR per te QUÉSTE RÓBE.*
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.)

As for me, I am disposed to
pawn for thee these garments.

La gènte è PIÙ ACCÓNCIA A
CRÉDERE IL MÁLE, *che il béne.*
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

People are more inclined to be-
lieve the evil, than the good.

REGIMEN OF VERBS.

Verbs may govern, or have for a complement, a noun, a pronoun, another verb, or a phrase.

The nouns and pronouns governed by the verb may be in the subjective, in the objective, or in any other relation preceded by a preposition.

The verbs governed by another verb may be in the indicative, in the conjunctive, or in the infinitive mood, either in the objective or in any other relation, except the subjective, preceded by a preposition.

The verb *essere* governs a noun in the subjective, and is consequently construed with two subjectives, called, the

one, *the subjective before*, and, the other, *the subjective after, the verb* ; as,

io sónò LA SVENTURÁTA I am the unfortunate Giñevra ;
 GINÉVRA,
 i vèri amìci sónò ÚNA CÒSA true friends are one thing
 insième, together.

Active verbs govern a noun or a pronoun in the objective ; as,

io ho amáto ed ámo GUIS- I have loved and love Guis-
 CÁRDO, card ;
 mólli sánno MÓLTE CÓSE, e many know many things, and
 non sánno SÈ MEDÉSIMI, do not know themselves.

Many active verbs, besides having a noun or a pronoun in the objective, or, what is the same, a *direct regimen*, may govern a *noun* or a *pronoun* in any *other relation*, except the *subjective*, preceded by a *preposition*, and thus have also an *indirect regimen* ; as,

io non la vendéi LÓRO, ma I did not sell it to them, but
 éssi ME L' avránno imbolá- they must have stolen it
 ta, from me ;
 per premiáre il cavalière in order to reward the gentle-
 DELL' ONÓRE ricevúto, man for the honor received ;
 sè AD ÓGNI SÚO SERVÍGIO of- he offered himself to serve her
 fèrse, in every thing ;
 s' ingegnò di rivólgerla DA he endeavoured to dissuade her
 PROPONIMÉTO sì fiéro, from so cruel a proposal.

Passive verbs govern a noun or a pronoun in the relation of derivation preceded by the preposition *da* ; as,

égli DA ME éra egualménte he was equally loved by me ;
 amáto,
 Efígenia DA MÓLTE NÓBILI Iphigenia was received by
 DÓNNE di Ródi fu ricevúta, many noble ladies of Rhodes.

Sometimes instead of *da* we find the preposition *per* used by good writers ; as,

la più bella cosa, che giammai the handsomest object that was
PER ALCÚNO vedúta fósse, ever seen by anybody ;
PER FÁLSA LÓDE di stólto éssere to be deceived by the false praise
ingannáto, of fools.

Neuter verbs, strictly speaking, have *no regimen* ; but as some of them are often *used*, in Italian, *actively*, they follow, when so used, the *same rules* as *active verbs* ; as,

cenárono UN PÓCO DI CÁRNE they supped on a little salt
SALÁTA, meat ;
quantúnque Amóre I LIÉTI although Love dwells more
PALÁGI, più volentiéri che willingly in gay palaces,
LE PÓVERE CAPÁNNE, úbiti, than in poor cottages.

Pronominal verbs govern the pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, si*, with which they are varied, in the *objective* ; as,

io MI levái diritta, I stood up ;
lo scoláre s' esercitáva, the scholar took exercise.

Many pronominal verbs, besides the above, which is their *direct regimen*, may have an *indirect regimen*, or, what is the same, may also *govern* a *noun* in any *other relation*, but the *subjective*, *preceded* by a *preposition* ; as,

t' attristi DÉLLA MÍA DIMÓ- thou grievest for my stay ;
RA,
la città s' arrendéo A CÉ- the city surrendered to Cæsar.
SARE,

Unipersonal verbs, generally, have *no regimen* ; there are instances, however, in which some of them govern

a word in the relation of attribution, preceded by the preposition *a* ; as,

cóme accáde á' BUÓNI, così as it befalls good people, so it
accáde á' CATTÍVI, befalls bad people ;
quéstà novèlla, la quále A ME this novel, which I 'am to re-
tócca di dovér dire, late.

EXAMPLES.

Signór mio, io SÓNO LA mísera Sir, I am the unfortunate, wretch-
SVENTURÁTA GINÉVRA. (Bocc. ed Ginevra.
g. 5. n. 9.)

I VÉRI AMÍCI SÓNO ÚNA CÓSA True friends are one thing to-
INSIÉME. (Am. Ant. d, 18. r. 1.) gether.

ÍO HO AMÁTO ED ÁMO GUIS- I have loved and love Guiscard,
CÁRDO, e quánto viverò io l' ame- and I shall love him as long as I
rò. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.) live.

MÓLTI MÓLTE CÓSE SÁNNO, SÈ Many know many things, and do
MEDÉSIMI NON SÁNNO. (Am. Ant. not know themselves.
d. 5. r. 3.)

ÍO NON LA VENDÉI LÓRO, MA I did not sell it to them, but
ÉSSI quéstà nótte ME L' AVRÁNNO they must have stolen it from me
IMBOLÁTA. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.) last night.

PER PREMIÁRE IL CAVALIÉRE In order to reward the gentle-
DELL' ONÓRE RICEVÚTO da lui. man for the honor he had received
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.) of him.

Soddisfèce álla súa dománda, He complied with her request,
e SÈ AD ÓGNI SÚO SERVÍGIO OF- and offered himself to serve her in
FÉRSE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.) every thing.

Con paróle assái s' INGEGNÒ With a great many words he
DI RIVÓLGERLA DA PROPONIMÉN- endeavoured to dissuade her from
TO SÌ FIÉRO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.) so cruel a proposal.

Così ÉGLI DA ME ÉRA EGUAL- So he was equally loved by me,
MÉNTE AMÁTO, com' egli me amá- as he loved me.
va. (Bocc. Fiam. 1. 6.)

EFIGENÍA DA MÓLTE NÓBILI Iphigenia was received by many
DÓNNE DI RÓDI FU RICEVÚTA. noble ladies of Rhodes.
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Costéi ésser LA PIÙ BÉLLA She was the handsomest object
CÓSA, CHE GIAMMÁI PER ALCÚNO that was ever seen by anybody.
VEDÚTA FÓSSE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

*Mégljo è ésser corrétto dal sá-
vio, che PER FÁLSA LÓDE DI STÓL-
TO ÉSSER INGANNÁTO. (Amm. Ant.
d. 3. r. 6.)*

It is better to be corrected by
the wise, than to be deceived by
the false praise of fools.

CENÁRONO UN PÓCO DI CÁRNE
SALÁTA. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

They supped on a little salt
meat.

QUANTÚNQUE AMÓRE I LIÉTI,
PALÁGI e le mórbide càmere, PIÙ
VOLENTIÉRI CHE LE PÓVERE CA-
PÁNNE, ÁBITI. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 10.)

Although Love dwells in gay
palaces and sumptuous apartments,
more willingly than in poor cot-
tages.

ÍO MI LEVÁI DIRÍTTA. (Bocc.
g. 7. n. 6.)

I stood up.

LO SCOLÁRE S' ESERCITÁVA
per riscaldársi. (Bocc. g. 8. n.
7.)

The scholar took exercise to get
warm.

DÉLLA MÍA lúnga DIMÓRA
T' ATTRÍSTI. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)

Thou grieveest for my long stay.

S' ARRENDÉO LA CITTÀ A CÉ-
SARE. (Gio. Vill.)

The city surrendered to Cæsar.

CÓME ACCÁDE Á' BUÓNI, COSÌ,
fratéllo, mi páre che accággia
Á' CATTÍVI. (Fra. Guitt. lett.)

Brother, I think that as it befalls
good people, so it befalls bad peo-
ple.

QUÉSTA NOVÉLLA, LA QUÁLE A
ME TÓCCA DI DOVÉR DÍRE, vógljo
ve ne rénda ammaestráte. (Bocc.
g. 1. n. 10.)

I wish, that the novel, which I
am to relate, may make you wise.

GOVERNMENT OF VERBS — Continued.

A *verb* governs another *verb* that *depends* upon it, in the *infinitive* mood, whenever the *subject* of the *princi-
pal* (*governing*) verb is the same with that of the *de-
pendent* (*governed*) verb; as in the following example
of Boccaccio, Proem. :

*assái manifestaménte PÓSSO
COMPRÉNDERE, quéllo ésser
véro, che SÓGLIONO I SÁVJ
DÍRE, CHE SÓLO LA MISÉ-
RIA è sénza invidia,*

I can easily believe, that that
is really true, which wise
men are wont to say, name-
ly, that poverty alone is not
envied ;

where *póssso* and *sógliono* govern *compréndere* and *díre*

in the *infinitive*; because, in the first instance, *io*, which is understood, is the subject of *póssso* and at the same time of *compréndere*, that depends upon it; and in the last, *sávj* is the subject of *sógliono* as well as of *díre*, that depends upon it.

The *infinitives*, depending on another verb which governs them, may be either in the *objective*, as in the foregoing example; or in *any other relation*, except the *subjective*, preceded by a *preposition*; as,

néga D' AVÉR RICEVÚTO *il* he denies to have received the
beneficio, benefit;
dobbíamo imparáre A TACÉ- we must learn how to keep
RE, silent.

If the *subjects* of the two verbs be *different*, then the *principal* verb governs the *dependent* verb in a *tense* of the *indicative* or *conjunctive* mood, preceded by the conjunction *che*; as,

SO *ío béne*, CHE *égli ne* I know well, that he carried
PORTÒ (ind.) *l' ánima mía*, away my soul;
ío CRÉDO, CHE LE SUÓRE I think, that the nuns are
SÍENO (conj.) *a dormíre*, asleep.

By a peculiarity of language the conjunction *che* is sometimes suppressed; as,

crédo, [che] *égli se n' ANDÒ* I believe that he went away.
(ind.),
teméndo [che] *non gli AVVE-* fearing lest it should happen to
NISSE (conj.), him.

The *dependent* verb is put in the *indicative*, when the *principal* verb implies *affirmation*, *knowledge*, or *certainty of action*; as,

vi DÍCO, *ch' égli È móрто*, I tell you, that he is dead;
so ch' égli È così, I know that it is so;
égli STA béne, *sálvo che gli* he is well, except that he has
DUÓLE il cápo, the headache.

The *dependent* verb is put in the *conjunctive*, when the *principal* verb implies *will, desire, entreaty, command, hope, fear, pleasure, displeasure, permission, prohibition, negation, shame, blame, adulation, wonder, surprise, supposition, conjecture, judgment, belief, question, doubt, ignorance, uncertainty, or future action*; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| to VÓ' che SÁPPI, | I wish that thou shouldst know; |
| DESÍDERO che SÍA pósto in esecuzióne, | I desire that it should be put in execution; |
| PREGÁVA che ne VENÍSSE, | she begged him to come; |
| COMANDÒ ad un dé' suóí famigliári che nélia sua cása il MENÁSSE, | he ordered one of his domes- tics to bring him into his house; |
| SPÉRI tu che Nicóstrato AN- DÁSSE la lealtà ritrován- do? | dost thou hope [or believe] that Nicostratus would ob- serve loyalty? |
| TÉMO [che] il sovérchio af- fánno non DISTRÚGGA il cor, | I fear that excessive grief will destroy the heart; |
| DISPIÁCQUE loro, che i Peru- gini AVÉSSERO rótta la léga, | it displeased them, that the Perugians should have brok- en the league; |
| SUPPÓNGASI che Juppiter SÍA ánimo di quéstó móndo, | let us suppose that Jupiter be the soul of this world; |
| quéllo che l' ánimo GIÚDICA che SÍA ben fátto, | that which the soul judges to be well done; |
| CRÉDO [che] mi PORTÁSSE amóre, | I believe that he loved me; |
| DOMANDÁVA, che ciò FÓSSE, | he asked, what that was; |
| non so che méne PÉNSI, o che mi DÍCA, | I know not what to think, or what to say. |

The verb is put in the *conjunctive*, when it is *depend-ent* upon a *unipersonal* verb, such as *sembráre*, 'to seem'; *parére*, 'to appear'; *mostráre*, 'to show'; *bisognáre*, 'must' or 'to be obliged'; &c.; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| mi SÉMBRAVA, che AVÉSSE vóglia di ridere, | it appeared to me as if he had a wish to laugh; |
|--|--|

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>é' PAR che tu sía mórtó,</i> | it seems as if thou wert dead; |
| <i>MÓSTRA che Róma si REG- GÉSSE a signoría di re,</i> | it shows that Rome was under the government of kings; |
| <i>BISOGNÁVA che PARTÍSSE l' indománi,</i> | it was necessary that he should set out the next morning. |

The *dependent* verb is put in the *conjunctive*, when preceded by a *comparative* or a *superlative*; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>costéi fu dal pádre TÁNTÓ AMÁTA, QUÁNTÓ alcuna figliuóla da pádre FÓSSE giammái,</i> | this young woman was as dear to her father, as any other child ever was to a parent; |
| <i>éra IL PIÙ SÁVIO ed IL PIÙ AVVEDÚTO uómo, che al móndo FÓSSE,</i> | he was the wisest and the most prudent man that there ever was in the world. |

The *dependent* verb is likewise put in the *conjunctive* when it is preceded by the *relative* pronouns, *chi*, 'who'; and *quále*, 'which,' 'what'; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>quívì non éra CHI le smarríte fórze RIVOCÁSSE,</i> | there was no one there who could restore to her her lost spirits; |
| <i>dicéndoli QUÁLE VOLÉSSE,</i> | asking him which he would prefer. |

The verb is also put in the *conjunctive* after the conjunction *se*, 'if';* the adverb *quándo*, used in the signification of 'if,' 'provided'; and the adverbs *óve*, *dóve*, both in the signification of 'if,' 'when,' 'in case that,' and in their proper signification of 'where'; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>SE d' ésser mentováto laggiù DÉGNI,</i> | if thou dost not disdain to be mentioned there below; |
|--|---|

* Instances are, nevertheless, to be found, in which the *verb* is put in the *indicative* after *se*; as,

*Non so, SE a vói quéllo se ne PARRÀ,
chs a me ne PARR'ÈBE. (Bocc. Intr.)* I do not know, whether it will seem to you, as it would seem to me.

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>io vòglio pórre fine álle tue</i> <i>angósce QUÁNDÓ TU VÓGLI,</i> | I wish to put an end to thy suffering, if [or provided] thou wishest it ; |
| <i>ÓVE COSÌ NON FÓSSE,</i> | if [or when] it will not prove so ; |
| <i>DÓVE tu non VÓGLI COSÌ fare,</i> | if [or when, or in case that] thou dost not wish to do so ; |
| <i>vómmene in guisa d' órbo,</i> <i>che non sa ÓVE SÌ VÁDA,</i> | I move along like a blind man, who does not know whither he goes ; |
| <i>io non so DÓVE io mi fúgga,</i> | I know not whither I should fly. |

[For a List of Verbs governing a noun or another verb, either in the objective, or in any other relation, preceded by a preposition, see APPENDIX K.]

EXAMPLES.

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>Ingráto è chi il beneficio NÉGA</i> <i>D' AVÉR RICEVÚTO. (Am. Ant.,</i> <i>d. 17. r. 2.)</i> | He is ungrateful, who denies to have received a benefit. |
| <i>DOBBIÁMO parlándo IMPARÁRE</i> <i>A TACÉRE. (Am. Ant. d. 7. r. 3.)</i> | We must, in speaking, learn how to keep silent. |
| <i>So io BÉNE, CHE stanótte ÉGLI</i> <i>NE PORTÒ L' ÁNIMA MÍA. (Bocc.</i> <i>g. 4. n. 2.)</i> | I know well, that last night he carried away my soul. |
| <i>Ío mi CRÉDO, CHE LE SUÓRE</i> <i>SIÉN tutte A DORMÍRE. (Bocc.</i> <i>g. 3. n. 1.)</i> | I believe that the nuns are all gone to sleep. |
| <i>I'ó CRÉDO, ÉGLI SÈ N' ANDÒ</i> <i>disperáto. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)</i> | I believe, he went away in de- spair. |
| <i>TEMÉNDÓ, NON GLI AVVENÍSSE</i> <i>quéllo, che gli avvéne. (Bocc.</i> <i>g. 5. n. 6.)</i> | Fearing, lest it should happen to him, what in fact happened to him. |
| <i>VI DÍCO, CH' ÉGLI È MÓRTO.</i> <i>(Bocc.)</i> | I tell you, that he is dead. |
| <i>So CH' ÉGLI È COSÌ, ma non</i> <i>ne compréndo la ragióne. (Class.)</i> | I know it is so, but do not understand the reason. |
| <i>ÉGLI STA BÉNE, SÁLVO CHE GLI</i> <i>DUÓLE IL CÁPO. (Barb. Gr. Gr.)</i> | He is well, except that he has the headache. |

Sennuccio, io vó' che sáppi in quál maniera — Trattáto sóno. (Petr. s. 89.)

Sennuccio, I wish that thou shouldst know in what manner I am treated.

Perciò desídero che sía pósto in esecuzióne. (Cas. lett. 15.)

Therefore I desire that it should be put in execution.

Il chiamáva, e pregáva che ne venísse. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)

She called him, and begged him to come.

Comandò ad un dé' suói famigliári che nélla súa càsa il menásse, e gli facésse dar da mangiáre, per Dio. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

He ordered one of his domestics to bring him into his house, and cause something to eat to be given to him, for God's sake.

Spéri tu, che Nicóstrato andásse la lealtà ritrovándo, che tu servár vuói a lui? (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)

Dost thou believe, that Nicostratus will observe the loyalty towards thee, that thou dost towards him?

Ch' io témo, lássò! no 'l sovérchio affánno — Distrúgga il cor. (Petr. s. 84.)

So that I fear, alas!, that excessive grief will destroy the heart.

Dispiácque lóro grandeménte, che i perugini róttá avéssero la léga. (Gio. Vill.)

It displeased them exceedingly, that the Perugians should have broken the league.

Suppóngasi però, che Júppiter sía, a módo lóro, ánimo di quéstó móndo. (St. Aug. Cit. Dio.)

But let us suppose, that Jupiter, as they will have it, be the soul of this world.

Che tu fácci, quéllo che l' ánimo tí giúdica che ben sía fáttö. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 6.)

That thou shouldst do, what thy soul judges to be well done.

Crédo mi portásse amóre, e che di me non fósse méno ardénte. (Ariost.)

I believe that he loved me, and that he was no less ardent in love than I.

Domandáva, che ciò fósse. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)

He asked, what that was.

Non so che méne pénsi, o che mi díca. (Petr.)

I do not know what to think, or what to say of it.

Mi sembráva, che avésse voglia di rídere. (Bocc.)

It appeared to me, as if he had a wish to laugh.

É' par che tu sía mórtó, che tí sénti tu? (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

It seems as if thou wert dead, what ails thee?

*E così MÓSTRA CHE RÓMA SI
REGGÉSSE A SIGNORÍA DI RE cén-
to cinquantaquáttro ánni.* (Gio.
Vill. 129.)

*E che BISOGNÁVA CHE PARTÍSSE
L' INDOMÁNI.* (Bocc.)

*COSTÉI FU DAL PÁDRE TÁNTO
teneraménte AMÁTA, QUÁNTO AL-
CÚNA áltra FIGLIUÓLA DA PÁ-
DRE FÓSSE GIAMMÁI.* (Bocc. g. 4.
n. 1.)

*Égli ÉRA IL PIÙ SÁVIO ED IL
PIÙ AVVEDÚTO UÓMO CHE AL MÓN-
DO FÓSSE.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.)

*QUÍVI NON ÉRA CHI con ácqua
frédda o con áltro argoménto
LE SMARRÍTE FÓRZE RIVOCÁSSE.*
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

*DICÉNDOLI QUÁLE VOLÉSSE, o
súbito restituíre il súo pórco, o che
égli andásse al rettóre.* (Franc.
Sacch. 146.)

*Grázie riporterò di te a léi, —
SE D' ÉSSER MENTOVÁTO LAGGIÙ
DÉGNI.* (Dant. Purg. 1.)

*ÍO VÓGLIO ÁLLE TÚE ANGÓSCHE,
QUÁNDÓ TU medésimo VÓGLI,
PÓRRE FÍNE.* (Bocc.)

*ÓVE COSÌ NON FÓSSE, ío mi ri-
marrò giudéo com' ío mi sóno.*
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

*E DÓVE TU NON VÓGLI COSÌ
FÁRE, raccomandánda a Dío l' áni-
ma túa.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

*VÓMMENE IN GUÍSA D' ÓRBO
sénza lúce, — CHE NON SA ÓVE
SI VÁDA, e pur sí páte.* (Petr.
s. 16.)

*Eccoli tútti fuóri; ío NON SO
DÓVE ío MI FÚGGA, dóve ío mi
nascónda.* (Mach. Com.)

And thus it shows, that Rome
was under the government of kings
one hundred and fifty-four years.

And that it was necessary that
he should set out the next day.

This young woman was as ten-
derly loved by her father, as any
other child ever was by a parent.

He was the wisest and most
prudent man that ever there was
in the world.

There was no one there who
could either with cold water or
by any other means, restore to her
her lost spirits.

Asking him which he would
prefer, either that he should return
him immediately his hog, or that
he should go to the rector.

I will return thanks to her for
thy favor, if thou dost not disdain
to be mentioned there below.

I wish to put an end to thy
troubles, if thou thyself wishest
it.

If it will not prove so, I will
remain a Jew as I am.

And if thou dost not wish to
do so, recommend thy soul to
God.

I move along like a blind man,
deprived of light; who does not
know where he goes, and yet he
departs.

Here they are all out; I know
not whither I should fly, where I
should conceal myself.

REGIMEN OF PREPOSITIONS.

The *regimen* or *complement* of *prepositions* is generally a *noun*, a *pronoun*, or a *verb*, either in the *objective*, or in any *other relation*, except the *subjective*, preceded by another *preposition*; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| io non dáva loco PER LO MÍO CÓRPO al trapassár dé' rág- gi, | I gave no way for the rays to pass through my body; |
| volgeánsi CÍRCA NÓI le dúe ghirlánde, | the two garlands [of unfad- ing roses] wreathed about us; |
| un giòrno, DIÉTRO MANGIÁ- RE, laggiù venútone, | one day having come there be- low, after dinner; |
| cominciò a piágnere SÓPRA DI LÉI, | he began to mourn over her; |
| assái PRÉSSO A SALÉRNO è úna còsta, | very near Salerno there lies a coast; |
| LONTÁNO DA ÓGNI UÓMO, | far from every man. |

[For a List of Prepositions governing the objective or any other relation preceded by a preposition, see APPENDIX L.]

EXAMPLES.

Quando s' accorsér ch' io non
DÁVA LÓCO — PER LO MÍO CÓRPO
AL TRAPASSÁR DÉ' RÁGGI. (Dant.
Purg. 5.)

When they perceived, that
through my body I gave no way
for the rays to pass.

Così di quèlle sempitérne róse
— VOLGEÁNSI CÍRCA NÓI LE DÚE
GHIRLÁNDE. (Dant. Parad. 12.)

Thus about us wreathed the
two garlands of unfading roses.

UN GIÓRNO, DIÉTRO MANGIÁRE,
LAGGIÙ VENÚTONE, in un cāto
sóptra un curéllo sì póse a sedére.
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

One day having come there be-
low, after dinner, he seated himself
in a corner upon a cushion.

COMINCIÒ A PIÁGNERE SÓPRA
DI LÉI, non altraménte che se
mórta fósse. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

He began to mourn over her
not otherwise than if she had been
dead.

ASSÁI PRÉSSO A SALÉRNO È
 ÚNA CÓSTA il máre riguardánte,
 la quále gli abítánti chiámáno la
 cósta di Málfi. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 4.)

Very near Salerno there lies a
 coast looking upon the sea, which
 the inhabitants call the coast of
 Amalfi.

Da úna pártè délla sála, assái
 LONTÁNO DA ÓGNI UÓMO, cólla dón-
 na si póse a sedére. (Bocc. g. 5.
 n. 5.)

In one corner of the hall, very
 far from every man, he sat down
 with the lady.

REGIMEN OF CONJUNCTIONS.

There are some *conjunctions*, in Italian, which have a *verb* for their *regimen*, which they require to be put either in the *indicative*, or the *conjunctive* mood.

The *following* are those, which *require* the *verb* to be put in the *conjunctive* mood :

| | | | | | |
|-----------------------|---|----------------------------------|------------------------|------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>Acciocchè,</i> | { | in order that ; | <i>comúnque,</i> | however ; | |
| <i>affinchè,</i> | | | <i>conciosiachè,</i> | whereas, since ; | |
| <i>abbenchè,</i> | { | though, although ; | <i>cáso che,</i> | { | in case that ; |
| <i>ancorchè,</i> | | | <i>in cáso che,</i> | | |
| <i>avvegnachè,</i> | | | <i>dáto che,</i> | { | suppose, grant that ; |
| <i>benchè,</i> | | | <i>suppósto che,</i> | | |
| <i>comechè,</i> | | | <i>finchè,</i> | { | till, until ; |
| <i>contuttochè,</i> | | | <i>finlántochè,</i> | | |
| <i>quantúnque,</i> | | | <i>infíno che,</i> | | |
| <i>sebbéne,</i> | | | <i>insíno che,</i> | | |
| <i>tuttochè,</i> | | | <i>sinchè,</i> | { | notwithstanding that ; |
| <i>avánti che,</i> | | | <i>nonostánte che,</i> | | |
| <i>ánzi che,</i> | { | before, sooner than ; | <i>per léma che,</i> | { | for fear that, lest ; |
| <i>innánzi che,</i> | | | <i>qualóra,</i> | | |
| <i>prima che,</i> | { | except, unless ; | <i>qualóra,</i> | { | if, when, whenever ; |
| <i>a méno che,</i> | | | <i>quand' ánche,</i> | | |
| <i>a condizióne</i> | { | on condition, provided that ; | <i>se,</i> | { | even when ; if ; |
| <i>che,</i> | | | <i>sénza che,</i> | | |
| <i>con pátto che,</i> | { | as if ; | <i>sólo che,</i> | { | without ; only that.* |
| <i>purchè,</i> | | | | | |
| <i>cóme se,</i> | | | | | |

* The following instances are, nevertheless, met with in the classics, in which

To which may be added the conjunction *perchè*, used in the signification of 'although,' and 'in order that': also the conjunctions *che*, 'that'; *se*, 'if'; *quando*, in the signification of 'if,' 'in case that,' 'provided'; and the adverbs *ove*, *dove*, both in their own signification and that of the conjunctions 'if,' 'when,' 'provided'; as has been already mentioned at p. 428, in treating of the *regimen of verbs*.

Se requires the verb in the *conjunctive*, when it expresses something *contingent* or *doubtful*: but when it expresses a *sure*, *natural*, or *expected circumstance*, or when the *action* of the verb is *entirely past*, the verb is put in the *indicative*; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| SE tu ti CÁLÍ <i>io non ti verrò</i> <i>diétro di galóppo,</i> | if thou do cast thee down, I cannot chase thee on foot; |
| dímmi SE <i>io PÓSSO adoperáre</i> <i>alcúna còsa,</i> | tell me whether I can do any thing for thee; |
| nói <i>gliélo farém fare, SE tu</i> <i>VORRAI,</i> | we will make her do it, if thou wishest it; |
| s' <i>io MERITÁI di vói méntre</i> <i>ch' <i>io vissi, non vi movéte,</i></i> | if, living, I merited aught of you, move ye not; |
| SE <i>gli ócchi suóí ti FUR dólci</i> <i>nè cári,</i> | if her eyes were dear and sweet to thee; |
| s' <i>io DÍSSI fálsò, e tu FALSÁSTI</i> <i>il cónio,</i> | if I spoke false, thou falsely stampedst the coin. |

the conjunctions *avvegnachè*, *benchè*, *comechè*, *contuttochè*, *sebbène*, are used with a verb in the *indicative mood*:

AVVEGNACHÈ *quel dì niúno E'RA AN-
DA'to a lavoráre.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

BENCHÈ *a me non PA'VE mái che vói
giúdice fòste.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 10.)

La quále il *gióvane fòcosaménte áma,*
COMECHÈ *élla non se ne ACCÓRGE, per*
*quéllo ch' *io véggia.** (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Si ricominciò la *guérra cóntro gli Are-
tini, CONTUTTOCHÈ nel segréto RIMA-
SERO gli Aretini in trattáto d' accórdò*
có' Fiorentini. (Gio. Vill. l. 11. c. 58.)

Perchè *SEBBE'NE i gióvani l' AUME'N-
TANO, é' non sánno di pói mantenérle.*
(Gell.)

Since, that day, no one had gone to work.

Although I never thought you were a judge.

Whom the young man ardently loves, although she does not perceive it, for what I see.

They renewed the war against the Aretines, although in secret the Aretines remained on terms of peace with the Florentines.

For, although young men enlarge them (the cities), they know not how to govern them afterwards.

EXAMPLES.

ACCIOCCHÈ *più avanti non POTÉSSE il prénce veníre.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

In order that the prince should not approach any further.

Perocchè Amór l'avea già feríta, — ABBENCHÈ le PARÉSSE ésser tradíta. (Bocc. Ninf. Fies.)

Because Love had already wounded her, although she thought she was betrayed.

Alessándro, ANCORCHÈ *gran paura AVÉSSE, stétte pur chétto.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

Alexander, although he had great fear, remained quiet.

Núno áltro, *per QUANTÚNQUE AVÉSSE agúto l'avvediménto, potrébbe chi ío mí fossi conóscere.* (Bocc. Fiam.)

No one else, however acute perception he may have, could know who I am.

TUTTOCHÈ *quéstá gènte máladétta in véra perfezióu giam-mái non VÁDA.* (Dant. Inf. 6.)

Though this accursed race never can reach true perfection.

Io non ti concederò quéllo che séguíta, perchè, DATOCHÈ nói ce lí DIÁMO, non perciò restiámo debítóri. (Varch. Sen. ben. 5. 9.)

I will not grant thee what follows, because, suppose we should give them to them, we shall remain no less debtors.

Dico, che COMÚNQUE sí sía, églí há tante óre la nótte quánte il dí. (Ser. Brun. Tes. 2. 44.)

I say, that however it may be, there are as many hours in the day as in the night.

La medicína da guarírló so ío tróppo béne fáre, PURCHÈ a vói DÍA il cuóre di segréto tenére ciò che ío vi ragionerò. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)

The medicine to cure him, I know well how to apply, provided you have a mind to keep secret what I shall tell you.

NONOSTÁNTE CHE *fósse pregáto da tútti i cittadíni, che gli dóvesse perdonáre.* (Zibald. Andr. 3. 3.)

Notwithstanding he was begged by all the citizens to pardon him.

Or vó' che sappi, INNÁNZI CHE più ÁNDI, — Ch' éi non peccáro. (Dant. Inf. 4.)

Now I wish thou mayst know, before thou passest any farther, that these did not sin.

Seguirò l'ómbra di quél dólce láuro, — FINCHÈ l'último dí CHIÚDA quest'ócchi. (Petr. c. 7.)

I will follow the shade of that sweet laurel, until death close these eyes.

Ch' ío spéro — Fármi immortál, PERCHÈ la cárne MUÓIA. (Petr. c. 18.)

So that I hope to make myself immortal, though the body die.

*La 'ncominciò a battersi PER-
CHÈ 'l PASSASSE. (Bocc. g. 9.
n. 9.)*

He began to beat her in order
to cure her.

*SE TU TI CÀLI, ÍO NON TI VER-
RÒ DIÉTRO DI GALÓPPO. (Dant.
Inf. 22.)*

If thou do cast thee down (into
the pitch) I cannot chase thee on
foot.

*Caccia via la paura, e DÍMMI
SE ÍO PÓSSO ADOPERÁRE ALCÚ-
NA CÔSA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)*

Drive away fear, and tell me
whether I can do any thing for
thee.

*NÒI GLIÉLO FARÉM FÁRE, O
VÓGLIA ÉLLA O NO, SE TU VORRÁI.
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)*

We will make her do it, whether
she is willing or not, if thou wish-
est it.

*O vói che siéte due déntro ad
un fuóco, — S' ÍO MERITÁI DI VÓI
MÉNTRE CH' ÍO VÍSSI, — S' ÍO
MERITÁI DI VÓI assái o póco, —
Quándo nel móndo gli átti vérsi
scríssi, — NON VI MOVÉTE. (Dant.
Inf. 26.)*

O ye, who dwell two spirits
within one fire, if living I merited
aught of you, whatever may have
been the measure of that desert,
when in the world I wrote my
lofty verses, move ye not.

*A'nzi la vóce al súo nóme
rischiári, — SE GLI ÓCCHI SUÓI TI
FUR DÓLCI NÈ CÀRI. (Petr. s. 40.)*

Nay let thy voice celebrate her
name, if her eyes were ever dear
and sweet to thee.

*S' ÍO DÍSSI FÁLSO, E TU FAL-
SÁSTI IL CÓNIO, — Disse Sinóne.
(Dant. Inf. 30.)*

If I spoke false, thou falsely
stampedst the coin, said Sinon.

EXERCISE XXIX.

A good man, destitute of money, and of poor mind.
buón uómo, póvero monéta, ² strétto¹ ánimò.

Deprived of every virtue, and full of every pride.
Vóto valór, piéno orgóglio.

Of ancient blood, and (of) noble manners. The
² Antíco¹ sángue,³ ⁴ ⁶ nóbile⁵ costúme.

Marquis of Monferrato was a man of great valor.
Marchése uómo álto valóre.

With some good wine, and some preserves she re-
alquánto buón víno, alquánto confétto — ricon-

cruited him. (The) pride is hated by — (is odious
*fortàre*² ¹ *supèrbia* — — — *odiòso*

to) God and by — (to) (the) men. They foment that
Dio — — *uómo.* — *Fomentàre*

| bad disposition | of theirs, inclined to (the) evil.
genidèccio | — , *inclinàre* *màle.*

Ready to do virtuously | to | others that, which she
*Prònto*¹ ² *operàre*⁷ *virtuóso*⁶ | *in*⁴ | ⁵ ³ ⁸ —

would (that) should be done | to | her. In exchange
*volére*¹¹ ¹² *èssere*¹³ *operàre*¹⁴ | *in*⁹ | ¹⁰ *cámbio*

for that, which I received. She left at liberty
 , *ricèvere.* — *concédere*⁹ ¹⁰ *libertà*⁹

every-one until (to) the hour of (the) supper. This
¹¹ ¹ ² ³ *óra*⁴ ⁵ ⁶ *cèna*⁷.

young-woman is neither from Cremona, nor from Pavia,
giovane ² *non*¹ , ,

nay she is from Faenza — (a Faentine). He wished,
 — — — — *Faentino.* — *Volére,*

that I should see all the holy relics. Show me
vedère *sánto reliquia.* *Mostràre* —

the way, that goes to Rome. I myself know not,
cammino, *andàre* *Róma.* *medésimo sapère*² ¹,

what — (that which) I wish (for myself). I know
 — ³ ⁴ ⁵ *volére*⁷ — ⁶ *sapère*²

not, who thou mayst be, nor by what means thou hast
¹ , *módo* — *èssere*²

come here-below. | Being much pleased | with the
*venìre*¹ . | *Piacéndogli* *mólto* | —

manners of the boy, he asked who he was.
módo *fanciúllo,* — *domandàre*

He began pleasantly to speak, and to ask who
 — *Cominciàre piacevole* *ragionàre,* — *domandàre*

he was, whence he came, and where he was-going.
 — , — *venìre,* — *andàre.*

He was disposed to go wherever it was (to) her
dispósto *andàre* — ³ ¹ ²

| pleasure | to go. As I arrived | on the other side, |
 | *a grádo*⁴ | — —. *giúngere* | *di* *là*, |
 there was one who seemed to know — (that he
parére — —
 knew) all (the) my sins | by heart |. Do thou
*sapére*⁵ ₁ ₂ ₂ *peccáto*⁴ | *a mēte* |. — ₃
 stay (thyself), whom | by | the fashion of thy garb
*Sostáre*¹ — ₂ | *a* | — — — *ábito*
 we deem to be — (seemest to-us to be) some native
 — — — *sembráre*² ₁ — —
 — (some one) of our evil land. If I had this
*práva*² *térra*¹. —
 money,* I would lend it* to thee immediately. Who
denáro, *prestáre*³ ₂ ₁ *incontanēte*.
 would fare better than I, if that money† were mine?
stáre , *denáro* ?
 Whenever you wish, I will take you a great part
 — *volére*, *portáre*² ₁ — *grán páte*
 of the way | on horse-back |. He might govern such
via | *a cavállo* |. — *réggere*⁶ *quále*³
 a part (of it) as he should wish. He asked of the
₁ *párte*² ₅ — — *volére*⁴. — *Domandáre* —
 host where he could sleep. (The) virtue will not
óste *éssó potére dormire*. *virtù*
 be conquered by (the) misery. Many novels
éssere vincere by (the) *miséria*. Many *novélla*
 | come into my mind | | to be | related by me.
 | *mi si páran d' avánti*⁵ | | *per dovére ésser*¹ | *raccontáre*⁴ ₂ ₃.
 God feeds the angels and (the) his servants | with |
Iddio páscere *ángelo* ₂ *sérvo*¹ | *di* |
 love and | (with) | eternal joy. Let there be this
amóre | *di* | *sempitérno*² *gáudio*¹. — ₆ ₁
 law in (the) friendship, that | of | (the) friends we
*légge*² ₃ ₄ *amicizia*⁵, ₇ | *da*⁸ | ₉ *amíco*¹⁰ —

* This money — it, — to be used in the plural.

† That money, in the plural.

should ask but an honest thing. Deliberate all (the) thy
*domandáre*¹³ — — *onésto*¹¹ *cósa*¹². *Deliberáre*⁷ ¹ ² —
 things with (the) thy friend, but always before (of) him.
*cósa*³ ⁴ ⁵ — *amíco*⁶, —

| A | friend who is a time-server — (according to
 | L' | *amíco* — — — — —
 the time) will not be constant in the day of (the)
témpo — — *stáre* *férmo* — — *dì*

tribulations. I refrained (myself) | from | speaking
tribolazióne. — — *trárre*⁸ ⁷ | *dì*⁵ | *parlár*⁶

until we reached (to) the river. The flatterer is
¹ — — — ² ³ *fiúme*⁴. *adulatóre*

| (even) | like that voice, which replies | from | the
 | *anco* | — — — — — *vóce*, *rispóndere* | *dópo* |

mountains and the walls to him-who cries-out. In
mónte — — — — — *múro* *gridáre*.

order that the world should know her and love her.
 — — — — — *móndo* *conóscere*² ¹ *amáre* —.

Although positively it displeases her. And what dif-
 — — — — — *strétto* — — — — — *dispiacére*² ¹. *dif-*

ference there is between these and the other visions,
ferénza — — — — — *avére* *visióne*,

since the learned men speak of it, I will not write
 — — — — — *dottóre* *parláre*² ¹, — — — ³ *scrívere*⁵

it here. In order to prevent, I say, in case that
⁴ — — — — — *salváre*, — — — *díre*,

we | should do | otherwise, that this | should be | the
 — | *facéndo*² | *altraménte*¹, — — — | *fóra*³ | —

cause of blame and ignominy to us. Whereupon he
 — — — — — *biásimo*³ ⁴ *ignomínia*⁵ — —.

said to me: "Although thou rendest away all my
 — — — — — *dischiomáre*² *mí*¹

hair, I will neither tell (thee), nor show (it to)
 — — — — — ³ *díre*⁵ ⁴, ⁹ *mostráre*¹⁰ ¹¹ — —

thee, who I am."
¹², ⁶ ⁷ ⁸.

CHAPTER IV.

USE OF ARTICLES.

Articles are used, in Italian, before all common nouns employed in a *determinate* sense.

Nouns may be employed in a determinate sense in *three* different ways :

First, when, in naming an object, we intend to designate the *whole species* or *kind*, to which that object belongs ; as, *gli uómini*, ‘ [the] men ’ ; the noun *uómini* being taken in the *whole extent* of its signification, the article *gli* shows that all the individuals composing the human kind are here spoken of.

Secondly, when we intend to designate a *class of objects* of any kind ; as, *gli uómini virtuósi*, ‘ [the] virtuous men ’ ; here the noun *uómini*, expresses only a certain number of men, its *signification* being *restricted* by the adjective *virtuósi*.

Thirdly, when we intend to designate *one particular object* of a kind or of a class ; as, *l’ uómo di cui vi párlo*, ‘ the man of whom I speak to you ’ ; the noun *uómo* being taken, in this case, individually, and the article used to express the man spoken of :

GLI UÓMINI sóno DÉLLE FÉM- men are the head of women ;
MINE cápo,

GLI UÓMINI di quèsta térra the people of this land will rise
si leveránno a romóre, in an uproar ;

se L’ UÓM [con cui tu párli] if the man [with whom thou
ti fáccia liberaménte ciò, speakest] will do for thee
che ’l túo dir préga, ancór freely, what thou entreatest,
ti piáccia di dírne, do thou further be pleased
to declare to us.

When the noun is sufficiently *determined* by the nature of the thing, or by the circumstances of the case, the *article* is generally *suppressed*; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| così CAVÁLLI, UÓMINI <i>fur</i> <i>vittime</i> , | thus horses and men were vic- tims; |
| quìvi SOSPÍRI, PIÁNTI, <i>ed</i> ÁLTI GUÁI <i>risonávan</i> , | there sighs, lamentations, and loud moans resounded; |
| SÓNI, CÁNTI, VESTÍR, GIUÓ- CHI, VIVÁNDE, <i>quánto può</i> <i>cuór pensár, può chiêder</i> <i>bócca</i> , | music, singing, dresses, games, viands, all that the heart can think of, and all that the pal- ate can desire. |

The article is also suppressed when the noun is used as a *mere sign of qualification* of the objects expressed. This is generally the case,

First, when the noun is *preceded* by the verb *essere*, 'to be'; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| ÉRANO UÓMINI e FÉMMINE <i>di grósso ingégno</i> , | they were men and women of dull understanding; |
| <i>tu, che sé' UÓMO, dovrésti sa-</i> <i>père dèlle cose del móndo</i> , | thou, who art a man, ought to be acquainted with the af- fairs of the world. |

Secondly, when the noun is *preceded* by one of the prepositions, *a, di, da, con, in, per, senza*; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>uscirono fuochi di sottérra,</i> <i>che si appréséro A CÁMPI,</i> <i>VILLE, CASÁLI,</i> | there issued flames from under the earth, which set fields, villas, and hamlets on fire; |
| <i>si nutrisce DI PÁNE e D' ÁC-</i> <i>QUA,</i> | he feeds on bread and water; |
| <i>mórsi DA PÚLCI, DA MÓSCHE,</i> <i>O DA TAFÁNI,</i> | bitten by fleas, by flies, or gadflies; |
| <i>CON BÉ' MÓTTI, e CON RI-</i> <i>SPÓSTE PRÓNTE,</i> | with witty sayings, and prompt replies; |
| <i>vénne crescéndo IN ÁNNI, IN</i> <i>PERSÓNA, ed IN BELLÉZZA,</i> | grew up in years, in stature, and in beauty; |
| <i>PER PAÚRA d' altrúi, e per</i> <i>serváre la mía fâma,</i> | for fear of other people, and also to preserve my fame; |

così penserò di fare, SÉNZA I shall do so, without fail.
FÁLLO,

Thirdly, in *comparisons of equality*, when the noun is preceded by the adverb *cóme*, 'as,' 'like'; as,

non CÓME UÓMINI, ma quasi they died not like men, but
CÓME BÉSTIE morivano, almost like beasts;
paréva che ruggisse *CÓME* he appeared to roar like a lion,
LEÓNE, e belásse *CÓME* *PÉ-* to bleat like a sheep, and to
CÓRA, e ragghiásse *CÓME* bray like an ass.
ÁSINO,

When a noun is employed in an *indeterminate* sense the *article* is *never used*; as,

qual che tu sii, od ÓMBRA od whatever thou art, whether a
UÓMO CÉRTO, shadow or a living man;
non UÓM, UÓMO già fui, now I am not a man, man I was
formerly;
pármì vedére DÓNNE e DON- I seem to see ladies and dam-
ZÉLLE, e sóno ABÉTI e sels, and they are firs and
FÁGGI, beeches.

The *article* is also *never used* when a noun is preceded by a *demonstrative* or *indefinite pronoun*; as,

QUÉSTO GARZONCÉLLO s' in- this little boy began to be fa-
cominciò a dimesticare, miliar;
cóme dite vói COTÉSTE PA- how do you say those words?
RÓLE?
paréva quélla COTÁLE INFER- it appeared to communicate
MITÀ trasportáre, that same sickness;
con ÓGNI SOLLECITÚDINE, they strive with all their zeal,
con ÓGNI INGÉGNO, e con and their power, and their
ÓGNI ÁRTE si proccácciano skill, to overthrow the Chris-
di ridúcere a nùlla la Cri- tian religion.
stiána religióne,

EXCEPTION.

When a noun is preceded by the indefinite pronoun *tutto*, the article is used after the pronoun; as,

TÚTTI I PENSIÉRI, TÚTTO LO all the thoughts, all the attentions,
STÚDIO, e TÚTTE LE ÓPERE, and all the actions.

The article, however, is omitted when *tutto* is used as a mere sign of qualification; as,

nói siám TÚTTE FÉMMINE, we are all women;
ténne il pónte cóntra TÚTTA kept possession of the bridge
TOSCÁNA, against all Tuscany.

When several nouns come together before or after the verb, and the article is used or omitted before the first of them, this article is to be repeated or omitted before every other noun in the sentence; * as,

Lúcio Silla vinse LA VIRTÙ, Lucius Sylla surpassed Caius
e I TRIÓNFI, e I SÉTTE Marius in courage and in the
CONSOLÁTI di Cáio Mário, number of his triumphs and
consulships;

nè VECCHIEZZA, nè INFER- neither age, nor sickness, nor
MITÀ, nè PAÚRA di móрте, the fear of death, could deter
dalla sua malvagità l' hán- him from his wicked course.
no potuto rimuóvere,

* Examples are found in the classics, nevertheless, in which this rule is not rigorously observed; as,

AMÓRE, e L' ÍRA del re. (Bocc. g. 5. The love and anger of the king.
n. 6.)

Crepáta per LO LU'NGO e per TRAVE'R- Broken lengthwise and breadthwise.
so. (Dant. Pur. 9.)

Fra FÓLTI BÓSCI, e LE RÍGIDE A'LPI, In the thick woods, and among the
e DISE'RTIE SPELÓNCHÉ. (Bocc. g. 3. rugged Alps, and in lonely caves.
n. 10.)

In the following examples :

Sopravvénneno I CONFÓRTI ed OFFE'R- There arrived the encouragements and
TE dé' Veneziani. (Guicc. Stor. Ital.) the offers of the Venitians.

Se, col NÓME su'o e RIPUTAZIO'NE del Whether, with his name and the rep-
pádre, ritornáre negli státi suóí di Pe- utation of his father, he could not return
rúgia potéva. (Mach. Stor. Fior.) to his own estates at Perugia:

the omission of *le* before *offérte*, and of *la* or *cólla* before *riputazióne*, are manifest errors of grammatical concordance.

EXAMPLES.

GLI UÓMINI SÓNO DÉLLE FÉM-
MINE CÁPO, e sènza l' òrdine lóro
ràde vólte riésce alcúna nóstra
ópera a laudévol fine. (Bocc.
Intr.)

GLI UÓMINI DI QUÉSTA TÉRRA,
vedéndo ciò, si LEVERÁNNO A RU-
MÓRE. (Bocc.)

SE L' UÓM TI FÁCCIA — LIBE-
RAMÉNTÉ CIÒ, CHE 'L TÚO DIR
PRÉGA, — *Spirito 'ncarceráto*, AN-
CÓR TI PIÁCCIA — DI DÍRNE CÓME
l' ánima si léga — *In quèsti nóc-
chi*. (Dant. Inf. 13.)

COSÌ CAVÁLLI, UÓMINI FUR
VÍTTIME. (Dav. Ann.)

QUÍVI SOSPIRI, PIÁNTI, ED ÁLTI
GUÁI — RISONÁVAN *per l' áere*
sènza stélle. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

SÓNI, CÁNTI, VESTÍR, GIUÓCHI,
VIVÁNDE, — QUÁNTO PUÒ CUÓR
PENSÁR, PUÒ CHIÉDER BÓCCA.
(Ariost. Fur. 4. 32.)

ÉRANO UÓMINI E FÉMMINE DI
GRÓSSO INGÉGNO. (Bocc. Intr.)

TU, CHE SÉ' UÓMO, DOVRÉSTI
SAPÉRE DÉLLE CÓSE DEL MÓNDO.
(Bocc. g. 7. n. 2.)

USCÍRON FUÓCHI DI SOTTÉRRA,
CHE SI APPRÉSERO A CÁMPI, VÍL-
LE, CASÁLI. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

SI NUTRÍSCE DI PÁNE E D' ÁC-
QUA. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

Non altriménti fan di státe i
cáni — Or col céffo or có' piè,
quándo son MÓRSI — O DA PÚLCI,
o DA MÓSCHE, o DA TAFÁNI.
(Dant. Inf. 17.)

CON BÉ' MÓTTI, E CON RISPÓSTE
PRÓNTE. (Bocc. g. 5. fin.)

Men are the head of women,
and without their management it
seldom happens that any under-
taking of ours succeeds well.

The people of this land, seeing
this, will rise in an uproar.

If he [this man] will do for
thee freely, what thou entreatest,
O imprisoned spirit! do thou fur-
ther be pleased to declare to us,
how in these gnarled joints the
soul is tied.

Thus horses and men were vic-
tims.

There sighs, lamentations, and
loud moans resounded through the
starless air.

Music, singing, dresses, games,
viands, all that the heart can think
of, and all that the palate can de-
sire.

They were men and women of
dull understanding.

Thou, who art a man, ought to
be acquainted with the things of
the world.

There issued flames from under
the earth, which set fields, villas,
and hamlets on fire.

He feeds on bread and water.

Thus use the dogs in summer
to ply now with their jaws and
now with their feet, when bitten
by fleas, or flies, or gadflies.

With witty sayings, and prompt
replies.

La Violante VÉNNE CRESCÉNDO *ed* IN ÁNNI, *ed* IN PERSÓNA, ED IN BELLÉZZA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Violante grew up in years, in stature, and in beauty.

Così m' è convenúto fáre, e PER PAÚRA D' ALTRÚI, E PER SERVÁRE LA FÁMA délla mia onestà. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

I have been obliged to do so, for fear of other people, and also to preserve my character.

Sol tánto vi díro, che cóme impósto m' avéte, COSÌ PENSERÒ DI FÁRE SÉNZA FÁLLO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

I only tell you that I shall, without fail, do what you have ordered.

NON CÓME UÓMINI, MA QUÁSI CÓME BÉSTIE MORÍVANO. (Bocc. Intr.)

They died not like men, but almost like beasts.

PARÉVA CHE RUGGÍSSE CÓME LEÓNE, E BELÁSSE CÓME PÉCORA, E RAGGHIÁSSE CÓME ÁSINO. (Dial. S. Greg. m.)

He appeared to roar like a lion, and to bleat like a sheep, and to bray like an ass.

"Miserére di me," gridái a lui, — "QUÁL CHE TU SÍI, OD ÓMBRA OD UÓMO CÉRTO." — Rispósemi: "NON UÓM, UÓMO GIÀ FÚI." (Dant. Inf. 1.)

"Have mercy on me," cried I to him, "whatever thou art, whether a shadow, or a living man." He answered me: "Now I am not a man, man I was formerly."

Ch' io l' ho négli ócchi, e VEDÉR seco PÁRMI — DÓNNE E DONZÉLLE, e SÓNO ABÉTI E FÁGGI. (Petr. s. 143.)

Whom I have before my eyes, and I seem to see ladies and damsels with her, and they are firs and beeches.

QUÉSTO GARZONCÉLLO S' INCOMINCIÒ A DIMESTICÁRE *con* *quésto* Federíco. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

This little boy began to be familiar with this Frederic.

Vói mi paréte uómo di Dío, CÓME DÍTE VÓI COTÉSTE PARÓLE? (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

You appear to me to be a man of God, how do you say those words?

Ma ancóra il toccáre i pánni dagli inférmi adoperáti PARÉVA séco QUÉLLA COTÁLE INFERMITÀ nel toccatór TRASPORTÁRE. (Bocc. Intr.)

But even to touch the clothes used by the sick appeared to communicate with it the same sickness to the one who had touched them.

*E per quéllo che io estími, CON
ÓGNI SOLLECITÚDINE, CON ÓGNI
INGÉGNO, E CON ÓGNI ÁRTE, mi
páre che si PROCÁCCIANO DI RIDÚ-
CERE A NÚLLA, e di cacciáre del
móndo LA CRISTÍANA RELIGIONE.*
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

*TÚTTI I PENSIÉRI delle fém-
mine, TÚTTO LO STÚDIO, TÚTTE
LE ÓPERE, a niúna áltra rósa
tírano, se non a signoreggiáre
gli uómini.* (Bocc. Lab.)

*Ricórdivi che NÓI SIÁM TÚTTE
FÉMMINE.* (Bocc. Intr.)

*E quél, che, sólo, — CÓNTRA
TÚTTA TOSCÁNA TÉNNE IL PÓNTE.*
(Petr. Trionf. Fam. c. 1.)

*O'nde LÚCIO SÍLLA, che VÍNSE
LA VIRTÙ, E I TRIÓNFI, E I SÉTTE
CONSOLÁTI DI CÁIO MÁRIO, si
fè chiamáre il Felíce.* (Davan.)

*Che uómo è costúì, il quále NÈ
VECCHIÉZZA, NÈ INFERMITÀ, NÈ
PAÚRA DI MÓRTE DÁLLA SÚA
MALVAGITÀ L' HÁNNO POTÚTO
RIMUÓVERE ?*

And by what I can judge, it seems that they strive with all their zeal, and their power, and their skill to overthrow the Christian religion, and to drive it from the face of the earth.

All the thoughts, all the attention, and all the actions of women tend to nothing but to rule over men.

Remember that we are all women.

And he, who alone kept possession of the bridge against all Tuscany.

Therefore Lucius Sylla, who surpassed Caius Marius in courage, and in the number of his triumphs and consulships, made himself to be called the Happy.

What a man is this, whom neither age, sickness, nor the fear of death, could deter from his wicked course.

It has been said, that articles are used before *nouns* employed in a *determined sense* ; *adjectives, verbs, adverbs*, and *prepositions*, therefore, when used as *nouns*, in *that sense*, require the *article* before them ; as,

*sol d' úna chiára fónte muó-
ve IL DÓLCE e L' AMÁRO,*

*IL NÁSCER gránde è cáso e
non virtù,*

*saréi conténto di sapére IL
QUÁNDO,*

IL DÓVE io ho già pensáto,

IL CÓME ho io ben vedúto,

from the same clear fountain springs the bitter and the sweet ;

to be born in high life is a chance and not merit ;

I should be happy to know [the] when ;

I have already thought [of the] where ;

I have already seen [the] how ;

IL PERCHÈ *ti dirò*,
 cì è IL PRÒ, e 'L CÓNTO,
 son cërta DEL sì,
 ciascúno rispóse DEL NO,

I will tell you [the] why ;
 there is something to say for
 and against ;
 I am certain of the affirmative ;
 every one answered in the
 negative.

EXAMPLES.

Così SOL D' ÚNA CHIÁRA FÓN-
 TE víva — MUÓVE IL DÓLCE E
 L' AMÁRO. (Petr. s. 131.)

Thus, from the same clear, living
 fount, springs the bitter and the
 sweet.

IL NÁSCER GRÁNDE È CÁSO
 E NON VIRTÙ. (Metast. Artas.
 1. 1.)

To be born in high life is a
 chance and not merit.

SARÉI CONTÉNTO DI SAPÉRE IL
 QUÁNDO. (Petr. s. 306.)

I should be happy to know [the]
 when.

IL DÓVE ÍO HO GIÀ PENSÁTO.
 (Bocc. g. 2.)

I have already thought [of the]
 where.

IL CÓME HO ÍO BEN VEDÚTO.
 (Bocc. g. 8. n. 6.)

I have already seen [the] how.

Del còme non ti cáglia, IL
 PERCHÈ TI DIRÒ. (Bocc. Filoc.
 6.)

Do not trouble thyself about
 [the] how, I will tell you [the]
 why.

Sicchè CI È IL PRÒ E 'L CÓN-
 TRO. (Gio. Vill.)

So that there is something to
 say for and against.

SON CÉRTA DEL sì. (Bocc.
 g. 7. n. 7.)

I am certain of the affirmative.

CIASCÚNO RISPÓSE DEL NO.
 (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Every one answered in the
 negative.

The names of *abstract substances*, and those of *gems*,
metals, *liquids*, and *provisions*, require the *article* before
 them, when used in a *generic sense* ; as,

laudévol còsa è né' principi
 LA PRUDÉNZA,

prudence is praiseworthy in
 rulers ;

L' ÓRO, e LE PÉRLE, e i fiór
 vermigli e biànchi,

the gold, and the pearls, and
 the red and white flowers ;

vièppiù dólce si tróva L' AC- water and bread are sweeter
 QUA e 'L PÁNE, *che* LE than gems and gold.
 GÉMME e L' ÓRO,

EXAMPLES.

LAUDÉVOL CÓSA, *e necessaria* Prudence is praiseworthy, and
 mólto È NÉ' PRÍNCIPI LA PRU- very necessary to rulers.
 DÉNZÀ. (Bocc. Filoc.)

L' ÓRO, E LE PÉRLE, E I FIÓR The gold, and the pearls, and
 VERMÍGLI E BIÁNCCHI, — *Son per* the red and white flowers, are to
me acérbi e velenósi stécchi. me sharp and poisonous thorns.
 (Petr. s. 38.)

VIEPPIÙ DÓLCE SI TRÓVA L' AC- Water and bread are sweeter
 QUA e 'L PÁNE, — *CHE* LE GÉM- than gems and gold.
 ME e L' ÓRO. (Petr. Trionf. c. 6.)

The names of *heaven*, the *earth*, and the *sea* ; of the *cardinal points* ; of the *four quarters of the world* ; also of *kingdoms*, *provinces*, *mountains*, and *rivers*, when, in speaking of them, we consider their *whole extent*, take the *article* ; — but when we speak of any indeterminate part of them, they *refuse* it ; as,

éra státo tánto témpo sénza he had been so long without
vedére IL CIÉLO, seeing the heavens [the sky] ;

LA TÉRRA è frédde e sécca, the earth is cold and dry ;

andávi su per LO MÀRE, thou didst walk on the sea ;

éra già L' ORIÉNTÉ tútto the east was already bright ;
biáncó,

non solaménte IL LEVÁNTE, not only the east, but also the
ma quási tútto IL PONÉNTE, greatest part of the west,
il conoscéva, knew him ;

tútta L' EURÓPA è riputatá all Europe is considered to be
strétto confíne, a narrow limit ;

L' ITÁLIA è státa piú vólte Italy has been several times
soggiogáta dá' bárbari, subdued by barbarians ;

sálvo LA MÁRCA TRIVIGIÁ- except the March of Trevigi ;
NA,

inghiottíta da úna eruzióne overwhelmed by an eruption
del VESÚVIO, of Mount Vesuvius ;

ella è tagliata dall' ÁDIGE, it is intersected by the Adige :

Visse santo in TÉRRA ed óra He lived a saint on earth and
è in CIÉLO, now is in heaven ;

il cámpo Cristiáno passò in the Christian camp passed to
ORIÉNTE, the east ;

le glórie d' ITÁLIA, the glories of Italy ;

cóme fálde di néve in ÁLPE like flakes of snow on the
sénza vénto, summit of the Alps, when
the wind is hushed ;

mi dissetái con ácqua di SÉN- I quenched my thirst with the
NA, water of the Seine.

EXCEPT

Il Lázio, ' [the] Latium ' ; which always *takes* the *article* : and
Ida, ' Ida ' ; *O'ssa,* ' Ossa ' ; which always *refuse* it.

Names of *seas* take the *article* ; as,

IL MEDITERRÁNEO, L' ADRI- the Mediterranean, the Adri-
ÁTICO, atic ;

L' EGÉO, the Egean ;

L' ATLÁNTICO, IL PACÍFICO, the Atlantic, the Pacific.

Names of *cities*, *islands*, and *lakes* take *no article* ; as,

FIRÉNZE, RÓMA, MARSÍ- Florence, Rome, Marseilles ;
GLIA,

CÍPRO, SCÍO, CRÉTA, Cyprus, Scio, Crete ;

lágo MAGGIÓRE, di LUGÁNO, lake Maggiore, of Lugano, of
di CÓMO, Como.

EXCEPTIONS.

The following names of *cities* and *islands*, however, *take* the *article* ; viz. IL Cáo, ' Cairo ' ; LA Mirándola, ' Mirandola ' ; LA Roccélla, ' Rochelles ' ; L' Alia, ' Aix ' ; — IL Gíglío, ' Giglio ' ; LA Capráia, ' Capraia ' ; LA Gorgóna, ' Gorgona ' ; and perhaps a few more : also the *names* of those *islands* which are *spoken* of in the *plural* ; as, LE Baledri, ' the Balearic islands ' ; LE Filippíne, ' the Philippine islands ' ; LE Molúcche, ' the Molucca islands ' ; &c.

The *names* of the following *islands*, *may* or *may not* take the *article* ; viz. Élba or L' Élba, ' Elba ' ; Sardégna or LA Sardégna,

'Sardinia'; *Córsica* or *LA Córscica*, 'Corsica'; *Sicília* or *LA Sicília*, 'Sicily'; *Inghiltérra* or *L' Inghiltérra*, 'England'; *Irlánda* or *L' Irlánda*, 'Ireland.'

Names of cities, &c., always take the article when preceded by an adjective; as, *la bella Firénze*, '[the] beautiful Florence'; &c.

EXAMPLES.

TÁNTO TÉMPO ÉRA STÁTO SÉN- He had been so long without
ZA VEDÉRE IL CIÉLO. (Bocc. seeing the sky.
g. 3. n. 8.)

LA TÉRRA È FRÉDDA E SÉC- The earth is cold and dry, and
CA, — *L' dere è cáldo e úmido.* the air warm and damp.
(Brun. Tes. 1.)

Per la quál tu su per lo máre By which thou didst walk on
ANDÁVI. (Dant. Par. 24.) the sea.

ÉRA GIÀ L' ORIÉNTE TÚTTO The east was already bright.
BIÁNCO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

NON SOLAMÉNTE IL LEVÁNTE, Not only the east, but also the
MA GIÀ QUÁSI TÚTTO IL PONÉNTE greatest part of the west, knew
per fama IL CONOSCÉVA. (Bocc. him by reputation.
g. 10. n. 3.)

TÚTTA L' EURÓPA È RIPUTÁTA All Europe is considered to be
STRÉTTO CONFÍNE. (Buom.) a narrow limit.

Vói sapéte che L' ITÁLIA È You know that Italy has been
STÁTA PIÙ VÓLTE SOGGIOGÁTA several times subdued by many
DA MÓLTI BÁRBARI. (Buom.) barbarians.

Rendégli la Signoría di Lom- He restored to him the signiory
bardía, SALVO LA MÁRCA TRIVI- of Lombardy, except the March
GIANA. (Gio. Vill. l 3. c. 5.) of Trevigi.

O've restò un témpo INGHIO- Where the city of Herculaneum
TÍTA la città d' Ercoláno DA ÚNA was overwhelmed by an eruption
ERUZIÓNE DEL VESÚVIO. (Gang. of Mount Vesuvius.
lett.)

ÉLLA È TAGLIÁTA DÁLL' ÁDI- It is intersected by the Adige,
GE, *fiúme, cóme sái, ameníssimo.* a very pleasant river, as thou
(Algar. lett.) knowest.

VÍSSE SÁNTO IN TÉRRA, ED ÓRA He lived a saint on earth, and
È IN CIÉLO. (Tass. Ger.) now is in heaven.

Già 'l sèsto ánnó volgéa che 'N It was already six years since
ORIÉNTE — PASSÒ IL CÁMPO the Christian camp passed to the
CRISTIÁNO all' álta imprésa. East on their great undertaking.
(Tass. Ger.)

LE *sómme* GLÓRIE D' ITÁLIA.
(Buom.)

The very great glories of Italy.

Piovéan di fuóco dilatáte fálde,
— CÓME DI NÉVE IN ÁLPE SÉNZA
VÉNTO. (Dant. Inf. 14.)

There fell down dilated flakes
of fire, as flakes of snow on the
summit of the Alps, when the
wind is hushed.

MI DISSETÁI CON ÁCQUA DI
SÉNNA. (Vanz.)

I quenched my thirst with the
water of the Seine.

MA L' EGÉO, ma L' ATLÁN-
TICO, non cérca di comprénde-
re, e sa béne che éi non può.
(Davan.)

But he does not try to compre-
hend the Egean sea, and the
Atlantic ocean, and he knows he
cannot.

Perchè FIRÉNZE è città domi-
nante, e imitatrice di RÓMA.
(Davan.)

Because Florence is a powerful
city, and the rival of Rome.

MARSEILLES [MARSÍGLIA], sic-
còme vói sapéte, è antica e nobi-
líssima città. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)

Marseilles is, as you know, an
ancient and very noble city.

GUISCÁRDO, re di CÍPRO. (Eriz.
Giorn.)

Guiscard, king of Cyprus.

Che le biáde — Ogn' ísola di
Grécia a lúi sol miéta, — E Scío
pietrósa gli vendémmi e CRÉTA.
(Tass. Ger. 1. 78.)

That every island of Greece
should reap corn, and stony Scio
and Crete should make wine for
him alone.

Viaggio á' tre lághi: MAG-
GIÓRE, DI LUGÁNO, e DI CÓMO.
(Amor.)

A journey to the three lakes:
Maggiore, of Lugano, and of Co-
mo.

Il cònte Guido déLLA MIRÁN-
DOLA, móssò dálla munificénza
di Lorénzo, póse la súa abita-
zióne in Firénze. (Mach. Stor.
Fior. 1. 8.)

Count Guido of Mirandola,
pleased with the munificence of
Lorenzo, fixed his residence in
Florence.

MUÓVASI LA CAPRÁIA e LA
GORGÓNA. (Dant. Inf. 33.)

May Capraia and Gorgona rise
from their foundations.

Dio or *Iddio*, 'God'; and *names of persons*, when
used in their *full meaning*, *never take the article*; but,
when we *limit their signification* to designate a particu-
lar object, they *always take the article*; as,

Dío ci mándi béne,

God help us;

| | |
|---|---|
| IDDÍO <i>dispóse altraménte,</i> | God ordained otherwise ; |
| APÓLLO <i>fu vedúto saettàre il Pitóne,</i> | Apollo was seen shooting the serpent Python ; |
| ov' ÉRCOLE <i>segnò li suói riguárdi,</i> | where Hercules fixed his boundaries ; |
| OMÉRO, VIRGÍLIO, e DÁNTE, | Homer, Virgil, and Dante : |

| | |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| IL DÍO <i>délla guérra,</i> | The God of war ; |
| L' APÓLLO <i>del Belvédère,</i> | the Apollo of Belvedere ; |
| L' ÉRCOLE <i>Farnése,</i> | the Farnese Hercules ; |
| L' OMÉRO <i>Ferrarése,</i> | the Ferrarese Homer [Ariosto]. |

Agreeably to this principle the nouns *Dío*, *Iddío*, in the *plural*, when speaking of the deities of the heathens, *take the article* ; as,

| | |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| <i>se fósse piaciúto áGLI DÉI,</i> | if it had pleased the Gods ; |
| GL' IDDÍI, <i>li quáli govérnano le nóstre còse,</i> | the Gods, who govern our affairs. |

They *take* also the *article*, when they are *preceded* by an *adjective* ; as,

| | |
|----------------------------|----------------------|
| L' <i>onnipoténte</i> DÍO, | the almighty God ; |
| IL <i>gránde</i> ACHÍLLE, | the great Achilles ; |
| L' <i>infelíce</i> PRÍAMO, | the unhappy Priamus. |

They *take* the *article* when they are used to designate persons *familiarly* or *publicly* known ; as,

| | |
|---------------------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>chiamáto</i> IL GERBÍNO, | having called Gerbino ; |
| <i>avéva amáta</i> LA NINÉTTA, | he had loved Ninetta ; |
| LA MADDALÉNA, LA MARI- ÁNNA, | Magdalen, Marianna. |

But when *names of persons* are *preceded* by one of the nouns *Sére*, ' Sir ' ; *Messére*, ' Master ' ; *maéstro*, ' master ' ; *Don*, ' Don ' ; *Dónna*, ' Donna ' ; *Fráte*, ' Friar or Brother ' ; *Sánto* or *Sánta*, ' Saint ' ; they *refuse* the *article* ; as,

| | |
|---------------|----------------|
| SER Brunétto, | Sir Brunetto ; |
|---------------|----------------|

| | |
|---------------------------|------------------|
| MESSÉR <i>Gugliélmo</i> , | Mr. William ; |
| MAÉSTRO <i>Adámo</i> , | master Adamo ; |
| DON <i>Piétro</i> , | Don Pedro ; |
| FRÁTE <i>Albéto</i> , | Friar Albert ; |
| SAN <i>Maurizio</i> , | Saint Maurice ; |
| SÁNTA <i>Veridiána</i> , | Saint Veridiana. |

Names of persons, preceded by the nouns Pápa, 'Pope'; Re, 'King,' are better used without the article ; as,

Pápa Giovánni, Re Cárló, Pope John, King Charles.

Surnames or family names take no article, when preceded by names of persons ; but when they are used to specify a person of such a family, also when we speak of celebrated men, and when they are preceded by a title, the article is used ; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>Gugliélmo Rossiglione, Gugliélmo Guardastagno,</i> | William Rossiglione, William Guardastagno ; |
| IL GUARDASTÁGNO, IL ROSSIGLIÓNE, | Guardastagno, Rossiglione ; |
| IL PETRÁRCA, IL BOCCÁCCIO, | Petrarch, Boccaccio ; |
| IL cardínál MAZZARÍNÍ, | cardinal Mazzarini. |

Names of the months take no article ; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>il sêsto di GENNAIO fu l'ásce,</i> | the sixth of January was for the axe ; |
| <i>il primo e 'l secóndo di AGÓSTO fûron le martélla,</i> | the first and second of August were for the hammers. |

Names of the days may be used with or without the article ; as,

| | |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| MERCOLEDÌ, dópo desinare, | Wednesday, after dinner ; |
| IL SÁBATO mattina si partì di Fîrénze, | on Saturday morning he left Florence. |

EXAMPLES.

*Entrándo déntro disse: "Díó
CI MÁNDI BÉNE; chi è quà?"*
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 2.)

On entering said: "God help
us; who is here?"

*IDDÍO, giústo riguardátore dé-
gli altrui mériti, ALTRAMÉNTÉ
DISPÓSE.* (Bocc. g. 2 n. 8.)

God, the just rewarder of peo-
ple's merit, ordained otherwise.

*Chè FU veraménte VEDÚTO
APÓLLO SAETTÁRE IL velenóso
PITÓNE.* (Davan.)

For Apollo was really seen
shooting the venomous serpent
Python.

*Io e i compágni eravam vécchi
e tárdi, — Quándo venimmo a
quélle fóce strétta, — OV' ÉRCO-
LE SEGNO LI SUÓI RIGUÁRDI.*
(Dant. Inf. 26.)

I and my companions were tar-
dy with age, when we came to
the strait pass where Hercules
fixed his boundaries.

*OMÉRO, VIRGÍLIO, E DÁNTE
han lasciáto nêlle pittúre lóro
mólto di che fáre all' immagina-
tiva del leggitóre.* (Fosc.)

Homer, Virgil, and Dante have
left in their pictures much to do
for the imagination of the reader.

IL DÍO DÉLLA GUÉRRÁ. (Ce-
sar.)

The God of War.

L' APÓLLO DEL BELVEDÉRE.
(Miliz. Art. Dis.)

The Apollo of Belvedere.

L' OMÉRO FERRARÉSE. (Me-
tast. lett.)

The Ferrarese Homer [Ariosto].

SE ÁGLI DÉI FÓSSE PIACIÚTO.
(Bocc. Filoc.)

If it had pleased the Gods.

*GL' IDDÍI, LI QUÁLI dispóngo-
no e GOVÉRNAN nói, e LE NÓSTRE
CÓSE.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

The Gods, who dispose of, and
govern, us and our affairs.

*L' ONNIPOTÉNTÉ DÍO, e mise-
ricordióso giúdice, nascónde dal
súo giudicio i nóstri fálli.* (Pass.
Ver. Pen.)

The almighty God, and merciful
judge, conceals our sins from his
judgment.

*E vídi 'L GRÁNDE ACHÍLLE, —
Che con amóre al fine combattéo.*
(Dant. Inf. 5.)

And I saw the great Achilles
who fought with love to the end.

*Il quále mólto AMÁTA AVÉVA
LA NINÉTTA.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)

Who had ardently loved Ninet-
ta.

E chinando la mano alla sua faccia — Risposi: “ Siete voi qui, SER BRUNETTO?” (Dant. Inf. 15.)

MESSÉR GUGLIÉLMO Rossiglione dà a mangiare alla moglie sua il cuore di MESSÉR GUGLIÉLMO Guardastagno. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 9.)

Diss’ egli a noi: “ Guardate, ed attendete — Alla miseria del MAÉSTRO ADÁMO.” (Dant. Inf. 30.)

Tórto farèi alla infinita virtù dell’ eccellentissimo DON PIÉTRO de Tolédo. (Bern. Tass. lett.)

FRÁTE ALBÉRTO dà a vedére ad una donna, che l’ ágnolo Gabriéle (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

Con una bólla istituì l’ órdine di SAN MAURÍZIO. (Den. Riv. Ital.)

Paréva pur SÁNTA VERIDIÁNA, che dà a beccáre alle sérpi. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

Mórto PÁPA GIOVÁNNI, e non avéndo potuto RE CÁRLO ottenére che si fósse rifatto un Pápa Franzése. (Gian. Stor. Giv. Nap. l. 20. c. 5.)

IL GUARDASTÁGNO rispóse, che sénza fallo il dì segúente andrébbe a cenár con lui. IL ROSSIGLIÓNE, udéndo quéstó, pensò il témpo ésser venúto di potérlo uccidere. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5)

L’ esquisitézza del PETRÁRCA, áltro nime délla nóstra volgár poesía. (Buom.)

Il Decamerón del BOCCÁCCIO è di grán lúnga il migliór líbro, che abbíamo in fatto d’ eloquénza Italiána. (Den. Sag. Letter.)

And inclining my hand towards his face, I answered: “ Sir Brunetto, are you here?”

Mr. William Rossiglione gives to his wife the heart of Mr. William Guardastagno to eat.

And he said to us: “ Regard attentively the woe of master Adamo.”

I should do wrong to the immense merit of the most excellent Don Pedro de Toledo.

Friar Albert gives a woman to understand, that the angel Gabriel

With a bull he instituted the order of Saint Maurice.

She seemed Saint Veridiana, feeding the serpents.

Pope John having died, and King Charles having not been able to obtain that a French Pope should be re-elected.

Guardastagno answered, that he would without fail sup with him the following night. Rossiglione, hearing this, thought the time of murdering him was come.

The exquisite elegance of Petrarch, another god of our Italian poetry.

The Decameron of Boccaccio is by far the best book which we have in point of Italian elegance.

IL CARDINÁL MAZZARÍNÌ, *Italiano ancor esso*. (Den. Riv. Ital. l. 23. c. 12.)

Cardinal Mazzarini, an Italian also.

SE IL SÉSTO DI GENNAÍO FU L' ÁSCE, E IL PRÍMO E IL SECÓNDÓ D' AGÓSTO FÚRONO LE MARTÉLLA. (Davan. Stor.)

If the sixth of January was for the axe, and the first and second of August were for the hammers.

MERCOLEDÌ, DÓPO DESINÁRE, *assalírono da più párti quegli del lato degli Adimári*. (Gio. Vill. c. 20.)

Wednesday, after dinner, they assailed from different quarters those who sided with the Adimari.

Venúta in Firénze la novélla il Venerdì séra, IL SÁBATO MAT-TÍNA Messér Giambertáldo SI PARTÌ DI FIRÉNZE. (Gio. Vill. l. 7. c. 31.)

The news having reached Florence on Friday evening, Messer Giambertaldo left Florence on Saturday morning.

A noun preceded by an *adjective* takes the article *before this adjective*; as,

IL GRAN *mále*, IL GRAN *pec-cáto*, IL GRAN *fátto adope-ráti da Gisippo*,

the great evil, the great sin, the great crime committed by Gisippus.

Nouns also take the article when preceded by an *ordinal number*, or a *possessive pronoun*; * but they

* This rule with regard to *possessive pronouns* has not been strictly followed by the early writers, as may be seen by the following examples:

Com' é' vedránnó *quél volúme apérto*,
— *Nel qual si scrívon tutti suóí dispre-*
GI. (Dant. Par. 19.)

As soon as they shall see that book open, in which all their sins are written.

Pássan *vóstri triónfi e vóstre*
PÓMPE. (Petr. Trionf. Temp.)

Your triumphs and your pomp pass away.

Quésta *ira di Dio a nóstra correzi-óne* *mandáta sópra i mortáli*. (Bocc. Intr.)

This wrath of God sent down upon mortals for our correction.

Besides there are in Italian several modes of expression, such as *a mia pósta*, 'at my pleasure'; in *suo nóme*, 'in his name'; *contra sua vóglia*, 'against his will'; &c., in which, by a peculiarity of language, the *article* is elegantly *suppressed*; as,

Po non póssó far *cáldo e frédó* A MÍA PÓSTA. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

I cannot make warm and cold weather at my pleasure.

Quésti *sgrida*, IN SU'O NÓME, *il tróppo ardere*. (Tass. Ger. 3. 53.)

This one blames, in his (Godfrey's) name, their excessive daring.

Ed io, *CÓNTRA SU'A VÓGLIA*, *altrónde* 'l méno. (Petr. s. 39.)

And I guide him elsewhere against his will.

refuse it when they are *preceded* by a *demonstrative*, *interrogative*, or *indefinite pronoun* ; as,

| | |
|----------------------------|-----------------------|
| IL VENTÉSIMO <i>Cáto</i> , | the twentieth Canto ; |
| LA PRÍMA <i>canzóna</i> , | the first song ; |
| LA MÍA <i>pátria</i> , | my country ; |
| IL VÓSTRO <i>amíco</i> , | your friend : |

| | |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------|
| QUÉSTI <i>sospíri</i> , | these sighs ; |
| QUÁL <i>paúra</i> ? | what fear ; |
| QUALÚNQUE ÁLTRA <i>fánte</i> , | any other woman ; |
| ÚNA COTÁL <i>mezzanità</i> , | such a middling course. |

EXCEPTIONS.

When the nouns are preceded by the *indefinite* pronouns, *úno*, 'one' ; *áltro*, 'other' ; *stéssu* or *medésimo*, 'same' ; they are *used* with the *article* ; as,

| | |
|---|------------------------------------|
| L' ÚNA e L' ÁLTRA <i>máno</i> , | the one and the other hand ; |
| NÉLLA MEDÉSIMA <i>città</i> , NEL ME- DÉSIMO <i>giórno</i> , | in the same city, in the same day. |

Sometimes the *noun*, which is preceded by an *ordinal* number or a *possessive pronoun*, is *understood* ; as,

| | |
|---|-------------------------------|
| non stringéndosi <i>nélle vi-</i> | not confining themselves in |
| <i>vánde</i> <i>quánto</i> I PRÍMI, <i>nè</i> | eating like the former, nor |
| <i>nel bére</i> <i>quánto</i> I SECÓNDI, | in drinking like the latter ; |
| <i>sóma d' áltri ómeri</i> <i>che dáí</i> | a burden for stronger shoul- |
| <i>TUÓI</i> , | ders than thine. |

When the *noun*, which is *preceded* by a *possessive pronoun*, is one of those which express *kindred* or *relation*, *quality* or *rank*, and this noun is in the *singular* number, the *article* is *suppressed* ; * but, if the noun is in the *plural*, the *article* is *always used* ; as,

* Notwithstanding this, instances are often found in excellent writers, in which

| | |
|---|---|
| MÍO FÍGLIO ov' è? | where is my son? |
| SÚO PÁDRE ci fèce mólti dán- ni, | his father did us many injuries; |
| MÍA MÁDRE, un fratélllo mi- nóre, ed io, | my mother, a younger brother, and I; |
| ména léco TÚA MÓGLIE, | take thy wife with thee; |
| il nóbile átto di Filippo, usáto a salúte di SÚO MARÍTO, | the noble action which Philip had done for the safety of her husband; |
| il dirò a MÍO FRATÉLLO, | I will tell it to my brother; |
| VÓSTRA SORÉLLA, VÓSTRA ZÍA, | your sister, your aunt; |
| SÚA ECCELLÉNZA le baciò la máno, | His Excellency kissed her hand; |
| stiámo assái béne con SÚA ALTÉZZA, | we stand very well with His Highness; |
| gl' interéssi di SÚA MAESTÀ, | His Majesty's interests: |

| | |
|--|--|
| Guardái nel viso ái MIÉI FIGLIUÓLI, | I looked upon the countenance of my sons; |
| ringrázio LE LÓRO SIGNORÍE, | I thank your Lordships. |

EXCEPT

When the *noun* is separated from the *pronoun* by an *adjective*

the article is *used* before nouns of *kindred* and *quality* in the *singular*, preceded by *possessive pronouns*; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| E'cco IL TU'O FÍGLIO. (Guar. Past. Fid. 1.) | Behold thy son. |
| Aréte Cirenáica, che dópo la móрте del SU'O PA'DRE, résse la scuóla. (Firenz. lett.) | Arete of Cyrene, who, after her fa- ther's death, directed the school. |
| Vedér puóì con quánto affétto, — La víte s' avviticchia al SU'O MARÍTO. (Tass. Amint. 1. 1.) | Thou mightest see with what affection the vine entwines itself round her hus- band [the oak]. |
| Avéndo riguárdo áLLA VÓSTRA ECCEL- LE'NZÁ. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.) | Paying regard to your Excellency. |
| Ardirò di pórgerè i priégghi miéi áLLA VÓSTRA ALTE'ZZA. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.) | I will take the liberty of advancing my prayers to your Highness. |
| LA SU'A MAESTÀ. (Dav.) | His Majesty. |

placed between them; and when it is *preceded* by the pronoun *lóro*, 'their'; in which cases the *article* is *used* even in the *singular*; as,

AL *mío* DISPIETÁTO *pádre*, to my cruel father;
LA *LÓRO* *figlia*, LA *LÓRO* *so-* their daughter, their sister.
rèlla,

The *article* is also *suppressed*, when the noun, preceded by a possessive pronoun, is also *preceded* by a *numeral adjective*, or a *demonstrative* or *indefinite pronoun*; as,

con QUÉSTO *súo* *figliuólo*, with this son of hers;
QUÁLCHE *súo* *amico*, some of his friends;
ÓGNI *mío* *ufficio*, all my obligations;
NIÚN *vóstro* *fátto*, none of your business;
CÉRTI *súoi* *amici*, certain friends of his.

The *relative* pronoun *quále*, 'which,' when *preceded* by its *antecedent*, *requires* the *article*;* but it *refuses* the *article* when it is used in the signification of *chi*, 'he who'; when it expresses *doubt*, or when it expresses *similitude*; as,

SÉTTE *GIÓVANI* *DÓNNE*, *i* *nó-* seven young women, whose
mi *délle* *QUÁLI* *raccon-* names I would relate;
teréi,
QUÁL *più* *gènte* *possiede*, he who has most people [sol-
diers];
QUÁL *guerriéro* *Cristiáno*, like a Christian warrior;
QUÁL *più* *vi* *piáce* *délle* *dúe*, which of the two you like best.

The words *signóre* or *signóra*, when used *substantively* in the signification of the *master* or *mistress* of a

* In poetry, however, the *article* is often *suppressed*; as,

O DÍVA LU'CE, QU'A'LE, *in tre persóne*
—Ed *una* *essénza*, *il* *Ciél* *govérni* *e* 'l
móndo. (Bocc. *Amet.* 98.)

E *quéi*: "Di *rádo* — *Incóntra*," *mi*
rispóse, "che *di* *núì* — *Fáccia* 'l *cammí-*
no *alcún*, *per* *QU'A'LE* *io* *vádo*." (Dant.
Inf. 9.)

O divine light, who, one substance in
three persons, governest Heaven and the
world.

And he replied to me: "It seldom
happens, that any one of us makes the
journey which I am going."

thing, *take* the *article*; but when used *adjectively* as *titles* or *epithets*, they *take* the *article*, when we *speak of*, and they *refuse* it, when we *speak to*, a person; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| IL SIGNÓRE [di quèsta càsa] | the master [of this house] is |
| è uscito, | gone out; |
| LA SIGNÓRA è occupáta, | the mistress is engaged; |
| vói quì sítte IL SIGNÓRE, | you are the master here; |
| IL SIGNÓR Cárlo Dàti ed IL | Mr. Charles Dati and Mr. An- |
| SIGNÓR Andréa Cavalcànti, | drew Cavalcanti; |
| IL SIGNÓR Cardinále Spí- | Cardinal Spinola; |
| nola, | |
| IL SIGNÓR marchése e LA | the marquis and the countess: |
| SIGNÓRA contéssa, | |

O SIGNÓR Achille!

O Mr. Achilles!

vedéte, SIGNÓRI, com' égli
m' avéa lasciáto,

see, sirs, how he had left me;

SIGNÓRI e dónne, vói dovéte
sapére,

gentlemen and ladies, you
must know.

Agreeably to this rule, the words *signóre* and *signóra*, *take* the *article*, when used to *express* 'our Lord' [God], and 'our Lady' [the Virgin]; * and *refuse* it, when used *with* the adverbs *sì*, 'yes'; and *no* or *non*, 'no'; in *affirmative* and *negative* phrases; as,

IL SIGNÓRE, Jesù,

our Lord, Jesus;

LA SIGNÓRA délle Grázie,

our Lady of the Graces;

SIGNÓR SÌ,

yes, Sir;

NON SIGNÓRA,

no, Madam.

* In the following instances the article is suppressed before the word *signóre*, preceded by the *possessive* pronoun *nóstro*:

A cùi NÓSTRO SIGNÓRE lasciò le chiávi.
(Dant. Par. 24.)

To whom our Lord [Christ] left the
keys.

Quánto tesóro vólle — NÓSTRO SIGNÓ-
RE in prima da San Piétro — Che ponés-
se le chiávi in sua balia? (Dant. Inf. 19.)

What treasures did our Lord demand
of St. Peter, before he put the keys into
his charge?

Si dée éssere lo cavaliére astinénate, e
digiunàre il Venerdì, in rimembránza di
NÓSTRO SIGNÓRE. (Nov. Ant. 51.)

A knight ought to be abstinent, and
ought to fast on Friday, in commemora-
tion of [the death of] our Lord.

Finally, there are several expressions in Italian, in which the *article* is always *suppressed* ; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>andáre</i> A CÁSA, A PALÁGIO or A CÓRTE, A NÓZZE, A FÉSTA, A CHIÉSA, | to go home, to court, to a wedding, to a feast, to church ; |
| <i>stáre</i> or <i>éssere</i> IN CÁSA, IN BOTTÉGA, IN PIÁZZA, IN CITTÀ, IN CAMPÁGNA or CONTÁDO, | to live <i>or</i> to be at home, in the shop, in the square, in the city, in the country ; |
| <i>uscíre</i> DI CÁSA, DI CITTÀ, DI CONTÁDO, | to go out of the house, of the city, of the country ; |
| <i>avér</i> FÁME, SÉTE, CÁLDO, FRÉDDO, | to be hungry, thirsty, warm, cold ; |
| <i>avére</i> IN MÁNO, <i>méttere</i> IN BÓCCA, | to have in hand, to put into one's mouth ; |
| <i>menáre</i> A SPÁSSO, <i>tentér</i> TÁ- VOLA, | to take one to walk, to give a dinner ; |
| <i>córrer</i> RÍSCHIO, <i>réndér</i> CÓNTO, | to run a risk, to give account ; |
| <i>dáre</i> ÓRDINE, <i>prestár</i> FÉDE, | to give orders, to give credit. |

EXAMPLES.

Quésto è dúnque IL GRAN
MÁLE, IL GRAN PECCÁTO, IL GRAN
FÁTTO ADOPERÁTO DA GISÍPPO ?
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Is this, then, the great evil, the
great sin, the great crime com-
mitted by Gisippus ?

*Di nuóva péna mi convién far
vérsi, — E dar matéria* AL VEN-
TÉSIMO CÁNTO — *DÉLLA PRÍMA*
CANZÓNE, *ch' è dé' sommérsi*.
(Dant. Inf. 20.)

I must write verses respecting
new torments, to be the subject of
the twentieth canto of the first
song, which treats of those who
are sunk in woe.

*LA MÍA PÁTRIA mi ha nutri-
cáto saviámén-te.* (Am. Ant. d.
2. r. 6.)

My country has brought me up
wisely.

Io vi vóglío díre ciocchè IL
VÓSTRO AMÍCO *mi féce stamáne*.
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

I wish to tell you what your
friend did to me this morning.

Che fánno omái méco QUÉSTI
SOSPÍRI ? (Petr. c. 33.)

What do these sighs do with
me ?

Quáli léggi, quáli minácece,
QUÁL PAÚRA ? (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

What laws, what threats, what
fear ?

Sé' tu più che QUALÚNQUE Art thou more than any other
ÁLTRA dolorosétta FÁNTE. (Bocc. weeping woman.
 g. 8. n. 7.)

Per ÚNA COTÁL MEZZANITÀ, e To observe such a middling
per contentáre il pópolo, eléssero course, and to satisfy the people,
dúe cavaliéri Fráti Gaudénti. they elected two knights [of the
 (Gio. Vill. l. 7. c. 13.) order of] Joyous Friars.

Ed un, ch' avéa L' ÚNA E L' ÁL- And one, who had the one and
TRA MAN mózza. (Dant. Inf.) the other hand cut off.

E NÉLLA MEDÉSIMA CITTÀ, nel And in the same city, in the
mése medésimo di Apríle, NEL same month of April, on the same
MEDÉSIMO GIÓRNO séi, nell' áнно sixth day, in the year one thou-
mílle trecénto quarantótto, da sand three hundred and forty-
quéstá lúce quélla lúce fu tólta. eight, that light (Laura) was
 (Petr. lett.) taken from this light.

Mólti áltri servávano úna mez- Many others chose a method
zána vía, NON STRINGÉNDOSI NÉL- between the two, not confining
LE VIVÁNDE QUÁNTO I PRÍMI, NÈ themselves in eating like the for-
NEL BÉRE QUÁNTO I SECÓNDI. mer, nor in drinking like the latter.
 (Bocc. Intr.)

Chè fárle onóre — È D' ÁLTRI For to do her honor is a burden
ÓMERI SÓMA, CHE DÁ' TUÓI. (Petr. for stronger shoulders than thine.
 s. 5.)

Mío fíglío ov' è, e perchè Where is my son, and why is he
non è téco? (Dant. Inf. 10.) not with thee?

SÚO PÁDRE CI FÉCE MÓLTI His father did us many inju-
DÁNNI. (Dav. Stor. 4.) ries.

MÍA MÁDRE, UN FRATÉLLO My mother, a younger brother,
MINÓRE, ED ÍO, síamo restáti and I, have remained in extreme
nell' estréma miséria. (Soav. misery.
 Nov.)

I'o vóglío che tu ti váda, e I wish that thou shouldst go,
MÉNI TÉCO TÚA MÓGLIE. (Bocc.) and take thy wife with thee.

Intéso IL NÓBILE ÁTTO DI Having heard of the noble ac-
FILÍPPO, USÁTO A SALÚTE DI SÚO tion, which Phillip had done for
MARÍTO. (Giral. lett.) the safety of her husband.

I'o IL DIRÒ A MÍO FRATÉLLO. I will tell it to my brother.
 (Bocc.)

VÓSTRA SORÉLLA mi mandò Your sister sent me to Monna
a cása Mónna Lessándra, vó- Lessandra's, your aunt.
STRA ZÍA. (Cecch. Dot. 2. 2.)

E SÚA ECCELLÉNZA LE BACIÒ And His Excellency kissed her
LA MÁNO. (Car. lett.) hand.

Nói due, secondo che a me pare, STIÀMO ASSÁI BÉNE CON SÚA ALTÉZZA. (Firenz. disc. an. 14.)

GL' INTERÉSSI DI SÚA MAESTÀ. (Bent. lett.)

Ond' io guardái — Nel víso á' mié' figliuóli senza far mótto. (Dant. Inf. 33.)

A che rispóndo, prima che io ringrázii le Lóro signoríe. (Bemb. lett.)

Póse Iddío nell' ánimo al mío dispietáto pádre. (Bocc.)

Senténdo gli Amidéi, che Messer Buondelmónte avéva tólta un' áltra móglie, e non voléva la Lóro [fíglia, sorélla], fúrono insiéme. (Gio. Fior. Pecor.)

Mónna Giovánna con quéstó súo figliuólo sen' andáva in contádo. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

Per consíglío di quálche súo amíco. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

O mólto amáto cuóre, ógni mío uffíció verso te è fornúto. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Éssi di niún vóstro fáttó s' impácciano. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Gli vénne un méssó da cérti suói grandíssimi amíci. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

Sétte giòvani dónne, i nómi délle quáli io in própria fórma racconteréi. (Bocc. Intr.)

Quál più génte possiède, — Colúi è più dá' subí nemíci avólto. (Petr. c. 29.)

Vivésti quál guerriéro cristíano, e sánto. (Tass. Ger. 3. 68.)

We two, as it seems to me, stand very well with His Highness.

His Majesty's interests.

Whence I looked upon the countenances of my sons without saying a word.

To which I reply, before thanking your Lordships.

God put into the mind of my cruel father.

The Amidei hearing, that Messer Buondelmonte had taken another wife, and wished no longer for their [daughter, sister] met together.

Monna Giovanna used to go into the country with this son of hers.

By the advice of some friend of his.

O beloved heart [object], all my obligations towards thee are satisfied.

They do not meddle with any of your business.

He received a message from certain very great friends of his.

Seven young women, whose names I would relate in due form.

He who has most people [soldiers], is surrounded by most enemies.

Thou livedst like a Christian and holy warrior.

Nèlla vòstra elezióne stà di tórre QUÁL PIÙ VI PIACE DÉLLE DÚE, o, se voléte, amendúe. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 2.)

It is at your option to take which of the two you like best, or, if you wish, both of them.

IL SIGNÓRE È USCÍTO. (Gram. Gram.)

The master is gone out.

LA SIGNÓRA È OCCUPÁTA. (Vanz.)

The mistress is engaged.

VÓI QUÌ SIÉTE IL SIGNÓRE. (Bocc.)

You are the master here.

IL SIGNÓR CÁRLO DÁTI, IL SIGNÓR AGOSTÍNO NÉLLI, ED IL SIGNÓR ANDRÉA CAVALCÁNTI vi salútano caraménte. (Red. lett.)

Mr. Charles Dati, Mr. Augustine Nelli, and Mr. Andrew Cavalcanti salute you affectionately.

IL SIGNÓR CARDINÁLE SPÍNO-LA, nóstro legáto. (Bent. lett. 1.)

Cardinal Spinola, our legate.

IL SIGNÓR maéstro, IL SIGNÓR MARCHÉSE, E LA SIGNÓRA CON-TÉSSA. (Gram. Gram.)

The master, the marquis, and the countess.

O SIGNÓR ACHÍLLE ! (Guid.)

O Mr. Achilles !

E á' villáni rivólto, disse : "VEDÉTE, SIGNÓRI, COM' ÉGLI M' AVÉA LASCIÁTO nell' albérgo in arnése." (Bocc. g. 9. n. 4.)

And turning to the rustics, he said : " See, sirs, in what condition he had left me at the inn."

SIGNÓRI E DÓNNE, VÓI DOVÉTE SAPÉRE, che (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

Gentlemen and ladies, you must know, that

Andàrono, e pénsomi che trovarono IL SIGNÓRE, GESÙ. (Vit. S. G. Bat.)

They went, and I imagine that they found our Lord, Jesus.

E dal buón uómo fúrono áLLA SIGNÓRA DÉLLE GRÁZIE raccomandáte. (Vit. S. Cater.)

And by that good man they were recommended to our Lady of the Graces.

"SIGNÓR sì, da cavalière," gridò il cónte. (Manz. Prom. Spos.)

"Yes, sir, [it is the act] of a nobleman," cried out the count.

NON SIGNÓRA ; è in compagnia d' un forestiére. (Gold. Avvent.)

No, madam ; she is accompanied by a stranger.

Giúnti a CÁSA del pádre délla fanciúlla. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.)

Having arrived at the house of the father of the girl.

Benchè i cittadini non abbiano a far còsa del mòndo A PALÀGIO, *pur talvòlta vi vànno.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 5.)

The citizens sometimes go to court, though they have nothing in the world to do there.

Nè già arèsti amíco sì cáro, per cù mallevadóre tu andássi A CÔRTE. (Senec. Pist.)

You would not have so dear a friend, for whom you would go into court as bail.

Che A NÓZZE, o A FÉSTA, o A CHIÉSA andár potésse. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

That she might go to wedding, or to a feast, or to church.

Gli sbanditi uscirono quási tutti DI CITTÀ, *e* DI CONTÁDO. (Gio. Vill.)

Almost all the outlaws went out of the city, and out of the country.

When we wish to designate a *portion* or a *number* of the *objects* in a *class*, this may be done in four different ways :

First, by *naming* only the *objects* of the class ; as, *ho buón vîno*, or *buóni vîni*, ‘I have good wine,’ or ‘good wines.’

Secondly, by *using* the preposition *di*, ‘of’ ; as, *ho DI buón vîno*, or *DI buóni vîni*, ‘I have [of] good wine,’ or ‘[of] good wines.’

Thirdly, by *using* the same *preposition* and the *article* ; as, *ho DEL buón vîno*, or *DÉI buóni vîni*, ‘I have [of the] good wine,’ or ‘[of the] good wines.’

Fourthly, by *using* the indefinite pronoun *úno*, *úna*, ‘a’ or ‘an,’ in the singular ; *alcúni*, *alcúne*, ‘some,’ in the plural ; as, *ho UN buón vîno*, or *ALCÚNI buóni vîni*, ‘I have a good wine, or ‘some good wines.’ Thus,

GRÁNDI BÉSTIE,

great beasts ;

VÍE AMPÍSSIME,

very extensive walks ;

DI *bélli gioiéli*,

[of] beautiful jewels ;

DI *buóne merénde*,

[of] good luncheons ;

DÉLLE *canzóni*, *e* DÉ’ *sonétti*,

[of the] songs and [of the] sonnets ;

| | |
|---|--|
| DÉGLI <i>amíci</i> , e DÉ' <i>servidóri</i> , | some [of the] friends, and some [of the] servants ; |
| ÚNA <i>lor sorélla</i> , | a sister of theirs ; |
| ALCÚNI <i>suói vicíni</i> , | some of his neighbours. |

EXAMPLES.

| | |
|--|--|
| GRÁNDI BÉSTIE <i>hánno né' lóro</i> <i>bósci</i> . (Dav. Ann.) | They have great beasts in their woods. |
| Ésso <i>avéa víe ampíssime</i> . (Bocc.) | It had very extensive walks. |
| Io ho DI BÉLLI GIOIÉLLI. (Bocc.) | I have beautiful jewels. |
| Avévan da lui DI BUÓNE ME- RÉNDÉ. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) | They had from him good lun- cheons. |
| Cominciò a fare DÉLLE CAN- ZÓNI, E DÉ' SONÉTTI. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 3.) | He began to write songs and sonnets. |
| Fátti <i>prestaménte chiamáre</i> DÉGLI AMÍCI, E DÉ' SERVIDÓRI, (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.) | Having caused some friends and some servants immediately to be called. |
| Avévano ÚNA LOR SORÉLLA, <i>chiamáta Lisabétta</i> . (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.) | They had a sister of theirs, called Elizabeth. |
| Trovóllo con ALCÚNI SUÓI VICÍ- NI. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 8.) | He found him with some of his neighbours. |

The English make use of the *article* before an *ordinal number* joined to a *proper name* ; as, *Leo* THE *Tenth*, &c. ; before a *noun in apposition*, or immediately following another, of which it expresses a *quality* ; as, *Mr. Grant*, THE *son of John*, &c. ; also in speaking of *quotations*, or of the *division* of a book ; book THE *first*, chapter THE *second*, &c. : in Italian, however, the *article* is *suppressed* ; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>il cardinale Richelieu, primo</i> <i>ministro di Luigi Decimo-</i> <i>térzo</i> , | cardinal Richelieu, THE prime minister of Louis THE Thir- teenth ; |
|--|--|

giornála nóna, novélla ottáva, the ninth day, novel the eighth.

In speaking of *buying* and *selling* any thing, the English article *a* or *an*, used with nouns of *number*, *measure*, or *weight*, is expressed in Italian by the articles *il, lo, la* ; as,

il fruménto si vendéva ad ottánta lire IL móggio, the wheat was sold at eighty livres A bushel.

The same article, *a* or *an*, in Italian is *suppressed* :

First, after the verbs *to be*, *to become*, with a noun expressing the *country*, *profession*, *dignity*, or any *other quality* of the *subject* of the verb ; as,

| | |
|---------------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>Vittório Siri, Italiáno,</i> | Vittorio Siri, AN Italian; |
| <i>füi poéta,</i> | I was A poet; |
| <i>saréte capitáno,</i> | you will be A captain; |
| <i>diverrà cardinále,</i> | he will become A cardinal. |

Secondly, with a noun of the same kind after the verbs *to make*, *to create*, *to appoint*, *to elect*, *to choose*, *to declare*, *to proclaim*, whatever may be the *subject* of the verb ; as,

| | |
|---------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>fécelo maliscálco,</i> | he made him A marshal; |
| <i>lo dichiarò mátto,</i> | she declared him A madman. |

Thirdly, before a noun in *apposition*, or *qualifying* another which *precedes* it ; as,

| | |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| <i>il Tamígi, fíume d' Inghil- térra,</i> | the Thames, A river in Eng- land. |
|---|--------------------------------------|

Fourthly, before the *title* of a *work* ; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>discórso di Luígi Guicciar- dini,</i> | A discourse of Luigi Guicciar- dini. |
|--|---|

EXAMPLES.

| | |
|---|--|
| IL CARDINÁLE RICHELIEU, PRÍMO MINÍSTRO DI LUÍGI DECI- MOTÉRZO. (Den. Letter.) | Cardinal Richelieu, the prime minister of Louis the Thirteenth. |
|---|--|

GIORNÁTA NÓNA, NOVÉLLA OT-
TÁVA. (Bocc.)

The ninth day, novel the eighth.

*Fissò la mèta del pàne al
prézzo che il pàne avrèbbe avúto,
se IL FRUMÁNTO si fósse vendúto
a LÍRE trentatrè IL MÓGGIO ; e
SI VENDÉVA FÍNO AD OTTÁNTA.*
(Manz. Prom. Spos.)

He fixed the price of bread, as
if the wheat were sold at thirty-
three livres a bushel ; and it was
selling as high as eighty.

VITTÓRIO SÍRI, ITALIÁNO, fu
storiógrafo délla còrte di Frància.
(Den. Letter.)

Vittorio Siri, an Italian, was
historian to the court of France.

POÉTA FÚI, e contái di quel
giústo — Figliuól d' Anchíse, che
venne da Tróia. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

I was a poet, and sang of that
just son of Anchises, who came
from Troy.

*In luógo di quello che mórtó
éra, il sostitui, e FÉCELO SÚO
MALISCÁLCO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

He substituted him for the one
who had died, and made him his
marshal.

SUL TAMÍGI, FIÚME D' INGHIL-
TÉRRÁ. (Bocc. Com. Dant.)

On the Thames, a river in Eng-
land.

DISCÓRSO DI LUÍGI GUICCIAR-
DÍNI ái magistráti. (Mach.)

A discourse of Luigi Guiccardini
to the magistrates.

EXERCISE XXX.

The good, which man can derive from a thing,
giovaménto, uómo potére cavár còsa,
consists either in (the) its utility, or (in the) pleasure.
consistere — útile, piacere.
He advised the king to wish for peace, and not war.
— Confortáre re volére — páce, guérra.
I know (of) many fine things, and (of) beautiful little-
sapére mólto bello còsa, bello can-
songs, and I | wish | to tell thee one* of them.
zóna, — | vó' | díre³ ¹ ⁴ ².

* One, in the feminine gender.

The queen having turned (*herself*) to Filomena, or-
regína — *tornáre* — *im-*

dered her | to | continue. Now you say, that if,
*pórre*² ¹ | | *seguitáre*. ² *díre*¹,

| of | all things created for man, the faculty of
fra | *tútto* *cósa* *create* — —, — —

speech — (speaking) is that which properly and par-
parláre, *próprio* *par-*

ticularly belongs to — (is for) man, speaking | may
ticoláre — — *uómo*, *parláre* | *si*

be said | with reason to be an excellent thing.
può díre | *ragióne* — — — *óttimo*² *cósa*¹.

And being asked by her (*of*) the reason — (why), he
— *domandáre* — —, —

related to her | word for word | his whole dream.
*raccontáre*³ ² | *ordinataménte*¹ | — *sógnó*.

I | can | not say how, nor if the effect is true; but
— | *so*² | ¹ *díre* , *effétto* *véro* ;

I believe it for certain. I hope, (*that*) you will
*crédere*³ ¹ *cérto*. — *Speráre*,

not permit, that I, for | the great | love I bear
sofferíre, , | *tánto e tále* | *amóre* — —

you, should receive death | as | a reward. It ap-
—, *ricévere*² *mórté*¹ | *per* | — *guiderdóne*. — *pa-*

peared to him, that he gave away, now to one,
*rére*² ¹, ³ *éssó*⁴ *donáre*¹², ⁵ ⁶ ⁷,

and then — (now) to another, castles, cities, and
⁸ — ⁹ ¹⁰ ¹¹, *castéllo*, *città*,

baronies. We have arms, men, and | well-fortified |
baronía. *árme*, *uómo*, | *ben muníti* |

quarters, and provisions for a long war. Speak to
alloggiáméto, *vettuágliá* — *lúngo guérra*. *Ricordáre* —

him of past and present things, and of new fears.
— *passáto*² ³ *présente*⁴ *cósa*¹, ⁵ — *nuóvo*⁷ *paúra*⁶.

Weakness, fear, melancholy, and ignorance are the
Debolézza, *timóre*, *malinconía*, *ignoránza*

sources of superstition. The Romans were inured
sorgente superstizione. Romano assuefare

to hardship, fatigue, and a military life. Italy is
disággio, fatica, — militare² vita¹. Italia

situated between two seas. Cane della Scala was
situare mare.

one of the greatest lords, that from the time of
più notabile signóre, — —

the emperor Frederic the Second | to this | | has
— imperadore Federigo in quà | | si

been known | in Italy. The Tiber washes a great
sapésse | Italia. Tévere bagnare — gran

portion of the state | of the Pope |. King Charles
parte Státo | Pontificio |. Re Cárlo

died, when (the) his son | was | still in Burgundy
morire, — ³ — figliuolo⁴ | essendo¹ | ² Borgogna

| under the care of | the Duke Philip. The Arno
| appresso a | Dúca Filippo. ³ ⁴

separates it,* which, as you know, flows from east
dividere² ¹, — sapere, correre oriente

to west. Rinieri king of Cyprus. Three young
ponente. re Cipro. gio-

men love three sisters, and elope (themselves) with
vane amare sorella, fuggire⁴ ³ ¹

them to Crete. I see Fracastoro, Bevazzano, Trifon
élleño² Créta. vedere

Gabriel, and farther on — (more far) I see Tasso.
— — ² lontano³ — ¹.

The Greeks attributed them to their Gods, and to
Gréco attribuire² ¹ Iddio,

those who performed those great deeds, which are
colúi fare gran cosa,

recorded of Hercules and Theseus, of Hector and
scrivere Ercóle Teséo, Ettore

* R, in the feminine gender.

Achilles. He has thy sister for his wife. Thou wilt
Achille. sorélla — móglie. — Ri-

remember (thyself) | to | tell to thy father, that thy
cordäre — di dire pádre,

children, and his and my nephews, are not descendants
figliuólo, nepóte, ² ¹ nascere⁵

| on their mother's side | | of | a paltry-fellow. She
per³ mádre⁴ da — paltoniére. —

made (to) her brother, and (to) her sisters, and (to)
Fáre fratéllo, sorélla,

every other person, believe, that by the power of de-
persóna, crédere, — indozzaménto de-

mons this had appeared to them. Have you heard
mónio éssere accadére² ¹. — udire

how your good brother-in-law treats your sister. This
buóno cognáto trattáre ² sorélla¹.

is my master. Without preserving faith to his friend
signóre. serbare fède⁸ ¹ ² amíco³

and to his master. Gentlemen, it is well to taste
⁴ ⁵ ⁶ signóre⁷. Signóre, égli buóno — —

— (that we should taste) (some of) the wine of this
assaggiáre víno

able man. Shall I tell it to the master or to
valent' uómo. — dire² ¹ signóre

the mistress? O, my Lord, when shall I ever
signóra? O, ² ¹, quándo³ — ⁵

be happy? A treatise | on | painting and | on |
⁴ liétto? Trattáto di pittúra di

sculpture | by | Leon-Battista Alberti. Guided by —
scultúra di — —

(with the guidance of) Ulamane, a Persian. Having
guída, Persiáno.

left Tauris, a royal city. In the times of the
abbandonáre Táuride, reale² città¹. témpo

emperor Frederic the Second. Under the pontificate
imperátore Federígo pontificáto

of Pope Clement the Seventh. Tasso, Jerusalem
Pápa Cleménte , *Gerusalémme*
 Delivered, Canto the fourth, stanza the third, the
Liberáta, ,
 first verse.
² *verso*¹.

CHAPTER V.

POSITION OF ADJECTIVES.

ADJECTIVES in Italian, as we have already observed at pp. 390 and 393, may be *placed* either *before* or *after* the *substantives*, which they are to qualify ; as,

| | | |
|------------------------|---|----------------------|
| NUÓVA <i>spósa</i> , | } | [new spouse] bride ; |
| <i>spósa</i> NUÓVA, | | |
| <i>víni</i> BUÓNI, | | good wines ; |
| BUÓNE <i>vivánde</i> , | | good meats. |

The adjective is often separated from its substantive by another word ; as,

| | |
|--|----------------------------------|
| <i>un monastéro</i> di <i>dónne assái</i> | a convent of nuns very much re- |
| FAMÓSO, | nowned ; |
| <i>dúe cose</i> móltó <i>ái miéi costúmi</i> | two things very much contrary to |
| CONTRÁRIE, | my habits. |

There are, however, *some* adjectives which are to be *placed after* their substantives, and *others* which are to be *placed before* them ; as,

| | |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------|
| <i>fiéra</i> CRUDÉLE, | cruel monster ; |
| <i>inclinazíone</i> BISBÉTICA, | extravagant disposition ; |
| BÉGLI <i>ócchi</i> , | beautiful eyes ; |
| GRAN <i>mále</i> , | great evil. |

Adjectives of *nations* ; adjectives expressing *taste*, *smell*, or *hearing* ; denoting *shape* or *form* ; expressing *colors*,* the *state* of the *elements*, and *physical* or *mental qualities* ; adjectives that may be *used as substantives* ; that are *formed of participles* ; that *govern*, or are *connected with*, any other part of speech ; are to be *placed after* the substantives ; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>ábito</i> ARABÉSCO, | Arabian dress ; |
| <i>favélla</i> LATÍNA, | Latin tongue ; |
| <i>vino</i> DÓLCE, | sweet wine ; |
| <i>érbe</i> ODORÍFERE, | sweet herbs ; |
| <i>vóci</i> SOÁVI, | sweet voices ; |
| <i>tórri</i> RITÓNDE, | round towers ; |
| <i>rosái</i> BIÁNCHE, | white rose-bushes ; |
| <i>témpo</i> TEMPESTÓSO, | stormy weather ; |
| <i>vécchio</i> INFERMÍCCIO, | sickly old man ; |
| <i>persóne</i> DÓTTE, | wise persons ; |
| [<i>un góbbo</i>], <i>sárto</i> GÓBBO, | [<i>a hunchback</i>], a hunchbacked tailor ; |
| [<i>accésso, da accéndere</i>], <i>lám-pada</i> ACCÉSA, | [<i>lighted, from to light</i>], a light-ed lamp ; |
| <i>tázze</i> PIÉNE di víno, | cups filled with wine : |

To which may be added the *following* adjectives, which, *generally*, are put *after* the *substantives* ; viz.

| | | | |
|------------------|----------|---------------------|---------------|
| <i>lúngo</i> , | long ; | <i>lánguido</i> , | languid ; |
| <i>córto</i> , | short ; | <i>importúno</i> , | importunate ; |
| <i>pígro</i> , | lazy ; | <i>vizióso</i> , | vicious ; |
| <i>lénto</i> , | slow ; | <i>virtuóso</i> , | virtuous ; |
| <i>néutro</i> , | neuter ; | <i>pauróso</i> , | fearful ; |
| <i>intióro</i> , | entire ; | <i>coraggióso</i> , | courageous : |

* Instances are found, notwithstanding, among the poets, in which adjectives of *colors* are put before the substantives ; as,

*Colà diritto sópra 'l ve'rde sma'lto,—
Mi fur mostráti gli spiriti mágni.* (Dant.
Inf. 4.)

There on the green enamel [verdure]
were soon shown me the great spirits.

*L' ésser covérto pói di bia'nche piu'-
me.* (Petr. c. 4.)

To be then covered with white feathers.

And adjectives ending in *ele*, and *ile* ; as,

crudÉLE, cruel ; | *civÍLE*, civil.

Numeral adjectives, both *cardinal* and *ordinal*, and the adjective pronouns *quÉsto*, 'this' ; *quÉllo*, 'that' ; *cotÉsto* or *codÉsto*, 'that near you' ; are to be *placed before* the substantives ; as,

| | |
|--------------------------|---------------------|
| <i>DÚE ánni</i> , | two years ; |
| <i>ÓTTO míglia</i> , | eight miles ; |
| <i>il TÉRZO giòrno</i> , | the third day ; |
| <i>la SÉTTIMA cósa</i> , | the seventh thing ; |
| <i>QUÉSTO castÉllo</i> , | this castle ; |
| <i>QUELL' áнно</i> , | that year ; |
| <i>COTÉSTE lágrime</i> , | those tears. |

EXCEPT

When the *ordinal* numeral adjectives are *joined* to a *proper name*, or are *used* in speaking of the *division* of a *work* ; in which case they are put *after* the substantives ; * as,

| | |
|-------------------------|--------------------|
| <i>Urbáno OTTÁVO</i> , | Urban the Eighth ; |
| <i>LEÓNE DÉ-CIMO</i> , | Leo the Tenth ; |
| <i>párte PRÍMA</i> , | part the first ; |
| <i>canzóne QUÁRTA</i> , | song the fourth : |

And the *cardinal* numeral adjectives *ventúno*, 'twenty-one' ; *trentúno*, 'thirty-one' ; *quarantúno*, 'forty-one' ; &c. ; which may be put either *before* or *after* the substantives. -

Numeral adjectives, as we have already observed at p. 403, *agree* with their *substantives* in *gender* and *number*. Now, by a peculiarity of language, if the numeral adjectives *ventúno*, *trentúno*, &c., *precede* the *substantive*, this substantive is put in the *singular* ; but if the

* But, when, in speaking of books, the article is used, we find them, in good writers, both *before* and *after* the substantives ; as,

NEL VENTE'SIMO CA'NTO del Purgatório, égli ricórda la genealogia dé' Capetìngi. (Fosc.)

In the twentieth canto of the Purgatory, he [Dante] traces the genealogy of the Capets.

Machiavélli, NEL LIBRO PRÍMO delle Istórie Fiorentine. (Den.)

Machiavel, in the first book of the History of Florence.

numeral adjectives *follow* the *substantive*, then the substantive is put in the *plural*; as,

| | |
|-------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>novantúna</i> RUÓTA, | ninety-one circles ; |
| <i>ánni ventúno</i> , | twenty-one years. |

If there is any other *word* connected with the substantive, and this word *precedes* the adjectives *ventúno*, &c., it is put in the *plural*, though the substantive following the adjectives be in the singular; but, if the word *follows* the adjectives, it is put in the *plural* if it comes *after* the *substantive*, and in the *singular* if it comes *before*; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>áltre novantúna</i> ruóta, | ninety-one circles more ; |
| <i>ánni trentúno</i> INTÉRI, | thirty-one whole years ; |
| <i>ventúna</i> PÍCCOLA STÉLLA, VICINÍSSIME tra di lóro,* | twenty-one small stars, very near to each other. |

To which may be added the *following* adjectives, which, *generally*, are put *before* the substantives; viz.

| | | | | | |
|--------------------|-----------|--|----------------|-------------|-------------|
| <i>buóno,</i> | good ; | | <i>bélló,</i> | { handsome, | |
| <i>cattivo,</i> | bad ; | | <i>brútto,</i> | | fine ; |
| <i>gránde,</i> | great ; | | <i>ricco,</i> | | ugly, bad ; |
| <i>picciolo</i> or | { small ; | | <i>póvero,</i> | | rich ; |
| <i>piccolo,</i> | | | | | poor. |

There are some adjectives which may be placed either before or after the substantives, but whose *posi-*

* This usage may appear contrary to reason; but it is to be observed that these and similar expressions are elliptical and stand for,—*A'LTRE NOVA'NTA ruóte, e U'NA RUÓTA*, 'ninety circles and one circle more'; *VE'NTI piccole stéllé, ed U'NA PÍCCOLA STE'LLA, tütte VICINÍSSIME TRA DI LÓRO*, 'twenty small stars, and one small star, all very near to each other'; &c., which sentences were first abbreviated into,—*A'LTRE NOVA'NTA, e U'NA RUÓTA*, 'ninety and one circle more': *VE'NTI ed U'NA PÍCCOLA STE'LLA, VICINÍSSIME, &c.*, 'twenty and one small stars, very near, &c.' and afterwards into,—*A'LTRE NOVANTU'NA RUÓTA*; — *VENTU'NA PÍCCOLA STE'LLA, VICINÍSSIME, &c.*

Notwithstanding this, there are instances of some writers using the *substantive* in the *plural*, even when *preceded* by the numeral adjectives *ventúno*, &c.; as,

Enéa, ed Ascánio, sùo figliuólo, e tütta sua génte DE'LE VENTU'NA NA'VI, la détta reína accólse con gránde onóre. (Vill.)

Troveréte l' O'pera dell' Alessándro nell' l'ndie più córta di quéllo, che finóra è státa, di 561 VE'RSI. (Metast. lett.)

Æneas, and Ascanius his son, and all the crews of the twenty-one ships, were received by the said queen with great honors.

You will find the Opera of *Alexander* in *India* 561 lines shorter, than it has been hitherto.

tion affects the *signification* ; as, *galánte, gentíle, sólo, céрто, dóppio, sémplíce*. Thus,

| | |
|-------------------------------|---|
| <i>un GALÁNT' uómo,</i> | a good, an honorable man ; |
| <i>un uómo GALÁNTE,</i> | a courteous, a galant man ; |
| <i>un GENTIL' uómo,</i> | a gentleman, a nobleman ; |
| <i>un uómo GENTÍLE,</i> | a civil, gentle, courteous, kind man ; |
| <i>un SÓLO uómo,</i> | a single man [one only] ; |
| <i>un uómo SÓLO,</i> | a single man [not married, without family] ; |
| <i>úna CÉRTA notizia,</i> | certain [not well ascertained] news ; |
| <i>úna notizia CÉRTA,</i> | certain [undoubted] news ; |
| <i>un DÓPPIO amico,</i> | a double friend [two or equal to two friends] ; |
| <i>un amico DÓPPIO,</i> | a double [false] friend ; |
| <i>un SÉMPlice contadino,</i> | a single [no more than one] countryman ; |
| <i>un contadino SÉMPlice,</i> | a simple [inexperienced] countryman. |

Two or more adjectives, qualifying the same substantive, may be placed before or after the substantive ; as,

| | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <i>VÁRIE e DIVERSE novità,</i> | various and different new things ; |
| <i>con pánni LÁRGHI e LÚNGHI,</i> | with garments full and long, |
| <i>e vóci ÚMILI e MANSUÉTE,</i> | and language humble and meek. |

Sometimes they are separated by putting one of them before and the other or others after the substantives, which adds grace and elegance to the phrase ; as,

| | |
|------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <i>NÓBILE giovane e BÉLLA,</i> | a noble and beautiful young woman ; |
| <i>NÓBILI vestiménti e RÍCCHI,</i> | rich and elegant clothes. |

EXAMPLES.

Di' da mia parte álla NUÓVA SPÓSA, che nêlle mie contráde s' úsa, quándo alcún forestiére mángia al convito délla SPÓSA NUÓVA (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Ma l' óra del mangiáre venúta, l' abáte e tútti gli álti e di BUÓNE VIVÁNDE e di VÍNI BUÓNI servíti fúrono. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

In quêste nòstre contráde fu, ed è ancóra, UN MONASTÉRO DI DÓNNE ASSÁI FAMÓSO di santità. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Mi converrà far DÚE CÓSE MÓLTO ÁI MIÉI COSTÚMI CONTRÁRIE. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Cérbero, FIÉRA CRUDÉLE e divérsa, — Con tre góle caninaménte látra — Sóvra la génte, che quívi è sommérsa. (Dant. Inf. 6.)

Gli storpiáti capricci délla sua naturále INCLINAZIÓNÉ BISBÉTICA. (Alleg. 157.)

Ell' è dé' suói BÉGLI ÓCCHI vedér vága. (Dant. Purg. 27.)

Quêsto è dúnque il GRAN MÁLE, il GRAN peccáto, il GRAN fáttö adoperáto da Gisippo? (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

L' abáte, con tútto che égli in ÁBITO ARABÉSCO fósse, dópo alquánto il raffigurò. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

La giòvane udéndo la FAVÉLLA LATÍNA, dubitò, non fórse áltro vénto l' avésse a Lápári ritornáta. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

L' úve tróppo matúre fánno il VÍNO piú DÓLCE, ma méno potén-te. (Gr. 4. 22.)

Tell the bride from me, that it is a custom in my country, when any foreigner goes to the banquet of the bride

But when the hour of dinner was come, the abbot and all the others were helped to good meats and good wines.

In this neighbourhood of ours there was, and there is still, a convent of nuns very much renowned for sanctity.

I shall be obliged to do two things very much contrary to my habits.

Cerberus, cruel and strange monster, through his threefold throat barks as a dog over the multitude which is immersed there.

The lame caprices of his natural extravagant disposition.

She is charmed to behold [in the glass] her beautiful eyes.

Is this, then, the great evil, the great sin, the great crime committed by Gisippus?

Although he had on an Arabian dress, the abbot soon recognised him.

The young woman, hearing the Latin [Italian] tongue, feared, lest a contrary wind had brought her back to Lapari.

Grapes, when too ripe, make more sweet wine, but less powerful.

Molti andavano attorno, portando nelle mani, chi fiori, chi ERBE ODORIFERE, e chi diverse maniere di spezierie. (Bocc. Intr.)

Parlavan rado con voci soavi. (Dant. Inf. 4.)

Sopra le mura della città edificò TORRI RITONDE molto spesse. (Gio. Vill. l. 1. c. 38.)

I lati delle quadi vie, tutti di ROSAI BIANCHI e vermigli, e di gelsomini erano chiusi. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Con essa sorse un TEMPO fierissimo e TEMPESTOSO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Io non vorrèi, che noi pigliassimo un granchio, e ch'è fosse qualche VECCHIO debole o INFERMICCIO. (Mach. Mandr. 4. 9.)

Ma dopo se fa le PERSONE DÓTTE. (Dant. Pur. 22.)

Costui fu uno de' più infami mostri di quella corte, allievo di un SARTO GÓBBO. (Dav. Ann. 15.)

Nelle mani le si póngà una LÁMPADA ACCÉSA. (Ann. Car. lett.)

Con alcune TÁZZE in mano PIÉNE DI VÍNO. (Car. lett.)

La VÉSTA, chi vuol che sia LÚNGA fino a' piédi, chi CÓRTA fino alle ginóccchia. (Car. lett.)

Del lúngo ÓDIO CIVÍL ti prégan fine. (Petr. c. 41.)

Nel détto anno si cominciò, e fu DUE ÁNNI seguénti, gránde cáro di gráno in Firénze. (Gio. Vill.)

Many went about carrying in their hands, some, flowers, some, sweet herbs, and others, different kinds of spices.

They spoke seldom, but their words were sweet.

Upon the walls of the city he built round towers very frequent.

The sides of which ways were all lined with white and red rose-bushes, and jasmine.

With it [the night] arose stormy and very severe weather.

I should not wish, that we make a mistake, and that he is some feeble and sickly old man.

But make the persons, that follow them, wise.

This one was one of the most infamous monsters in that court, and a pupil of a hunchbacked tailor.

Let a lighted lamp be put into her hands.

Holding some cups filled with wine.

As for her dress, some will have it to reach to her feet, others to her knees.

They beg that you will put an end to the long civil hatred.

In the said year, began in Florence a great scarcity of corn, which lasted for the two following years.

*E QUÉSTO CASTELLO pósto pro-
pínquo a Firénze ad ótto míglia.*
(Mach. Stor.)

This castle is situated eight miles from Florence.

*Quási tútti, ínfra il TÉRZO
GIÓRNO, morívano.* (Bocc. Intr.)

Almost all died within the third day.

*LA SÉTTIMA CÓSA che c' indúce
a far peniténza, è* (Pass.)

The seventh thing which induces us to do penance, is

*Le víti facévano gran vísta di
dovére QUELL' ÁNNO assái úve
fáre.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

The vines seemed as if they would produce an abundance of grapes that year.

*Al quále la dónna disse: "Tan-
crédi, sérba COTÉSTE LÁGRIME a
méno desideráta fortúna."* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

To whom the lady said: "Tancred, save those tears against worse fortune than this."

*I pittóri, gli scultóri, e gli
architétti del témpo di Páolo
QUÍNTO, e di URBÁNO OTTÁVO,
non cedévano quási per áltro ri-
guardo a quèlli che víssero sótto
LEÓNE DÉCIMO, e Páolo TÉRZO,
fuorchè nel mérito di avére apér-
ta e disegnáta la stráda.* (Den. Riv. Ital. 1. 23. c. 12.)

The painters, the sculptors, and the architects of the times of Paul the Fifth and Urban the Eighth, were not inferior, perhaps, to those who lived under Leo the Tenth, and Paul the third, in any other respect than the merit of having opened and marked the way.

*Petrárca, PÁRTE PRÍMA, CAN-
ZÓNE QUÁRTA.* (Crus.)

Petrarch, part the first, song the fourth.

*Pói per la medésima vía páre
descéndere ÁLTRE NOVANTÚNA
RUÓTA.* (Dant. Conv.)

Then he seemed to descend ninety-one more circles by the same way.

*Ténnemi amór ÁNNI VENTÚNO
ardéndo.* (Petr. s. 312.)

Love kept me in a flame twenty-one years.

*Cantándo ÁNNI TRENTÚNO IN-
TÉRI spési.* (Petr.)

I consumed thirty-one years in the study of the Muses.

*La nubilósa d' Orióne gli ap-
parè formáta da VENTÚNA PÍC-
COLA STÉLLA, VICINÍSSIME TRA
DI LÓRO.* (Tris. Elog. Galil.)

The nebula of Orion showed itself to him to be formed of twenty-one small stars, very near to each other.

*Il Signór Giovánni Corvino
richi-déa d' ésser fáto GENTÍLE
UÓMO Viniziáno.* (Bemb. Stor. 4.)

Mr. John Corvino, asked to be made a Venetian nobleman.

*DÓNNA è GENTÍL nel ciél, che
si compíange — Di quésto im-
pediménto.*

There is a courteous lady in Heaven who mourns this hindrance.

Avéndo séco Tancredi VÁRIE E
DIVERSE NOVITÀ pensáte. (Bocc.
g. 4. n. 1.)

Tancred having revolved in his
mind various and different new
things.

*Il quále ámpia matéria mi
présta a dimostráre quánta e
quále sia la ipocresía dé' religiósi,
cò' PÁNNI LÁRGHI E LÚNGHI, e
cò' vísi artificialménte pállidi, e
còlle VÓCI ÚMILI E MANSUÉTE
nel domandár l' altrúi.* (Bocc.
g. 4. n. 2.)

Which [proverb] affords me am-
ple matter to show how great is
the hypocrisy of the religious,
who have garments full and long,
and faces made pale artificially,
and language humble and meek
for the purpose of getting men's
property from them.

*Ormísda, státo in lúngo trat-
táto di dovér tórre per móglie
úna NÓBILE GIÓVANE E BÉLLA,
chiamáta Cassándra.* (Bocc. g.
5. n. 1.)

Ormisda, who had been long
talked of as about to marry a
noble and beautiful young woman,
called Cassandra.

*Maéstro Mazzéo, avéndo présa
per móglie úna bÉlla e gentíl
gióvane, di NÓBILI VESTIMÉNTI E
RICCHI la tenéva forníta.* (Bocc.
g. 4. n. 10.)

Master Mazzeo, having married
a beautiful and noble woman, kept
her well provided with rich and
elegant clothes.

EXERCISE XXXI.

There was once — (one time) a man of a ben-
— *Essere* — *vólta* *uómo* *be-*
eficent heart. This courtier had the misfortune —
*néfico*² *cuóre*¹. ² *cortigiáno*³ ¹ —
(bad fortune) of losing the favor — (falling in dis-
fortúna — — — *cadére* *dis-*
grace) of his master. The astrologer of the Caliph,
grázia *signóre.* *astrólogo* *Calíffo,*
after various observations, said. I have been writing
vário *osservazione,* *dire.* — — —
so long — (it is so long that I write), that my
— — — *témpo* *scrívere,*
hand | ought to be | accustomed to it. The affairs
máno | *dovrébbe essere* | *avvézza*² to ¹. ² *cóse*³

of the Lombards being prosperous. No* sinful woman
⁴ *Lombardo*⁵ ¹ *próspero.* *réo* *fémmina*

was ever more deserving (of) the fire than I — (as
 — *dégno*³ ¹ *fuoco*² — —

I should be). People really pious, are wise. Although
⁶ *Persóna véro* *pío,* *sávio.*

he had a very long beard — (the beard great).
 — — — — *bárba* *grande.*

Having, | from | a very rich and great merchant,
Éssere, | *di* | *ricco* *gran* *mercatánte,*

become a nobleman. He showed to him a noble-
*divenire*² *cavalière*¹. — *Mostráre* *cava-*

man, called Philip Argenti, a man large and robust,
lière, chiamáre Filippo , *uóm grande nerborúto,*

and very disdainful, irascible, and passionate. She
fórtè sdegnóso, iracóndo, bizzárro. —

| is to hold | | her | hands up, and | in | (the) one
Ténga | | *la* | *máno álto,* | *da* |

hand a white child asleep — (that sleeps), | to |
 — *biáncó fanciúlló* — *dormíre,* | *per* |

represent sleep; | in | the other a black one† seemingly
significáre sónno; | *da* | *néro* —

asleep — (that seems to be asleep), | to represent |
 — *parére* — — *dormíre,* | *signífichi* |

death. Immediately he collected a large, fine, and
mórtè. Préstó — *congregáre grande, bello,*

powerful army. Some (of the) cherries are sweet,
*poderóso óste. cértó*³ ¹ *ciriégia*² *dólce,*

and some sour. I have many valuable precious stones.
 — *cérto ágro. móltó ricco prezíoso piétra.*

The Pope had kept in the college of Pisa — (Pisan
² *Pápa*³ ¹ *tenére* — — — *Pisáno*

college), to learn Divine letters, Raphael of Riario,
stúdio, imparáre Pontificio léttera, Raffaéllo ,

a nephew of Count Jerome. The first and most
nipóte Cónte Girólamo.

* No, for no one.

† One, for another.

essential advantage, which | ought to have been de-
essenziále frútto, | *si⁵ dovéra⁶ ricaváre⁷*

rived | | from | the new studies, was the knowledge
di¹ | ² nuóvo³ stúdio⁴, *cognizióne*

of the ancient Latin and Greek authors. The Academy
antico Latíno Gréco autóre. Accadémia

of (the) Inscriptions and Belles Lettres is posterior
Iscrizióne Bélla Léttera posterióre

to the Florentine Academy, and that of the Crusca.
Fiorentino Accadémia, —

Lulli was the father and creator of the French music.
pádre creatóre Francése música.

A certain kind and charitable little-woman. Com-
cérto compassionévole caritativo dóнна. Com-

punction does a great good, and renders man humble,
punzióne fáre gran béne, réndere uómo úmile,

and charitable. He was tall, and of very pleasing
caritativo. gránde, piacévole

and graceful deportment, and (a young man) of a middle
grazióso maniéra, giováne mézzo

age. (The) their conversation* having been long, and
età. ³ ragionaménto⁴ ¹ ² lúngo,

the heat excessive. Giving her to eat some roots
cáldo gránde. Dáre da mangiáre radíce

of herbs, and wild fruits, and dates.
érba, salvático pémo, dáttero.

* Conversation in the plural.

CHAPTER VI.

USE AND POSITION OF CERTAIN PRONOUNS.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

ITALIAN *personal pronouns*, as it has been already mentioned at pp. 105, 164, 165, when they form the *subject* of the verb *may be either expressed or understood*; as,

io vidi un' arca non tróppo grande, I saw a good-sized chest ;

Marsilia, cóme vói sapéte, è antica e nobilissima città, Marseilles, as you know, is an ancient and famous city :

Nè a negáre, nè a pregáre [io] son dispósta, I am neither inclined to deny, nor to pray ;

il che lietaménte [vói] com- porteréte, which thing you will take in good part.

When personal pronouns are expressed, they are *generally put before the verb* ; but they *may also be placed after it* ; as,

ÉGLI avéa l' anéllo assái cáro, he held the ring very dear :

Nè vóglío [io] quì tralasciár di dire úna cósá, nor do I wish to omit saying one thing.

When, however, a *command* is given, or a *question* is asked, or when, in *narrations*, the *sayings* or *doings* of a person are *mentioned*, the pronouns are *always put after the verb* ; as,

mángi [ÉGLI] del súo, s' égli ne ha, let him eat of his own property, if he has any.

che vái [TU] facéndo per quèsta contráda ? what art thou doing in this street ?

"dimmi il perchè, diss" io, "tell me the cause," said I.

io non piangéva ; piangévan ÉLLI, I wept not ; they wept.

When personal pronouns are *preceded* by the adverbs *cóme*, *siccóme*, ‘as’; *quánto*, ‘so much’, ‘as’; they are put in the *objective*; and consequently *io*, ‘I’; *tu*, ‘thou’; *égli*, ‘he’; *élla*, ‘she’; *églino*, *élleno*, ‘they’; are changed into *mè*, ‘me’; *te*, ‘thee’; *lúi*, ‘him’; *léi*, ‘her’; *lóro*, ‘them’; if the *verb* of which they are *subjects* is *not expressed*; — but they remain in the *subjective*, and are never changed, if the *verb* of which they are *subjects* is *expressed*; as,

erano siccóme lúi maliziósi, they were as malicious as he;
quánto mè, puóte éssere al- any one may be as afflicted as
cún dolénte, I:

Se io fóssi nélla vía cóme è If I were in the street as he
égli, is;
se égli fósse in càsa cóme if he were within the house as
sóno io, I am.

When two of these pronouns come, *one before*, and the *other after*, the verb *éssere*, ‘to be’; or *crédere*, ‘to believe’; and these verbs imply an *idea of transmutation* from one to the other of the two pronouns; that which *precedes* the verb, is put in the *subjective*, and that which *follows* it, is put in the *objective*; as,

credéndo, ch’ io fóssi te, believing me to be thee;
maraviglióssi, che [égli] wondered much that he should
fósse credúto lúi, be taken for him.

If the pronouns *io*, *tu*, *égli*, *élla*, *églino*, *élleno* occur with an *infinitive*, and this infinitive *follows* the pronouns, the pronouns are put in the *objective*; but if the infinitive *precedes* the pronouns, the pronouns remain in the *subjective*; as,

udéndo lúi con gli álti és- hearing that he and his com-
ser mórtó, panions were dead;
conoscéndo léi non éssere knowing that she was not of a
di buón legnággio, good condition:

*Non bastándogli d' ésser
ÉGLI divenuto ricchissimo,
dispóse di ANDARE ÉLLA me-
désima per éssó,*

He not being satisfied with
having become very rich ;
she determined to go herself
after him.

EXAMPLES.

*Madónna, ío vídi quèsta sèra
al tårdi UN' ÁRCA NON TRÓPPO
GRÁNDE. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)*

Madam, I saw late in the even-
ing a good-sized chest.

*MARSÍLIA, CÔME VÓI SAPÉTE,
È in Provénza sópra la marina
situáta, ANTICA E NOBILÍSSIMA
CITTÀ. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)*

Marseilles, as you know, is an
ancient and famous city in Prov-
ence, situated on the sea coast.

*Tancrédi, NÈ A NEGÁRE NÈ A
PREGÁRE SON DISPÓSTA. (Bocc.
g. 4. n. 1.)*

Tancred, I am neither inclined
to deny nor to pray.

*IL CHE, se sávj siéte, LIETA-
MÉNTE COMPORTERÉTE. (Bocc.
g. 10. n. 8.)*

Which thing, if you be wise,
you will take in good part.

*ÉGLI AVÉA L' ANÉLLO ASSÁI
CÁRO per alcúna virtù, che státo
gli éra dáto ad inténdere, che
égli avéa. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)*

He held the ring very dear, on
account of some virtue, which
they had made him believe it pos-
sessed.

*NÈ VÓGLIO QUÌ TRALASCIÁR DI
DÍRE ÚNA CÔSA, la quále mi par
mólto véra. (Bott. Stor. Amer.
l. 6.)*

Nor do I wish to omit mention-
ing here one thing, which appears
to me to be very true.

*Or NÁNGI DEL SÚO, s' ÉGLI NE
HA, che del nóstro non mangerà
égli. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)*

Let him eat of his own prop-
erty, if he has any, for he will not
eat of ours.

*O figliuóla, CHE VÁI TU a
quest' óra, cosí sóla, FACÉNDÓ PER
QUÉSTA CONTRÁDA ?*

Daughter, what art thou doing
in this street, alone, at this hour ?

*"DÍMMI 'L PERCHÈ," DISS' ÍO ;
"per tal convégno, — Che se tu
a ragión di lui ti piángi, — Sap-
piéndo chi vói siéte, e la súa pec-
ca, — Nel móndo súso ancór ío te
ne cángi." (Dant. Inf. 32.)*

"Tell me the cause," said I,
"on such condition, that if right-
fully thou grievest for him, know-
ing who you are, and his sins, I
may repay thee in the world
above."

*ÍO NON PIANGÉVA, sì déntro
impietráí : — PIANGÉVAN ÉLLI ;
ed Anselmuccio mío — Disse :
"Tu guárdi sì, pádre ! che hái ?"
(Dant. Inf. 33.)*

I wept not ; so petrified was I
within : they wept ; and my little
Anselm cried : "Thou lookest so,
father ! what ails thee ?"

Costoro, che dall' áltra pârte
 ÉRANO SICCÓME LÚI MALIZIÓSI.
 (Bocc. g. 1. n. 4.)

These, who, on the other side,
 were as malicious as he.

Sicchè, QUÁNTO ME, PUÓTE ÉS-
 SERE ALCÚN DOLÉNTE. (Bocc.
 Filoc.)

So that, anybody may be as
 afflicted as I.

Che diréste vói, SE ÍO FÓSSI
NÉLLA VÍA CÓME È ÉGLI, od
ÉGLI FÓSSE IN CÁSA CÓME SÓNO
ÍO ?

What would you say if I were
 in the street as he is, or he within
 the house as I am ?

CREDÉNDO ÉSSO, CH' ÍO FÓSSI
TE, m' ha con un bastóne tútto
róto. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.)

Believing me to be thee, he
 has broken all my bones with a
 cudgel.

MARAVIGLIÓSSI fôrte Tedáldo,
che alcúno in tánto il somigliásse,
CHE FÓSSE CREDÚTO LÚI. (Bocc.
 g. 3. n. 7.)

Tedaldo wondered much, that
 any one should be so much like
 himself, as to be taken for him.

La gióvane, UDÉNDO LÚI CON
GLI ÁLTRI ÉSSER MÓRTO, lunga-
mente piánse. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

The young woman, hearing,
 that he and his companions were
 dead, was very much grieved.

CONOSCÉNDO LÉI NON ÉSSERE
DI LEGNÁGGIO che álla sua no-
biltà béne stésse, tútto sdegnóso
disse. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)

Knowing that she was of a
 condition that did not well com-
 port with his nobility, he said with
 disdain.

Ma NON BASTÁNDOGLI D' ÉS-
SER ÉGLI é' suói compágni in
bríeve tempo DIVENÚTI RICCHÍ-
SIMI. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

But he and his friends not being
 satisfied with their having become
 very rich in a short time.

Séco DISPÓSE di non mandáre,
ma d' ANDÁRE ÉLLA MEDÉSIMA
PER ÉSSO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

She determined not to send,
 but to go herself after him.

CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

We observed (p. 109), that *conjunctive pronouns* are used instead of *personal pronouns*, when these pronouns are in the *objective* or in the *relation of attribution*, and are closely connected with a verb, of which they are the *direct* or *indirect regimen*.

This is always the case when there is but *one* personal pronoun in the phrase in the *abovementioned relations*, when the *emphasis* does *not fall* upon this pronoun, and when this pronoun is *not in apposition* with the *subject* of the verb ; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| MI potéte tórre quánto téngo [for, A ME potéte tórre, &c.], | you can take away from me all I have ; |
| pietosaménte IL chiamáva [for, chiamáva LÚI], | she called him with a piteous voice ; |
| CI facéste la béffa [for, A NÓI facéste, &c.], | you should put a trick upon us ; |
| LE VI donerò [for, A VÓI do- nerò LÓRO], | I will give them to you. |

But, if there are *more than one* personal pronoun in the phrase, in the *objective* or in the *relation of attribution* ; if the *emphasis falls* upon the pronouns ; and if the pronouns are in *apposition* with the *subject* of the verb, or in *apposition* with *each other* ; the *conjunctive pronouns* are *not used* and the *personal pronouns retain their places* ; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| ME non ucciderá tu, | thou shalt not murder <i>me</i> ; |
| úso dire, che é' sía un áltro ME, | I am wont to say that he is another self ; |
| potréste VÓI e ME consoláre, | you might console both your- self and me ; |
| offési ME per non offénder LÚI, | I injured myself not to injure him ; |
| ne fu, ed A LÉI ed A ME, per péna dato, A LÉI di fug- girmi davánti, ed A ME di seguítarla, | it was, to both her and me, given as a punishment, to her to flee before me, and to me to pursue her. |

Conjunctive pronouns are *commonly* put *before* the verb, but *may* also be placed *after* it. When *before* the verb, they are placed *immediately after* the personal pronouns ; and when *after*, they are, as it has been

already stated at p. 110, always *joined* to the verb, so as to form a *single word*; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>égli</i> VI ama, | he loves you; |
| <i>diédeGLI</i> la <i>sua</i> benedizióne, | he gave him his benediction; |
| <i>corréránnoci</i> álle <i>cáse</i> , e <i>l' a- vére</i> CI <i>ruberánn</i> o, | they will run to our houses, and rob us of our property; |
| <i>il</i> mandárLO <i>fuór</i> di <i>cása</i> NE SARÉBBE <i>gran biásimo</i> , | to send him out of our house would be in us a great fault; |
| <i>ajuláronMI</i> béne, | they assisted me well; |
| <i>éTTI</i> <i>uscito</i> di <i>mén</i> te? | has it escaped thy mind? |
| <i>mostróCCI</i> un' <i>ómbra</i> , | he showed us a spirit. |

We have already observed (pp. 338 – 340), that *infinitives* and some other forms of verbs, when joined to *conjunctive pronouns*, drop their last vowel; and that the consonant of *conjunctive pronouns* (*gli* only excepted) must be doubled when joined to those forms of verbs, which either consist of one syllable, or end with an accented vowel.

When the verb is in the *infinitive*, in the *gerund*, in the *participle*, or in the *imperative* mood,* the conjunctive pronouns are *always* to be put *after* the verb; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>ricominciò a fàrgLI</i> i mag- giór piaceri, | she began to do him again the greatest kindnesses; |
| <i>trovándosi égli</i> <i>úna</i> <i>vólta</i> a <i>Parigi</i> , | he finding himself once in Paris; |
| <i>son venúla a ristorárTI</i> dé' <i>dánni avúti</i> , | I am come to make thee some amends for the evils sus- tained; |

* Notwithstanding this rule the following examples may be cited from the classics, in which the conjunctive pronoun is put *before* the imperative:

*Fám*mi *ritornáre* álla *prigióne*, e *quívi*
*quá*nto *ti piáce* *MI* *fa affliggere*. (Bocc.
g. 2. n. 6.)

*Andá*te *vói* e *Siro* a *trovár* *Callimaco*,
e *GLI* *dite* che *la cós*a è *procedúta* béne.
(Mach. Comm.)

Ed io a *lui*: “*Con piángere* e *con lutto*,
— *Spirito maledétto*, *TI* *rimáni*.” (Dant.
Inf. 8.)

Cause me to be carried back to my
prison, and there cause me to be tor-
mented as much as thou pleasest.

Go you and Syrus to find Callimachus,
and tell him that the affair went on
well.

And I said to him: “In mourning and
in woe, cursed spirit, do thou remain.”

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>ricordándoti della tua pre- terita vita,</i> | bringing to thy mind thy past life; |
| <i>muóvati questo sólo mio atto,</i> | let this act of mine alone move thee; |
| <i>salutatólo, il domandò se egli sì sentisse niente,</i> | after he had saluted him, he asked him, whether any thing ailed him; |
| <i>siálemi buon amico,</i> | be my good friend; |
| <i>fáltala prendere,</i> | having caused her to be taken. |

EXCEPTIONS.

When the adverb *non*, 'no,' or 'not'; *precedes* the verb in the *imperative*, the conjunctive pronouns must be put *before* the verb; as,

| | |
|-------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| <i>non si rénda ridicola,</i> | do not make yourself ridiculous; |
| <i>non le dáte rétta,</i> | do not mind her. |

Conjunctive pronouns are sometimes put *before*, even when the verb is in the *infinitive* and in the *gerund*, *preceded* by the adverb *non*; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>mi aréa promésso di non s' al- lontanáre,</i> | she had promised me, that she would not depart; |
| <i>non mi vedéndo giúngere,</i> | not seeing me arrive. |

The conjunctive pronoun *loro*, 'to them,' or 'them'; is always to be put *after* the verb; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>vedúti LÓRO in sì póvera con- dizione,</i> | having seen them in so mis- erable a condition; |
| <i>mandò LÓRO dicéndo ,</i> | sent to them, saying |

When *loro* is in the *objective*, the pronouns *gli* or *li*, for the *masculine* gender, and *le* for the *feminine*, sometimes take its place, but then they follow the *general rule*; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>facéndoGLI [or, facéndo LÓRO (i suói figli)] da buóni maé- stri insegnáre,</i> | causing them [<i>her children</i>] to be instructed by good masters; |
| <i>GLI féce [or, féce LÓRO] im- paráre tutte le buóne arti,</i> | she made them learn all good arts. |

When *more than one* conjunctive pronoun occur with

the *same verb*, they follow the *same rules*, as when they occur with it *singly*; as,

| | | | |
|--------------|------|-----------|--------------------------------|
| có' compágni | suóì | sÉGLI | he ate them with his com- |
| mangiò, | | | panions; |
| deliberárono | di | dárgLIELA | they determined to give her to |
| per móglie, | | | him as his wife. |

Conjunctive pronouns occurring in the *same sentence* with *two verbs*, one of which is in the *infinitive*, are generally put *before* the *other verb*; as,

| | | | |
|-------|--------|--------|-------------------------------|
| io-TI | vóglío | díre, | I wish to tell thee; |
| non | GLIÉLO | voléva | díre, |
| | | | she would not tell it to him. |

EXCEPT

When the *other verb* is in the *imperative*, for then they must be put *after it*; as,

| | | |
|------------|----------|----------------------|
| fáTTI | sentíre, | make thyself heard; |
| lasciáMITI | vedére, | let me look at thee. |

When conjunctive pronouns occur with the indefinite pronoun *si*, this is always put *after*, and sometimes *joined* to them; as,

| | | |
|-----------------|-----------------|--------------------------------|
| il bel che mi | si móstra, | the good which shows itself to |
| | | me; |
| quánte cose gli | si prométtono, | how many things they promise |
| | | to him; |
| attribuiscECISI | a nóstro fállo, | it is attributed to our fault. |

Conjunctive pronouns occurring with the adverb *écco*; and the pronoun *lo* occurring with the adverb *non*; are put *after* them; and, as it has been already stated at p. 116, form with them *one single word*.; as,

| | |
|------------|-------------------|
| éccomi, | here I am; |
| noL niégo, | I do not deny it. |

The particles *ne*, 'of him,' 'of her,' 'of it'; 'of them'; and *ci*, 'here, hither'; *vi*, 'there, thither'; follow the same rules as the *conjunctive pronouns*. They may be put either *before* or *after* the verb, *except* when the verb is in the *infinitive*, in the *gerund*, in the *participle*, and in the *imperative*; in which cases they are always put *after* it; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>mi piace di parlárNE,</i> | it pleases me to speak of it; |
| <i>núno veggéNDONE,</i> | seeing no one of them; |
| <i>tráttANE la sua bella róba,</i> | having taken out her beautiful robe; |
| <i>gettóNNE i fondaménti il re Tarquínio,</i> | King Tarquin laid the foundations of it; |
| <i>son dispósto ad andárvI,</i> | I am disposed to go there; |
| <i>il cuóco póstovI tútta l' árte,</i> | the cook having employed there [or in it] all his art; |
| <i>fátecI dipíngere la Cortesía,</i> | cause Liberty to be painted there. |

If the particles *ci*, *vi*, occur with one of the conjunctive pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, usage *strictly* requires that the particles should be *placed after* the pronouns; but they are *sometimes* put *before* them, particularly if *euphony* demands it; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>costóro mi CI fánno entráre,</i> | they make me enter there [or into it]; |
| <i>io ti CI védo sémpre,</i> | I see you here always: |
| <i>Vi ti porrò úna tavolúccia,</i> | I shall place for thee there a small table; |
| <i>dirò che vi ci ábbia fátta veníre per denári,</i> | I will say that he has caused you to come here for money. |

When the particles *ci*, *vi*, occur with the pronouns, *lo*, *la*, *li*, *gli*, *le*, they are generally put *before* the pronouns, and, as has been mentioned at p. 160, form with them a *single word*; but they may be placed also after them, *separately*; as,

| | |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>ingégnati di ritenérCELO,</i> | contrive to keep him there; |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------|

ringraziando Iddio che condóto VEL' aréva,

thanking God that he had conducted him there :

Nélla sua cámara il míse, e déntro IL VI serrò,

she put him in her room, and there she locked him in.

EXAMPLES.

Vói MI POTÉTE TÓRRE QUÁNTO TÉNGO, e donármí, siccóme vóstro uómo, a chi vi piáce. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)

You can take away from me all I have, and give me, like one of your men, to whomsoever it pleases you.

Assái vólte, la nítte, PIETOSAMENTE IL CHIAMÁVA. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)

A great many times, during the night, did she call him with a piteous voice.

Ma guardáte che vói non CI FACÉSTE LA BÉFFA. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 1.)

But beware putting a trick upon us.

S' élle vi piácciono, io LE VI DONERÒ. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

If you like them, I will give them to you.

E udéndo che égli avéa mórti due confessóri, disse fra sè medésimo : " ME NON UCCIDERÁI TU." (Pass.)

And hearing that he had murdered two confessors, he said to himself : " Thou shalt not murder me."

Tánto pósso dispórre di lui, che io úso DÍRE, CHE cértó é' SÍA UN ÁLTRO ME. (Firenz.)

I can so much depend on him, that I am wont to say, that he is certainly another self.

Ma, dóve vói voléste, per avventura, vói POTRÉSTE VÓI E ME CONSOLÁRE. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)

But, if you wished, you might perhaps console both yourself and me.

OFFÉSI ME PER NON OFFÉNDER LÚI. (Petr.)

I injured myself not to injure him.

Così NE FU, ED A LÉI ED A ME, PER PÉNA DÁTO, A LÉI DI FUGGÍRMI DAVÁNTI, ED A ME, che già cotánto l' amái, DI SEGUIRÁLA. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 8.)

Thus it was, to both her and me, given as a punishment, to her to flee before me, and to me, who loved her so much, to pursue her.

Io so che ÉGLI VI ÁMA. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7)

I know that he loves you.

DIÉDEGLI LA SÚA BENEDIZIÓNE. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

He gave him his benediction.

CORRERÁNNOCI ÁLLE CÁSE, E L' AVÉRE CI RUBERÁNNO. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

They will run to our houses, and rob us of our property.

IL MANDÁRLO FUÓR DI CÁSA
nóstra, così inférmo, NE SARÉB-
BE GRAN BIÁSIMO. (Bocc. g. 1.
n. 1.)

AJUTÁRONMI *élle* BÉNE. (Bocc.
g. 4. Proem.)

ÉTTI *égli da stamáne* USCÍTO
DÍ MÉNTE? (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.)

MOSTRÓCCI UN' ÓMBRA *dall' ún*
cánto sóla. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

RICOMINCIÒ A FÁRGLI I MAG-
GIÓR PIACÉRI. (Bocc. g. 8. n.
10.)

TROVÁNDOSI ÉGLI ÚNA VÓLTA
A PARÍGI. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Io SON VENÚTA A RISTORÁRTI
DÉ' DÁNNI, *li quali tu hái già*
avúti per me. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

Federigo, RICORDÁNDOTI DÉL-
LA TÚA PRETÉRITA VÍTA. (Bocc.
g. 5. n. 9.)

MUÓVATI *alquánto* QUÉSTO SÓ-
LO MÍO ÁTTO. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

SALUTÁTOLO, IL DOMANDÒ SE
SI SENTÍSSE NIÉNTE. (Bocc.)

SIÁTEMI, *adunque, sèmpre* BUÓN
AMÍCO. (Gang. lett.)

FÁTTALA *prestaménte* PRÉN-
DERE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

NON SI RÉNDA RIDÍCOLA *círca*
le usánze del móndo. (Gang.
lett.)

NON LE DÁTE RÉTTA, *nè più*
la frequentáte. (Vanz.)

NON MI VEDÉNDÓ GIÚNGERE
in témpo, se ne ritornò, benchè
mi avésse proméssó di non s' al-
lontanàre fino al mío arrívo.
(Vanz.)

To send him out of our house,
so sick as he is, would be in us
a great fault.

They assisted me well.

Has it, since this morning, es-
caped thy mind?

He showed us a spirit by itself
apart.

She began to do him again the
greatest kindnesses.

He finding himself once in
Paris.

I am come to make thee some
amends for the evils thou hast
sustained on my account.

Frederic, bringing to thy mind
thy past life.

Let this act of mine alone move
thee at least.

After he had saluted him, he
asked him, whether any thing
ailed him.

Be, then, always my good
friend.

Having caused her immediately
to be taken.

Do not make yourself ridicu-
lous respecting the customs of the
world.

Do not mind her, nor visit her
any longer.

Not seeing me arrive in time,
she went back, although she had
promised me, that she would not
depart before my arrival.

VEDÚTI LÓRO IN SÌ PÓVERA
CONDIZIÓNE *ridótti*. (Pecor.)

Having seen them reduced to
so miserable a condition.

E MANDÒ LÓRO DICÉNDÒ . . .
(Bott. Stor. Amer.)

And sent to them, saying . . .

I quáli [i suói figli] *facevano*
stupire - *chì* GLI *conoscéva*, e la
mádre FACÉNDÒGLI DA BUÓNI
MAÉSTRI INSEGNÁRE, GLI FÉCE
IMPARÁRE TUTTE LE BUÓNE ÁRTI.
(Pecor. g. 10. n. 1.)

Who [her children] astonished
all those, who knew them; and
their mother, causing them to be
instructed by good masters, made
them learn all good arts.

Compráti i cappóni insiéme
CÓ' COMPÁGNI SUÓI SÉGLI MAN-
GIÒ. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

Having bought the capons, he
ate them with his companions.

DELIBERÁRONO DI DÁRGLIE-
LA PER MÓGLIE. (Bocc. g. 2.
n. 8.)

They determined to give her to
him as his wife.

Atténdi quéllo che ío ti VÓGLIO
DÍRE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Listen to what I wish to tell
thee.

La donna rispóse, che NON
GLIÉLO VOLÉVA DÍRE. (Bocc.
g. 7. n. 5.)

The lady replied, that she would
not tell it to him.

Grída fórtè, FÁTTI ben SENTÍRE.
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 6.)

Speak loud, make thyself heard.

LÁSCIAMITI VEDÉRE a mío
sénno. (Bocc.)

Let me look at thee at my plea-
sure.

IL BEN, CHE MI SI MÓSTRA in-
tórno. (Petr. c. 7.)

The good, which shows itself
about me.

QUÁNTE CÓSE GLI SI PROMÉT-
TONO *tútto 'l dì*. (Bocc. g. 3.
n. 1.)

How many things they promise
to him all day.

ATTRIBUÍSCESI A NÓSTRO FÁL-
LO. (Cavalc.)

It is attributed to our fault.

Lo scoláre, accostátosi all' ú-
scio, dísse: 'ÉCCOMI quì, Madón-
na.' (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

The scholar, coming to the
door, said: 'Here I am, Madam.'

In ármí egli éra próde, — NOL
NIÉGO ío, no. (Alf. Saul. 2. 1.)

He was brave in arms, I do not
deny it, no.

Égli MI PIÁCE DI PARLÁRNE.
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

It pleases me to speak of it.

NIÚNO VEGGÉNDONE. (Bocc.
g. 2. n. 2.)

Seeing no one of them.

TRÀTTANE *celataménte* LA SÚA
BÉLLA RÓBA. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

Having taken out secretly her beautiful robe.

GETTÓNNE I FONDAMÉNTI IL
RE TARQUÍNIO. (Dav. Stor. l. 3.)

King Tarquin laid the foundations of it.

Io son del tútto DÍSPOSTO AD
ANDÁRVI. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

I am entirely disposed to go there.

IL CUÓCO *présolo*, e PÓSTOVI
TÚTTA L' ÁRTE (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)

The cook having taken it, and having employed in it all his art,

FÁTECI DIPÍNGERE LA CORTE-
SÍA. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

Cause Liberality to be painted there.

COSTÓRO MI CI FÁNNO ENTRÁRE
per ingannármì. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

They make me enter into it [the chest] in order to play some trick upon me.

ÍO TI CI VÉDO SÉMPRE. (Nov.
Ant. 67.)

I see thee here always.

Io vi ti porrò ÚNA TAVOLÚC-
CIA. (Bocc. g. 8.)

I shall place for thee there a small table.

Io dirò che vi ci ábbia FÁ-
TA VENÍRE PER DENÁRI. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

I will say that he has caused you to come here for money.

INGÉGNATI DI RITENÉRCELO.
(Bocc. n. 5.)

Contrive to keep him there.

RINGRAZIÁNDO IDDÍO CHE CON-
DÓTTO VEL' AVÉVA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 4.)

Thanking God that he had conducted him there.

NÉLLA SÚA CÁMERA IL MÍSE,
E DÉNTRO IL VI SERRÒ. (Bocc.)

She put him in her room, and there she locked him in.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

Possessive pronouns may be *placed* either *before* or *after* the nouns expressing the things possessed ; as,

la MÍA persóna, i MIÉI máli, my person, my misfortunes ;

le mēmbra MÍE, il sángue MÍO, my limbs, my blood ;

gli ócchi SUÓI, l' órdine LÓRO, her eyes, their management.

In *addressing* a person, however, and in *exclamations*, possessive pronouns *are* to be *put after* the nouns ; as,

pádre mío, figliuol mío ! my father, my son !
Itália mía, Signór mío ! my Italy, my Lord !

Possessive pronouns are always to be *repeated* before nouns of *different gender* and *number* ; as,

la LOR virtù, i LOR costúmi, their virtue, their customs, and
e le LORO maniere, their manners.

But if the nouns are of the *same gender* and *number*, they *may be used only once*, *after* the said nouns ; as,

le siróccie e le mógli LORO, their sisters and their wives.

We have already observed (p. 132), that *possessive onouns* may be *expressed* in Italian, by the *conjunctive pronouns* of that *person* to which the *possessor* belongs. This is always the case when they are *accompanied* by a *noun* expressing the *limbs of the body* or denoting a *part of one's dress* ; as,

se MI cacciásser gli óCCHI if they should tear out my
 [for, *se cacciásser i MIÉI* eyes ;
óCCHI],

non VI fiaccáte il CÓLLO [for, do not break your neck.
non fiaccáte il VÓSTRO
CÓLLO],

The English possessive pronouns *his, her, their*, when they *refer* to *one's own* limbs or parts of dress, are *expressed* in Italian by the *conjunctive pronoun si* ; but when they *refer* to *another person's* limbs or parts of dress, they are *expressed* by the *conjunctive pronouns gli, le, lóro*, according to the *gender* and *number* of the *possessor* ; as,

si levò l' anéllo di DÍTO [for, he took off the ring from his
levò l' anéllo del SÚO DÍTO], [own] finger] ;

risólve di levársi le SCÁRPE he resolved to take off his [own]
 [for, *di leváre le SÚE SCÁR-* shoes :
PE],

GLI rúppe tútto il víso [for, he disfigured all his [another per-
rúppe tútto il SÚO (or, il di son's] face ;
lúi) víso],

stracciátale la CÚFFIA [for, having torn her [another per-
stracciáta la SÚA (or, *la di léi*) son's] headdress.
CÚFFIA],

Often the personal pronouns accompanying a noun expressing the limbs of the body, or denoting the parts of one's dress, are *entirely suppressed* when they relate to the *principal subject* of the proposition ; as,

córsi a cercármí il láto cólla máno [for, *cólla MÍA máno*], I laid immediately my hand on my side ;

asciugándosi gli ócchi col bel vélo, [for, *col súo bel vélo*], drying her eyes with her beautiful veil.

EXAMPLES.

E siccome LA MÍA PERSONA cresceva, così le MÍE bellézze, dé' MIÉI MÁLI special cagíone, multiplicavano. (Bocc. Fiam.)

And as [my person or] I grew up, my beauty, the first cause of all my misfortunes, increased.

Non son rimáse acérbe nè matúre — LE MÉMBRA MÍE di là, ma son quí méco — COL SÁNGUE SÚO, e con le SÚE giuntúre. (Dant. Purg. 26.)

I have not left yonder my limbs, either crude or in mature age ; but they bear me here, fed with blood and sinew-strung.

Ed erano GLI ÓCCHI SUÓI di quel colóre che lo grifóne. (Buti. com. Inf. 4.)

And his [Cæsar's] eyes were as black as those of a raven.

Senza L' ÓRDINE LÓRO ráde vólte riésce alcúna NÓSTRA ópera a laudévol fine. (Bocc. Intr.)

Without their management it seldom happens that any undertaking of ours succeeds.

Gáddo mi si gittò distése d' piédi, — Dicéndo : " PÁDRE MÍO, che non m' aiúti ? " (Dant. Inf. 33.)

Gaddo stretched himself at my feet, saying : " My father, why dost thou not assist me ? "

O FIGLIUÓL MÍO ! non ti dispiáccia, — Se Brunétto Latíni un póco téco — Ritórna indiétro. (Dant. Inf. 15.)

O my son ! do not disdain that Brunetto Latini should turn back a little, and go with you.

ITALIA MÍA, benchè il parlàr
sia indárno — Alle piághe mor-
táli, — Che nel bel córpo túo sì
spésse véggio. (Petr.)

O SIGNÓR MÍO! quándo sarò
io liétto — A vedér la vendétta,
che, nascósa, — Fa dólce l' íra
tua nel túo segréto? (Dant. Purg.
20.)

Riguárda tra tútti i tuói nó-
bili uómini, ed esámina LA LOR
VIRTÙ, I LOR COSTÚMI, E LE LÓRO
MANIÈRE. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Apprésso costóro, LE SIRÓC-
CHIE E LE MÓGLI LÓRO vénnero.
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

O SE ÉSSI MI CACCIÁSSER GLI
ÓCCHI O MI TRAÉSSERO I DÉNTI, O
MOZZÁSSERMI LE MÁNI, a che saré?
to? (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

Égli è gran peccáto che vói
NON VI FIACCÁTE IL CÓLLO.
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)

E cosí SI LEVÒ L' ANÉLLO DI
DÍTO, e diéllo al giúdice. (Pecor.)

Guárda se áltri lo scórge, ed
alfine si RISÓLVE DI LEVÁRSI LE
SCÁRPE. (Lod. Nov.)

E cosí dicéndo con le púgna
TÚTTO IL VÍSO GLI RÚPPE. (Bocc.
g. 9. n. 8.)

E STRACCIÁTALE LA CÚFFIA,
dicéva. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 8.)

Di che io sentíva sì fáttö doló-
re, che, désto, CÓLLA MÁNO CÓRSI
subitaménte A CERCÁRMI IL LÁ-
TO. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 6.)

E fáccia fórza al Ciélo, —
ASCIUGÁNDOSI GLI ÓCCHI COL
BEL VÉLO. (Petr. c. 11.)

My Italy, although words will
have no power to heal the mortal
wounds which I see, in so great
a number, in your beautiful body.

O my Lord! when shall I re-
joice to see the vengeance, which
thy wrath, well pleased, broods in
secret silence?

Look among all your noblemen,
and examine their virtue, their
customs, and their manners.

After these, came their sisters
and their wives.

If they should tear out my
eyes, or draw out my teeth, or
lop off my hands, to what should
I be reduced?

It is a great pity you do not
break your neck.

And thus he took off the ring
from his finger, and gave it to the
judge.

He looked around lest he should
be seen, and at last he resolved to
take off his shoes.

And thus saying he disfigured
all his face with blows.

And having torn her headdress,
he said.

Which gave me such a pain,
that, having awaked, I laid imme-
diately my hand on my side.

And should compel Heaven [to
have pity upon me], drying her
eyes with her beautiful veil.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

The *indefinite pronouns*, *stésso*, *medésimo*, ‘same’; and sometimes *tútto*, ‘all,’ ‘every’; are put either *before* or *after* the noun; as,

| | |
|--|---------------------------------|
| <i>quél dì STÉSSO</i> ; in <i>quél</i> ME- | that same day ; in that same |
| <i>DÉSIMO ábito</i> , | dress ; |
| <i>TÚTTE le nótti</i> ; <i>le quáli còse</i> | every night ; all which things. |
| <i>TÚTTE</i> , | |

Tútto, followed by a *numeral adjective*, takes the particle *e* after it ; as,

| | |
|----------------------|------------|
| <i>tutti E trè</i> , | all three. |
|----------------------|------------|

The indefinite pronouns *verúno*, *nessúno* or *nissúno*, *neúno* or *niúno*, *núllo*, ‘no one,’ ‘nobody’; and *núlla*, *niénte*, ‘nothing’; as we have already mentioned at p. 147, may have also the *signification* of ‘any one,’ ‘anybody’; and ‘some or any thing’; according to their respective *position* in the sentence.

They have the *first* signification,—(of ‘no one,’ ‘nobody’; and ‘nothing’), when they are *placed before* the verb, or when they are *placed after* a verb preceded by the adverb *non* ; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>per VERÚN módo potéva</i> , | she could do it in <i>no</i> manner ; |
| <i>NON fa cáldo VERÚNO</i> , | it is <i>not</i> at all warm : |
| <i>NESSÚN si dôlse di servitù</i> , | <i>no</i> one complained of servi- tude ; |
| <i>NON si può fare NISSÚNA cò- sa</i> , | <i>no-thing</i> can be done : |
| <i>NEÚNO ebbe gli Dèi sì favoré- voli</i> , | <i>no</i> one had the Gods so favora- ble ; |
| <i>NON ve n' è NIÚNO sì cattivo</i> , | there is <i>no</i> one so bad : |
| <i>NÚLLO martirio sarèbbe do- lór compíto</i> , | <i>no</i> torment were a well-pro- portioned pain ; |

| | |
|---------------------------------|--|
| NON <i>gli</i> mánca NÚLLA, | he wants <i>nothing</i> : |
| di NÚLLA si dispési, | let him despair of <i>nothing</i> ; |
| NON <i>ne</i> farò NÚLLA, | I will do <i>nothing</i> about it : |
| NIÉNTE dico del túo státo, | I say <i>nothing</i> about thy condition ; |
| NON <i>gli</i> parrébbe NIÉNTE, | it would seem to him <i>nothing</i> . |

But when they are placed after a verb not preceded by the adverb *non*, and when the phrase in which they occur implies a *question*, or expresses a *doubt*, the abovementioned pronouns have the *last* signification, — (of ‘any one,’ ‘anybody’; and ‘some or any thing’);* as,

| | |
|---|---|
| sénza fáre a vói VERÚN prò, | without doing <i>any</i> good to yourself ; |
| se VERÚNO véde la péna mía, | whether <i>any one</i> observes my sorrow ; |
| quándo s’ accámpano in NES-SÚNO luógo, | when they encamp in <i>any</i> place ; |
| trovóssi NIÚNO che contradi-ásse álla podestáde ? | was there found <i>any one</i> who opposed public power ? |
| le dirái se vuól NÚLLA, | thou wilt ask her, whether she wants <i>any thing</i> ; |

* There are instances, however, in good writers, which seem in contradiction with these rules ; as may be seen by the following examples :

E *quándo* NESSU'NO n' éra préso, súbito éra impiccáto per la góla. (Stor. Pistol.)

And when *any one* was taken, he was directly hung by the neck.

Che NON rimarrébbe a sostenére péna NESSU'NA nel purgatório per gli peccáti. (Pass.)

That there would not remain in purgatory *any* punishment to suffer for sins.

NON c' è ragióne NESSU'NA per la quále é' débba entráre in un tal determináto grádo di velocitá. (Gal. Sist.)

There is no [or not *any*] reason why it should enter in such a determinate degree of velocity.

Mái NON mène fard più NIU'NA. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

He will never do me an- [or, *any*] other [thing like this.]

Cóme élla véde un giovinétto di fôrma NIE'NTE riguárdévole, élla s' accénde delle sue belléze. (Fir. Asin. 40.)

As soon as she sees a youth *somewhat* handsome, she falls in love with his beauty :

In which the pronouns *nessuno*, *nessuna*, *nituna* are used instead of *alcuno*, *alcuna*, ‘any,’ ‘any person,’ ‘any thing’; and *niente* instead of *un poco*, *alquanto*, ‘a little,’ ‘somewhat.’

il domandò se si sentísse he asked him whether he felt
NIENTE, any thing.

EXAMPLES.

Credito abbiámo che costéi
nella casa, che mi fu QUÉL DÌ
stésso ársa, ardésse. (Bocc. g.
5. n. 5.)

We supposed, that she had been
burnt that same day along with
the house.

Guardándo tra mólte, che quí-
vi n' érano IN QUÉL MEDÉSIMO
ÁBITO. (Bocc. Lab.)

Looking among so many wo-
man, who were there, clad in that
same dress.

E 'l rossignuól — TUTTE LE
NÓTTI si laménta e piánge.
(Petr.)

And the nightingale every night
laments and weeps.

LE QUÁLI CÓSE TUTTE sÓno da
ésser diligenteménte consideráte.
(Cresc. 12. 2.)

All which things ought to be
carefully considered.

Fratélli míci, che andáte vói
cercándo, a quest' óra, TUTTI E
TRÈ? (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.)

Brothers, what are you looking
for, all three, at such an hour?

Quándo venne il témpo, quél
mísera PER VERÚN MÓDO POTÉ-
VA. (Vit. SS. PP. 2. 21.)

When the time arrived, that un-
fortunate one could not do it in
any manner.

Ánzi NON FA égli CÁLDO VE-
RÚNO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

Nay it is not at all warm.

NESSÚN DI SERVITÙ giammái
SI DÓLSE, — Nè di mórté, quant'
ío di libertáte. (Petr. Tr. Mort. 1.)

No one ever complained of
servitude or death, as much as I
do of liberty.

NON SI PUÒ CÓSA NISSÚNA FÁRE
a lor módo. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Nothing can be done in their
manner.

NEÚNO ÉBBE mái GLI DÉI sì
FAVORÉVOLI, che nel futúro gli
potésse obbligáre. (Bocc. Fiam.
5. 84.)

No one even had the Gods so
favorable as to oblige them to
favor him in future.

Égli NON VE N' È NIÚNO sì CAT-
TÍVO, che non vi parésse úno im-
peratóre. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

There is no one so bad, that
you would not take him for an
emperor.

NÚLLO MARTÍRIO, fuorchè la
túa rábbia, — SARÉBBE al tuo
furór DOLÓR COMPÍTO. (Dant.
Inf. 14.)

No torment, save thy rage, were
to thy fury a well-proportioned
pain.

*O'nde felice dicono ésser colín,
che NON GLI MÁNCA NÚLLA.*
(Fr. Giord. 20.)

Whence they call him happy
who wants nothing.

*Chi in alcuna còsa può spe-
râre, DI NÚLLA SI DISPÉRI.*
(Bocc. Fiam. 5. 85.)

Let him, who can hope in any
thing, despair of nothing.

*Altriménti mái NON NE FARÒ
NÚLLA.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

Otherwise I will never do any
thing about it.

*DEL TÚO presénte STÁTO
NIÉNTE DÍCO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

I say nothing about thy pres-
ent condition.

*Se l' uómo magnánimo désse
ògni còsa per amóre, NON GLI
PARRÉBBE AVÉR DÁTO NIÉNTE.*
(Cavalc. Specch. Cr.)

If the magnanimous man should
give every thing for love, it would
not seem to him that he had given
any thing.

*Faréste danno a nói, SÉNZA
FÁRE A VÓI PRÒ VERÚNO.* (Bocc.
g. 8. n. 9.)

You would injure us without
doing any good to yourself.

*Allóra guárdo intórno, SE VE-
RÚNO — VÉDE LA PÉNA MÍA,
che m' ha conquíso.* (Rim. Ant.
96.)

Then I look around me to see
whether any one observes that
sorrow, which has subdued me.

*QUÁNDO S' ACCÁMPANO IN NES-
SÚNO LUÓGO per cagióne di guér-
ra.* (Buti. Purg. 7.)

When they encamp in any
place on account of war.

*TROVÓSSI in Miláno NIÚNO,
CHE CONTRADIÁSSE ÁLLA PO-
DESTÁDE ?* (Nov. Ant. 21.)

Was there found any one in
Milan, who opposed the public
power ?

*Tu LE DIRÁI s' ella VUÓL NÚL-
LÁ.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

Thou wilt ask her whether she
wants any thing.

*IL DOMANDÒ SE égli si SENTÍS-
SE NIÉNTE.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

He asked him whether he felt
any thing.

EXERCISE XXXII.

They rob you.
rubâre

Have pity | on | the afflicted.
compassióne | di | afflitto.

Dost thou know the
*conóscere*³ ¹

daughter of Cidippe ?
*figliuóla*²

May you
?

be pleased to bless (the) my soul. Let him call
Volére benedire ² *ánima*¹. *Chiamáre*

the leaders to a council. What thou wishest that
dúca — consíglío. volére

I should say. She said: "How can that be"?
díre. Díre: " potére quèsto² ¹ " ?

He replied: "Thou wilt see it, if thou comest im-
Díre: " vedére veníre tó-

mediately." I am here with one, who, | having |
sto." , per avére |

my name, wishes to be | myself | in every thing
nóme, volére — io ógni cósá

he does, or rather, that I should be he. He
— — ,

saw himself | deprived | of the hope of having her
vedére | privére speránza — —

for his wife — (| to have to have | her himself),
— — — | dovére avére | égli,

if Ormisda did not marry her.
préndere

The Turk then said: "If I were thou, I should
Túrco díre: "

perhaps infringe the law; but as I am myself and
fórse violáre légge; perchè io

not thou, I will never do it."
non¹ mái⁴ fàre³ ²."

I will tell thee the truth, companion, I like
volére díre véro, sózio, — —

her — (she pleases me) so much, that I could not
— piacére , potére

tell it to thee. He sent her | word | that, with-
díre . — Mandáre | a díre | ,

out any more delay, she should do what — (that
— indúgio, — dovére fàre —

which) he had told her. I order thee to go —
— avére³ díre¹ ² . — Comandáre — —

(that thou go) immediately | after | thy father. You
andáre² incontanénie¹ | *per* | *pádre.*

promised me | to | make me speak with (the) your
prométtere | *di* | *fáre* *parláre* ²

wife. | Pray, | leave me in peace. Why dost thou
dónna¹. | *In grázia,* | *lasciáre* *páce.* *Chè* —

not reply, wicked man? Art thou become dumb
rispóndere, *réo* *uómo?* *Art thou* *diveníre* *mútolo*

in hearing me? Having raised (herself) | upon | her
 — *uóire* ? — *Leváre* | *in* | —

feet), she said: "Brother, you are (the) welcome."
piè, — *díre:* "*Fratéllo,* *benvenúto.*"

No, she would not believe it, and would turn me
 , *crédere* , *scacciáre*

out of her house. He begged him that he would
 — — *cása.* — *Pregáre* — *inse-*

show him how they did. "Then," said he, "let
gnáre — *fáre.* " , *díre* , "

us do it." Say it frankly. (I), as for me, do
fáre " *Díre* *sicúro.* , — ,

not remember (myself of) it. Having caused a purse
ricordáre — *Fáre* ² *bórsa³*

to be brought to her- (self), she put it (to him) | into |
veníre¹ , — *méttere* | *in* |

his hand, and said: "Count if they are five-hun-
 — *máno,* *díre:* "*Annoveráre* —

dred." He conquered Scotland, and was crowned
 . *conquistáre* *Scózia,* *coronáre*

king of it. I did not discern there any thing.
re . *discérnere* *cósa.*

There is Minos | who | grins horribly. I will
stáre | *e²* | *ringhiáre³ orribile.¹* *fá-*

cause it to be painted there. Where art thou, good
re *dipíngere* . — , *buóna*

woman? Here I am — (behold me), what dost
dónna? — — — ,

thou wish? We are — (behold us) ready to obey
² *domandáre*¹? — — *pronto ubbidire*
 you.

My friend and not the friend of fortune. My
amico — — *fortúna*.

father told (it to) me, that I should take care (my-
⁴ *dire*³ ² ¹, *guardáre*

self) of ever setting foot in Messenia. O Samuel,
*giammái*² *pórre*¹ *piéde*⁵ ³ ⁴.

once my true father, dost thou command it? | As
véro pádre, *impónere* ? | *Per*

much as | thou | valuest | my affection. | In order |
quánto | *abbii cáro* | *amór*. | *Per* |

to die as your daughter, and not as your enemy.
moríre — *figlia*, — *nemíca*.

He let fall his hook at his (own) feet. Weeping
 — *Lasciáre cascár* *uncíno* — *piéde*. *Piángere*

he threw himself | on | his (another person's) neck.
 — *gittáre* | *a* | — — *cóllo*.

The unfortunate ones wept, scratched their (own) faces,*
meschina — *piángere*, *sgraffiáre* — *víso*,

tore their (own) hair.† In thinking of it I shud-
strappáre — *capéllo*. *pensáre* — — *racca-*

der (myself all† over) and my heart melts (itself).
pricciáre *tútto* — *cuóre strúggere*

He remained there all the night with certain
 — *Stáre* — — *nótte* *cérto*

snare of his | to | catch a bat. No§ person per-
*artifizio*² — ¹ | *per* | *pigliáre* *pipistréllo*. *persóna* *ac-*

ceived (himself) of it. There is no one|| of them
córgere

so young, who could not know well how women
fanciúlla, *potére* *conóscere*² *ben*¹ *fèmmine*

* Faces to be put, in the Italian, in the singular.

† Hair, in the plural.

‡ all, in the feminine.

§ No, for no one.

|| No one, for not any one, in the feminine.

are. I have not slept any last night. Let no
 — — dormire passáto nótte.
 one move himself, or say a word, if he does not
 muóvere , fàre mótto,
 wish to die. There it seemed to me to see no*
 volére moríre. ¹ — parére¹⁵ ¹⁴ vedére¹³ ²
 sanctity, no* devotion, no* good work, or example
 santità³, ⁴ divozíone⁵, ⁶ buóno⁷ ópera⁸, ⁹ esémpio¹⁰
 of life. Has any one been here? If there is
¹¹ víta¹². ² ⁴ ³ ¹ ?
 any one, who wishes | to bet | a supper, I will
 , volére | metter su | cèna, mét-
 do it willingly. If Philip goes any where — (in
 tere volentiéri. Filippo andàre — —
 any place), follow him — (approach thyself to him)
 luógo, — — accostàre
 in some manner. I have nothing | to | fear now.
 quálche módo. da | temére omdí.
 Thou knowest nothing then.
 sapére dúnque.

CHAPTER VII.

VERBS.

POSITION OF VERBS.

Verbs are generally placed *after* their *subjectives*; but if a *command* is given, or a *question* is asked, or a *wish* or *imprecation* is expressed; the verb is to be put *before* the *subjective*; as,

† No, for no one.

| | |
|--|--|
| SPÉNGASI <i>néi vóstri pèlli</i> ÓGNI SCINTÍLLA <i>di pesti-</i> <i>fèro sdégno;</i> | let every spark of venomous disdain be extinguished in your hearts ; |
| ACCÉNDASI <i>in quèlli</i> ARDÉN- TE FIÁMMA <i>di sincéro</i> <i>amóre,</i> | let there [in your hearts] be kindled a fervent flame of sincere affection ; |
| che VUÓL <i>dir</i> QUÉSTO ? | what can this mean ? |
| VOLÉSSE IDDÍO <i>che il gua-</i> <i>tármì gli fósse bastáto,</i> | would to Heaven that his gaz- ing at me had satisfied him ; |
| MALADÉTTA SÍA LA CRUDEL- TÀ <i>di colúti, che mi ti fa</i> <i>vedére,</i> | cursed be the cruelty of him, who causes that I should see thee. |

The *verb* is likewise put *before* the *subjective*, when it is *neuter* and is *preceded* by a *sentence* or *part of it* ; when it is *preceded* by a *negative* ; and when an *emphatical adjective* introduces the *sentence* ; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| stándosi COSÌ, VÉNNE <i>alla vól-</i> <i>ta sua</i> UN GÁMBERO, | [the bird] being so, a crab came up to him ; |
| nè <i>me ne</i> HA <i>mái</i> PARLÁTO ALCÚNO, | nor has any one ever spoken to me of her ; |
| dólce È IL BENEFÍCIO, | to do good is pleasing. |

Finally, the *verb* is put *before* the *subjective*, when in *narrations* the *sayings* or *doings* of a person are *re-*
lated ; when in *exclamations* it is accompanied by the
word *cóme* or *quánto* ; and when one of the following
words *ci*, *vi*, *quí*, *quà*, *ívi*, *quívi*, *dóve*, *quíndi*, *quánto*,
così, — *begins* a *sentence* or *phrase* ; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| DÍSSE LA DÓNNA : “ <i>Cóme</i> <i>può ésser quèsto ?</i> ” | the lady said : “ How can that be ? ” |
| oh ! <i>cóme spèssò</i> CÁSCANO I VÉCCHI <i>in quèsto erróre !</i> | oh ! how often do old men fall into this error ! |
| se <i>ce ne</i> VENÍSSE ALCÚNA, | if some one should come here ; |
| QUÌ SÓNO GIARDÍNI, | here are gardens ; |
| <i>chi è quéllo che non sáppia</i> <i>quánto SÍA ÉGLI infe-</i> <i>rióre ?</i> | who does not know how in- ferior he is ? |

EXAMPLES.

SPÉNGASI, SPÉNGASI NÉI VÓ-
STRI PÉTTI ÓGNI SCINTÍLLA DI
PESTÍFERO SDÉGNO ; ACCÉNDASI
IN QUÉLLI ARDÉNTÉ FIÁMMA DI
SINCÉRO AMÓRE. (Cavalcanti.)

CHE VUÓL DIR QUÉSTO ?
(Bocc.)

E VOLÉSSE IDDÍO, *che il pas-
sàrvi o IL GUATÁRMI GLI FÓSSE*
BASTÁTO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

MALADÉTTA SÍA LA CRUDELTA'
DI COLÚI, *che con gli ócchi dél-
la frónte or MI TI FA VEDÉRE.*
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

E STÁNDOSI COSÌ *di mála vó-
glia VÉNNE ÁLLA VÓLTA SÚA UN*
GÁMBERO. (Firenz.)

NÈ ME NE HA MÁI PARLÁTO AL-
CÚNO, *che non mel' ábbia dipín-
ta eguale álla mía Costánza.*
(Gell.)

DÓLCE *in ógni témpo* È IL
BENEFÍCIO. (Soave, Nov.)

DÍSSE LA DÓNNA : " CÓME PUÒ
ÉSSER QUÉSTO ? " — " DÍSSE Mes-
sér Lázio : " *Tu il vedrà, se tu*
viéni préstó." (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

OH ! CÓME SPÉSSO CÁSCANO I
VÉCCHI IN QUÉSTO ERRÓRE !
(Gell.)

E se per isciagúra CE NE VE-
NÍSSE ALCÚNA. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

QUÌ SÓNO GIARDÍNI, *quà áltri*
luóghi dilettevoli. (Bocc. Intr.)

Perchè, CHI È QUÉLLO CHE
NON SÁPPIA QUÁNTO SÍA ÉGLI
INFERIÓRE *di fórze* ? (Tolom.)

Let every spark of venomous
disdain be extinguished in your
heart ; let there be kindled a fer-
vent flame of sincere affection.

What can this mean ?

And would to Heaven, that his
passing by, and gazing at me, had
satisfied him.

Cursed be the cruelty of him,
who causes that my eyes should
see thee now.

And being [the bird] so mel-
ancholy, a crab came up to him.

Nor any one has ever spoken
to me of her, without describing
her to me as equal to my Con-
stanza.

To do good is pleasing at all
times.

The lady said : " How can that
be ? " — Mr. Lizio said : " Thou
wilt see it thyself if thou comest
immediately."

Oh ! how often do old men fall
into this error !

And if, for our misfortune, some
one should come here.

Here are gardens, there pleasant
places.

Because, who does not know
how inferior he is in strength ?

USE OF THE IMPERFECT AND FIRST AND SECOND-PERFECT.

The *preterite* of English verbs answers to the *imperfect* as well as to the *first* and *second-perfect*. In Italian these three tenses are rendered in three different forms; *I loved*, for instance, may be rendered by *io amáva, io amái, or io ho amáto*; but these forms are not indifferently used.

We make use of the first, the *imperfect*, when the action of which we speak was *present* in respect to another action *past* at the same time; — CANTA'VA *quándo vói veníste*, 'I was singing when you came'; E'RANO a *távola* *quándo nói entrámmo*, 'they were at table when we entered'; as,

| | | | |
|----------|-------------|------------|--------------------------------|
| méntré | STÁVAN | CENÁNDÓ, | while they were at supper, her |
| | vénne | il maríto, | husband came; |
| incontrò | la Catélla, | che VENÍ- | he met Catella, who was com- |
| VA, | | | ing. |

The *imperfect* is also used when we *speak* of an action become *habitual*, or *continued*, or *repeated* several times; as,

| | | | |
|-----------|-------------------|-------------------|---------------------------------|
| io | LAVORÁVA | un loro giar- | I had the care of their garden; |
| | díno, | | |
| ANDÁVA | al bósco | per le lé- | I used to go to the forest for |
| | gne, | | wood; |
| ATTIGNÉVA | acqua, e | FACÉVA | I drew water, and did other |
| | áltri servigétti, | | services; |
| le donne | mi DÁVAN | sì póco, | the ladies gave me so little, |
| | che io non | ne POTÉVA | that with it I could scarcely |
| | ap-péna | pagáre i calzári, | pay for my shoes. |

Finally, we use the *imperfect* in speaking of the age, name, actions, dispositions, and good or bad qualities of persons and things that exist no more; as,

| | | | |
|-------------------|------|----------|--------------------------------|
| nè pur tre lústri | AVÉA | forníti, | he [Rinaldo] had scarcely fin- |
| | | | ished his third lustrum; |

| | | |
|------------------------------------|------|--------------------------------|
| <i>la móglie, che Isabélla</i> | AVÉA | his wife, who was called Isa- |
| <i>nóme,</i> | | bella ; |
| <i>ÉRA di buóna mēte, e di fe-</i> | | he [Joseph Warren] was of |
| <i>lice ingégno dotáto, e bel-</i> | | good mind, endowed with a |
| <i>lissimo favellatóre,</i> | | happy genius, and a very |
| | | fine speaker ; |
| <i>PARÉVA Sánta Veridiána,</i> | | she appeared Saint Veridiana |
| <i>che dà beccüre álle sérpi,</i> | | feeding the serpents ; |
| <i>ÉRA quéstó giardíno vágo</i> | | this garden was very pleasant. |
| <i>mólto,</i> | | |

It may, perhaps, assist the learner in making a proper use of this tense, to observe further, that whenever the *preterite* in English may be turned into *was* or *were* and the *present participle* of the same verb, or into *used* and the *infinitive* of the same verb ; it is to be rendered by the *imperfect* tense in Italian : thus, if, without altering the meaning, *I* or *we* LOOKED *for*, may be changed into *I* WAS or *we* WERE LOOKING *for*, or into *I* or *we* USED TO LOOK *for*, it must be rendered by *io* CERCÁVA, or *nói* CERCÁVAMO.

The *first-perfect* is used to denote an action done in a period of time completely past ; as,

| | | |
|--|------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>poichè a mórte mi</i> | SENTÍI fe- | after I found myself mortally |
| <i>ríto,</i> | | wounded ; |
| <i>AVVÉNNE che il re di Fráncia</i> | | it happened that the king of |
| <i>MORÌ,</i> | | France died ; |
| <i>Colómbo PARTÌ per la sco-</i> | | Columbus departed for the dis- |
| <i>pérta del nuóvo móndo</i> | | covery of the new world the |
| <i>l' áнно 1492,</i> | | year 1492 ; |
| <i>io altresì quéstá nótte passáta</i> | | I also had a dream last night. |
| <i>FÉCI un sógno,</i> | | |

The *second-perfect* is used to express an action done in a period of time not specified ; or, if specified, not completely past ; as,

| | | |
|---------------------------------|------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>ánzi t' HO sémpré</i> | AMÁTO, e | nay, I always loved thee, and |
| <i>AVÚTO cáro,</i> | | held thee dear ; |
| <i>vói l' AVÉTE</i> | COMPERÁTO, | you have obtained it by pur- |
| <i>ed io non l' HO VENDÚTO,</i> | | chase, without my selling it |
| | | to you ; |

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>m' AVÉTE FÀTTO parlàre con una stàtua di marmo,</i> | you have made me speak with a marble statue ; |
| <i>già sòno otto ànni, t' HO più che la mia vita AMÀTO,</i> | for these eight years have I loved thee more than my very life ; |
| <i>mòlte ùtili scopérte sÓNOSI FÀTTE nel presénte sécolo,</i> | many useful discoveries have been made within the pres- ent century. |

The phrase *I saw him this morning*, if used in the *forenoon*, when the morning is not yet elapsed, is rendered by *l' HO VEDÚTO stamattina* ; but, if used in the *afternoon*, when the morning is already elapsed, it must be rendered by *lo vidi stamattina*.

EXAMPLES.

MÉNTRE STÁVAN CENÁNDÓ, VÉNNE IL MARÍTO. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.) While they were at supper, her husband came.

Égli INCONTRÒ LA CATÉLLA, CHE VENÍVA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.) He met Catella, who was coming.

ÍO LAVORÁVA UN LÓRO GIARDÍNO bello e gránde, e, óltre a quésto, ANDÁVA alcúna vólta AL BÓSCO PER LE LÉGNE, ATTIGNÉVA ÁCQUA, E FACÉVA cotàli ÁLTRI SERVIGÉTTI ; ma le DÓNNE MI DÁVANO SÌ PÓCO, CHE ÍO NON NE POTÉVA APPÉNA PAGÁRE I CALZÁRI. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.) I had the care of a large and beautiful garden of theirs, and besides this I used sometimes to go to the forest for wood ; I drew water, and did other like services for them ; but the ladies gave me so little, that with it I could hardly pay for my shoes.

Allór NÈ PUR TRE LÚSTRI AVÉA FORNÍTI. (Tass. Ger. 1. 60.) Then he [Rinaldo] had scarcely finished his third lustrum.

LA MÓGLIE, CHE ISABÉLLA AVÉA NÓME. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.) His wife, who was called Isabella.

ÉRA DI BUÓNA MÉNTE, E DI FELÍCE INGÉGNO DOTÁTO, E BELLISSIMO FAVELLATÓRE. (Bott. Stor. Amer. l. 5.) He [Joseph Warren] was of good mind, endowed with a happy genius, and a very fine speaker.

Una vécchia, che PARÉVA SÁNTA VERIDIÁNA, CHE DÀ BECCÁRE ÁLLE SÉRPI. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.) An old woman, who appeared Saint Veridiana feeding the serpents.

ÉRA QUÉSTO GIARDÍNO VÁGO MÓLTO. (Bemb.) This garden was very pleasant.

POICCHÈ A MÓRTE MI SENTÍI
FERÍTO. (Petr.)

After I found myself mortally
wounded.

AVVÉNNE CHE IL RE DI FRÁN-
CIA MORÌ, *ed in sùo luógo fu*
coronáto il figliuólo. (Bocc.)

It happened that the king of
France died, and his son was
crowned in his stead.

COLÓMBO PARTÌ PER LA SCO-
PÉRTA DEL NUÓVO MÓNDO L' ÁN-
NO 1492. (Vanz.)

Columbus departed for the dis-
covery of the new world the year
1492.

*Se ío fossi volúto andáre diè-
tro d' sógni, ío non ci saréi venú-
to, non iánto per lo túo, quánto*
per úno, che ío ALTRESÌ QUÉSTA
NÓTTE PASSÁTA NÈ FÉCI. (Bocc.
g. 4. n. 6.)

If I had any faith in dreams, I
should not have come here; and
not so much for the sake of yours,
as of one I also had last night.

ÁNZI T' HO SÉMPRE AMÁTO, E
AVÚTO CÁRO *innánzi ad ógni*
áltro. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

Nay I always loved thee, and
held thee dear beyond every other
person.

Ed or volésse Iddío che ío fáttö
l' avéssi, perciò che vói L' AVÉTE
COMPERÁTO, ED ÍO NON L' HO
VENDÚTO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

And now would to Heaven that
I had done so, because you have
obtained it by purchase, without
my selling it to you.

"Che ti páre? Hott' ío béne
la proméssa serváta?" — *"Mes-*
sér, no; vói m' AVÉTE FÁTTO
PARLÁRE CON ÚNA STÁTUA DI
MÁRMO." (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

"What dost thou think of it?
Have I not kept my promise?"
—"No, sir; you have made me
speak to a marble statue."

Po, mísera me! GIÀ SÓNO ÓTTO
ÁNNI, T' HO PIÙ CHE LA MÍA
VÍTA AMÁTO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

Alas! for these eight years have
I loved thee more than my very
life.

MÓLTE ÚTILI SCOPÉRTE SÓNO SI
FÁTTE NEL PRÉSÉNTÉ SÉCOLO.
(Vanz.)

Many useful discoveries have
been made within the present cen-
tury.

USE OF CERTAIN TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE FOR SOME OTHER
TENSES OF THE SAME MOOD; AND OF THE INFINITIVE FOR
CERTAIN TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE, AND FOR THE CON-
JUNCTIVE AND IMPERATIVE MOODS.

The *present* of the *indicative* is sometimes used, in
narrations, for the *first-perfect*; as,

ÉSCE [for, USCÌ] *velóce da* he went quickly out of that
quélta tómba, tomb;

CÓRRE [for, CÓRSE] *al palágio*, he ran to his palace ;
 non È [for, ÉRA] *più dúbbia* the way was no longer doubt-
la via, ful ;
 non È *più oscúra la nótte,* the night was no longer dark.

It is also used for the future ; as,

dománe È [for, SARÀ] *l' últi-* to-morrow will be the last day ;
mo dè,
 che farái tu, se élla il DÍCE what wilt thou do, if she will
 [for, DIRÀ] *á' fratélli ?* tell it to her brothers ;
 se io *infra otto giòrni non vi* if I shall not cure you in eight
 GUARISCO [for, GUARIRÒ], days, have me burnt ;
fátemi brugiàre,
 se tu ti CÁLÌ [for, CALERÁÌ], if thou wilt cast thee down, I
 io non ti verrò diétro di cannot chase thee on foot.
galóppo,

The *first-perfect* may be used for the *present* ; as,

or che AVÉSTI [for, che HÁÌ], now what ails thee, that thou
 che *fái cotál viso,* makest such a face ;
 Anichino gittò un gran so- Anichino gave a deep sigh.
 spíro. La dónna disse : The woman said : "What
 "Che avésti, Anichino ?" ails thee, Anichino ?"

The *first-perfect* may be used, also, for the *second-perfect* ; as,

ónde FÓSTI tu [for, SÉI STÁTO where hast thou been this
 tu] *stamáne ? — Non so* morning ? — I know not
 óve io mi FÚÌ [for, SÓNO where I have been ;
 STÁTO],
 scegliésti ? [for, HÁÌ SCÉLTO?] hast thou chesen ? — I have.
 Ho scélto. — Emón ? — —Æmon ? — Death. — Thou
 Mórte. — L' avrái, shalt have it.

The *second-pluperfect* may be used for the *first-perfect* ; as,

il re FU GIÚNTO [for, GIÚNSE] the king arrived and said :
 e disse : " Cavalière, a quál
 dónna sè' tu ? " " Knight, what lady dost
 thou belong to ? "
 alzàta la lanterna, ÉBBER VE- having raised the lantern, they
 DÚTO [for, VÍDERO] *il cat-* saw that rogue Andreuccio.
tivél di Andreuccio,

The *future* is used for the *present*, in *doubtful actions* ; as,

PARRÀ [for, *forse* PÀRE] a perhaps it seems to you, that
vói, che non vi vóglia béne, she does not like you ;
gente si appressa : Elvíra people approach : perhaps it
SARÀ [for, *forse* È Elvíra], is Elvira.

The *future-anterior* is used for the *second-perfect*, in *doubtful cases* ; as,

AVRÒ DÉTTO [for, *forse* HO perhaps I have said, that I am
DÉTTO], che ho da andàre to go to Venice.
a Venézia,

The *infinitive* may be used for the *third person singular* of the *present* and of the *imperfect* of the *indicative*, and their *compounds*, depending on another verb of the same mood ; as,

conósco lui ÉSSERE [for, che I know that he is a wicked
égli È] un malvágio uómo, man ;
udéndo il re il maliscálco ÉS- the king hearing that his far-
SER [for, che il maliscálco rier was dead ;
ÉRA] mérito,
ti converrà avére nélla memó- thou must keep in thy mind,
ria, Iddío ÉSSERE STÁTO that God has been the crea-
[for, che Iddío È STÁTO] tor of heaven and earth ;
creatóre del ciélo, e délla
térra,
s' accórse l' abáte AVÉR MAN- he found out, that the abbot
GIÁTO [for, che l' abáte AVÉA had eaten dry beans.
MANGIÁTO] fáve sécche,

It may likewise be used for the *third person singular* of the *present* and of the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive*, and their *compounds* ; as,

si créde ÉSSERE [for, che égli he is thought to be one of the
sÍA] úno dé' più ricchi pre- richest prelates in the world ;
láti del móndo,
èlla, credéndo lui ÉSSER [for, she, believing that he was
che égli FÓSSE] Gisíppo, Gisippus, answered yes ;
rispóse di sì,

*di Guiscárdo ho io già méco
préso partíto che fÁRNE
[for, che ne DÉBBA FÁRE],
credéndo lui ÉSSER TORNÁTO
[for, che égli FÓSSE TOR-
NÁTO] dal bósko,*

I have already determined
within myself what to do
with Guiscard;
believing that he had returned
from the wood.

Finally, the *infinitive* is used for the *second* person *singular* of the *imperative* mood, when *preceded* by the *negative*; as,

ciò NON TEMÉR,*
NON mi TOCCÁRE,

do not fear that;
do not touch me.

EXAMPLES.

ÉSCE VELÓCE DA QUÉLLA TÓM-
BA, CÓRRE AL PALÁGIO; *non* È
più incérto il súo pássò, NON È
PIÙ DÚBBIA LA VÍA, NON È PIÙ
OSCÚRA LA NÓTTE. (Alberg. Nov.)

He went quickly out of that
tomb, ran to his palace; his steps
were no longer uncertain, the way
was no longer doubtful, the night
was no longer dark.

Quéllo che mi díte di fÁRE, si
fÁccia tósto, perciocchè DOMÁNE
È L' ÚLTIMO DÌ che io débbo éss-
sere aspettáto. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

What is to be done, let it be
done immediately, for to-morrow
will be the last day of my being
expected.

CHE FARÁI TU, SE ÉLLA IL
DÍCE Á' FRATÉLLI? (Bocc. g. 3.
n. 3.)

What wilt thou do, if she tells it
to her brothers?

SE IO ÍNFRA ÓTTO GIÓRNI NON
VI GUARÍSCO, FÁTEMÍ BRUCIÁRE.
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)

If I shall not cure you in eight
days, have me burnt.

SE TU TI CÁLÍ, IO NON TI VER-
RÒ DIÉTRO DI GALÓPPO. (Dant.
Inf. 22.)

If thou wilt cast thee down
[into the pitch], I cannot chase
thee on foot.

OR CHE AVÉSTI, CHE FÁI
COTÁL VÍSO. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)

Now what ails thee, that thou
makest such a face.

ANICHÍNO GITTÒ UN GRANDÍS-
SIMO SOSPIRO. LA DÓNNA, guar-
dátolo, DÍSSE: "CHE AVÉSTI,
ANICHÍNO? Duólti cosí, che io ti
vínco." (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)

Anichino gave a very deep
sigh. The lady, having looked at
him, said: "What ails thee, Ani-
chino? Art thou sorry, that I con-
quer thee?"

* These and similar expressions ought to be regarded, however, as equivalent to the phrases (*ti comandò*, — *ti esórtò*, — *ti consíglío a*) *ciò NON TEMERE*, (*a*) *NON MI TOCCA'RE*, &c., '(1) do (command, — exhort, — counsel thee) not (to) fear that, not (to) touch me'; &c.; in which the words contained within parentheses are generally suppressed by *ellipsis*.

ONDE FOSTI TU STAMÁNE? —
NON SO ÓVE MI FÚI. (Bocc. g.
3. n. 3.)

SCEGLIÉSTI? — HO SCÉLTO.
— EMON? — MÓRTE. — L' AVRÁI.
(Alf. Antig. 4. 1.)

*Io andáva per gránde bisógno
in servigio délla mia donna, il
re fu giúnto, e disse: "CA-
VALIÉRE, A QUAL DÓNNA SÉ'
TU?"* (Nov. ant. 35.)

ALZÁTA alquánto LA LANTÉR-
NA, ÉBBER VEDÚTO IL CATTIVÉL
DI ANDREÚCCIO. (Bocc. g. 2. n.
5.)

*Eh via! cáro amíco, PARRÀ A
VÓI, CHE NON VI VÓGLIA BÉNE.*
(Gold. Ver. Am.)

GÉnte SI APPRÉSSA: ELVÍRA
SARÀ. (Alf. Fil. 4. 1.)

AVRÒ DÉTTO, CHE HO DA AN-
DÁRE [A VENÉZIA], *per úna lét-
tera che trátta di mio zío.* (Gold.)

CONÓSCO LÚI ÉSSERE UN MAL-
VÁGIO UÓMO. (Gr. Gr.)

UDÉNDO IL RE d' *Inghiltér-
ra* IL MALISCÁLCO ÉSSER MÓRTO.
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

TI CONVERRÀ *sémpre* AVÉRE
NÉLLA MEMÓRIA, IDDÍO ÉSSERE
STÁTO CREATÓR DEL CIÉLO, E
DÉLLA TÉRRA. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 4.)

Égli s' ACCÓRSE L' ABÁTE AVÉR
MANGIÁTO FÁVE SÉCCHÉ. (Bocc.
g. 10. n. 2.)

*Vénne a córte l' abáte di Cli-
gni, il quále si CRÉDE ÉSSERE ÚNO
DÉ' PIÙ RÍCCHI PRELÁTI DEL
MÓNDO.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

ÉLLA, CREDÉNDO LÚI ÉSSER
GISÍPPO, RISFÓSE DI SÌ.

Where hast thou been this
morning? — I know not where I
have been.

Hast thou chosen? — I have
— Æmon? — Death. — Thou shalt
have it.

I was going on an important
errand in the service of my lady,
when the king arrived, and said:
"Knight, what lady dost thou be-
long to?"

Having raised the lantern a
little, they saw that rogue An-
dreuccio.

Come! dear friend, perhaps it
seems to you, that she does not
like you

People approach: perhaps it is
Elvira.

Perhaps I have said, that I am
to go to Venice on account of a
letter which concerns my uncle.

I know that he is a wicked
man.

The king of England hearing
that his farrier was dead.

Thou must keep always in thy
mind that God has been the crea-
tor of heaven and earth.

He found out, that the abbot
had eaten dry beans.

There came to court the abbot
of Cluny, who is thought to be
one of the richest prelates in the
world.

She, believing that he was
Gisippus, answered yes.

DI GUISCÁRDO HO ÍO GIÀ
MÉCO PRÉSO PARTÍTO CHE FÁRNE;
*ma di te sállo Iddío, chè ío non
so che FÁRMI.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

I have already determined with-
in myself what to do with Guis-
card; but God knows what to do
with thee, for I do not.

CREDÉNDÓ LÚI ÉSSER TORNÁ-
TO DAL BÓSCO, *avvisò di riprén-
derlo fòrte.* (Bocc. g. 1.-n. 4.)

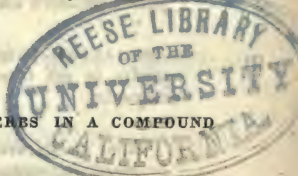
Believing that he had returned
from the wood, he thought of
reprimanding him severely.

CIÒ NON TEMÉR, *chè in cru-
deltà son pàri — I tuóí minístri
a te.* (Alf. Filip. 4. 2.)

Do not fear that, for thy min-
isters are not inferior to thee in
cruelty.

Lásciami, NON MI TOCCÁRE.
(Bocc.)

Let me alone, do not touch
me.



OF THE TENSES OF THE DEPENDENT VERBS IN A COMPOUND
SENTENCE.

When, in a compound sentence, the *principal verb* is
in the *present* of the *indicative*, or in the *future*, the
dependent verb must be put in the *present* of the *con-
junctive*, if we mean to imply the *present* or *future* time;
and in the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive*, if we mean to
imply the *past*; as,

ÍO CRÉDO *omái che mónti e
piágge SÁPPÍAN di che tém-
pre SÍA la mÍA víta,*

I believe that, by this time,
mountains and plains know
what is the condition of my
life;

CONVERRÀ *che tu GÓDA di tal
destó,*

it is proper that this wish of
thine should be gratified;

CRÉDO *mi PORTÁSSE amóre,
GIUDICHERÀ facilménte quán-
to mi FÓSSI rallegráto,*

I believe that he loved me;
you will easily imagine how
much I rejoiced at it.

When the principal verb is in the *imperfect* or the
perfect of the *indicative*, or in the *conditional*, the *de-
pendent verb* is generally put in the *imperfect* of the
conjunctive; as,

appéna SAPÉVA *che far si* he hardly knew what to do;
DOVÉSSE,

DOMANDÒ *quál* FÓSSE *la cagione del loro romóre,* she asked what was the cause of their noise ;
chi STARÉBBE *méglio di me,* who would be happier than I,
se quèlli denári FÓSSERO *miéi?* if that money were mine ?

In *suppositive* or *conditional* phrases, the *imperfect* of the *indicative* in English, — *had, was, or were,* is rendered in Italian by the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive* ; as,

se così non FÓSSE, *io non vi* [if it *was* not so] were it not
potréi prestáre un grósso, so, I could not lend you a
farthing ;

se non AVÉSSI *paúra di mio* [if I *had* not the fear — if I
pádre, io gli insegnerei la *was* not afraid] were I not
rispósta, afraid of my father, I would
teach him how to reply ;

se AVÉSSI *questi denári, tégli* if I *had* this money, I would
presteréi incontanente, lend it to thee immediately.

EXAMPLES.

Sì ch' io mi CRÉDO OMÁI, *CHE* So that I believe, that, by this
MÓNTI, E PIÁGGE, — *E fiumi, e* time, mountains, and plains, and
sélve sappian di che témpre — rivers, and woods know what is
SÍA LA MÍA VÍTA. (Petr. s. 22.) the condition of my life.

DI TAL DESÍO CONVERRÀ CHE It is proper that this wish of
TU GÓDA. (Dant. Inf. 8.) thine should be gratified.

CRÉDO MI PORTÁSSE AMÓRE, e I believe that he loved me, and
che di me non FÓSSE *méno ar-* that he was no less ardent in love
dénte. (Ariost.) than I.

GIUDICHERÀ FACILMÉNTÉ You will easily imagine how
QUÁNTO IO MI FÓSSI RALLEGRÁ- much I rejoiced at it.
TO. (Bent. lett.)

APPÉNA SAPÉVA CHE FAR SI He hardly knew what to do.
DOVÉSSE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

DOMANDÒ *LA REGÍNA QUÁL* The queen asked what was the
FÓSSE *LA CAGIONE DEL LÓRO RO-* cause of their noise.
MÓRE. (Bocc. g. 6.)

CHI STARÉBBE MÉGLIO DI ME, Who would be more happier
SE QUÉLLI DENÁRI FÓSSERO MIÉI? I, if that money were mine ?
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

SE COSÌ NON FOSSE, IO NON VI POTREI PRESTARE UN GRÓSSO. Were it not so, I could not lend you a farthing.
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.)

SE IO NON AVÉSSI PAÚRA DI MÍO PÁDRE, IO GLI INSEGNERÉI LA RISPÓSTA. (Mach. Com.) Were I not afraid of my father, I would teach him how to reply.

SE IO AVÉSSI QUÉSTI DENÁRI, IO TÉGLI PRESTERÉI INCONTANÉTE. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.) If I had this money, I would lend it to thee immediately.

OF THE MANNER OF EXPRESSING THE ENGLISH PRESENT-PARTICIPLE IN ITALIAN.

The English *present-participle* may be expressed in Italian :

First, by the *gerund* of the corresponding verb ; as,

VEGGÉNDolo consumáre cóme seeing him waste away like
la néve al sóle, snow in the sun ;

DORMÉNDolo gli párve di ve- [sleeping or] whilst he was
dére la dóнна súa, asleep, it seemed to him
that he saw his lady.

Secondly, by the conjunction *che*, or the adverb *quándo*, and a *tense* of the *indicative* mood ; as,

póí CH' ÉBBI RIPOSÁTO il having rested my weary body
córpo lássó,

QUAND' ÉBBE DÉTTO ciò, ri- having said this, he took up
prése il téschio mísero có' once more that miserable
dénti, skull with his teeth.

Thirdly, by a *preposition* and the verb in the *infinitive* ; as,

consumò quélla mattína IN he spent that morning in look-
CERCÁRLi, ing after them ;

crédo che le suóre sién tútte A I believe that the nuns are all
DORMÍRE, [sleeping or] asleep.

When the English present-participle has before it a preposition, such as *of, from, with, on, in, for, without, before, after, &c.*, it is always rendered in Italian by the corresponding verb in the *infinitive* with a *preposition*.

If the participle is preceded by the prepositions *of, from, with*, they are expressed in Italian by the preposition *di*, attended by the infinitive ; as,

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| <i>ebbi il piacere</i> DI VEDÉrlo, | I had the pleasure <i>of</i> seeing him ; |
| <i>èlla m' impedisce</i> DI FÁrlo, | you prevent me <i>from</i> doing so ; |
| <i>conténto d' AVÉr</i> la trováta, | being content <i>with</i> having found her. |

The preposition *on*, before the participle, may be expressed by the prepositions *di*, or *in* ; as,

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>si vánta d' AVÉR</i> la lóro conoscénza, | he values himself <i>on</i> being acquainted with them ; |
| NEL PARTÍRE <i>gli sovvenne</i> di léi, | <i>on</i> his departure he recollected her. |

The preposition *in* is rendered by *a*, or *in* ; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>che A FAR</i> ciò volésse aiútarlo, | that he would assist him <i>in</i> doing that ; |
| <i>avéa NEL</i> QUETÁr pópolo autorità ed árte, | <i>in</i> appeasing the people he had both authority and art. |

The prepositions *for, without, before, after, &c.*, are literally translated.

If the participle is preceded by the preposition *by*, this *preposition* is generally *omitted* in Italian, and the *participle* rendered by the *gerund* of the corresponding verb ; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>gli scolári impáran</i> o le régole di úna lingua STUDIÁNDole, | scholars learn the rules of a language <i>by</i> studying them. |
|---|---|

But if we wish to *express the preposition*, then the verb must be put in the *infinitive*, and *by* rendered by *con*; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>il divino Giulio rintuzzò la sedizione del suo esercito col DIR sólo: "Ah Qui- riti!"</i> | the divine Julius checked the sedition of his army <i>by</i> only saying: "Ah Romans!" |
|--|--|

EXAMPLES.

| | |
|---|---|
| VEGGÉNDOLO <i>io</i> CONSUMÁRE CÓME <i>si fa</i> LA NÉVE AL SÓLE. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.) | I seeing him waste away as the snow does in the sun. |
|---|---|

| | |
|--|--|
| DORMÉNDÒ GLI PÁRVE <i>in só- gno</i> DI VEDÉRE LA DÓNNA SÚA <i>andar per un bósco assái bello.</i> (Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.) | Whilst he was asleep, it seemed to him that he saw, in a dream, his lady going through a very beautiful wood. |
|--|--|

| | |
|--|--|
| POICH' ÉBBI RIPOSÁTO IL Cór- PO LÁSSO, — <i>Riprésì via per la piaggia disérta.</i> (Dant. Inf. 1.) | Having rested my wearied body, I made my way through the de- serted shore. |
|--|--|

| | |
|---|--|
| QUAND' ÉBBE DÉTTO CIÒ, <i>cógli occhi tòrti</i> , — RIPRÉSE IL TÉS- CHIO MISERO CÒ' DÉNTI — <i>Che fúro all' ósso, cóme d' un can, fórti.</i> (Dant. Inf. 33.) | Having said this, with looks askanse he took up once more that miserable skull with his teeth, which were as strong upon the bone as those of a dog. |
|---|--|

| | |
|--|---|
| Tútto il rimanén-te di QUÉLLA MATTÍNA CONSUMÒ IN CERCÁRLI. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.) | He spent all the rest of that morning in looking after them. |
|--|---|

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>Io</i> mi CRÉDO CHE LE SUÓRE SIÉN TUTTE A DORMÍRE. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.) | I believe that the nuns are all asleep. |
|---|--|

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>Non prima di ièri ÉBBI IL PIA- CÈRE DI VEDÉRE, in càsa dell' ambasciadóre del re di Frància,</i> (Bent.) | Not before yesterday did I have the pleasure of seeing, at the house of the ambassador of the king of France, |
|---|--|

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>Se non ch' ÉLLA M' IMPEDÍSCE DI FÁRLO.</i> (Metast. lett.) | Except that you prevent me from doing so. |
|---|--|

| | |
|--|---|
| CONTÉNTÒ DI AVÉR TROVÁTA <i>Filomèna.</i> (Bocc.) | Being content with having found Philomena. |
|--|---|

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>Égli</i> SI VÁNTA D' AVÉR LA LÓRO CONOSCÉNTA. (Gold.) | He values himself on being ac- quainted with them. |
|---|---|

NEL PARTÍRE GLI SOVVÉNNE On his departure he recollected
DI LÉI, *che misera rimása éra.* her, whom he had left so misera-
(Nov. Ant.) ble.

Pregándolo CHE A FAR CIÒ Begging that he would assist
VOLÉSSE AITÁRLO. (Bocc. g. 6.) him in doing that.

AVÉA NEL QUETÁR PÓPOLO AÜ- In appeasing the people, he had
TORITÀ ED ÁRTE. (Dav. St. 3.) both authority and art.

GLI SCOLÁRI IMPÁRANO LE RÉ- Scholars learn the rules of a
GOLE DI ÚNA LÍNGUA STUDIÁN- language by studying them.
DOLE. (Rosasco.)

IL DIVÍNO GIÚLIO RINTUZZÒ The divine Julius checked the
LA SEDIZIÓNE DEL SÚO ESÉRCITO sedition of his army by only say-
COL DÍR SÓLO: "AH QUIRÍTI!" ing: "Ah Romans!"
(Dav. Ann.)

OF THE WAY OF RENDERING INTO ITALIAN THE ENGLISH
PARTICLE *to*, BEFORE THE INFINITIVE OF VERBS.

The particle *to* prefixed to English verbs is used sometimes as a mere *sign* of the *infinitive*, and sometimes as a *preposition*. When it is a mere *sign*, it is *never rendered* in Italian, *except* when the infinitive is *used as a noun*, and then it is *expressed* by the article *il* or *lo*. When *to* has the force of a *preposition*, it is *rendered* by the prepositions *di*, *a*, *per*.

When the infinitive of verbs *can* be expressed in Italian by a *noun*; as, — ‘*to read* is useful,’ *la lettúra è útile*; — ‘*always to study* is fatiguing,’ *lo stúdio continuo è faticóso*; — the particle *to* is rendered by the article *il* or *lo*; — *il léggere è útile*, ‘*to read* is useful’; — *lo studiár sémpre è faticóso*, ‘*always to study* is fatiguing’; as,

le impóse IL SEGUITÁRE [or, she ordered her to continue;
IL PROSEGUIMÉTO],

L’ ASTENÉRSI [or, L’ ASTI- to abstain from what pleases,
NÉNZA] *da quel che piáce,* is true virtue;
è véra virtù,

la donna veggéndo che IL the woman, seeing that to
PREGÁRE non le valéva [or, pray was useless, had re-
che LE PREGHIÉRE non le course to threats :
valévano], ricórse AL MI-
NACCIÁRE [or, ÁLLE MI-
NÁCCE],

But if the infinitive *cannot* be expressed by a *noun*, the particle *to* is rendered by a *preposition*.

If the particle *to* is preceded by a verb signifying *remembering* or *forgetting*, *pleasing* or *displeasing*, *rejoicing* or *grieving*, *owning* or *denying*, *permitting* or *prohibiting*, *telling*, *declaring*, *affirming*, *supposing*, *suspecting*, *fearing*, *commanding*, *asking*, *entreating*, *doubting*, *promising*, *advising*, *concluding*, *finishing*, *proposing* ; or by any verb implying *desire* or *aversion*, it is rendered in Italian by the preposition *di* ; as,

a me piáce DI dirvi una no- it pleases me to tell you a
vella, story ;
m' è cadúto nell' ánimo DI it has occurred to my mind to
dimostrárví, show you ;
a me appartíene DI ragioná- it belongs to me to speak ;
re,
ama d' éssere svegliáto a he likes to be awakened by
suón di trómbe, the sound of trumpets.

The particle *to* is translated by the preposition *a*, when it comes after verbs signifying *beginning*, *teaching*, *learning*, *attaining*, *insisting*, *persisting*, *proceeding*, *remaining*, *continuing*, *opposing*, *contributing*, *engaging*, *liking*, *accustoming*, *encouraging*, *obliging* ; after verbs implying *inclination*, *difficulty*, *application*, *thought*, *reluctance*, *fitness* ; and after verbs signifying *motion* ; as,

cominciò A chiédere perdóno, he began to ask pardon ;
égli è brútto A vedére, he is ugly to look at ;
quánto m' éra ciò cáro AD how pleasing it was to me to
udíre ! hear this !
chi nol créde, vénga A ve- let him who does not believe it,
dérta, come and see her.

And whenever for the particle *to*, joined with the infinitive of English verbs, can be substituted the phrases *in order to*, — *with the design of*; it is rendered in Italian by the preposition *per*; as,

PER MOSTRÁRE d' *avere a* to show how agreeable his
grádo la sua venúta, visit was to him;
l' agricola, che Cristo elésse the husbandman, whom Christ
all' órto suo PER AIUTÁR- chose to assist him [to be his
lo, helpmate] in his own garden.

EXAMPLES.

La regína, a Filoména voltáta, The queen, having turned to
 LE IMPÓSE IL SEGUITÁRE. (Bocc. Philomena, ordered her to con-
 g. 3. n. 3.) tinue.

E VÉRA VIRTÚTE, — IL SAPÉR- To know how to abstain from
 SI ASTENÉR DA QUÉL CHE PIÁCE, what pleases, when that which
 — *Se quel che piáce offénde.* pleases is injurious, is true vir-
 (Past. Fid. 3. 3.) tue.

LA DÓNNA VEGGÉNDÓ CHE IL The woman, seeing that to
 PREGÁRE NON LE VALÉVA, RI- pray was useless, had recourse to
 CÓRSE AL MINACCIÁRE. (Bocc. g. threats.
 7. n. 4.)

A ME PIÁCE DI DÍRVI ÚNA NO- It pleases me to tell you a story.
 VÉLLA. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 8.)

M' È CADÚTO NELL' ÁNIMO DI It has occurred to my mind to
 DIMOSTRÁRVI *nella novélla, che* show to you, in the story which I
a me tócca di dire (Bocc. am to tell you,
 g. 1. n. 5.)

A ME OMÁI APPARTIÉNE DI RA- Now it belongs to me to speak.
 GIONÁRE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

ÁMA *méglio d' éssere sve-* He likes better to be awakened
 GLIÁTO A SUÓN DI TRÓMBE, *e ro-* by the sound of trumpets, and the
mór d' árme, che a suón di cétra, noise of arms, than by the sound
o di vivóla. (Dav. Stor.) of citherns or viols.

Il *médico* COMINCIÓ A CHIÉDE- The physician began to ask
 RE PERDÓNO. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) pardon.

ÉGLI È *defórme di córpo*, BRÚT- He is deformed in his person,
 TO A VEDÉRE. (Varch.) and ugly to look at.

O QUÁNTÓ M' ÉRA CIÒ CÁRO O how pleasing it was to me to
 AD UDÍRE! (Bocc.) hear this!

CHI NOL CRÉDE, VÉNGA ÉGLI
A VEDÉRLA. (Petr. s. 210.)

Let him, who does not believe
it, come and see her himself.

*Credéndo costúi éssere un gran
barbassóro, PER MOSTRÁRE DI
AVÉRE A GRÁDO LA SÚA VENÚTA,
úna gran cóppa doráta, la quále
davánti avéva, comandò, che fós-
se empiúta di víno, e portáta al
gentiluómo.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Believing that he was a great
man, to show how agreeable his
visit was to him, he ordered that
a large gilded cup, which he had
before him, should be filled up
with wine and given to the gentle-
man.

*Doménico fu détto, ed io ne
párlo, — Siccóme dell' AGRÍCOLA,
CHE CRÍSTO — ELÉSSE ALL' ÓR-
TO SÚO PER AIUTÁRLO.* (Dant.
Par. 12.)

He was called Dominic, and
I speak of him, as of the husband-
man whom Christ chose to be his
helpmate in his own garden.

EXERCISE XXXIII.

| | | |
|-----------------------------|---|---|
| Would to Heaven | that my | fortune would allow me |
| <i>Fáccia il Cielo</i> | | <i>fortuna dáre</i> |
| to | put them in execution. | They came in sight |
| <i>di</i> | <i>mèttete</i> | <i>ópera.</i> |
| of — | (saw themselves near to) | a small-castle |
| — <i>vedere</i> | <i>vicino</i> | <i>castello</i> |
| which, having been seen, | about | twelve men suddenly |
| , <i>vedere,</i> | <i>da³</i> | <i>4 fante⁵ súbito¹</i> |
| rushed out upon them. | Finally, no — | (not any) virtue |
| <i>uscire²</i> | — <i>finalmente³</i> | <i>Nè¹ virtú⁴</i> |
| can be found | in those, who | have given themselves |
| <i>si tróva²</i> | | <i>éssere dáre</i> |
| up | to | gluttony. |
| <i>in préda</i> | | <i>góla.</i> |
| Oh! how true these things | | |
| | <i>cóme véro</i> | <i>cósa</i> |
| are. | It was the castle of one of the family of the | |
| — | <i>castello</i> | — — — |
| Orsini, and by | good fortune | his lady — (a lady of |
| , <i>per</i> | <i>ventura</i> | — — — |
| his) was there. | Words | are not necessary |
| . | <i>Paróla</i> | <i>non bisógnano</i> |
| | | — — |

business — (here). The mother said: “(O my) daughter,
— *mádre Dire: “ figliuóla,*

what warm | are you talking about?” |
cáldo | fa | égli?” |

The father, | on account of | the love (that) he bore
pádre, | per | amóre | portáre
her, took no care — (gave himself little care) | to |
— — — *dáre³ | póco¹ | cúra² | di⁴ |*

marry her again, and it seemed not modest (thing) | in |
maritáre⁶ | piú⁵, — — | parére¹² | nè⁷ | onésto¹⁰ | cósa¹¹ | a⁸ |

her | to | ask it (of him). Who was a very young
⁹ | *il¹³ | richiédere¹⁴ | — assái | giòvane*

and handsome | man |. And he saw a knight
béllo | délla persóna |. ¹ — vedére⁴ ⁶ cavalíer⁷

dressed in black following — (to come after) her. But
— — *brúno⁸ — | veníre⁵ | diétro-a² ³.*

the knight who saw this cried | from afar | to him.
cavalíere | vedére² ¹ | gridáre | di lontáno |

The following day the Saladin caused a most beautiful
següente | di ² | ³ | fare¹ ⁹ | bello¹⁰

and rich bed | to be put up | in a large hall.
¹¹ *ricco¹² | létto¹³ | fare⁴ up | ⁵ ⁶ | gran⁷ | sala⁸.*

Yesterday | at | this hour we were in Mugello. He
Iéri | a | óra — |

was one of those men, who are more attached to liberty,
uómo, ³ ¹ | affezionáto² | libertà,

than to life. Three months ago there was a conflagration.
vita. | mése | fa | incéndio.

A noisy event happened this year. Ferondo was
strepitoso² | avveniménto¹ | accadére | áнно. ² | Éssere¹

quite pale.
tútto | pállido.

To-morrow will be a holy-day. If thou wilt touch
Dománi — | fésta. | toccáre

her with this | written paper, | she will follow thee
scrítta, | | venír | diétro

immediately. He said he was perfidious and vile. He
incontanente. — Dìre pérfido vile. —

took a leap, and threw himself down from the other
Prèndere sálto, gittàre —

side. He thought that | this man | was such as
párte. — Pensàre — costui | dovère éssere

the wickedness of the Burgundians required (it). From
malvagità Borgognóne richiédere .

these | it was heard | in the neighbouring fields, that
si sèppe | vicino càmpo, —

Terni was guarded by four-hundred horsemen. If he
guardàre quattrocénto cavállo.

thinks that the republic needs — (has need) that the
crédere — repùbblica — bisógno

senators should speak freely, why does he enter into so
senatóre parlàre líbero, entràre 2

trifling details? Do not make a noise. She saw
débole3 còsa1? fàre — strépito. — conòscere2

clearly that her vision had been true. She, who was
Manifèsto1 — 5 visionè6 3 véro4. , 3

not a physician, believed without any doubt, that he was
2 — mèdica1, crédere8 4 5 fállo6, — 7

dead. Do not flatter thyself.
mórto. lusingàre .

Come into the house, for I believe (that) it is
Venìre càsa, crédere

| better | that she should not see thee. What dost
béne | vedère .

thou wish that I should say to her, if I should happen
volère dìre , — — —

to — (it happens that I should) speak to her? He
— avvenìre favellàre ? —

asked him what had become of the other leg of the
Domandàre divenìre — cóscia

crane. He was disposed | to | go wherever she
grù. dispònere | di | andàre dovúnque —

pleased — (it was agreeable to her). I never should
 — — *a grádo* — —

have believed, that he would act so — (was capable of
crédere, — — — *capáce*

doing this). Who would have been the one — (that),
far — —

that would not have — (set himself to) run-away.
éssere *méttere* *fuggire*.

The king having ordered. Setting fire | to |
re *ordináre*. *Appiccáre* | *per* |

every place. I met them riding post. That day
luógo. — *Incontráre* *córrere pósta*. *giórno*

having passed. Having done writing. When she
passáre. *finíre* *scrívere*. —

began to sing.
cominciáre *cantáre*.

He forbids him to produce the proofs of his
 — *vietáre* — — *prodúrre* *prúova*

innocence. I am very glad to see you — (I re-
innocénza. — — — — — *ral-*

joice myself much at seeing you). It is a crime in
legráre — — *vedére* — — *delitto*

Tyre to have a great fortune.* It begins to rain.
Tíro *gran béne*. — *Cominciáre pióvere*.

I beseech you to grant me that favor. If it was
 — *pregáre* — — *accordáre* — — *favóre*. —

a fault to leave thee, behold I make amends for
cólpa *lasciáre* — — *écco* — — — —

it — (I amend it). He likes to play. I did
 — *ammendáre* — — *amáre* *giuocáre*. — *fáre*

so — (it) to oblige you. She speaks thus to
 — — *obbligáre* — — *Parláre*

vex me.
torméntáre

* Fortune, in the plural.

CHAPTER VIII.

PARTICIPLES, AND USE AND POSITION OF CERTAIN ADVERBS.

AGREEMENT OF PARTICIPLES.

It has already been observed (p. 344) that *participles* in Italian are *considered* and often *used* as *adjectives*, and that, when so used, (pp. 345, 411) they *agree* with *substantives* in *gender* and *number*.

This is always the case with *present-participles*, which constantly *agree* in *gender* and *number* with their *subject*; as,

una nave PORTANTE uómini TEMPESTÁNTI, PERICOLÁNTI, SOGGIACÉNTI a tanti maròsi, a ship carrying men tempest-tossed, endangered, and subject to so many storms;

présente agli ócchi suoi LÉI GRIDÁNTÉ mercè svenáro-no, before his eyes they slew her [who was] crying out for mercy;

dalle dónne ASPETTÁNTI si rivolse, e disse, he addressed himself to the ladies [who were] waiting, and said.

By a peculiarity of language, and in imitation of the *ablative absolute* of the Latin, we often find in good writers a *present-participle* with its *noun* or *pronoun*, *independent* of any verb, and *standing*, as it were, *alone* in a discourse; as,

quándo, SOPRAVVEGNÉNTÉ LA NÓTTE, sírse un témpo fierissimo e tempestóso, when, night coming on, there came very severe and tempestuous weather;

Césare parlò assettataménte, UDÉNTI NÓI, délla vita e délla mórté, Cæsar spoke much to the point, [whilst] we [were] hearing him, about life and death.

With regard to the *agreement* of *past-participles*, the following are the most sure rules :

When the *past-participle* is *joined* to the verb *éssere*, ‘to be’; or to such verbs as *venire*, *restare* or *rimanere*, *vedersi*, &c., used in the signification of ‘to be’; it is to *agree* with the *subject* of the verb, with which it is joined, in *gender* and *number*; as,

ÉSSI éran di frón di quér- they were garlanded with oak-
cia INGHIRLANDÁTI, leaves;

nè ÉRANO le fálte dé’ Vitel- nor were the faults of Vitel-
liáni PUNÍTE, ma ben PA- lius’ troops punished, but
GÁTE, well paid;

méntre ch’ ÉLLA [la lingua] whilst it [the language] is not
non VÉNGA [for, non sía] adopted by celebrated wri-
USÁTA da famósi scrittéri, ters;

proccurerò che [ÉGLI] RÉSTI I shall endeavour that he may
[for, síi] IMPIEGÁTO in be employed in this city;
quésta città,

ÉGLI RIMÁSE [for, FU] MA- he was astonished;
RAVIGLIÁTO,

il giòvane infelice SI VÍDE the unhappy youth was soon
[for, FU] tòsto TRÁTTO in taken to prison.
prigióne,

But when the *past-participle* is *joined* to the verb *avere*, ‘to have’; — if this verb is used, instead of *éssere*, in the signification of ‘to be’; or is used in the signification of ‘to hold,’ ‘to possess’; &c., as an *active* and *not* an *auxiliary* verb; the participle *agrees* with the *object* of the verb in *gender* and *number*; as,

per non potérti vedére t’ A- thou wouldst have torn out thy
VRÉSTI [for, ti SARÉSTI] eyes, not to see thyself;
CAVÁTI gli ócchi,

s’ AVÉA [for, s’ ÉRA] MÉSSE he had put some small stones
alcune petrúzze in bócca, in his mouth;

úno che FORÁTA AVÉA [for, one who had his throat pierc-
TENÉA, POSSEDÉA] la góla, ed;

| | |
|--|--|
| HO [for, TÉNGO] SÌ AVVÉZZA la mēte a contemplār sò- la costèi, | I have a mind so accus- tomed to contemplate this lady alone ; |
| benchè AVÉSSERO [for, TE- NÉSSERO] LE SPÀDE ISGUA- NÀTE, | although they had unsheathed their swords ; |
| non HO quèste còse SAPÚTE dà' vicinì, | I did not hear these things from the neighbours ; |
| AVÉA la lúna PERDÚTI I suoi ràggi, | the moon had lost her rays. |

If the verb *avére*, to which the *past-participle* is joined, is used as an *auxiliary* verb, in order to represent the idea of *past time*, which *could be* equally expressed by a *single form* of the verb, which the participle belongs to ; then this *participle* remains *invariable* ; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| cóme io AVRÒ DÁTO [OR, DA- RÒ] lóro ógni còsa, | as soon as I shall have given to them every thing ; |
| CERCÁTO HO [OR, CERCÁI] sèmpre solitária vía, | I have always sought a solitary way ; |
| m' ÌA DIMOSTRÁTO [OR, mi DIMOSTRÒ] la cagione del tuo mále, | he has manifested to me the cause of thy evil ; |
| chi quèste còse HA MANIFE- STÁTO [OR, MANIFESTÒ] al maestro? | who has told these things to the master ? |

When the *past-participle* is preceded by one of the pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, si, il, lo, la, li, gli, le, ne, che, cui, quále, quáli, quánti*, as *objects* of the verb, the participle agrees with the *pronouns*, or the *objects represented* by them, in *gender* and *number* ; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| èlla medésima me le ha DÉT- TE [OR, mi ha DÉTTE QUÉ- STE CÒSE], | she herself has told them to me ; |
| il libérto dicéva avérLA éssò UCCÍSA [OR, avére éssò UC- CÍSA LA DÓNNA], | the freed-man said that he had killed her himself ; |

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>tu ci hái óggi tánto</i> DILITICÁTE [or, <i>hái</i> DILITICÁTE NÓI], | thou hast delighted us so much to-day ; |
| <i>la quále io racconterò per fàrvi</i> ACCÓRTE [or, <i>fàre</i> ACCÓRTE VÓI], | which I will relate to show you ; |
| <i>si fè däre l' ácqua, CHE il dì davánti avéva FÁTTA,</i> | she caused the water to be given to her, which she had prepared the day before ; |
| <i>vedéndo cosí fátta dónna, e CÚI égli colánto AMÁTA uvéa,</i> | seeing such a lady, and one whom he had loved so much ; |
| <i>li dänni, LI QUÁLI tu hái AVÚTI per me,</i> | the evils which thou hast sustained on my account. |

The *participle*, however, remains *invariable* if it is accompanied by an *infinitive*, and the abovementioned pronouns are the *objects* of this infinitive ; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>le cose che già avéva UDÍTO DIRE, che érano intervenúte,</i> | the things which he had heard of as having happened ; |
| <i>tútti v' avrò FÁTTO MORÍRE,</i> | he will have put you all to death ; |
| <i>la dónna, la quále il lúngo vagheggiäre non avéva POTÚTO MUÓVERÈ,</i> | the lady, whom his long admiration had not been able to move. |

Finally, *past-participles* may be used, like present-participles, *absolutely* ; the gerund of the verb *éssere*, or *avére*, being generally understood ; and *then*, if the gerund understood is *esséndo*, they *agree* with the *subject*, and if *avéndo*, with the *object* of the proposition ; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| IL <i>famigliäre</i> GIÚNTO [for, ESSÉNDÓ GIÚNTO], e DÁTE [for, AVÉNDÓ DÁTE] le lèttère, e FÁTTA [for, AVÉNDÓ FÁTTA] l' ambasciáta, fu con gran fèsta ricevúto, | the domestic having arrived, and having consigned the the letters and delivered the message, was received with great joy. |
|---|---|

EXAMPLES.

ÚNA NÁVE PÒRTANTE UÓMINI
TÈMPESTÁNTI, PERICOLÁNTI, SOG-
GIACÉNTI A TÁNTI MARÓSI. (Giov.
Vill. 11. 3.)

A ship carrying men tempest-
tossed, endangered, and subject to
so many storms.

PRÉSÈNTE ÁGLI ÓCCHI SUÓI
LÉI GRIDÁNTE MERCÈ *e aiúto*
SVENÁRONO. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 4.)

Before his eyes they slew her
[who was] crying out for mercy
and assistance.

ÁLLE DÓNNE ASPETTÁNTI SI
RIVÓLSE, E DÍSSE. (Bocc. g. 9.
n. 10.)

He addressed himself to the
ladies who were waiting, and said.

QUÁNDO, SOPRAVVEGNÉNTÉ LA
NÓTTE, *con éssa insiême* SÚRSE
UN TÈMPO FIERÍSSIMO E TEMPE-
STÓSO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

When, night coming on, there
came with it very severe and tem-
pestuous weather.

CÉSARE PARLÒ *béllo e asset-*
TATAMÉNTÉ, UDÉNTI NÓI, DÉLLA
VÍTA E DÉLLA MÓRTE, *quando*
dísse (Brun. Tes. 8. 34.)

Cæsar spoke finely and much
to the point, we hearing him,
about life and death, when he
said

ÉSSI ÉRAN *tútti* DI FRÓNDI
QUÉRCIA INGHIRLANDÁTI. (Bocc.
g. 9. n. 1.)

They were all garlanded with
oak-leaves.

NÈ ÉRANO LE FÁLTE DÉ' VI-
TELLIÁNI PUNÍTE, MA BEN PA-
GÁTE. (Dav. Stor. 3.)

Nor were the faults of Vitellius'
troops punished, but well paid.

Ma siasi úna LÍNGUA *nóbile,*
póco le gioverà MÉNTRE CH' ÉLLA
NON VÉNGA USÁTA DA FAMÓSI
SCRITTÓRI. (Buom.)

But however noble a language
may be, this will be of little use to
it, whilst it is not adopted by cele-
brated writers.

Se non mi sarà lécito di spo-
sarlo, PROCCURERÒ *alméno* CHE
RÉSTI IMPIEGÁTO IN QUÉSTA CIT-
TÀ. (Gold. Avv.)

If I am not allowed to marry
him, I shall at least endeavour
that he may be employed in this
city.

ÉGLI RIMÁSE MARAVIGLIÁTO
délla brútta invenzióne. (Bocc.)

He was astonished at the bad
invention.

E IL GIÓVANE INFELÍCE SI
VÍDE TÓSTO *da úna squádra di*
satélliti CIRCONDÁTO E TRÁTTO
IN PRIGIÓNÉ. (Soav. Nov.)

And the unhappy youth was
soon surrounded by a band of
satellites and taken to prison.

Di te stéssa vergognándoti,
PER NON POTÉRTI VEDÉRE, T'
AVRÉSTI CAVÁTI GLI OCCHI.
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Being ashamed of thyself, thou
wouldst have torn out thy eyes,
not to see thyself.

Mésser lo geloso s' avéa mésar
ALCÚNE PETRÚZZE IN BÓCCA.
(Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

The jealous man had put some
small stones in his mouth.

UN áltro CHE FORÁTA AVÉA LA
GÓLA. (Dant. Inf. 28.)

Another who had his throat
pierced.

Lassái quel, ch' i' più brámo :
ed HO SÌ AVVÉZZA — LA MÉNTE
A CONTEMPLÁR SÓLA costéi, — *Ch'*
áltro-non véde (Petr. s. 80.)

I have forgotten what I most
desire : and my mind is so ac-
customed to contemplate this lady
alone, that it perceives nothing
else.

BENCHÈ églino AVÉSSERO già
LE SPÁDE ISGUAINÁTE e menáte.
(Amm. Ant 11. 1. 12.)

Although they had unsheathed
and used their swords.

Io NON HO QUÉSTE CÓSE SA-
PÚTE DA' VICÍNI ; ÉLLA MEDÉSI-
MA, *fórte di te doléndosi*, ME LE
HA DÉTTE. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

I did not hear these things
from the neighbours ; she herself,
complaining bitterly of thee, has
told them to me.

AVÉA LA LÚNA, *esséndo nel*
métzo del ciélo, PERDÚTI I RÁG-
GI SUOI. (Bocc. g. 6. Intr.)

The moon, although in the
middle of heaven, had lost her
rays.

CÓME ÍO AVRÒ LÓRO ÓGNI CÓSA
DÁTO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

As I shall have given to them
every thing.

CERCÁTO HO SÉMPRE SOLITÁ-
RIA VÍA — *Per fuggír quest' in-*
gégni sórdi e lóschi. (Petr. s.
222.)

I have always sought a solitary
way, in order to avoid these deaf
and blind minds.

Domeneddío m' HA DIMOSTRÁ-
TO LA CAGIÓNÉ DEL TÚO MÁLE.
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

God has manifested to me the
cause of thy evil.

CHI áltri che tu, HA QUÉSTE
CÓSE MANIFESTÁTO AL MAÉSTRO ?
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.)

Who else but thou has told
these things to the master ?

IL LIBÉRTO DICÉVA AVÉRLA
ÉSSO UCCÍSA, e *vendicáta l' in-*
giúria del padrón suo. (Dav.)

The freed-man said that he had
killed her himself, and thus avenged
the offence done to his master.

Se tu iéri ci affliggésti, TU CI
HÁI ÓGGI TÁNTÓ DILITICÁTE *che*
niúna di te si dée rammaricáre.
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

If thou didst afflict us yesterday,
thou hast delighted us so much
to-day that none of us can com-
plain of thee.

LA QUÁLE, *piacevóli dónne*, fo
RACCONTERÒ PER FÁRVI ACCÓRTE
..... (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

*E quéstó dètto, si fé' dÁRE
l' orciuolétto, nel quále éra l' ÁC-
QUA, CHE IL DÌ DAVÁNTI AVÉVA
FÁTTA, e tútta la bève.* (Bocc.
g. 4. n. 1.)

*Il quále cosí FÁTTA DÓNNA,
E CÚI ÉGLI COTÁNTÓ AMÁTA
AVÉA, per móglie VEDANDOSI.*
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

*Io sÓNO venúta a ristorÁrti dé'
DANNI, LI QUÁLI TU HÁI già
AVÚTI PER ME.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

LE CÓSE CHE GIÀ AVÉVA UDÍTO
DIRE, CHE *dí nótte* ÉRANO INTER-
VENÚTE. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

*Dúnque, un uom sÓLO — Si
partirá, che non l' avréte offeso,
— QUÁNDÓ TÚTTI V' AVRÀ FÁT-
TO MORÍRE?* (Ariost. Fur. 17. 8.)

LA DÓNNA, LA QUÁLE IL LÚN-
GO VAGHEGGIÁRE, *l' armeggiÁre,*
le mattináte MUÓVERE NON AVÉ-
VANO POTÚTO, *móssero le affet-
tuóse paróle.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

GIÚNTÓ *adúnque* IL FAMIGLIÁ-
RE A GÉNOVA, E DA'TE LE LÉT-
TERE, E FA'TTA L' AMBASCIA'TA,
FU DÁLLA DÓNNA CON GRAN FÉSTA
RICEVÚTO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

Which, kind ladies, I will re-
late to show you

And, having said this, she caus-
ed the vessel of water to be given
to her, which she had prepared the
day before, and drank it all off.

Who seeing himself united in
marriage with such a lady, and one
whom he had loved so much.

I am come to make thee amends
for the injuries thou hast sustained
on my account.

The things which he had heard
of as having happened by night.

Then, shall a single man depart
from hence, when he will have put
all of you to death, without having
been at all hurt by you?

The lady, whom his long admi-
ration, tournaments, serenades,
were not able to move, was mov-
ed by his tender words.

The domestic, having arrived at
Genoa, and having consigned the
letters and delivered the message,
was received by the lady with
great joy.

USE AND POSITION OF CERTAIN ADVERBS.

Adverbs, as we mentioned at pp. 391, 394, *may* be
put *before* or *after* the *verb*; they *may* be put, also,
between the *auxiliary* and the *participle*, and *between*
two *participles*; as,

tu SÁI BÉNE cÓme io sÓNO thou knowest well how I am
agiáto, situated;

| | |
|---|--|
| PRESTAMÉNTE s' AVVENTA'- VA álla góla di costéi, | quickly [a wolf] seized her by the throat ; |
| non HO mái PÓSCIA POTÚTO dormíre, | I could sleep no longer after that ; |
| éra STA'TA MÓLTO MA'LE CONSIGLIA'TA, | she had been very badly ad- vised. |

The adverb *non*, 'no or not' ; is *always* put *before* the *verb* ; as,

| | |
|--|---|
| NON FARNÉTICO, madónna, | I do not rave, Madam ; |
| NON v' ACCORGÉTE che nOI siám vérmi ? | do you not perceive that we are worms. |

When the adverb *non* is employed to deny several *objects*, and these *precede* the *verb*, the adverb is put *before* the *nouns*, and not before the verb ; as,

| | |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| NON PIÓGGIA, NON GRA'NDO, | neither rain, nor hail, nor snow, |
| NON NÉVE, NON RUGIA'DA, | nor dew, nor frost falls a- |
| NON BRÍNA più su cáde, | bove. |

The adverb *mái*, which in itself strictly means 'at any time,' may be put either *before* or *after* the *verb* ; when, however, it is put *before*, it takes the signification of *never*, and when *after*, it takes that of *ever* ; as,

| | |
|---|---|
| ti priégo che MA'I DÍCHI d' avérmi vedúta, | I beseech thee never to tell, that thou hast seen me ; |
| i Perugini MA'I si VÓLLERO dichináre ad alcún accórdo, | the Perugians never wished to condescend to come to any agreement ; |
| quái bárbare FUR MA'I ! | what barbarians were ever ! |
| il ciélo è óggi cosí bello cóme FU MA'I, | the sky is as beautiful to-day as ever it was. |

The adverbs *non mái*, 'not ever,' 'never' ; occurring in the same phrase, are generally *separated* by the *verb* ; and then *non*, 'no or not' ; *always precedes*, and *mái*, 'ever' ; *always follows* that verb ; as,

| | |
|--|------------------------------|
| io NON mángio MA'I, | I never eat ; |
| l' árti NON istétter MA'I pég- gio, | the arts never fared worse ; |

NON SPERÁR *di vedérmi in* never hope to see me again on
térra MÁI, earth.

But they may be used, also, united ; and then, if *mái* precedes *non*, they are to be put both *before* the verb ; if it follows *non*, they may be put *after* it ; as,

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>io MÁI NON DÓRMO,</i> | I never sleep ; |
| <i>che férro MÁI NON STRÍNGE,</i> | who never knew how to use arms ; |
| <i>giurógli di MÁI NON DÍRLO,</i> | she swore to him never to tell it ; |
| <i>amíci fedéli PÓSSON DIVEN- TÁR béne, súdditi NON MÁI,</i> | they can, indeed, become faith- ful friends, but subjects nev- er. |

EXAMPLES.

Pinuccio, TU SÁI BÉNE CÓME Pinuccio, thou knowest well
io SÓNO AGIÁTO. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.) how I am situated.

*Il quále PRESTAMÉNTÉ S' AV- Which [wolf] quickly seized her
 VENTÁVA ÁLLA GÓLA DI COSTÉI. by the throat.
 (Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.)*

Io NON HO MÁI PÓSCIA POTÚTO I could sleep no longer after
DORMÍRE. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.) that.

E ch' ell' ÉRA STÁTA MÓLTO And that she had been very
MÁLE CONSIGLIÁTA. (Bocc.) badly advised.

Dissè allóra Pirro : "NON Then Pyrrhus said : "I do not
FARNÉTICO, no, MADÓNNA." rave, Madam, no."
(Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)

NON V' ACCORGÉTE VÓI, CHE Do you not perceive, that we
*NÓI SIÁM VÉRMI, — Nāti a for- are worms, made to form the
 mār l' angélica forfálła. (Dant. winged insect impeded with angel
 Purg. 10.)* plumes.

Perchè NON PIÓGGIA, NON Because neither rain, nor hail,
*GRÁNDÓ, NON NÉVE, — NON RU- nor snow, nor dew, nor frost, ever
 GIÁDA, NON BRÍNA PIÙ SU CÁDE, falls above that short ladder of
 — Che la scalétta dé' tre grádi three steps.
 bréve. (Dant. Purg. 21.)*

TI PRIÉGO CHE MÁI ad alcúna I beseech thee never to tell to
*persóna DÍCHI D' AVÉRMI VEDÚ- any one that thou hast seen me.
 TA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)*

I PERUGÍNI, *per lóro alterìgia*,
MÁI VÓLLERO DICHINÁRE AD AL-
CÚN ACCÓRDO. (Matt. Vill. 8. 39.)

QUÁI BÁRBARE FUR MÁI, *quái*
Saracíne ! (Dant. Purg. 23.)

COSÌ È ÓGGI BÉLLO IL CIÉLO
CÓME FU MÁI. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

Se tu digiúni, ÍO NON MÁNGIO
MÁI; *se tu véggghi*, ÍO MÁI NON
DÓRMO. (Passav.)

In quésto mézzo, L' ÁRTI *e la*
mercanzia NON ISTÉTTER MÁI
PÉGGIO *in* Firénze. (Giov. Vill.
9. 12.)

NON SPERÁR DI VEDÉRMÍ IN
TÉRRÁ MÁI. (Petr. s. 212.)

Pópolo ignúdo, *pavéntoso*, *e*
lénto, — CHE FÉRRO MÁI NON
STRÍNGE. (Petr. c. 5.)

E GIURÓGLI DI MÁI NON DÍRLO.
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

AMÍCI FEDÉLI PÓSSON DIVEN-
TÁR BÉNE *gli Americáni agl' In-*
glési, SÚDDITI NON MÁI. (Bott.
Stor. Amer. l. 6.)

The Perugians, through pride,
never wished to condescend to
come to any agreement.

What barbarians, what Saracens
were ever !

The sky is as beautiful to-day
as ever it was.

If thou fastest, I never eat ; if
thou art watching, I never sleep.

During this time, the arts and
commerce never fared worse in
Florence.

Never hope to see me again on
earth.

A race poor, fearful, and indo-
lent, who never knew how to use
arms.

And she swore to him never to
tell it.

The Americans can indeed be-
come the faithful friends of the
English, but subjects never.

EXERCISE XXXIV.

After he had spent some (*of his*) time | to con-
Poichè — ⁴ *pónere*⁵ *alquánto*^{1 2} — *témpo*³ | *in*⁶ *dorér*⁷

sole | her weeping. To him, then residing in
*racconsoláre*¹⁰ | ⁸ *piángere*⁹. , — *dimoráre*

Ireland, came the desire of hearing. (The) rivers
Irlánda, *veníre* — *vóglia* *sentíre*. *rívo*

of (the) blood extinguished the rising flame. Happy,
sángue *estíngueré*⁴ ¹ *náscere*² *fiámma*³. *Felíce*,

and fortunate, and enjoying | for ever | the fruit
fortunáto, *godére*⁴ | *in*¹ *ógni*² *témpo*³ | — —

of their love. You* are not the first, nor will you be
amóre. *primo,* —

the last, that is imposed upon. I know not whether
último, *ingannáre.* *sapére* *se*

thou | hast minded | how close we† are kept.
t' hái pósto in ménte | *strétto*³ — ¹ *tenére*².

They having arrived at the city, | went | with
*Ésso*² ¹ *perveníre*⁶ ³ ⁴ *città*⁵, | *ne andárono*¹³ | ⁷

Mr. Torello to his house,† where fifty of the
*Messér*⁸ ⁹ ¹⁰ ¹¹ *cása*¹², *cinquánta*

principal citizens were come to receive them. The
maggióre *cittadino* *veníre* *ricevére*

message which I have given to him | to | deliver
commissióne *dáre* | *di* | *riferíre*

to the king. Thou knowest what is the offence,
re. *sapére* *ingiúria,*

which thou hast given me. Master, I have seen
fáre *Maéstro,* *vedére*

a thing which troubles me. One who had
cósa *dispiacére.*

the one, and the other hand cut off. Each one‡ of
úno, *áltro* *man* *mozzáre.*

them had her right breast cut off, | in order to |
¹ — *dirítto*³ *mammélla*⁴ *tagliáre*², | *per* |

| carry | the shield | in | battles. They|| are
portare | *lo scúdo* | *álta* | *battágliá.*

handsomer than the painted angels, which you have
bélla *dipínto*² *ágnoli*¹,

often-times shown me. Thou¶ hast been with that
più vólte mostráre *co-*

lady, whom thou hast deceived.
léi, *ingannáre.*

I have caused the greater part of my possessions to-
 — *fáre* ² *maggiór*³ *párte*⁴ ⁵ ⁶ *possessióne*⁷ *ven-*

* You, feminine gender.

† House, in the plural.

|| They, feminine.

† We, feminine.

‡ Each one, in the feminine.

¶ Thou, feminine.

be-sold. They were glad that they had — (of having)
*dere*¹. — *Rimanére conténto* — — —

successfully — (with success) known how to mock the
 — *succésso, sapére* — — *scherníre*

avarice of Calandrino. | No sooner | had she entered (into)
avarizia . | *Nè prima* . | — — *entráre*⁴ ¹

the room, than the (beating of the arteries — the) pulse
² *cámara*³, *che* *battiménto* — — *pólso*

returned to the youth; and having left it — (she hav-
ritornáre *gióvane*; — — —

ing departed), it [the pulse] left him also — (it ceased).
partíre, — — — — — *cessáre*.

Is not this the land, which I first | trod with
terréen, *príá* | *loc-*

my feet | ? Ciacco replied: "Thou knowest very
cáre | ? ² *Rispondere*¹: " — *sapére* —

well, that I shall come." Who quickly opened
béne, *veníre*." *prestaménte apríre*

the door. The Devil said once to St. Macarius:
pórta. *Diavólo díre úna vólta* *San Macário*:

"If thou art always watching — (watchest), I never
 " — — — *végliare*,

sleep; if thou | usest all thy efforts | in thy works
dorníre; | *ti* *offatichi* | — — —

— (working), I never rest — (have never rest)."
operáre, — — *non mái ripóso*."

Did not thy master say, that we should carry
padróne díre, *portáre*

| home | these things? Caring (himself) neither
a' cása | *cósa?* *Curáre*

| for | the palaces, nor | for | the ox, nor | for | the
di | *palágio*, | *di* | *búe*, | *di* |

horse, nor | for | the ass, nor | for | the money,* nor
cavállo, | *di* | *ásino*, | *di* | *denáro*,

| for | any other thing, which he had seen.
di | *cósa*, — ² *vedére*¹.

* Money, in the plural.

CHAPTER IX.

EXPLETIVES.

[Although many of the following words have been already mentioned in treating of the different Parts of Speech, which they respectively belong to, it has, nevertheless, not been thought altogether useless to present them here once more united in a single chapter.]

BÉLLO :

IL *vostro vestito è BÉLL' e fátto.* Your suit of clothes is finished.
(Fir.)

per BÉLLA *paúra gittò le bandière del comúne.* (Cron. Mor.) through fear he threw down the standards of the commonwealth.

per BÉLLE *scrítte di lor máno s' obbligárono l' úno all' áltero.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.) they were bound to each other by *fine* obligations written with their own hands.

BÉNE, BEN, BÉ' :

Gli *domandái, se gli bastáva l' ánimo di cacciárló vía; ed égli rispóse: "Sì BÉNE."* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.) I asked him, if he had courage to send him away; and he answered: "Yes, *indeed*."

égli è *quà un malvágio uómo, che m' ha tagliáto la bórsa con BEN cénto fiorini d' óro.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.) here is a wicked man, who has cut my purse with *full* one hundred florins of gold.

"BÉ'," *rispos' io, "Messére, parlerém pói; — Non fáte quì per or quéstó fracásso."* (Bern. Rim.) "well, Sir," answered I, "we will speak afterwards; do not make now such a noise here."

CI :

Sémpre *che tu CI viverái.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 4.) As long as thou livest.

la *dónna e Pírró dicévano: "Nói CI seggiámo."* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.) the lady and Pyrrhus said: "We will sit down."

CON :

Stássi *CON méco.* (Petr.) He is with me.

spero d' *avére assái buón témpo CON téco.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.) I hope I shall have a fine time with thee.

ÉCCO :

Ed écco Piétro chiamò all'uscio. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.) And lo Peter called at the door.

écco, Giannóttò, a te piáce ch' ío divénga Cristiáno. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.) here, John, thou wishest that I should become a Christian.

ÉGLI :

ÉGLI è úna compassióne a vederlo. (Mach. Com.) It excites pity to see him.

non ti fa mestiéri il dirlo, il viso túo favélla ÉGLI. (Sen.) it is not necessary to tell it, thy face manifests it.

ÉLLA :

ÉLLA non andrà così. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.) It shall not go on so.

se non ch' élla ha in ciò volúto mostráre, ch' élla è gentíle. (Bocc. Corb, 79.) except that she wished to show by this, that she is courteous.

ÉSSO :

Andiámo a Róma-con éssò lui. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.) Let us go to Rome with him.

Ésso, as an expletive, is *invariable*, and may be used equally well before a *masculine* and a *feminine* pronoun, both *singular* and *plural*; as, *con éssò méco*, 'with me'; *con éssò téco*, 'with thee'; *con éssò lui*, 'with him'; *con éssò léi*, 'with her,' or 'with you'; *con éssò nói*, 'with us'; *con éssò vói*, 'with you'; *con éssò lóro*, 'with them,' or 'with you':

fatti álla finéstra, e chiámala, e di' che vénga a desináre con éssò nói. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.) go to the window, and call her, and tell her to come and dine with us.

GIÀ :

GIÀ Dío non vógliá. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 5.) May God forbid.

non crédo ío GIÀ che ne avéte a mále. (Varch.) I do not think you take it ill.

ÍO :

Che farébbe égli s' ío moríssi, ío ? (Mach. Com.) What would he do if I should die ?

comechè ogni altro uomo molto di lui si lodi, io mène posso poco lodare, io. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 3.) although every other person praises him much, I can praise him but little.

MÁI :

Una parte del mondo è, che si giace — MÁI sémpe in ghiaccio. (Petr. c. 5.) There is a part of the world, which lies always frozen.

“còme,” disse Ferondo, “dunque sono io morto?” — Disse il Monaco: “MÁI sì.” (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.) “how,” said Ferondo, “am I dead, then?” — The Monk replied: “Yes indeed.”

MI :

Io MI sòno un pòvero pellegrino. (Bocc. Filoc. 1. 5.) I am a poor pilgrim.

io MI crèdo che le suore sieno tutte a dormire. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.) I believe that the nuns are all asleep.

MÍCA :

Son novèlle e vére, non son MÍCA fávole. (Fir. Trin.) These are true news, they are not fables.

non MÍCA idióta nè matériale; ma scienziáto, e di acúto ingegno. (Casa. Gal.) not an idiot nor a vulgar man; but learned, and of an acute mind.

NE :

Chetaménte n' andò per la camera insíno álla finéstra. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.) He went tranquilly through the room to the window.

andíanne là, e laverémlo spaciátaménte. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 5.) let us go there, and we will wash it immediately.

NON :

Témo che vói NON mi abbandoniáte. (Bocc.) I fear you will abandon me.

la qual modéstia dúbito che NON gli sia dannósa. (Tolom. lett.) which modesty, I doubt, may be hurtful to him.

ÓRA :

Deh ! or t' avéssero éssi affogáto. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) Ah ! would that they had drowned thee.

ÓRA che vorrà dir quésto ? (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.) now what does this mean ?

PÓI :

Non è PÓI véro quáto mi dicéste. (Bocc.) What you told me is not true.

Io non mi sónó PÓI risolúto di partír di Róma. (Car. lett.) I have not come to the resolution of leaving Rome.

PÚNTO :

Senza sbigottír PÚNTO. (Bocc.) Without being frightened *at all*.

Tedáldo non è PÚNTO mórtó. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.) Tedaldo is not *at all* dead.

PÚRE :

La cosa andò PUR cosí. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.) The affair went off so.

fa PÚRE che tu mi móstri quál ti piáce. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.) do but show me him whom thou likest.

SI :

Del palágio s' uscì, e fuggíssi a casa. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.) He went out of the palace, and fled to his house.

SÌ :

Sì è tánta la benignità, e la misericórdia di Dio. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.) So great is the goodness and the mercy of God.

TI :

Io non so se tu t' hai pósto in ménte. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.) I know not, whether thou hast minded.

TU :

Tu di' tée paróle, tu. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.) Thou mayest say what thou pleasest.

TÚTTO :

*La dónna, udéndo costúi par- The woman, hearing this man
láre il quále élla credéva speak whom she thought
mútolo, TÚTTA stordì. (Bocc. dumb, was quite amazed.
g. 3. n. 1.)*

ÚNO :

Vuói tu quell' úno ? (Bocc.) Dost thou want that one ?

VI :

*Vói non sapéte ciò che vói vi You do not know what you
díte. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 6.) say.*

VÍA :

*"Va vía," rispóse ; "e ciò che tu "Go away," answered he ; "and
vuói, cónta." (Dant. Inf. 32.) relate what thou pleasest."*

CHAPTER X.

OF THE ELLIPSIS.

ELLIPSIS is a figure in grammar, which consists in the omission of one or more words in order to add conciseness and elegance to the phrase, without affecting its clearness. This figure is very frequent in Italian, and offers one of the principal difficulties in the grammatical analysis of the Classics. We will here give some examples in which the *ellipsis* is employed, *supplying the words which are omitted*, that the learner may familiarize himself with similar locutions.

ELLIPSIS OF THE Substantive :

*Rúppe [la náve] in máre. He made shipwreck.
(Crusca.)*

*mi scusái [della cólpa] di ciò. I exculpated myself from that
(Class.) fault.*

- Alessandro muore* [per amore] *di quella vedova.* (Bocc.) Alexander dies for that widow.
- conoscendo che quivi non era* [luogo] *da piangere* (Bocc.) knowing that there was no place to weep
- bástami* [la disgrázia] *di essere stato schernito una volta.* (Bocc.) it is enough to have been insulted once.
- io ci tornerò, e daróttene tante* [bússe], *ch' io ti farò tristo per tutto il tempo, che tu ci viverai.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.) I will return, and give thee so many blows, that I will make thee sorry as long as thou livest.
- niuno mále si fece nella caduta, quantunque alquanto cadesse da alto* [luogo]. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.) he did not hurt himself in falling, although he fell from a high place.

ELLIPSIS OF THE Adjective :

- E sempre poi per* [buono] *da molto l' ebbe, e per amico.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 2.) And considered him always afterwards as a very good man, and as a friend.
- fu* [abile] *da tanto, e tanto seppe fare, ch' egli pacificò il figliuolo col padre.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.) he was so able, and knew how to do so much, that he reconciled the son with the father.
- non suspicò, che ciò Guccio Balena gli avesse fatto, perciocchè nol conosceva* [capace] *da tanto.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.) he did not suspect that Guccio Balena had done this to him, because he did not think him capable of so much.
- il re gli chiamò, e quei, quando il videro, ténnersi* [immobili]. (Nov. Ant.) the king called them, and they, when they saw him, stopped.

ELLIPSIS OF Relative Pronouns :

- Esaminiamo se delle cose* [che si sono] *dette ne ha fatto alcuna.* (Mach. Princ.) Let us examine if he has done any of the things which have been said.
- la donna gli fece apprestare panni* [i quali erano] *stati del marito.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.) the woman caused clothes to be prepared for him, which had been her husband's.

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>riscontróllo quívi Petílio Cerialé</i> [il quále éra] <i>fuggíto dalle guárdie di Vitéllio.</i> (Dav. Stor.) | there met him Petilius Cerialis, who had escaped from the guards of Vitellius. |
|---|--|

ELLIPSIS OF THE Infinitive OF Verbs:

| | |
|---|---|
| <i>Andáte per</i> [préndere] <i>éssi.</i> (Bocc.) | Go after them. |
| <i>quì il sóle non vi può</i> [penetráre]. (Class.) | here the sun cannot penetrate. |
| <i>io éra un asinaccio che non potéva</i> [sostenére] <i>la víta.</i> (Firenz.) | I was a great ass that could not endure life. |

ELLIPSIS OF THE Verb IN THE Indicative Mood:

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>Téssa, ódi tu quel ch' io</i> [ódo]? (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.) | Tessa, do you hear what I hear? |
| <i>questi è il capitáno, gli áltri</i> [sóno] <i>da nùlla.</i> (Dav. Stor.) | this is the captain, the others are of no account. |
| <i>éra parénte strétto di Vespasiano, e</i> [éra] <i>soldáto di cónto.</i> (Dav. Stor.) | he was a near relation of Vespasian, and a good soldier. |

ELLIPSIS OF THE Verb IN THE Conjunctive Mood:

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>Qui ha quéstá céná, e non sarébbe chi</i> [potésse] <i>mangiárla.</i> (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.) | Here is this supper, and there is no one to eat it. |
| <i>avrèi gridáto, se non</i> [fósse státo] <i>che égli mi chiese mercè per Dio, e per vói.</i> (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.) | I would have cried out, had it not been that he besought mercy both in the name of God and in your name. |
| <i>ah! ah! se non</i> [fósse] <i>ch' io ho reverénza a vói, pádre, io diréi púre il bell' onóre ch' éi mi fa.</i> (Mach. Com.) | ah! ah! were it not for the respect that I bear to you, father, I would tell the great honor he does me. |

ELLIPSIS OF THE Gerund:

| | |
|---|-------------------------|
| [Esséndo] <i>duránte la guérra.</i> (Bocc.) | [Being] during the war. |
|---|-------------------------|

- [avéndo] *vedúto il luógo solitário.* (Bocc.) having seen the solitary place.
- [esséndo] *giúnto il famigliáre a Génova, e [avéndo] dáte le lèttère, e [avéndo] fátta l' ambasciáta* (Bocc.) the domestic having arrived at Genoa, and having consigned the letter and delivered the message

ELLIPSIS OF THE Participle :

- Se éssi mi cacciásser gli ócchi a che saré' io [ridóttö] ?* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.) If they should tear out my eyes, to what should I be reduced ?
- se non fósse [státo] il Gran Préte, a cui mal prénda.* (Dant. Inf. 27.) if it had not been for the High Priest, whom curses light on.
- se non fósse [státo] ch' égli éra giovane, égli avrébbe avúto móltto a sostenére.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.) had he not been a young man, he would have had a great deal to suffer.

ELLIPSIS OF Adverbs :

- O'ra [così] fóssero éssi pur già dispósti a veníre, che veraménte potrémmo díre la fortúna éssere favoreggiánte.* (Bocc. Intr.) Would that they were disposed to come, that we might truly say that fortune is favorable.
- al móndo non fur mái persóne [talménte] rátte, — A far lor prò . . . — Com' io dópo cotái paróle fátte.* (Dant. Inf. 2.) never among men did any with such speed haste to their profit . . . as I when these words were spoken.

ELLIPSIS OF Prepositions :

- In cása [di] quèsti usurái.* (Bocc.) In the house of these usurers.
- servíva [a] cérti pescatóri.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.) she served certain fishermen.
- usáva móltto [in] la chiésa.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 4.) he frequented much the church.
- sedétte re [per] ánni quíndici.* (Crusca.) he reigned for fifteen years.

cenerémo [con] *un póco di* we will sup upon a little salt
cárne saláta. (Bocc. g. 7. meat.
 n. 1.)

ELLIPSIS OF Conjunctions :

Io sóno la mísera [e] *sventu-* I am the miserable and un-
ráta Zinévra. (Bocc. g. 2. . fortunate Ginevra.
 n. 9.)

real nátura, [e] *angélico intel-* a royal nature, and an angelic
létto,— [e] *Chiar' álma,* [e] mind, and "clear spirit," and
prónta vísta, [e] *ócchio cer-* a quick sight, and piercing
vítro. (Petr. s. 201.) eyes.

REMARKS ON THE DIFFERENT MODES
 OF ADDRESS IN ITALIAN.

THE Italians have *three different modes* of addressing a person ; — viz. the *second person singular*, TU, 'thou'; and its *inflexion*, TI, 'to thee,' 'thee': — the *second person plural*, VOI, 'you'; and its *inflexion*, VI, 'to you,' 'you': — and the *third person singular, feminine*, E'LLA, and its *inflexions*, LE, LA; representing the title VOSTRA SIGNORÍA (generally contracted into VOSSIGNORÍA, and often written V. S.), 'your worship,' 'your lordship,' 'your ladyship'; whether the person addressed be a man or a woman.

The *second person singular* is used in *addressing* a person of *inferior condition*; as by a master *speaking* to a *servant*, by a parent *addressing* a *child*. Likewise *husbands* and *wives*, *brothers* and *sisters*, and any two *intimate friends* adopt it in *speaking* to *each other*. It is also used in *poetry*, and in *addressing* the *Divinity*.

The *second person plural* is used in *addressing* a person of *equal rank* with the speaker, but not par-

ticularly intimate with him. Also by children *addressing* their *parents*, by ladies *speaking* to *gentlemen*. It is likewise used in *addressing* *artisans*, *tradesmen*, *dealers*, &c.

The *third person singular, feminine*, is used in *addressing* a *superior*, or one towards whom the speaker wishes to exhibit *special civility* and *respect*; as by a servant to his *master*, by a tradesman to a *gentleman*, &c. *Ladies*, and *persons respectable* for their *age* or *office*, are addressed in this mode.

It is to be observed, that when the *second person plural*, *vói*, and its *inflexion*, *vi*, are used, the *verb* is put in the *plural*; but all the other words, such as *adjectives*, *participles*, &c., agreeing with the *subject*, remain in the *singular*, masculine or feminine, according to the *gender* of the person addressed; as,

vói, Signóre, saréte rispettáto, you, Sir, will be respected;

vói, Signóra, siéte sávia, you, Madam, are wise.

When the *third person singular, feminine*, *e'lla*, and its *inflexions*, *le*, *la*; or the title *Vossignoría*, are employed, the *verb* is put in the *singular*; and the words agreeing with them take the *feminine gender*, whether the person addressed be *masculine* or *feminine*; as,

| | | |
|--|---|--|
| <i>élla, or V. S. sarà rispettáta,</i> | { | you [Sir], or your lordship will be respected; |
| | | you [Madam], or your ladyship will be respected: |
| <i>élla or V. S. è sávia,</i> | { | you [Sir] are, or your lordship is wise; |
| | | you [Madam] are, or your ladyship is wise. |

Where *two* or *more individuals* are addressed in the third person, the *third person plural, feminine*, *e'lleno*,

and its *inflexion*, LÓRO; or the titles VÓSTRE or LE VÓSTRE SIGNORÍE, LE SIGNORÍE LÓRO, LOR SIGNÓRI, are used; the *verb* being put in the *plural*, and the words agreeing with them, in the *plural feminine*; as,

éLLENO, or LE Vóstre Signo-
ríe SARÁNNO rispettáte, { you [gentlemen], or your lord-
ships will be respected;
you [ladies], or your ladyships
will be respected:

éLLENO, or LE Signoríe LÓRO { you [gentlemen], or your lord-
ships are wise;
SÓNO sávie, { you [ladies], or your ladyships
are wise.

Some Italian Grammarians assert, on the authority of Bembo, Benti-
vóglío, Ganganélli, and other modern writers, that this *agreement* in
gender of *adjectives* and *participles*, with the word *Vossignoría* or the
pronoun *élla*, when used in addressing a man, ought to take place only,
when the verb *éssere*, 'to be,' stands *between* them; as,

éLLA, or V. S. È mólto dótta, you [Sir] are, or your lordship is
very learned:

but if *any other verb* stands *between* the word *Vossignoría* or the
pronoun *élla* and the *adjective* or *participle*, these are made to *agree*
with the *person signified* by those; as,

V. S., or éLLA PAR mólto pensie- you [Sir] seem, or your lordship
róso, seems very thoughtful.

If the verb happens to be the auxiliary *éssere*, and the *participle* of
another verb, then this participle agrees in gender with the word *V. S.*
or the pronoun *élla*, and the following *adjective* or *participle* is made
to *agree* with the *person signified* by them; as,

éLLA si È MOSTRÁTA, Signóre, you have shown yourself, Sir, both
non méno sávio, che benígno, wise and kind.

Adjectives of *nations* agree always with the *person signified* by the
pronoun *élla* or the word *V. S.*; as,

éLLA sénza dúbbio è Románo, you, Sir, without doubt are a
Roman;

le Signoríe Lóro saránno cértó you, gentlemen, are certainly Ital-
Italiáni, ians.

Besides the abovementioned modes of address, the Italians often use the demonstrative pronouns *quello*, *quella*, and the words *gióvane*, *uómo*, *dónna*, in speaking to a person whose name is unknown to them; and say *quél gióvane*, 'young man'; *quell' uómo*, 'good man'; &c.; as,

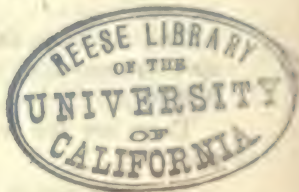
| | |
|---------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>avvertisci, QUÉL GIÓVANE,</i> | take care, young man, for thou |
| <i>che tu t'ingánni,</i> | deceivest thyself; |
| <i>QUELL' UÓM DABBÉNE, che</i> | what is the matter, good man? |
| <i>cósa è státa?</i> | |
| <i>vóì siéte mólto altiéra, QUÉL-</i> | you are very proud, my good |
| <i>LA DÓNNA,</i> | woman: |

but this way of addressing people, is only *used* by superiors *towards* their *inferiors*.

The following are the **TITLES** used by the Italians in addressing the different qualities of persons: viz. in *speaking* to a GENTLEMAN, *Signóre*, 'Sir'; *Vossignoria* (written, *V. S.*), 'your worship,' 'your lordship': — to a PERSON OF RANK, OR to a NOBLEMAN, *Illustríssimo* (*Illmò*), 'most illustrious Sir'; *Vossignoria Illustríssima* (*V. S. Illmà*), 'Your most illustrious lordship'; *Eccellénza*, 'Excellency'; *Vóstra Eccellénza* (*V. E.*), 'Your Excellency': — to a PRINCE OF THE BLOOD, *Altézza*, 'Highness'; *Vóstra Altézza*, 'Your Highness': — to a KING, *Sire*, 'Sire'; *Maestà*, 'Majesty'; *Vóstra Maestà* (*V. M.*), 'Your Majesty': — to an EMPEROR, *Sire*, 'Sire'; *Maestà*, 'Majesty'; *Maestà Imperiále*, 'Imperial Majesty'; *Vóstra Maestà Imperiále* (*V. M. I.*) 'Your Imperial Majesty'; *Vóstra Maestà Reále e Imperiále* (*V. M. R. I.*), 'Your Royal and Imperial Majesty': — to a MONK, *Pádre*, 'Father'; *Vóstra Paternità* (*V. Ptà*), 'Your Paternity': — to a PRIEST, *Reveréndo*, 'Reverend'; *Vóstra Reverénza* (*V. R.*), 'Your Rever-

ence': — to a BISHOP, *Monsignóre*, 'Right Honorable'; *Eccellénza Reverendíssima*, 'Most Reverend Excellency'; *Vóstra Eccellénza Reverendíssima* (*V. E. Remã*), 'Your most Reverend Excellency': — to a CARDINAL, *Eminénza*, 'Eminence'; *Vóstra Eminénza* (*V. Emzã*), 'Your Eminence': — to the POPE, *Santità*, 'Holiness'; *Santo Pádre*, 'Holy Father'; *Vóstra Santità* (*V. Stã*), 'Your Holiness'; *Vóstra Beatitúdine* (*V. Bèdñe*), 'Your Blessedness.'

[For Illustrations of the above Remarks on the Different Modes of Address in Italian, see the Author's *CONVERSAZIO'NE ITALIA'NA*, where they have been fully exemplified.]



PART IV.

ITALIAN ORTHOGRAPHY.



CHAPTER I.

OF ACCENTS.

THE *accent*, in Orthography, is a *small sign* placed upon the *vowels* of words to determine their *pronunciation*.

There are *two* accents in Italian, the *grave* and the *acute*.

The *grave* accent is an *oblique line* drawn from the *left to the right* ('); and the *acute*, an *oblique line* drawn from the *right to the left* (').

These accents are generally put on all words in which a *letter* or *syllable* has been *suppressed*; as in *natio* from *nativo*, 'native'; in which *v* is suppressed; *virtù* from *virtute*, *virtude*, or *virtue*, 'virtue'; in which *te*, *de*, *e*, are suppressed; &c.

And on those words in which the *sameness of spelling* might produce a *confusion of signification*; as in *però*, 'but'; *balia*, 'power'; &c. to distinguish them from *pero*, 'pear-tree'; *balia*, 'nurse'; &c.

The *grave* accent is put

On all *contracted nouns* of more than one syllable; as,

| | | |
|---------------|---|----------|
| <i>carità</i> | [<i>caritate</i> , or <i>caritade</i>], | charity; |
| <i>mercè</i> | [<i>mercede</i>], | mercy: |

On the *names* of the *days* of the *week* ending in *i* ; as,

Lunedì, Monday ; *Venerdì*, Friday :

On the *compounds* of *che* ; as,

perchè, because ; *benchè*, although :

On the *compounds* of *tre* ; as,

ventitrè, twenty-three ; *centotré*, one hundred
[and three :

On the *first* and *third* persons *singular* of the *future* of all verbs ; as,

| | | | | | |
|------------------|--------|------------------------------|------------------|---------|------------------------------|
| <i>amerò</i> , | I will | { love ; fear ; hear ; | <i>amerà</i> , | he will | { love ; fear ; hear : |
| <i>temerò</i> , | | | <i>temerà</i> , | | |
| <i>sentirò</i> , | | | <i>sentirà</i> , | | |

On the *third* person *singular* of the *perfect* of all those verbs in which the *first* person of the *same* tense terminates with *two vowels* ; as,

| | | | | | |
|-------------------|---|-----------------------------------|----------------|----|-----------------------------------|
| [<i>cantár</i> , | I | { sang ; believed ; slept ; | <i>cantò</i> , | he | { sang ; believed ; slept : |
| [<i>credér</i> , | | | <i>credè</i> , | | |
| [<i>dormír</i> , | | | <i>dormì</i> , | | |

On the words

| | | | |
|------------------|---------------|------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>metà</i> , | half ; | <i>cremisì</i> , | crimson ; |
| <i>baccalà</i> , | cod-fish ; | <i>sofà</i> , | sofa ; |
| <i>caffè</i> , | coffee ; | <i>taffetà</i> , | taffety ; |
| <i>tanè</i> , | tawny ; | <i>aloe</i> , | aloes ; |
| <i>falò</i> , | bonfire ; | <i>alcali</i> , | alkali ; |
| <i>oibò</i> , | fy ; | <i>colì</i> , | } there ; |
| <i>orsù</i> , | come ; | <i>colà</i> , | |
| <i>così</i> , | so, or thus ; | <i>costì</i> , | |
| <i>testè</i> , | just now ; | <i>costà</i> , | } ho there ! take care ! |
| <i>aimè</i> ! | } alas ! | <i>olà</i> ! | |
| <i>oimè</i> ! | | <i>ohè</i> ! | |

On the words

| | | | |
|--------------|-----------------|--------------|-----------|
| <i>ciò</i> , | this, or that ; | <i>già</i> , | already ; |
| <i>giù</i> , | below ; | <i>quà</i> , | } here ; |
| <i>più</i> , | more ; | <i>quì</i> , | |
| <i>può</i> , | may, or can ; | | |

which are written with a grave accent in order to show that the *two vowels* are to be pronounced both in *one syllable* :

And on the words

| | | |
|-------------|-------------------------------------|-------------------|
| <i>dì,</i> | (noun) | day ; |
| <i>dà,</i> | } (verb) | { gives ; |
| <i>è,</i> | | |
| <i>là,</i> | } (adverb) | there ; |
| <i>li,</i> | | |
| <i>sì,</i> | (affirmative particle, or adverb) | yes, or so ; |
| <i>nè,</i> | (negative particle, or conjunction) | nor, or neither ; |
| <i>sè,</i> | (personal pronoun) | one's self ; |
| <i>tè,</i> | (noun) | tea ; |
| <i>chè,</i> | (conjunction) | for, or because ; |

in which the grave accent is used as a *mark of distinction* between them, and the words

| | | |
|-------------|-------------------------------------|----------------------|
| <i>dì,</i> | } (preposition) | { of ; |
| <i>da,</i> | | |
| <i>e,</i> | (conjunction) | and ; |
| <i>la,</i> | } (article, or conjunctive pronoun) | { the, or her ; |
| <i>li,</i> | | |
| <i>sì,</i> | (conjunctive pronoun) | one's self ; |
| <i>ne,</i> | (relative particle) | of it, or of them ; |
| <i>se,</i> | (conjunction) | if ; |
| <i>te,</i> | (personal pronoun) | thee, or to thee ; |
| <i>che,</i> | (relative pronoun) | who, which, or that. |

The *acute* accent is put

On the *i* of the terminations *ia, io*, of nouns, when the *two vowels* are pronounced in *two distinct syllables* ; as,

magía, magic ; *desío,* desire :

On words in which the *stress* of the voice, by a poetical license, is *transferred* from one syllable to another ; as,

simíle [*for* *símile*], similar ; *oceáno* [*for* *océano*], ocean :

And, sometimes, on the words

| | | | |
|-----------------|---------------|-----------------|----------|
| <i>áncora,</i> | anchor ; | <i>néttare,</i> | nectar ; |
| <i>fólgore,</i> | thunderbolt ; | <i>ténere,</i> | tender : |
| <i>séguito,</i> | suite ; | | |

to distinguish them from the words

| | | |
|-----------------|------------|-----------------------|
| <i>ancora,</i> | [ancóra], | yet, also, or again ; |
| <i>folgore,</i> | [folgóre], | splendor ; |
| <i>nettare,</i> | [nettáre], | to clean ; |
| <i>tenere,</i> | [tenére], | to hold ; |
| <i>seguito,</i> | [seguíto], | followed. |

These are all the cases in which the accents are used, except that, in *some books* which teach the principles of the language, the *acute* accent is *employed* to *facilitate* the *pronunciation* to learners.

CHAPTER II.

OF THE APOSTROPHE.

THE *apostrophe* is a small sign, like a comma ('), inserted between two words to mark the *elision* of a *vowel* ; as,

The apostrophe is generally used at the *end* of those *words* that *terminate* with a *vowel*, followed by a *word* that *begins* with the *same vowel* ; as,

| | | |
|-------------------|------------------|-----------------|
| [buónA avventúra] | buon' avventúra, | good fortune ; |
| [gránde edifizio] | grand' edifizio, | great edifice : |

And at the end of words that terminate with a vowel followed by a word that begins with any other vowel, *whenever* it is *necessary*, to *render* the *pronunciation* more *agreeable* ; as,

| | | |
|-----------------|----------------|------------|
| [quésto uómo] | quest' uómo, | this man ; |
| [quéllo álbero] | quell' álbero, | that tree. |

The Italians write with an *apostrophe*

The articles *lo, la, ' the, ' making* an *elision* of the vowels *o, a*, before words *beginning* with a *vowel* ; as,

| | | |
|-----------|--------------|------------------------------|
| l' Amíco, | the friend ; | l' innocénza, the innocence. |
|-----------|--------------|------------------------------|

These articles are also written sometimes *without* an *apostrophe* ; as,

lo Amóre, the love ; *la Energía,* the energy.

But when *lo* is followed by an *o*, and *la* is followed by an *a*, they are *always* written with an *apostrophe* ; as,

l' onóre, the honor ; *l' ánima,* the soul :

The article *gli*, ' the,' when it is *followed* by an *i* ; as,
gl' ingégni, the geniuses ; *gl' ídoli,* the idols :

The article *le*, ' the,' when the following word *begins* with *e* ; as,

l' Eresíe, the heresies ; *l' Eménde,* the emendations.

Sometimes they write also with an *apostrophe* the article *il*, ' the ' ; after a word *ending* with a *vowel*, and make an elision of the vowel *i* ; as,

tutto 'l móndo, all the world ; *sópra 'l pétto,* upon the breast :

The words *mi*, ' me ' ; *ti*, ' thee ' ; *ci*, ' us,' or ' here ' ; *vi*, ' you,' or ' there ' ; *si*, ' one's self ' ; *ne*, ' of it,' or ' of them ' ; ' hence,' or ' thence ' ; *se*, ' if ' ; *di*, ' of ' ; when they come *before* a *vowel* ; as,

m' ingánnno,

I deceive myself ;

t' áma,

he loves thee ;

c' inténde,

he understands us ; &c.

And the words *í', é', dé', á', dá', có', né', pé', bé', sé', dí', fè', ré', pó', mé', mó', vó', té',* &c., abbreviated from *io*, ' I ' ; *éi*, ' he,' or ' they ' ; *déi*, ' of the ' ; *ái*, ' to the ' ; *dái*, ' from or by the ' ; *cói*, ' with the ' ; *nei*, ' in the ' ; *péi*, ' for or by the ' ; *béi*, or *béne*, ' hand-some,' or ' well ' ; *séi*, ' thou art ' ; *díci*, ' say thou ' ; *féce*, ' he made ' ; *védi*, ' see thou ' ; *póco*, ' little ' ; *méglio*, ' better ' ; *módo*, ' mode ' or ' manner ' ; *vóglío*, ' I wish ' ; *tiéni*, ' hold thou ' ; &c.

The apostrophe ought *never* to be *used* when the elision of the vowel might produce, in nouns or adjectives, a *confusion* of *gender*, of *number*, or of *relation* among themselves :

Thus the *feminine* of all the adjectives of the *common gender*, like *innocénte*, ‘innocent’; *erránte*, ‘wandering’; &c. preceded by the article *la*, ‘the,’ are written without elision, *la innocénte*, ‘the innocent woman’; *la erránte*, ‘the wandering woman’; to distinguish them from the *masculine*, *l’ innocénte* [*lo innocénte*], ‘the innocent man’; *l’ erránte* [*lo erránte*], ‘the wandering man’ :

Those nouns which in the *plural* do not change their termination, as, *effigie*, ‘image’; *éstasi*, ‘ecstasy’; preceded by the article *le*, ‘the,’ are written without elision, *le effigie*, ‘the images’; *le éstasi*, ‘the ecstasies’; to distinguish them from the *singular*, *l’ effigie* [*la effigie*], ‘the image’; *l’ éstasi* [*la éstasi*], ‘the ecstasy’ :

And the preposition *da*, ‘from *or* by,’ expressing the *relation of derivation*, followed by a noun beginning with a vowel, as *da amóre*, ‘from *or* by love’; is written without elision, to distinguish it from the *relation of possession*, *d’ amóre* [*di amóre*], ‘of love.’

Nor is the apostrophe to be *used* when the elision of the vowels would *change the sound* of the consonants; as in *gli*, ‘the,’ followed by the vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, where the elision of the *i* would render *hard* the *liquid* sound of the *gl*; as in

| | | | |
|---------------------|---------|---------------------|--------------|
| <i>gl’ avári,</i> | } for { | <i>gli avári,</i> | the misers ; |
| <i>gl’ edútti,</i> | | <i>gli edútti,</i> | the edicts ; |
| <i>gl’ ócchi,</i> | | <i>gli ócchi,</i> | the eyes ; |
| <i>gl’ uccélli,</i> | | <i>gli uccélli,</i> | the birds. |

For the *same* reason, *ci*, ‘us,’ or ‘here’; and words ending in *ce*, *ci*; *ge*, *gi*, are *never* written with an *apostrophe* before the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*; since the elision of *e*, *i*, would give to the consonants a *hard* sound; as in

| | | | |
|--|---------|--|--|
| <i>c' Áma,</i> <i>fac' Ardénte,</i> <i>dolc' Accénti,</i> <i>piagg' Apríche,</i> <i>pogg' Améni,</i> | } for { | <i>ci Áma,</i> <i>face Ardénte,</i> <i>dolci Accénti,</i> <i>piágge Apríche,</i> <i>poggi Améni,</i> | he loves us ; burning light ; sweet accents ; sunny places ; pleasant hills. |
|--|---------|--|--|

Finally, words that *end* with *two vowels*, as *cámio*, 'exchange'; *nébbia*, 'fog'; though followed by another vowel, do *not receive* an apostrophe ;

EXCEPT

A few verbs, ending in *io*, as *voglio*, *dógho*, which followed by *io*, 'I,' are written

vogl' io, I wish ; *mi dogl' io*, I grieve.

Likewise words that are *marked* with a *grave accent*, as *felicità*, 'happiness'; *gioventù*, 'youth'; &c. do *not receive* an apostrophe ;

EXCEPT

Perchè, *benchè*, and all the other compounds of *che*; as,
perch' egli disse, because he said ; *bench' ella fosse*, although she was.

CHAPTER III.

REDUPLICATION OF CONSONANTS.

The Italians *write* all words *as they pronounce* them ; and in those words in which a consonant is pronounced with double force, they *double* the *consonant* in writing ; as,

óbeligo, obligation ; *immághine*, image ;
faccénda, business ; *legíttimo*, lawful.

Consonants are generally doubled

In words compounded of one of the particles *a, o, i* or *in, sì, se, nè, co* or *con, so, su, da, ra, fra*, and of any other word *beginning* with a *consonant* ; as,

| | | |
|--------------------------|-------------|---------------|
| [A PÉNA] | appÉna, | hardly ; |
| [O VÉRO] | ovvéro, | or else ; |
| [I or IN RIGÁRE] | irrigáre, | to water ; |
| [SÌ CÓME] | siccóme, | as ; |
| [SE BÉNE,] | sebbÉne, | although ; |
| [NÈ MÉNO] | nemmÉno, | nor yet ; |
| [CO or CON MUÓ- veré] | commuóvere, | to move ; |
| [SO LEVÁRE] | sollévare, | to raise ; |
| [SU CÉDERE] | succédere, | to succeed ; |
| [DA BÉNE] | dabbÉne, | honest ; |
| [RA CÓNTO] | raccónto, | relation ; |
| [FRA MÉSSO] | framméssó, | put between : |

In words compounded of a *verb* ending with a *vowel* bearing the *accent* upon it, and of a *conjunctive* pronoun ; as,

| | | |
|-----------|----------|-------------------|
| [HA LO] | háLLO, | he has it ; |
| [DIRÒ VI] | diróvvi, | I will tell you ; |

EXCEPT

When the *verb* is followed by the pronoun *gli*, when the *g* is never doubled:

In all words compounded of an *adverb*, a *preposition*, or a *conjunction*, ending with a *vowel*, and of any other word *beginning* with a *consonant* ; as,

| | | |
|--------------|-------------|----------------|
| [Óltre ciò] | oltrecciò, | besides that ; |
| [là giù] | laggiù, | there below ; |
| [già mai] | giammái, | never ; |
| [sópra nóme] | soprannóme, | surname ; |
| [E Púre] | eppúre, | and yet. |

CHAPTER IV.

INCREASE OF WORDS.

THE *increase of words* is the *addition* of a *vowel* or a *consonant*, either at the *beginning* or at the *end* of a word.

When the words *in*, 'in'; *con*, 'with'; *non*, 'no,' or 'not'; *per*, 'for,' 'by,' or 'through'; are *followed* by a word *beginning* with an *s* *followed by another consonant*, as, *stráda*, *spavénto*, *scrive*, *schérzo*; to avoid the harshness produced by the meeting of these consonants, the *second word* commonly *takes an i* before it; as,

| | | | |
|------------------------|--------------|-------------------------|-----------------|
| IN <i>istráda</i> , | } instead of | { <i>in stráda</i> , | in the street; |
| CON <i>ispavénto</i> , | | { <i>con spavénto</i> , | with fright; |
| NON <i>iscrive</i> , | | { <i>non scrive</i> , | does not write; |
| PER <i>ischérzo</i> , | | { <i>per schérzo</i> , | in jest. |

In *poetry*, however, this rule is *not so strictly observed* as in *prose*; since the *increase* (adding a *syllable* to the word), would be often incompatible with the measure of the verse.

The preposition *a*, 'to,' and the conjunctions *e*, 'and'; *o*, 'or'; when *followed* by a word *beginning* with a *vowel*, sometimes *take a d* after them, to *prevent the hiatus*; as,

| | |
|---|-------------------------------|
| AD <i>úno</i> AD <i>úno</i> , | one after another; |
| AMÓRE ED <i>ódio</i> , | love and hatred; |
| OD IN <i>ciélo</i> OD IN <i>térra</i> , | either in heaven or on earth. |

And the prepositions *su*, *insù*, 'upon'; *followed* by another *u*, *take an r* after them; as,

| | |
|-------------------------|---------------|
| SUR UN <i>mónte</i> , | upon a hill; |
| INSUR UN <i>pálco</i> , | upon a stage. |

CHAPTER V.

DIMINUTION OF WORDS.

THE *diminution of words* is the *suppression* or *retrenchment* of a *letter* or a *syllable*, either at the *end* or in the *middle* of a word.

The Italians retrench the *last vowel* of words *ending* in *e*, *o*, *preceded* by one of the consonants *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, *forming* with them a *syllable* by themselves; as in *sá-LE*, 'salt'; *uó-MO*, 'man'; *má-NO*, 'hand'; *cuó-RE*, 'heart'; and *followed* by a word *beginning* with a *consonant*; as,

| | |
|---------------|-----------------|
| SAL comúne, | common salt; |
| UÓM di córte, | courtier; |
| MAN di dónna, | lady's hand; |
| CUÓR dolénte, | grieving heart. |

But if *le*, *lo*; *ne*, *no*; *re*, *ro*, do not form a *syllable* by themselves, but in concurrence with any other consonant, as in *Sófo-CLE*, 'Sophocles'; *A'n-GLO*, 'Englishman'; *ví-GNE*, 'vineyards'; *pé-GNO*, 'pledge'; *á-CRE*, 'sour'; *pí-GRO*, 'lazy'; the words are *never retrenched*.

When *e* is *preceded* by *rr*, as in *condúr-RE*, 'to conduct'; and *o* is *preceded* by *ll* or *nn*; as in *fanciúl-LO*, 'youth'; *hán-NO*, 'they have'; they retrench the *whole syllable*; as,

| | |
|------------------|-----------------------------|
| CONDÚR séco, | to conduct with one's self; |
| FANCIÚL vezzóso, | handsome youth; |
| L' HÁN rubáto, | they have robbed him. |

The *last vowel* of the words *úno*, 'a or an'; *béne*, 'well'; *buóno*, 'good'; and the *last syllable* of the words *bélló*, 'handsome'; *quélló*, 'that'; *gránde*, 'great';

when they are *followed* by a word *beginning* with a *consonant*, are *always retrenched* ; as,

| | |
|---------------|---------------------|
| UN Fióre, | a flower ; |
| BEN Tì stu, | thou deservest it ; |
| BUÓN vino, | good wine ; |
| BEL Práto, | beautiful meadow ; |
| QUÉL Líbro, | that book ; |
| GRAN mercáto, | great market ; |
| GRAN città, | great city. |

The *last vowel* of the word *Signóre*, ‘ Master ’ ; and the *last syllable* of the words *Fráte*, ‘ Brother [Friar] ’ ; *Sáto*, ‘ Saint ’ ; when they are *used as titles* ; is also *retrenched before a consonant* ; as,

| | |
|---------------|------------------|
| SIGNÓR Cárlo, | Master Charles ; |
| FRA Giovánni, | Brother John ; |
| SAN Páolo, | Saint Paul. |

Words ending in *a* are *never retrenched* ;

EXCEPT

| | |
|---|------------------------|
| Suóra, ‘ Sister ’ ; which, when <i>used as a title</i> , loses the <i>a</i> ; as, | |
| SUÓR María, | Sister Mary ; |
| and óra, ‘ now,’ with its compounds <i>allóra</i> , <i>ancóra</i> , <i>talóra</i> , &c. which, <i>before a consonant</i> , may be <i>retrenched</i> ; as, | |
| OR dí, | now say ; |
| ALLÓR vídi, | then I saw ; |
| ANCÓR piángo, | he weeps still ; |
| TALÓR véggia, | sometimes he is awake. |

Words ending in *i* are *never retrenched* ;

EXCEPT

Fuóri, ‘ out ’ ; and the *second person* of the *imperative* of verbs ending in *nére*, *níre* ; as *tiéni*, ‘ hold thou ’ ; *viéni*, ‘ come thou ’ ; from *tenére*, ‘ to hold ’ ; *veníre*, ‘ to come ’ ; which *before a consonant* lose their *i* ; as,

| | |
|----------------|---------------|
| FUÓR di città, | out of town ; |
| TIÉN Quéstó, | hold this ; |
| VIÉN Préstó, | come quick. |

Words ending in *u*, and words accented on the last syllable, are never retrenched.

Words ending with *two vowels* are never retrenched ;

EXCEPT

When the two vowels are preceded by *n*, as in *António*, 'Anthony'; *testimónio*, 'testimony'; in which case they may be retrenched; as,

| | |
|------------------|-----------------|
| ANTON-Mária, | Anthony-Maria ; |
| TESTIMÓN veráce, | true testimony. |

Words retrenched in the singular, are never retrenched in the plural ;

EXCEPT

Gránde, 'great'; which in its plural *grándi*, also, loses the last syllable; as,

| | |
|-----------------|-----------------|
| GRAN pericoli, | great dangers ; |
| GRAN ricchétze, | great riches ; |

and such words as *cavalière*, 'cavalier'; *demonio*, 'demon'; &c. which, in poetry, may lose the last vowel or vowels, even in their plurals; as,

| | |
|-----------------------|-----------------------------|
| le dónne, i CAVALIÉR, | the ladies, the cavaliers ; |
| i DEMÓN dúri, | the cruel demons. |

Words, which would be retrenched before a word beginning with a consonant, are always written with an apostrophe before words beginning with a vowel; as,

| | |
|----------------|-----------------------|
| bell' Aspétto, | handsome appearance ; |
| quell' arco, | that bow ; |
| grand' uómo, | great man ; |
| Frat' Albérto, | Brother Albert ; |
| Sant' Andréa, | Saint Andrew ; |

EXCEPT

Uno, 'a or an,' and its compounds; *quále*, 'which'; *buóno*, 'good'; *béne*, 'well'; *Signóre*, 'Master'; *Suóra*, 'Sister'; and the infinitive, and forms of verbs ending in *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, which do not receive an apostrophe; as,

| | |
|-------------------------|------------------------|
| <i>un Amíco</i> , | a friend; |
| <i>alcún odóre</i> , | no smell; |
| <i>quál Ardire</i> , | what daring; |
| <i>buón Uómo</i> , | good man; |
| <i>ben incíso</i> , | well engraved; |
| <i>Signór Onófrio</i> , | Master Onofrio; |
| <i>Suór Angélica</i> , | Sister Angelica; |
| <i>andár a spázzo</i> , | to go and take a walk; |
| <i>abbíam Amáto</i> , | we have loved; |
| <i>andrán Esénti</i> , | they will be exempted; |
| <i>sarébbber Ársi</i> , | they would be burnt. |

Words are *never retrenched*, when they are followed by a *z*, or an *s* followed by another consonant; or when they are at the end of a sentence;

EXCEPT

In *poetry* where words are sometimes retrenched, even before a *z*, or an *s* followed by another consonant, on account of the measure of the verse.

Some words, when they undergo some alteration, *lose a vowel in the middle*, particularly if the *tonic accent* of the word, by such alteration, is *transferred* to the *following syllable*; as,

| | | | |
|----------------|----------|--------------------|-------------|
| <i>buóno</i> , | good; | <i>boníssimo</i> , | very good; |
| <i>tuóno</i> , | thunder; | <i>tonáre</i> , | to thunder; |
| <i>suóno</i> , | I play; | <i>soniámo</i> , | we play. |

Some *compound* words *lose a letter*, or a *syllable* in their composition; as,

| | | |
|-------------|------------------|---------------|
| [iéri séra] | <i>ierséra</i> , | last evening; |
|-------------|------------------|---------------|

| | | |
|-------------------|---------------|------------------------|
| [sótto térra] | sottérra, | under ground ; |
| [dománi mattína] | domattína, | to-morrow morning ; |
| [cénto cinquánta] | cencinquánta, | one hundred and fifty. |

Infinitives, and those *forms of verbs* that end in *le*, *ne*, *mo*, *no*, when joined to a *conjunctive pronoun*, drop their *final vowel* ; as,

| | | |
|----------------|-------------|-------------------|
| [amáre lo] | amárlo, | to love him ; |
| [duóle ti] | duólti, | it grieves thee ; |
| [viéne séne] | viénsene, | he comes thence ; |
| [andíamo vi] | andíamvi, | let us go there ; |
| [aiutárono ci] | aiutáronci, | they assisted us. |

The *first* and *third* persons *singular*, and the *third* person *plural*, of the *imperfect* of the *indicative* of all the verbs, which in the *infinitive* terminate in *ére*, *ire*, generally drop the *v* ; as,

| | | |
|---------------------|-------------------|---------------|
| [ío } teméva,] | ío, } teméa, | I } feared ; |
| [égli } temévano,] | égli, } teméano, | he } feared ; |
| [églino temévano,] | églino, teméano, | they feared ; |
| [ío } sentíva,] | ío, } sentía, | I } heard ; |
| [égli } sentívano,] | égli, } sentía, | he } heard ; |
| [églino sentívano,] | églino, sentiano, | they heard. |

The words *caváli*, *capéli*, *coltéli*, *fratéli*, *ruscélli*, *quéli*, *béli*, *déli*, *áli*, *dáli*, *néli*, *péli*, *cólli*, *súlli*, *tráli*, and *quáli*, *máli*, *táli*, *figliuóli*, may be contracted into *cavái*, *capéi*, *coltéi*, *fratéi*, *ruscéi*, *quéi*, *béi*, *déi*, *ái*, *dái*, *néi*, *péi*, *cói*, *súi*, *trái*, *quái*, *mái*, *tái*, *figliuói* ; which, when they are followed by a *consonant*, it is more elegant to *abbreviate*, and write with an *apostrophe* ; as,

| | | | |
|------------------|----------------|-----------------|-------------------|
| cavá' leggiéri, | light horses ; | ruscé' ridénti, | smiling brooks ; |
| capé' biáncchi, | white hair ; | qué' signóri, | those gentlemen ; |
| colté' pungénti, | sharp knives ; | bé' costúmi, | good manners ; |
| fraté' carnáli, | own brothers ; | dé' nemíci, | of the enemies ; |

á' parénti, to the parents ; *trá' bóschi*, amongst the woods ;
dá' ládri, by the robbers ; *quá' dolóri*, what pains ;
né'bisógni, in the necessities ; *má' pensíeri*, malicious thoughts ;
pé' cámpi, through the fields ; *tá' discórsi*, such discourses ;
có' dénti, with the teeth ; *figliuó' misér*-very miserable sons.
stú' mónti, upon the mountains ; [*rimi*,

The word *églino*, 'they' ; often loses its last syllable and makes *égli* ; and *égli*, 'he,' or 'they,' may be contracted into *éi*, and written *é*, 'he,' or 'they.'

This is all that needs to be said on the diminution or retrenchment of words ; except that the rule respecting the retrenchment of *e*, *o*, when preceded by *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, does not hold in certain instances, where such retrenchment would produce a harsh sound. Thus the words, *cóme*, 'how' ; *nóme*, 'name' ; *ánimo*, 'courage' ; *chiáro*, 'clear' ; *ráro*, 'rare' ; *néro*, 'black' ; *dúro*, 'hard' ; *oscúro*, 'obscure' ; &c., are never written *com*, *nom*, *ánim*, *chiár*, *ner*, *rar*, *dur*, *oscúr*, &c.

THE END.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

| | |
|---|------|
| PREFACE to the former Edition - - - - - | vii |
| “ to the present Edition - - - - - | xi |
| A LIST OF WORKS examined with Reference to the Com- pilation of this Grammar - - - - - | xvii |
| A TABLE of the Abbreviations of the Names of Authors and of the Works quoted in this Grammar - - - | xxiv |

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

| | |
|---|--------|
| INTRODUCTION - - - - - | 1-10 |
| ITALIAN ALPHABET - - - - - | 11, 12 |
| PART I.—ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION - - - | 13-24 |
| CHAPTER I.— <i>Sounds of the Vowels</i> - - - | 13 |
| “ II.— <i>Pronunciation of the Consonants</i> - - - | 14 |
| “ III.— <i>Of J and H</i> - - - - - | 16 |
| “ IV.— <i>Double Consonants</i> - - - - - | 17 |
| “ V.— <i>Of Syllables</i> - - - - - | 19 |
| “ VI.— <i>Diphthongs and Triphthongs</i> - - - | 20 |
| “ VII.— <i>General Rules on the Italian Pronunciation</i> - | 21 |
| EXERCISE on the Pronunciation - - - - - | 23 |
| PART II.—ITALIAN ANALOGY - - - - - | 25-388 |
| PARTS OF SPEECH - - - - - | 25 |
| CHAPTER I.— <i>Articles</i> - - - - - | 25 |
| Union of the Prepositions with the Articles - - - | 28 |
| EXERCISE I. - - - - - | 34 |
| CHAPTER II.— <i>Substantive Nouns</i> - - - - - | 36 |
| Gender - - - - - | 36 |
| Number, or Formation of the Plural - - - - - | 48 |
| Variation of Nouns - - - - - | 56 |
| EXERCISE II. - - - - - | 60 |

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

| | |
|---|-----|
| CHAPTER III. — <i>Adjective Nouns. — Comparatives and Superlatives</i> | 62 |
| Gender | 62 |
| Formation of the Plural | 62 |
| Agreement of Adjectives | 63 |
| <i>Comparatives</i> | 65 |
| EXERCISE III. | 71 |
| <i>Superlatives</i> | 72 |
| EXERCISE IV. | 78 |
| CHAPTER IV. — <i>Augmentatives and Diminutives</i> | 80 |
| <i>Augmentatives</i> | 80 |
| EXERCISE V. | 83 |
| <i>Diminutives</i> | 84 |
| EXERCISE VI. | 89 |
| CHAPTER V. — <i>Numerals</i> | 90 |
| Cardinal Numbers | 90 |
| Ordinal “ | 94 |
| Collective, Distributive, and Proportional Numbers | 96 |
| EXERCISE VII. | 98 |
| CHAPTER VI. — <i>Substantive Pronouns</i> | 100 |
| <i>Personal Pronouns</i> | 100 |
| Variation of Personal Pronouns | 101 |
| EXERCISE VIII. | 107 |
| <i>Conjunctive Pronouns</i> | 109 |
| Union of the Pronouns <i>mi, ti, gli, ne</i> or <i>ci, vi, si</i> , with the Pronouns <i>lo, la, gli, li, le, ne</i> | 114 |
| EXERCISE IX. | 118 |
| <i>Relative Pronouns</i> | 119 |
| EXERCISE X. | 125 |
| <i>Interrogative Pronouns</i> | 127 |
| EXERCISE XI. | 129 |
| CHAPTER VII. — <i>Adjective Pronouns</i> | 131 |
| <i>Possessive Pronouns</i> | 131 |
| EXERCISE XII. | 134 |
| <i>Demonstrative Pronouns</i> | 137 |
| EXERCISE XIII. | 143 |
| <i>Indefinite Pronouns</i> | 145 |
| EXERCISE XIV. | 156 |
| CHAPTER VIII. — <i>Of the Particles Ne, Ci, Vi</i> | 158 |
| EXERCISE XV. | 162 |
| CHAPTER IX. — <i>Verbs</i> | 164 |
| <i>Variation of Verbs</i> | 164 |

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

| | |
|---|-----|
| <i>Auxiliary Verbs</i> | 165 |
| The Verb <i>Avère</i> , affirmatively | 165 |
| “ “ negatively | 169 |
| “ “ interrogatively | 171 |
| “ “ interrogative-negatively | 172 |
| <i>Èssere</i> | 173 |
| <i>Regular Verbs</i> | 177 |
| Active Verbs — FIRST CONJUGATION | 177 |
| <i>Amàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>àre</i> | 177 |
| <i>Cercàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>càre</i> | 181 |
| <i>Pregàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>gàre</i> | 182 |
| <i>Baciàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>ciàre</i> | 183 |
| <i>Fregiàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>giàre</i> | 185 |
| <i>Noiàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>iàre</i> | 186 |
| <i>Inviàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>iàre</i> | 187 |
| SECOND CONJUGATION | 187 |
| <i>Temère</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in the <i>infinitive</i> in <i>ère</i> (long); and of those which in the <i>perfect</i> end in <i>èi</i> and <i>ètti</i> | 187 |
| <i>Tèssere</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in the <i>infinitive</i> in <i>ère</i> (short); and of those which in the <i>perfect</i> end in <i>èi</i> only | 191 |
| <i>Tacère</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>cère</i> | 193 |
| <i>Èmpiere</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>iere</i> | 194 |
| THIRD CONJUGATION | 195 |
| <i>Sentire</i> , paradigm of those Verbs of the third conjugation which, in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> , end in <i>o</i> only | 195 |
| <i>Esibire</i> , paradigm of those Verbs of the third conjugation which, in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> , end in <i>isco</i> only | 198 |
| <i>Abborrire</i> , paradigm of those Verbs of the third conjugation which, in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> , end both in <i>o</i> and <i>isco</i> | 201 |
| <i>Cucire</i> , paradigms of the Verbs ending in <i>cire</i> | 204 |
| Remarks on the foregoing Verbs | 205 |
| EXERCISE XVI. | 209 |
| Passive Verbs | 212 |
| <i>Èssere Amàto</i> , paradigm of the <i>passive verbs</i> | 212 |
| Neuter Verbs | 216 |
| <i>Partire</i> , paradigm of the <i>neuter verbs</i> | 216 |
| Pronominal Verbs | 220 |
| <i>Pentirsi</i> , paradigm of the <i>pronominal verbs</i> | 220 |
| Unipersonal Verbs | 224 |
| <i>Piòvere</i> , paradigm of the <i>unipersonal verbs</i> | 224 |
| <i>Èssere</i> , unipersonally used | 227 |
| EXERCISE XVII. | 232 |

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

| | |
|--|---------|
| <i>Order, quantity, quality, affirmation, negation, doubt, comparison, interrogation</i> | 351 |
| <i>Choice, demonstration</i> | 352 |
| Compound Adverbs | 356 |
| <i>Adjectives commonly used as Adverbs</i> | 357 |
| Adverbial Phrases in common use | 359 |
| EXERCISE XXIII. | 361 |
| CHAPTER XIV. — <i>Prepositions</i> | 363 |
| Prepositions in common use | 363 |
| EXERCISE XXIV. | 373 |
| CHAPTER XV. — <i>Conjunctions</i> | 376 |
| Conjunctions in common use | 376 |
| EXERCISE XXV. | 382 |
| CHAPTER XVI. — <i>Interjections</i> | 384 |
| Interjections in common use | 384 |
| EXERCISE XXVI. | 387 |
| PART III. — ITALIAN SYNTAX | 389-553 |
| CHAPTER I. — <i>Order and Position of Words</i> | 389 |
| Simple Construction | 389 |
| Inverse | 393 |
| EXERCISE XXVII. | 395 |
| CHAPTER II. — <i>Concordance or Agreement of Words</i> | 397 |
| Concordance of Articles | 397 |
| “ of Adjectives | 397 |
| “ of Numerals | 403 |
| “ of Pronouns | 403 |
| “ of Verbs | 405 |
| “ of Participles | 411 |
| EXERCISE XXVIII. | 413 |
| CHAPTER III. — <i>Regimen or Government of Words</i> | 415 |
| Regimen of Substantives | 415 |
| “ of Adjectives | 418 |
| “ of Verbs | 421 |
| “ of Prepositions | 432 |
| “ of Conjunctions | 433 |
| EXERCISE XXIX. | 436 |
| CHAPTER IV. — <i>Use of Articles</i> | 440 |
| EXERCISE XXX. | 468 |
| CHAPTER V. — <i>Position of Adjectives</i> | 472 |
| EXERCISE XXXI. | 480 |
| CHAPTER VI. — <i>Use and Position of certain Pronouns</i> | 483 |

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

| | |
|--|---------|
| Personal Pronouns | 483 |
| Conjunctive “ | 486 |
| Possessive “ | 495 |
| Indefinite “ | 499 |
| EXERCISE XXXII. | 502 |
| CHAPTER VII. — <i>Verbs</i> | 506 |
| Position of Verbs | 506 |
| Use of the Imperfect and First and Second Perfect | 509 |
| Use of Certain Tenses of the Indicative for some other Tenses of the same Mood; and of the Infinitive for certain Tenses of the Indicative, and for the Conjunctive and Imperative Moods | 512 |
| Of the Tenses of the Dependent Verbs in a Compound Sentence | 517 |
| Of the Manner of Expressing the English Present-Participle in Italian | 519 |
| Of the way of Rendering into Italian the English particle <i>To</i> , before the Infinitive of Verbs | 522 |
| EXERCISE XXXIII. | 525 |
| CHAPTER VIII. — <i>Participles. — Use and Position of certain Adverbs</i> | 529 |
| Agreement of Participles | 529 |
| Use and Position of certain Adverbs | 535 |
| EXERCISE XXXIV. | 538 |
| CHAPTER IX. — <i>Expletives</i> | 541 |
| CHAPTER X. — <i>Of the Ellipsis</i> | 545 |
| REMARKS ON THE DIFFERENT MODES OF ADDRESS IN ITALIAN | 549 |
| PART IV. — ITALIAN ORTHOGRAPHY | 554–568 |
| CHAPTER I. — <i>Of Accents</i> | 554 |
| “ II. — <i>Of the Apostrophe</i> | 557 |
| “ III. — <i>Reduplication of Consonants</i> | 560 |
| “ IV. — <i>Increase of Words</i> | 562 |
| “ V. — <i>Diminution of Words</i> | 563 |

CORRIGENDA.

| Page, 4 | line, 44 | For, | Read, |
|------------|-------------|---|--|
| | | a subject and a quality, to which it affirms that the subject is, or is not attributed, | a subject, and a quality of which it affirms that it is, or is not, attributed to the subject. |
| 23 | 15 | <i>giocóndo,</i> | <i>giocóndo.</i> |
| 24 | 14 | <i>magnámino,</i> | <i>magnánimo.</i> |
| 26 | 12 | nouns begins, | noun begins. |
| 33 | 8 | MERCA'TANTE, | MERCATA'NTE. |
| 35 | 22 | <i>piángere,</i> | <i>piangere.</i> |
| 36 | 13 | <i>Eráto,</i> | <i>E'ralo.</i> |
| " | 25 | <i>Lápis,</i> | <i>Lápis.</i> |
| 43 | 41 | <i>della cóse,</i> | <i>che gli ho dato.</i> |
| 44 | 13 | <i>eclési,</i> | <i>ecclissi.</i> |
| 64 | 14 | Dav. Tac. am. | Dav. Tac. ann. |
| 65 | 6 | Add. Cavalc. | Cavalc. |
| 69 | 1 | <i>Ió,</i> | <i>Io.</i> |
| 87 | 17 | UMIDÍZZO, | UMIDU'ZZO. |
| 89 | 4 | BACICCUCHIA'I, | BACIUCCCHIA'I. |
| " | 26 | <i>Nascémmo,</i> | <i>Nascémmo.</i> |
| 155 | 34 | <i>Quánto cóse,</i> | <i>Quante cóse.</i> |
| 161 | 4 | Pass. tr. Hu. c. 4. | Pass. 276. |
| 173 | 17 | <i>essére státa,</i> | <i>essere státa.</i> |
| 179 | 20 | that thou lovest, | that thou love. |
| " | 21 | that he loves, | that he love. |
| 193 | 24 | <i>i,</i> | <i>in.</i> |
| 258 | 25 | as in the case, | as is the case. |
| 287 | 18 | <i>confúitto,</i> | <i>confitto.</i> |
| 296 | 6 | ' I kindle,' | ' I kindled.' |
| 299 | 6 | <i>M mise,</i> | <i>Mi mise.</i> |
| " | 40 | Arr. Vang. | Ann. Vang. |
| 300 | 14 | <i>Jerusalém,</i> | <i>Jerusalem.</i> |
| 348 | 23 | <i>fónda,</i> | <i>fróna.</i> |
| 369 | 10 | Petr. Fr. Am. | Petr. Tr. Am. |
| " | 37 | Bocc. Floc. | Bocc. Filoc. |
| 370 | 30 | Mach. Corn. | Mach. Com. |
| 382 | 1 | <i>rinnuóvelli,</i> | <i>rinnovelli.</i> |
| 394 | 5 | Ephigenia, | Iphigenia, |
| " | 19 | PRE'SEMI ALLÓRA, | PRE'SEMI ALLÓR. |
| " | 27 | Ephigenia, | Iphigenia. |
| 395 | 20 | <i>El'vidio,</i> | <i>Elvídio.</i> |
| 406 | 26 | FIGLIERA'MO, | FIGLIERE'MO. |
| 419 | 5 | <i>deáite,</i> | <i>dédite.</i> |
| 455 | 28 | Gian. Stor. Giv. Nap. | Gian. Stor. Civ. Nap. |
| 458 | 30 | <i>avviticchia,</i> | <i>avviticchia.</i> |
| 463 | 8 | FIGLIUÓLI, | FIGLUÓI. |
| 468 | 5 | FRUMA NTO, | FRUME'NTO. |
| 477 | 39 | Lipari, | Lipari. |
| 479 | 36 | Tris. Elog. Galil. | Fris. Elog. Galil. |
| 491 | 26 | I see you, | I see thee. |
| 495 | 5 | DISPOSTO, | DISPOSTO. |
| 500 | 2 | <i>dispési,</i> | <i>dispéri.</i> |
| 501 | 8 | woman, | woman. |
| " | 30 | even, | ever. |

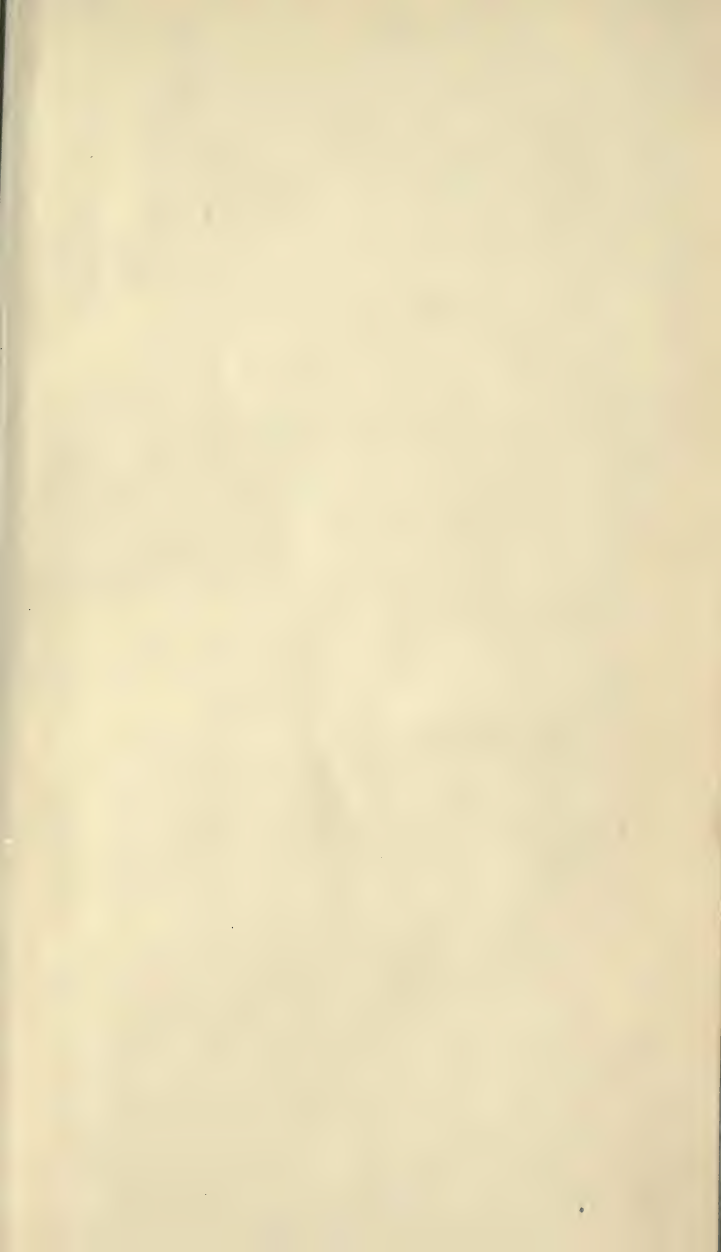
In a few copies only :

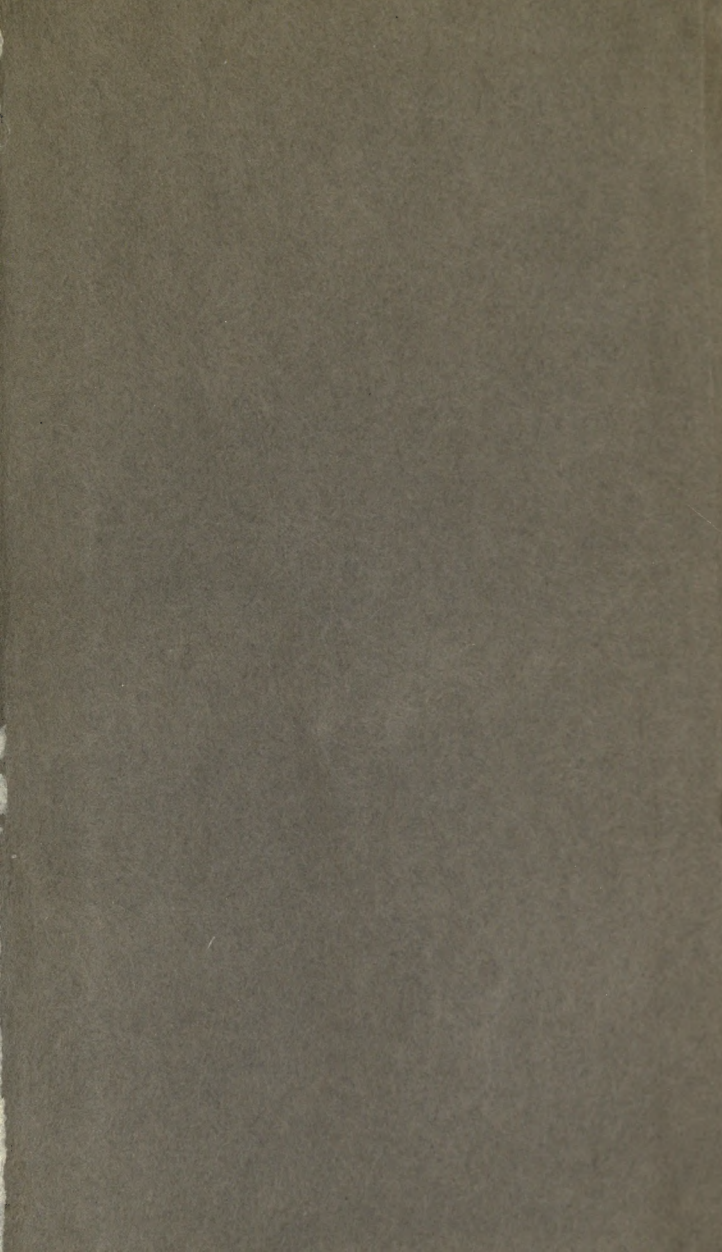
| | | | |
|-----|----|-----------------|-----------------|
| 137 | 13 | these, | those. |
| " | 14 | these near you, | those near you. |
| 138 | 30 | STAMA'TTINA, | STAMATTINA. |
| 143 | 19 | CÓSTUI, | COSTU I. |
| " | 24 | EXERCISES, | EXERCISE XIII. |

ADDENDA.

| | | | |
|-----|----|-----|---------------------|
| 409 | 35 | add | (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.) |
| 446 | 26 | add | (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.) |
| 479 | 42 | add | (Dant. Inf. 2.) |
| 485 | 32 | add | (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.) |
| 486 | 10 | add | (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.) |
| 516 | 41 | add | (Bocc.) |







THIS BOOK IS DUE ON THE LAST DATE
STAMPED BELOW

AN INITIAL FINE OF 25 CENTS

WILL BE ASSESSED FOR FAILURE TO RETURN
THIS BOOK ON THE DATE DUE. THE PENALTY
WILL INCREASE TO 50 CENTS ON THE FOURTH
DAY AND TO \$1.00 ON THE SEVENTH DAY
OVERDUE.

FEB 3 1947

JUL 1 1947

21 Feb '49 BC

22 Apr '53 VH

18 Jun '53 LOT

JUN 11 1953 LU

SANTA BARBARA
INTERLIBRARY LOAN

ONE MONTH AFTER RECEIPT

125-0

SEP 28 1970

11-7-70

U. C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES



C046323063

24 9:15

THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

